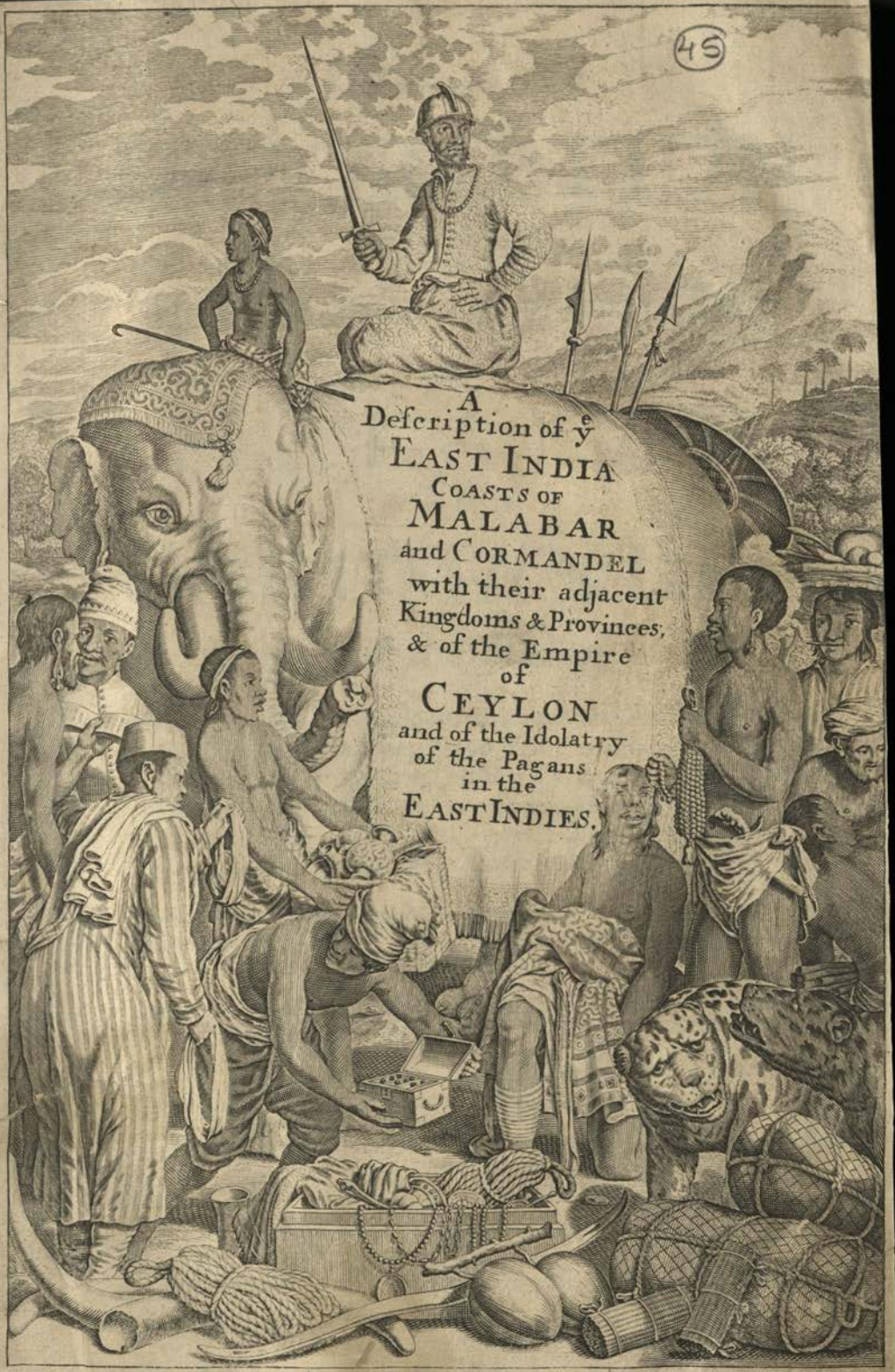
00042621

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY-1.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 15 June, 2016

PHILIPPUS BALDÆUS DELPHENSIS V. D. M.
PRIMO ANNUM IN PUNTE GALE, POSTEA
IN REGNO IAFFNAPATNAM IN INSULA CEY:
LON 8 Annos, Iam in Geervliet 2. Ætatis 38. A. 1671.

vr. Sylvrelt. Ex. D. A. Bloeteling Sculp.



LONDON
Printed for Awnsham and John Churchill,
at the Black Swan in Pater Noster Row 1703.

A True and Exact

DESCRIPTION

OF THE

Moſt Celebrated *Eaſt-India* Coaſts

OF

MALABAR

AND

COROMANDEL,

As alſo of the Iſle of *Ceylon.*

With all the adjacent Kingdoms, Principalities, Provinces, Cities, Chief Harbors, Structures, Pagan Temples, Products, and living Creatures. The Manners, Habits, Oeconomies and Ceremonies of the Inhabitants; as likewiſe the moſt remarkable Warlike Exploits, Sieges, Sea and Field-Engagements betwixt the *Portugueſes* and *Dutch*; with their Traffick and Commerce.

The Whole adorn'd with new Maps and Draughts of the chief Cities, Forts, Habits, Living Creatures, Fruits, *&c.* of the Product of the *Indies*, drawn to the Life, and cut in Copper Plates.

Alſo a moſt Circumſtantial and Compleat Account of the Idolatry of the Pagans in the *Eaſt-Indies*, the *Malabars*, *Benjans*, *Gentives*, *Brahmans*, &c. Taken partly from their own *Vedam* or Law-Book, and Authentick Manuſcripts; partly from frequent Converſation with their Prieſts and Divines: With the Draughts of their Idols, done after their Originals.

By PHILIP BALDÆUS, *Miniſter of the Word of God in* Ceylon.

Tranſlated from the *High-Dutch* printed at *Amſterdam*, 1672.

42621

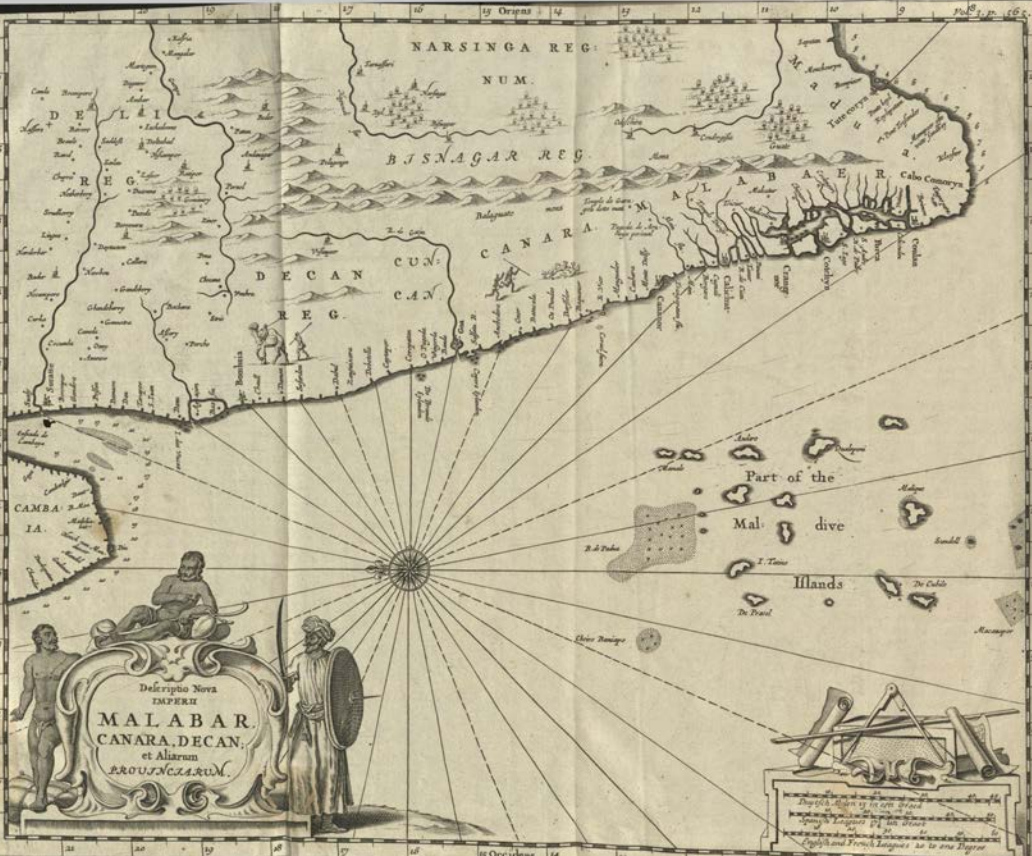
00042621

THE PREFACE TO THE READER.

MOST of the Modern East-India *Voyages that have been publiſhed of late years, being very defective either in reſpect of the many fabulous Relations that are inſerted frequently, rather to pleaſe the Reader, than to purſue the ſtrict Rules of Truth* (not to mention *the Errors in the Computation of the diſtances of Places, and frequent unneceſſary Digreſſions*) *it is no wonder if the moſt curious in Hiſtory have conceiv'd a very indifferent opinion, if not an entire averſion to them. It was upon this Conſideration, that the enſuing Treatiſe coming to our hands, we thought it abſolutely worthy the publick view, it being agreed by all who have had the opportunity of travelling in thoſe Countries, that the ſame may in reſpect of its ſincerity and exactneſs challenge the Prerogative before any other hitherto publiſh'd upon the ſame Subject. For, conſidering that the Author thereof liv'd not only in the Station of a Miniſter in divers places of* Malabar *and* Coromandel, *and eſpecially for ſeveral years in the Kingdom of* Jafnapatnam *in the Iſle of* Ceylon, *but alſo aſſiſted in Perſon in divers Sieges and Expeditions, and thereby had more than ordinary opportunity to be inform'd concerning the Nature and Conſtitution of thoſe Countries, their Products, Inhabitants, Manners, Cuſtoms, Religion, Ceremonies, Oeconomy, Traffick, Manufacturies, Civil and Military Exploits, and what elſe may be requiſite for the accompliſhment of a good Hiſtory, founded upon the Faith of one who had been an Eye-witneſs of thoſe Tranſactions; conſequently he might challenge the Preference before many, who relate matters chiefly upon hearſay. As to thoſe things which are not grounded upon his Ocular Teſtimony, the ſame were taken from Authentick Records and Manuſcripts, and illuſtrated with Maps and Draughts of thoſe ſeveral Countries, Cities, Nations, &c. done to the Life. What relates to the Idolatry of theſe* Pagans, *we are convinc'd by his own Teſtimony, that beſides the opportunity he had of viſiting their* Pagodes, *or Temples* (*a thing rare-*

ly allow'd there) *one of their moſt learned* Brahmans *liv'd with him in the ſame Houſe for a conſiderable time, from whom he by conſtant Converſation, as well as out of their own Records, learn'd the moſt ſecret Receſſes of their Religion, and had the exact Draughts of their Idols, much beyond what* Abraham Roger*ius* (*who writ upon the ſame Subject*) *can pretend to upon that account. As for our part, we have made it our chiefeſt care to give you an exact Delineation of the before-mention'd Draughts in the beſt Copper Plates that could be procur'd, and that with all imaginable exactneſs according to the true Originals, contrary to what is practis'd by many, who ſtudy to repreſent matters of this kind, rather according to their own Fancy, than to Truth. We have only this to add, that to avoid all unneceſſary Prolixity, it was judged requiſite to omit many Digreſſions, tending not ſo much towards the Elucidation of the Hiſtory, as* (*we ſuppoſe*) *to ſhew the Author's Criticiſm in the Holy Scripture.*

An


Descriptio Nova
IMPERII
MALABAR,
CANARA, DECAN,
et Aliarum
PROVINCIARUM.
NARSINGA REG:
NUM.
BISNAGAR REG.
DELI
REG.
DECAN
REG.
CUN:
CAN
CANARA
MALABAER
Cabo Comorya
Tute corya
Cochyn
Cranger
Calichut
Cannor
Cuna
Bombaia
Sunate
CAMBA:
IA.
Part of the
Mal: dive
Islands
Sundell
De Cabilo
De Travel
Chico Baniaps
Macaupor
Orientis
Occidens
Septentrio
Meridies
Vol. 1. p. 565.

Baldaus

An Exact Description of the Coasts of *Malabar* and *Coromandel* in the *East-Indies*.

CHAP. I.

The Division and Limits of the Indies. *The Author's purpose in the ensuing Treatise. A Description of* Cambaja *and* Suratte. *The Treaty with the* Great Mogul, *by Mr.* Van Teylingen.

THE main Design of the ensuing Treatise being to give an exact Account of the *Indies*, as far as is come to our knowledg, either by our own Experience, or the constant Conversation with People of unquestionable Credit, *viz.* the Coasts of *Malabar* and *Coromandel*; together with the Isle of *Ceylon*, and places thereunto belonging; we thought it not beyond our scope to insert the true Limits and Division of the whole *Indies*, whereby the Reader (together with the annexed Map) may form to himself the more clear *Idea* of the Situation of these Places.

The Limits of the Indies.

India therefore borders to the West upon the River *Indus*, towards the *Arabian Sea*; to the North it is inclosed by the Mount *Taurus*, on the East-side by the vast *Eastern Ocean*, and to the South by the *Indian Sea*. *India* was antiently divided into two Parts by the River *Ganges*; thence the more Eastern Part was call'd *India* beyond the *Ganges*, and the Western Part *India*, on this side of the *Ganges*, now known by the Name of *Indostan*; and according to the opinion of some Authors, is the same mention'd in the Scripture by the Name of *Havila*.

India is besides this divided into several Kingdoms and Provinces, to wit, The Empire of the *Great Mogul*, *Decan*, *Malabar*, *Coromandel*, *Crika*, *Bengale*, *Pagu*, *Siam* and *Cambodia*, besides the *Maldive Isles* (of which there is a vast number) the Islands of *Ceylon* (of which in the second Book) of *Sumatra*, *Borneo*, *Celebes*, *Amboina*, *Banda*, and the *Molucque Isles*, viz. *Termate*, *Machian*, *Bachian*, *Tidor*, *Motir*, *Potbacker*, and divers others.

As it is not my Intention to treat of the whole *Indies*, but to confine my self to those parts I have for the most part seen my self, and to give you a relation of such remarkable Transactions both of Peace and War as have happen'd there; so I will begin with the Kingdom of *Cambaja*, and its Capital City having the same Name, and end with *Bimilipatam* upon the Coast of *Orixa*, bordering upon *Bengale*.

The Author's Intentions.

Cambaja is a different Province from *Gusuratte*, situate at 22 deg. of Northern Latitude; it has got its Name from its Capital City nam'd *Cambaja*, (formerly the *Indian Cayrus*) seated at the mouth of the River *Indus* (or *Sandus*) known by different Names among divers Nations: it rises among the Mountains of *Paramisus*, and being augmented by at least nineteen other Rivers (among which are the *Hydaspes* and *Hypasis*, whither *Alexander* the Great carried his Arms) it falls by seven different Channels, or as some will have it by five, into the Sea; two of which pass through and exonerate themselves into the Sea in this Kingdom of *Cambaja*. It borders to the East upon the Country of *Mandoa*, to the West upon the Country of the *Nautakers* or *Gedrosiers*, to the North it has the Kingdoms of *Sanga* and *Dulcinga*, and to the South that of *Decan*. It is one of the most fruitful Provinces of the *Indies*, which furnishes the circumjacent places with Corn, Wheat, Rice, Pease, Butter, Oil, and divers other Provisions. The Inhabitants are generally either *Gusurattiens* or *Benjans*, being much addicted to Traffick, and very quick in their dealings. They make here the best Calico's of all sorts; and the Country abounds in Indigo, Granates, Hyacinths, Ame-

The Province of Cambaja.

The River Indus *is formerly also called* Sandus *and* Pagab, *for its five Branches.*

The Limits and Fertility of Cambaja.

Amethiſts, and divers others precious Commodities. According to *Cluver's* Computation *Cambaja* is 150 *German* Leagues long, and as many broad.

Baldæus.

Its Extent.

A Deſcription of the City of Cambaja, formerly a rich City, but ſomewhat decay'd ſince by the ill Conduct of the Moors.

The City of *Cambaja* (call'd the *Benjan Paradiſe*) lies according to the common Computation 16 Leagues to the Weſt of *Brochia*, ſeated at the Entrance of one of the largeſt Channels of the River *Indus*. About three Leagues thence on the oppoſite Shore is a great Village, inhabited by the Rebellious *Raſpoutes*, a perverſe Generation, living for the moſt part upon Rapine. This River is almoſt dry all the Winter, tho at high Tide it riſes ſeveral Fathoms deep, ſo that then Ships may come up to the very Walls of the City, where at low Tide it is fordable. This City is reckoned as big again as *Suratte*, being well built, and fortify'd with a triple Wall. It has three *Bazars*, or great Market-places, for the ſale of all ſorts of Merchandiſes, and twelve Gates, beſides that almoſt every Street has a peculiar Gate, which is ſhut up every night to prevent Diſorders: Its whole Circuit is about ſix or ſeven Engliſh Miles; and without the Gates are four very delicious large Ciſterns or Ponds, and fifteen Gardens, for the Diverſion of ſuch of the Inhabitants as are pleaſed to divert themſelves there with walking in the cool of the Evening. They are for the moſt part Pagans, and addicted to Traffick, eſpecially in all ſorts of Stuffs for clothing, which they tranſport to *Diu*, *Goa*, *Atchin*, *Mecha* and *Perſia*.

Deſcription of Amadabath.

Amadabath the Capital City of the Province of *Guſuratte*, lies 18 Leagues from *Cambaja*, about 23 ½ deg. Northern Latit. and conſequently directly under the Tropick of *Cancer*: It is ſeated in a great and moſt delightful Plain, juſt on the Bank of a very fine River; it is both ſtrong and populous, being fortified with a goodly Wall with round Turrets and twelve Gates.

The Streets are very broad, the Houſes very handſom, and the Pagan Temples ſtately built. In the Center of the City is the Caſtle, the Reſidence of the Governor, ſurrounded with a very high Wall, the Gates whereof are guarded by a certain Body of Troops, who let nobody paſs or repaſs without leave: This being formerly the ordinary Seat of their Kings. The Commodities found at *Amadabath* are Girdles, Turbants, Gold Tiſſues, Silk Stuffs, Satins, Damasks, Taffeties, Suchar, *Amſpien* or *Opium*, *Gummi Lacca*, *Borax*, preſerv'd Ginger, Mirabolans, Sal-Armoniack and Indigo. Under the Juriſdiction of *Amadabath* are 25 conſiderable Towns, and 2998 Villages.

The City of Suratte.

The City of *Suratte* is a place of great Traffick, both the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* having Factories here: It lies open to the Water-ſide, except that the Caſtle is well provided with Cannon brought from the Ship *Middleburgh*, which was loſt there 1617. But on the Land-ſide it is fortified by a Wall of Stone, the old Fortifications being only of Earth: It has no more than three Gates, but two Governors independent on one another, one of the Caſtle, the other of the City. Next adjacent to the Palace of the laſt ſtands the Cuſtom-houſe, where all Goods imported or exported pay 3 ½ *per Cent.* Cuſtom, except Gold and Silver, which pay only 2 *per Cent.*

Differences about the Cuſtoms.

Theſe Cuſtom-houſe Officers are very troubleſome and injurious to Strangers, and have often given great cauſe of Complaint to our Company, as will appear from the following Petition, and the *Mogul's* Patent (or *Firman*) granted to the ſaid Company, and dated the 15*th* day of the Month *Rammaſay*, in the 16*th* year of the King's Reign, and ſince that of *Mahomet* 1052.

The Dutch petition the Great Mogul.

"The *Dutch* are approach'd to the "Gates of your Majeſty's Court, ex- "pecting at the feet of your Majeſty's "Throne (whoſe Brightneſs is like that "of the Sun, and reaches to the Skies) "the happineſs of ſeeing the Eyes of the "greateſt Monarch, to offer their juſt "Complaints againſt the Officers of your "Majeſty at *Suratte*, who have been ex- "tremely troubleſome to them, in ex- "acting from them illegal Duties of their "Goods bought at *Agra* and *Amadabath*, "and thence brought to *Suratte*: They "humbly requeſt your Majeſty to ſend "your Orders by your *Duwan* or *Com- "miſſioner* to the Cuſtom-houſe Officers "at *Suratte*, with ſtrict Command to re- "gulate themſelves accordingly, as they "expect to be accountable for it to your "Majeſty.

The King did immediately diſpatch his Orders, that the Cuſtom-houſe Officers ſhould not take from the Commodities bought at *Agra* and belonging to the *Dutch*, from 10 to 12 *per Cent.* and thoſe bought at *Amadabath* 10 or 10 ½ *per Cent.* that they ſhould be oblig'd to reſt ſatisfied with the Bills of Loading given them by the *Dutch* Merchants, and exact no more Cuſtom under any other pretence: That furthermore all Commodities bought at *Brodera* and *Suratte* ſhould pay according

to

The City of
AMADABATH

SURATTE.

to the Price they were bought for, and that they ſhould avoid giving any juſt reaſon of complaint to the *Dutch*. But theſe Promiſes had not the deſired Effect, as will appear out of the next following Letter of Mr. *John van Teylingen* Preſident and Governor of the *Dutch* Factories in *Guſuratte*, *Indoſtan*, and *Mocha*.

Van Teylingen's Letter.

" WHereas by the manifold Exactions and Injuries, the robbing of the Factory of our Company, the Detention of *Daniel Maſſouw* Barber's Mate, and divers other enormous Proceedings; the Perſons in the Service of the Company, in the Empire of the Great *Mogul*, have received conſiderable Detriment from divers of the Great *Mogul*'s Officers (contrary to the intent of his *Firman*, or Letters Patents) which muſt needs tend to the great damage of the Company in general: It has, after mature deliberation, been thought expedient, by Mr. *Cornel. van der Lijn* Governor-General, and the reſt of the Members of the Council of the *Indies*, to redreſs the ſaid Affronts and Injuries by Force of Arms. The Yachts, the *Larck*, the *Sluice*, the *Lillo*, and the *Eight-Churches*, being equipped lately for that purpoſe, and to be join'd by divers other Ships from *Batavia*, we give the Command thereof, during my abſence from the Fleet, to the Head Factor *Gerard Pelgrim*, which however ſhall ceaſe that Minute, when I come aboard any one of theſe Ships in Perſon. To prevent all Diſorders, Rapine, and other Enormities, I do by theſe Preſents give a ſtrict Charge to all the Officers, of what degree ſoever, and to all the Soldiers and Seamen aboard theſe Veſſels, not to hurt the *Moors* either in their Lives or Eſtates (this being contrary to the Intention of the Council) but only to ſeize upon their Ships, Mony, and Goods, and to ſecure them, till Satisfaction be obtain'd by the Company upon their juſt Pretenſions. We therefore once more command all the Officers, Soldiers and Seamen, without exception, not to injure or rob (after the ſeizing of any of theſe Ships) the *Moors* in their Perſons or Goods, under the penalty of corporal puniſhment, and (according to the nature of the Crime) of the loſs of their Lives, as they will anſwer the ſame to the contrary at their peril.

Given at the *Dutch* Factory at *Suratte*, Feb. 10. 1649.

John van Teylingen.

The following Order was likewiſe directed to the Head Factor *Gerard Pelgrim*, and the Factor *Peter Ruttens*. *Baldæus*

" It being firmly reſolv'd in Council, the 25*th* of *Octob.* to proſecute with the utmoſt vigour the Deſign laid formerly by the Governour General and the Council of the *Indies* (which was delay'd by our long ſtay) with the firſt opportunity; the Yachts the *Sluice*, *Larck*, *Lillo*, and *Eight-Churches*, are choſen for that purpoſe: But two of them being now at *Mocha*, and the other two ordered to ſtay there the Winter at *Dabul*, we conſtitute the Head Factor Mr. *Gerard Pelgrim* Commodore over the ſaid Ships, as ſoon as they are rejoin'd aboard the *Larck*, or any other of theſe Ships he ſhall be pleaſed to chuſe, where he ſhall carry the Flag, with Authority to call on board the Council of War, when Occaſion requires. In his abſence, or ſeparation of the Ships, the Factor, *Petter Ruttens*, ſhall exerciſe the ſame Authority as *Gerard Pelgrim*, both which however ſhall ceaſe, with the arrival of the Preſident Mr. *John van Teylingen*. Whether the two beforementioned Yachts ſhall leave *Mocha* together or not, is not yet determined; but in the mean while we ſtrictly charge you, that ſo ſoon as you have notice that the *Chaſirovan* (a Ship of a vaſt bulk) or any of the other Ships belonging to *Suratte*, are preparing to depart, you ſet ſail ſome days before them, under pretence of being bound (according as we uſed to do) for *Gamron*. All which is to be underſtood, provided Matters be not brought to a happy concluſion before that time; for if that were, you have nothing to do but to proſecute your Voyage in good earneſt thither, unleſs you had a ſure proſpect of gaining conſiderably by your ſtay, and increaſing the price of your Cargo. For the reſt, it is to be your main concern, to take effectual care that none of the Great *Mogul*'s Ships, nay even ſuch as trade thither from *Diu*, eſcape your hands; and eſpecially to keep a watchful Eye over the *Chaſirovan*, which commonly ſails ſooner than the reſt, and has more ready Mony aboard. In caſe it ſhould happen (which we hope it will not) that the Yacht the *Eight Churches*, which is to return from *Gamron*, ſhould, by ſome Accident or other, be detain'd in her

Secret Orders to M. G. Pelgrim and P. Ruttens.

" Voyage,

Baldæus.

" Voyage, we have provided againſt it, " by diſpatching to the Commanders " thereof a Copy of theſe Orders for " their direction upon occaſion; which " after the return from their Voyage " they are to deliver ſealed up into your " cuſtody, where the ſame is to remain " till you ſet ſail again, which is to be " redelivered to them to ſerve for a ſure " direction, in caſe you ſhould be ſepa- " rated at Sea. Silence ought to be your " moſt peculiar care in this caſe, for fear " the Secret coming to the Ears of the " *Moors*, they ſhould ſtop the departure " of their Ships. The *Larck* and the " *Lillo*, and in default of thoſe the *Poſt*, " after their firſt appearance here, ſhall " be ſent to *Gamron*, whence they ſhall " ſail pretty late, as if bound for *Bata-* " *via*, but, under pretence of being una- " ble to proſecute their Voyage, come to " an anchor in the Road before *Dabul*, " from whence they ſhall ſail *Aug.* 15. " ſteering their Courſe directly for the Ri- " ver of *Suratte*; where they are to ſtay " till the arrival of the Preſident Mr. *John* " *van Teylingen* aboard them; and in the " mean while ſeize upon all the *Moors* " Veſſels coming from *Mocha*; yet ſo, " as not to commit any further Outrages " againſt them, except only to keep them " in ſafe cuſtody till the Company ſhall " have received Satisfaction from the " King *Chaſtidan*. So ſoon as they have " retaken a Veſſel, they ſhall take the " *Nachodas* Merchants and Seamen over " in their Ships, and keep them under a " good Guard, yet without any moleſta- " tion, rather ſhewing them all the " marks of Reſpect and Civility that " can be; and ſhall put as many Soldi- " ers and Seamen of ours aboard ſuch a " Ship as ſhall be thought ſufficient to " keep her: and Proclamation is to be " made, enjoining every body to abſtain " from doing the leaſt injury to the ſeized " *Moors*, either in their Perſons or Goods; " and Officers are to be appointed to ſee " the ſame put in execution. After we " have got all, or moſt of the *Mooriſh* " Veſſels into our hands, you ſhall take " care to embark all the *Facquiers* and " other looſe People in one Ship, and to " let them ſail their ways where they " pleaſe, they being not worth our keep- " ing. This done, you ſhall take the " firſt opportunity of fair Weather to " tranſport, firſt the ready Mony, and " afterwards the Merchandizes aboard " our Veſſels; but ſo, as that they be " well pack'd and ſeal'd up firſt, and ex- " act Inventory made, with the Names " or Marks of the reſpective Owners: " Each Parcel is to be mark'd with a pe- " culiar Letter; a Copy of which is to be " given to the Owners, and a written " Acknowledgment to be taken from the " *Nachodas* of what is thus taken, and to " be redelivered, in caſe Matters be ad- " juſted hereafter, that ſo every one may " know where to look for his own; the " Factor being to be careful in this Point " in the Tranſportation, as well as the " Maſter of the Ship in receiving, as " they will anſwer for the loſs at their " peril. The *Engliſh* Yacht coming from " *Mocha* you are to let paſs unmoleſted, " for weighty Reaſons, purſuant to the " Reſolution taken in Council the 14*th.* " The ſame is to be done in reſpect of all " *French*, *Daniſh*, and all other Ships in " amity with the States, provided they " don't attempt any thing upon the " *Moors* in your cuſtody; in which caſe " you ſhall defend your ſelves to the laſt " Extremity. Laſtly, If the Matter " could be ſo contriv'd, that our Veſſels " coming from *Mocha* might intercept " and ſeize the Ships of *Cambaja*, and " carry them to the River of *Surat-* " *te*, it would be a ſingular piece of Ser- " vice, and much haſten the Accommo- " dation. I conclude, wiſhing you " Health and Happineſs in your Voyage " and Undertaking, for your own Glory, " and the Intereſt of the Company.

Signed,

From the *Dutch* Factory at *Suratte*, Febr. 20. 1649.

Arent Barentſz.
John van Teylingen.
Jooſt Dirik.
Adrian van der Burgh.
Daniel van der Hagen.
Gerardo Pelgrim, and
Elias Boudaan.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Baldæus.

The Treaty carried on. What Articles were propoſed by the Dutch, *and agreed to by the King. His Patent or* Firman; *and Ratification of the Treaty.*

FOR fear of exaſperating the Great *Mogul* beyond redreſs, it was thought fit to diſpatch the following Letter to his Majeſty.

" Moſt Renown'd, moſt Potent, and " moſt Illuſtrious King, and Lord, fill'd " with Majeſty and Wealth, the bright- " eſt Princes among the moſt Powerful: " As an unjuſt War is deſervedly deteſt- " ed by all Nations, and ſeldom comes to " a happy Concluſion; ſo our being ob- " lig'd to act againſt your Majeſty (pur- " ſuant to the Command of our General, " and the Council of the *Indies*) is found- " ed upon very juſt and legal Pretenſi- " ons. Had your Officers thought fit to " treat us according to the Tenour of " your Majeſty's Patent, or *Firman*, gran- " ted to us, we ſhould never have at- " tempted to raiſe any Differences be- " twixt your Majeſty and us, much leſs " have had recourſe to open Hoſtilites. " But when we were forced to ſee our " Traffick, not only in this Place, but " alſo at *Bengale*, interrupted and ſpoil'd " by moſt injurious Monopolies (to the " great Detriment of the Company) " by intolerable Affronts, and refuſing " our juſt Requeſt, and humble Petiti- " ons, to have the two Fugitives, and " ſince circumciſed Servants of the Com- " pany, delivered into our hands; and " to have due reparation made for the " Damage ſuſtained by the Company in " the Robbery committed upon their " Factory: All theſe injurious Pro- " ceedings have obliged our Governor- " General, and the Council of the *In-* " *dies*, to have Recourſe to the Law of " Arms, to procure us reaſonable Satiſ- " faction; and having for this purpoſe " ſent us four Ships from *Batavia*, we " did the 12*th* and 16*th* of this Month, " ſeize your Majeſty's Ships the *Gen-* " *jawer* and *Sahabbi* (coming from *Mo-* " *cha*) and after having taken out of " them all the ready Mony they had a- " board, and underſtanding that the " ſaid *Genjawer* and *Sahabbi* belonged " properly to your Majeſty, we thought " fit (out of reſpect to your Perſon) to " have them carried by our Seamen into " the River, and under the Caſtle of *Su-* " *ratte*, not queſtioning but what we have " been forced to undertake upon this ac- " count for the maintaining of our Juſt " Rights, will meet with a favourable " conſtruction from your Majeſty. The " Mony ſeized by our Veſſels, ſhall not " ſuffer the leaſt diminution, but be kept " with all ſecurity, till ſuch time that " your Majeſty ſhall grant us a new Pa- " tent in due Form, purſuant to ſuch " Articles as we have Orders from our " Superiors to repreſent to your Maje- " ſty, and are as follows.

Article. propoſed by the Dutch to the Great Mogul.

' I. It is deſired that leave be given to ' build a Warehouſe for our own Uſe, ' either in or near the Square of the Ca- ' ſtle, where we may lay up ſafely our ' Merchandizes at the firſt hand, free ' from thoſe Diminutions and Loſſes we ' ſuſtained yearly in the *Alphandigo*, pay- ' ing exactly the uſual Cuſtoms; that ' done, we ſhall be at liberty to carry on ' our Traffick, as formerly, undiſturbed ' and unmoleſted.

The Anſwer. The Governour's Anſwer was, ' That ' either a Place or Houſe ſhould be grant- ' ed us juſt without the Caſtle, not far ' from the *Alphandigo*, for our proper uſe ' only.

' II. We deſire that our Traffick may ' be carried on without diſturbance at ' *Bengale*, and in the circumjacent Places, ' free from paying any Dutys, except ' what is paid uſually at *Pipeli* (the ' place where Goods are embark'd, pur- ' ſuant to the Patent formerly granted by ' his Majeſty, but contravened by the ' avaritious Governours.

Hereunto it was anſwered, ' That the ' Governour *Miermoſa* ſhould endeavour ' to obtain this Point from the King.

' III. Reſtitution was required of ſuch ' Sums of Mony as of late Years had been ' unjuſtly detained, both at *Suratte* and ' *Amadabath*, and full Satisfaction deſi- ' red for what Cuſtoms had been extor- ' ted from our Ships betwixt *Agra* and ' *Amadabath*, contrary to the expreſs ' Words of his Majeſty's Patent; the ' whole Sum amounting to 41479 *Ropias*.

' IV. His Majeſty was requeſted to ' iſſue his Orders for the full reſtitution ' of what Mony was taken out of our ' Factory at *Suratte*, and that a certain ' Sum (as his Majeſty ſhould direct) ' might be allotted in lieu of Satisfaction

Baldæus. ‘ for the Robbery committed upon the ‘ ſaid Factory, the murdering of the ‘ Company's Servants, and the Injuries ‘ and Affronts put upon us: The Sum of ‘ the Mony taken away from thence a- ‘ mounting to 66000 *Ropias*.

Unto theſe two Points the anſwer was made; ‘ That the reſtitution of what ‘ was taken from us, was a reaſonable ‘ Requeſt, but to give ſatisfaction, for ‘ that other Enormities were committed ‘ by Robbers (ſince fled from Juſtice) ‘ was not in their power; but if any of ‘ theſe Criminals could be taken, they ‘ ſhould be delivered into our hands.

‘ V. That for the future none of his ‘ Majeſty's Ships, or any others belong- ‘ ing to thoſe of *Suratte*, *Bengale*, or o- ‘ ther places, ſhould traffick to *Achin*, ‘ *Pera*, *Queda*, *Oedjang-Salang*, *Malac-* ‘ *ca*, &c. and in caſe they ſhould, they ‘ might be ſeized and declared as good ‘ Prizes by our Veſſels, by reaſon that the ‘ Company being then ingaged in a War ‘ againſt theſe places, were reſolved to ‘ block up their Rivers, and to keep ‘ all Foreigners from trafficking with ‘ them by Sea, till they have received ‘ entire Satisfaction at their hands.

‘ VI. It was deſired that his Majeſty ‘ Majeſty would deliver to us the (be- ‘ forementioned) two circumciſed Ser- ‘ vants of the Company; and if they ‘ were at preſent out of reach, to depo- ‘ ſit into our hands in lieu of them ‘ 400000 *Ropias*; which Sum ſhall be re- ‘ ſtored immediately after the delivery ‘ of theſe two Perſons.

The Anſwer was; ‘ That one of theſe ‘ circumciſed Fellows was retreated ma- ‘ ny Years before into *Perſia*, and the ‘ laſt died in his flight about eight ‘ Months before: But if they would have ‘ his Bones, they would endeavour to pro- ‘ cure them.

‘ VII. That if ever any of the Companys ‘ Servants ſhall run away hereafter, they ‘ ſhall not be protected, much leſs be cir- ‘ cumciſed; and in caſe any of the infe- ‘ rior Officers ſhould notwithſtanding ‘ this detain any of them (contrary to ‘ your Majeſty's knowledg) they ſhall be ‘ obliged to deliver the ſame to us.

‘ This Article was granted, provided ‘ they did not take refuge among the ‘ *Raſpoutes* then in rebellion againſt the ‘ *Mogul*.

‘ VIII. That Satisfaction ſhould be gi- ‘ ven for what Expences the Company ‘ had been forced to be at both by Sea ‘ and Land, ſince the Robbery committed ‘ upon their Factory.

‘ This Article was rejected, a general ‘ Satisfaction being promiſed already.

‘ IX. That for the future a ſufficient ‘ Guard ſhould be kept to protect the ‘ Servants and Goods of the Company ‘ from the like danger; and that in caſe ‘ any ſuch thing ſhould ever happen a- ‘ gain, the Governor ſhall be obliged ‘ to make ſatisfaction.

‘ It was promiſed that for the future a ‘ Guard ſhould be kept to ſecure the Com- ‘ pany againſt all danger.

‘ X. If our *Caffila*, or Caravan (which ‘ God forbid) ſhould be plundered by ‘ the way, that the Governour ſhall be ‘ obliged to find out the Goods; and if ‘ found, reſtore them to us, and in caſe ‘ of neglect, to make ſatisfaction for ‘ them.

It was anſwered; ‘ That we muſt ſue ‘ for a *Firman*, or Patent, on that ac- ‘ count, which would without queſtion ‘ be granted.

‘ XI. That in all the Citys, Towns and ‘ Teritories under his Majeſty's Juriſdic- ‘ tion, we ſhall be exempted from paying ‘ any Dutys, Cuſtoms, or Impoſitions, ‘ except the Cuſtoms at *Suratte* and *Bro-* ‘ *chia*; and in caſe any Mony ſhould be ‘ exacted from the Servants upon that ‘ account, the Mony ſhall be made good ‘ by his Majeſty's *Duwan*, or Commiſſio- ‘ ner, at *Suratte*.

‘ XII. That the Cuſtom payable from ‘ ſuch Goods as are to be exported, ſhall ‘ continue on the ſame foot as ſettled ‘ by the King's laſt *Firman*, or Patent.

‘ This Article was granted without the ‘ leaſt limitation.

‘ XIII. That the Cuſtoms of the Mer- ‘ chandizes imported, ſhall (as former- ‘ ly) be ſatisfy'd with Merchandizes ‘ each in its kind.

‘ This was alſo granted.

‘ XIV. That we ſhall be at liberty to ‘ diſpoſe and ſell our Cargo's and Goods ‘ where and when we pleaſe, without be- ‘ ing controuled therein by the Governor, ‘ or any other Merchant.

‘ This was likewiſe agreed to.

‘ XV. That no Governor, of what ‘ quality or degree ſoever, ſhall obſtruct ‘ us in the buying up what Commodities ‘ we have occaſion for, or employing of ‘ Brokers and other Servants for that ‘ purpoſe, ſuch as we judg may be moſt ‘ ſerviceable to us; neither ſhall they be ‘ taxed or otherwiſe moleſted on that ‘ ſcore.

It was anſwered; ‘ That doubtleſs his ‘ Majeſty would grant that Article, and ‘ that in the mean time no body ſhould

‘ in-

'intermeddle with the Traffick belonging to the Company.

'XVI. That no body of what degree 'or quality whatever ſhall pretend to 'obſtruct us in the ſending away of our 'Goods, or ſtop our *Caffilas* (Caravans) 'or Carts, and Camels thereunto belonging, much leſs to endeavour to detain 'the ſame after they have been hired.

'Unto this it was anſwer'd, that the 'King would doubtleſs grant this Re'queſt.

'XVII. In caſe of any Conteſts ariſing 'betwixt both the Nations, whereby 'Murder or Manſlaughter may enſue '(which God forbid) the Governors ſhall 'have power only to puniſh the Crimi'nal, if he be one of his Subjects; but if 'he belong to the Company, he is to be 'put into the hands of our Directory, in 'order to be puniſh'd according to the 'Laws of our Country; and if any of our 'People engage with any of the *Indian* 'Women, the ſame ſhall be deliver'd up 'to us to ſuffer condign Puniſhment.

'Unto this it was anſwer'd, that this 'Article muſt be referr'd to the King's 'Determination; but that further Satisfaction ſhould be given upon this Head 'to the *Dutch* Company at *Suratte*.

'XVIII. If by Tempeſts or other Ac'cident ſome of our Ships ſhould be 'ſtranded, or otherwiſe be loſt on theſe 'Coaſts, the Goods ſav'd by your Ma'jeſty's Subjects ſhall be reſtor'd to the 'Owners.

This was granted.

'XIX. That we ſhall be maintain'd and 'protected in the quiet enjoyment of the 'propagating and refining of the Salt'peter; and that we ſhall meet with no 'oppoſition from the Governors in tranſporting the ſame, or be burdened with 'new Exactions, as it happen'd two years 'before, when the Prince of *Zaatſchan* 'ſqueez'd 600 Ropias out of the Company.

This Article was refer'd to the King.

'XX. That ſuch as ſhall be injurious 'in words to any of our Nation, ſhall 'be puniſh'd by the Governor, in the 'preſence of the affronted Party, to pre'vent further Inconveniences, which o'therwiſe might ariſe from thence.

This Article being very juſt, was agreed to.

'XXI. That we ſhall have full liberty 'to keep and maintain the Yatch we al'ways have had upon the River of *Su'ratte*, and (in caſe this becomes uſeleſs) 'to build another, and uſe it as former'ly, for our Diverſion, or other occa'ſions.

'We don't in the leaſt doubt, but that 'your Majeſty, according to your wonted *Baldæus.* 'Bounty, will take into ſerious Conſide'ration this our humble, but nevertheleſs juſt and equitable Requeſt; it being our conſtant wiſh, that matters may be brought to a ſpeedy Accommodation: and we promiſe that immediately on the receipt of your Ma'jeſty's *Firman*, or Letters Patent, we 'will diſcharge what Mony and Perſons 'are in our Cuſtody, and carry on our 'Traffick in your Majeſty's Dominions, 'as before: But in caſe your Majeſty '(which we hope not) ſhould refuſe 'our Petition, we deſire notice may be 'given us thereof, that we may in time '(with your Majeſty's Conſent) remove 'our Effects, and quit your Territories; 'it being our firm Reſolution not to ſtay 'here, unleſs your Majeſty will be pleaſed to grant our juſt Requeſt; notwithſtanding which we live in hopes of a 'favourable Anſwer from your Majeſty's 'Goodneſs.

Unto this was affix'd another Paper, as follows.

Moſt Potent King!

'JUST upon the Concluſion of our 'humble Petition, the Deputies im'power'd by *Miermoſa* the Governor, to 'treat with us concerning the Differences 'on foot betwixt us, *viz. Mierſia Mamoeth*, '*Hagie Siasbeecq*, *Zabandaar*, and ſeveral 'other Perſons of Note, have promiſed us 'to give ſatisfaction for the Mony (purſuant to your Majeſty's Orders) taken 'from us, to ſtop all Traffick from *Ben'gale*, and this place, *&c.* to *Aetchin*, '*Pera*, *Queda*, and *Oetjang-Salang*, &c. 'till the Differences betwixt us and thoſe 'Places be brought to a Concluſion; 'concerning which we expect further 'Orders from our Governor-General of 'the *Indies*. It was further promiſed us, 'that a Place ſhould be aſſign'd us for 'the building of a Warehouſe near the '*Alphandigo*; which as well as the other 'Articles being confirm'd to us by Oath 'of the before-mention'd Deputys, we 'were on our ſide willing to releaſe the 'Goods ſeiz'd by our Ships, which we 'have done accordingly, and reſettled 'our Traffick at *Suratte*, as before: 'All which we hope will not be unacceptable to your Majeſty; humbly begging 'your Majeſty to be pleaſed to take our 'further Propoſals into Conſideration, 'and to favour us with your Royal *Firman*, to avoid all further Differences.

aldæus.

'and to establishish a mutual, firm and everlasting Correspondence betwixt us, which we shall very religiously observe (as long as your Majesty's Governors don't act contrary to the said *Firman*) without the least interruption on our side. We wish your Majesty a prosperous and long Life, and Victory over your Enemies.

Dated in your Majesty's City of *Suratte*, 28 *Sept.* in the year 1649 after the Birth of Christ.

The King's Letter was thus.

The King *Chaasjan* sends the following Directions to *Miersia Arep* his Governor of *Suratte*.

Let- Fir-

'JUst as the *Sajetes* are esteem'd among the Saints, so is *Miersia Arep* respected in his Family. I would have you rest secure of my Royal Favour: Besides what Dignities you were possess'd of before, we have thought fit to bestow upon you the Reward of *Paans Zeddi*, and 300 Horses for your Services, in the Government of the open Country, and since the departure of *Miermosa* have put you into his place; and for the better maintaining of your Grandeur, have allotted you the Royal Revenues of both your Governments, in the Administration of which you shall be very vigilant and courteous; towards the chief Merchants you shall comport your self very obligingly, and give a helping hand to all the foreign Nations trafficking there, as tending to the no small increase of our Treasury. Your Authority shall not extend to exact more than the usual Customs, even of the meanest Persons, but you shall act in every thing as a Man of Honour and Conscience: What Rarities you happen to meet with coming from foreign places, you shall (like your Predecessor *Miermosa*) send to my Daughter *Sahebbejen*, who twice a month pays her Respect before my Throne; whatever is extraordinary fine and rare, let it be valued, and purchase it of the Owner accordingly; but if you can't agree, send him hither, that he may be satisfied in his just Demands. So soon as my Royal *Firman* comes to your hands, you shall endeavour to list 10 Christian Constables, well versed in their Art, into our Service, and you shall spare no Cost to have some great Cannon cast for our use. We have been inform'd, that about two years ago the *Dutch* Factory was robb'd of 50000 *Ropias*, for which they have seiz'd divers Sums of Mony belonging to our Merchants, and coming in their Ships from *Mocha*, and have thereupon declar'd their Sentiments to the Governour *Miermosa*; it is therefore that I command you to oblige the *Hollanders* to restore the said Mony to the Owners, who have neither the least share or knowledg in what relates to their loss: And in case you should not be able to bring things to an agreement with the *Hollanders*, we command you to demand the said Sums of Mony of *Miermosa* and *Ommerchan*, and pay the same to the said Merchants (whose Effects are seiz'd) in recompence of their Loss.

He makes it less than it is.

These are the Contents of the King's Letter, as it was translated from the *Persian*.

CHAP. III.

The *Chom* of *Suhali*, or the Road before *Suratte*. Traffick of the *Dutch*, *English*, *Moors* and *Portugueses* to *Suratte*, *Gusuratte*, *Brochia*, *Goga*, *Pattepatane*, *Mangerol*, *Brodera*, and other places.

THE City *Suratte* did (pursuant to their antient Records) pay a yearly Tribute of 2000000 *Mamoidys*, or 1000000 Livres, or 400000 Crowns, to their King *Achabaar*, one *Ganna Ganna* being then their Governour, who had 800 Villages under his Jurisdiction. All about *Suratte* are abundance of very pleasant and stately Summer-Seats, and magnificent Burying-places (a thing much in request among the *Moors*) besides several large Cisterns, or rather Ponds, fac'd with Freestone. Among the rest one deserves particularly to be taken notice of, as having no less than a hundred Angles of 28 yards each, with Stone Steps to lead you down into the Cistern; in the midst of which stands the Tomb of the Founder.

About

About an hour and a half to the North from the Mouth of the River of *Suratte* (named *Tap-gyly*) is a Road, where Ships may ride at anchor near a ridg of Sand-banks, which, together with part of the Continent, breaks the force of the Winds. This Road, commonly call'd *Chom Subali*, or *Sualicom*, lies at 21 deg. 50 min. North Latitude, extending from North-East to North, and again South-West to South: The entrance of it is but narrow, and at high Water not above 7, but at low Water scarce 5 Fathoms deep, with a hard sandy bottom: The North-North-East, and South-South-West Winds make here the highest Tides. The Harbour of *Subali* is not above a Musket-shot broad: The South-South-West Winds make this Road unsafe, the Land-Shelves lying then almost dry. The *English* settled their Factory there, 1609. and the *Dutch* 1616. who carry their Merchandizes upon Waggons drawn by Oxen from the said Road 4 Leagues to the City.

The Chom *of* Subali.

Traffick of Suratte.

It is to the Settlements of those two Nations, *Suratte* owes its chief increase in Trade, many rich Merchants and Artisans having been drawn thither since that time, who send their Commodoties thence by the *Red-Sea* to *Arabia*, *Aden*, *Mocha*, *Hideda*, *Juda*, *Mecca*, *Chibiry*, *Catziny*, *Doffer*, and *Souakin* (in *Ethiopia*) consisting in fine and coarse *Indian*, *Gusuratte*, *Decan*, and *Bengale* Stuffs and Cloths, Callicoes, Indigo, Sugar, Gums, Ginger, Tobacco, Wheat, Rice, Butter, and other Provisions, in which this Country abounds. Besides that, two or three of the King's Ships trade into these Parts, and transport certain precious Commodities belonging to some peculiar Merchants and Persons of the first Rank; these are generally obliged to the Company, for furnishing them with some able Seamen and Constables (the *Moors* being but ill versed in these things) especially while they were at enmity with the *Danes*.

One of the Kings Ships, named *Saby*, arrived here 1618. in its return from the *Red-Sea*; the Cargo whereof consisted in Coral, Camlets, Sattins, Velvets, Woollen and Linen Cloths, Tin, Quick-silver, Cinaber, Leather, Saffron, Slaves, (both Black and White) Gum Arabic, Aloes of *Socotora*, Amber, Civet, *Sanguis Draconis*, Myrrh, Raisins, Almonds, Dates, Coffee-Berries, and about six or seven hundred Passengers returning from *Mahomet*'s Tomb at *Mecha* and *Medina*; the whole valued at 2500000 *Ropias*, each *Ropia* being about half a Rix-Dollar.

The Value of a Ropia.

These Ships set sail in *March* and *April* for the *Red-Sea*, and return in *September* or *October*; they seldom spend above 25 days in their passage. The Inhabitants of *Goa*, *Dabul*, *Bassain*, *Daman* and *Diu*, do also send their Ships to *Mocha* and some other places in the *Red-Sea*; and the *Benjans* and *Armenians* used to come thence to *Suratte* in their light Ships loaden with all sorts of Trifles, which they exchange for Wheat, Linen, Rice, and Coffee-Berries.

Baldæ

Traffic the Re Sea.

Towards the latter end of the *Mousson*, *viz.* in *March* and *April*, abundance of *Malabars* resort hither: these being mortal Enemies of the *Portugueses*, are commonly well arm'd with Fire-locks and Scimeters, and formerly used to be very mischievous to them. The Commodities they bring to sale here, are coarse Sugar, Cardamon, Pepper, and *Cayr* (of which they make Cables and Ropes) and Coco-Nuts.

The bars *mies the* P gueſe

Formerly the Inhabitants of *Suratte* used to send yearly one or two Ships in *May* or *June* (when the *Portugueſe* Ships were in harbour) to *Achin*, *Tanasseri*, *Queda*, and the *Maldive* Islands, laden with Stuffs, and Cloths, and Callicoes; and return'd with Pepper, Camphire, Cloves, Nutmegs, Mace, Sandel-wood, Porcelain, *Chineſe* Silks (brought thither by those of *Malacca*) Tin, Benzorn, Elephants Teeth, and Coconuts, the last being almost the only product of the *Maldive* Isles.

The Men in Power here are generally very haughty and fierce; and tho sufficiently curb'd by the King's absolute Sway, yet by reason of the distance of the Provinces from his Residente, commit many Enormities; his Territories bordering upon *Persia*, *Auwa*, the River *Ganges*, and *Bengale*, thence to *Decan*, and to the West by the Sea.

The Province of *Gusuratte* (in which all the beforementioned Citys lie) extends in length from South to North; it begins at *Damana*, and reaches 40 *Cos* beyond *Amadabath*, bordering upon the Country of *Pathane* inhabited by Pagans, so that its whole length is 180 *Cos*, or 90 *Dutch* Leagues: to the East it borders upon the Country of *Parta Basia*, or at least within 40 *Cos* or 20 Leagues of it, extending further Eastward for three days journey towards *Amadabath*, and to the West to the Sea, and the Kingdom of *Suadi*, which is divided from *Persia* by a great Desart. It was a most fruitful and populous Country, before it was reduced by the *Great Mogul*.

Abou

Baldæus. About 12 Leagues to the North of *Suratte* lies the City of *Brochia* about 9 or 10 Leagues from the Sea, and 21 deg. 56 min. upon the River *Nardabath*, which coming down by *Decan* and *Mandouw*, affords a good Paſſage for Ships, about half way from the Sea towards *Brochia*, the paſſage being ſtopt up there by a Sand-bank, which has not above 9 or 10 foot Water. The ſituation of this City is both very convenient and pleaſant, upon a Hill, being ſurrounded by a ſtrong ſtone Wall: This place is famous for its Manufactories of Linen and Cloths, of which they make more here than in any other place of the *Indies*; and they have the beſt way of whitening the firſt. The *Malabars* uſed formerly to come hither every Year with 9 or 10 Ships. The *Dutch* and *Engliſh* have had their Factories here a conſiderable time ago. Its Inhabitants are for the moſt part *Benjans*, who are very expert in managing the Linen Manufactury: The two Suburbs of the City are chiefly inhabited by Callico-weavers and Merchants; *Brochia* is reckoned to contain 87 Villages in its Territories, the Country round about being all low Grounds, except that about five or ſix Leagues to the South-Eaſt the Mountains of *Vindat* have their beginning, which are very rich in *Achatſtens*. All Merchandizes paſſing through *Brochia* pay 2 *per Cent.* Cuſtom.

The City of Brochia.

Goga is a ſmall City ſeated in the Bay of *Cambaja*, where it grows ſo ſtreight, that it rather reſembles a River than an Arm of the Sea: It has neither Walls nor Gates to the Land-ſide, but is defended by a ſtone Wall towards the Sea. Here all the Ships deſigned for *Arabia*, and the Southern parts (by the Merchants of *Cambaja* and *Amadabath*) are careen'd and victuall'd, there being a ſafe Road here, tho ſomewhat ſhallow: Here alſo the *Portugueſe* Convoys uſed to keep their ſtation, to expect the coming of their Merchantmen.

There are beſides theſe ſeveral other Places of leſs note belonging to this Province, as *Pattapatane*, *Mangerol* (mentioned by ſome under other Names) the Inhabitants whereof live upon Husbandry, and managing of Cotton; *Brodera* an inland Town, inhabited by Husbandmen and Clothiers; the Company uſed to keep ſome Factors there, to buy up coarſe Cloth for the *Arabians* and *Ethiopians*. Not to mention here its Fortifications, Gardens, Tombs, &c.

Mamadabath was for its pleaſant ſituation ſometimes honoured with the Reſidence of its Kings, but is ſince come to decay to that degree, that it is no more than a poor Village now. We will alſo make mention only of *Nariau*, *Waſſet* (a very antient Caſtle) *Iſſempour*, *Batona*, and their Products, ſuch as Indigo, Saltpeter, *Borax*, *Aſa Fœtida*, *Amſion* or Opium, *Gummi Lacen*, and divers other Commodities.

But before we leave the Province of *Guſuratte*, and take our way thence over *Diu*, *Daman*, &c. to *Goa*, and ſo to the *Malabars*; we muſt ſay ſomething of its Traffick. It is beyond all diſpute that the Traffick of *Suratte*, and adjacent Places, is of great conſequence, provided there be no want of ready Mony, and the management thereof be committed to Perſons of underſtanding. I remember that the College of XVII give theſe following By-rules to their Factors: To inform themſelves of the Conſtitution and Manners of the Inhabitants, what Commodities are vented, and beſt to be vented there; who, and how potent our Enemies are; what Religion and Coin is moſt regarded, and the true ſituation of the Place where they ſettle, in reſpect to its Northern or Southern Latitude. Certain it is, that the Inhabitants of the Province of *Guſuratte* are a cunning and ſettled Generation, who muſt therefore be managed with dexterity, and much reſervedneſs, mix'd with a becoming gravity and outward ſplendor, wherewith theſe People are much taken, yet without ever attempting to lord it over them, a thing which after has proved detrimental, if not deſtructive to the Undertakers. It is to the wiſe Conduct of our Forefathers that we are obliged for the Eſtabliſhment and Improvement of our Traffick at *Suratte*; where our Factory was no ſooner ſettled, but we ſent from thence 1624. *Jan.* 20. our firſt Ship call'd the *Heuſden*, along the Coaſt of *Melinde* and *Soffala*, and thence to the *Cape of Good Hope*, and ſo to *Holland*.

Traffick of Guſuratte.

This was follow'd the ſame Year, 12 *March*, by another call'd the *Peuca*, but was forced to winter on the Coaſt of *Coromandel*. Theſe were follow'd 1625. *April* 23. by the Ship the *City of Dort*, and the *Weſop* Yacht, but were obliged to winter in the Iſle of St. *Maurice*. In the Year 1626. the following Ships were ſent to *Holland*, taking their way through the South Sea, *viz.* The *Golden Lion*, *Walcheren*, and *Orange*. 1628. The *City of Dort* was ſent thence to *Holland* through the Straits of *Madagaſcar*, along the Coaſt of *Fuſſalia*.

Our

1 A Madre de Deus
2 S. Joseph
3 Rod to Dangin
4 S. Doms
5 N. Sig. de Monte
6 S. Amara
7 S. Bras
8 ye Wood market
9 Grēd Fish mark.
10 ye Pub. Waigh. Pla.
11 Vice Roy's Pallace
12 Vice Roy's Piazza
13 Galleys laidup
14 Timber wharf
15 S. Catharyns
16 S. Francis= market
17 S. Marco
18 ye Exchange
19 Misericordia
20 N. S. de Serrai
21 Terros dos Gallos
22 Rua d N. S. d monte
23 S. Paulo
24 S. Thomæ nouo
25 Way to S. Thom.
26 Hosp. dos pop.
27 Archiopis. Pal.
28 N. S. da Graça
29 S. Antho. Place
30 N. S. de Lu
31 S. Andrews
32 S. Mathew
33 S. John Baptist
34 S. Laurence
35 N. Signora de Guadalupa
36 S. Anna
37 S. M. Magdalena
38 S. John Evang.
39 S. Peter
40 N. Signora de Ribando
41 ye Custom house
42 ye Publick hall
43 Dm.s de Pangin
Os Reys magos

GOA
GOA
1 A Madre de Deus
2 S. Joseph
5 N. Sig. do Monte
6 S. Amaro
7 S. Bras
8 ye Woodmarket
11 Vice Roys Pallace
13 Gallerys landing
14 Timber wharf
15 S. Catharyns
16 S. Francis market
18 ye Exchanger
19 Misericordia
20 N.S. de Serras
23 S. Paulo
27 Archbisp. Pal.
28 N.S. da Graça
30 N.S. de Luz
32 S. Mathew
33 S. John Baptist
35 N. Signora de Guadalupe
36 S. Anna
37 S. M. Magdalena
38 S. John Evang.
39 S. Peter
41 ye Custom house
42 ye Publick hall

Our *Dutch* Veſſels generally arrive here from *Batavia* about the end of *Auguſt*, in *October*, or beginning of *November*, and ſometimes towards the middle of *December*: The *Dutch* Factors at *Suratte* taking always care to ſend their Ships into *Perſia* in *January*, or about the middle of *February* at fartheſt, that they may be at *Batavia* before the end of *March*. *Baldæus*

CHAP. IV.

Of what conſequence the Traffick of Suratte *is. A particular Deſcription of the City of* Mocha, *and of its peculiar Cuſtoms. The City of* Agra, *and its Strength. The Deſcent of the Great* Mogul, *his Pomp and Riches.*

OF what Conſequence the Traffick of *Suratte* is to the *Dutch*, they have been ſufficiently made ſenſible by their Factors ever ſince 1616. The chief Commodities to be vented here, are, Lead, Quick-ſilver, Cinabar, Ivory, Tin, Copper, Cumeta's, Cloves, Nutmegs, Mace, Pepper, Porcelain, *&c.* And this Traffick is the more conſiderable in reſpect of the Communication it maintains with our other Factories in thoſe parts, with *Agra*, *Mocha*, and divers other places upon the Coaſt of the happy *Arabia*, where our Traffick ſeems to be well eſtabliſh'd, provided we take care to live in good Correſpondence with thoſe Nations, which muſt be maintain'd by all poſſible means, by avoiding ſuch things as tend to the Diſſolution thereof. Amongſt theſe the ſeizing of the *Mooriſh* Ships has ſeveral times brought our Traffick into no ſmall Jeopardy, as it happen'd 1621. when our Ships the *Samſon* and *Weſos* having made Repriſals upon ſome *Mooriſh* Veſſels, our Trade into *Arabia* was quite interrupted, and likely to have been quite loſt. And we run the ſame danger 1628. after the Yacht the *Grottenbroeck* had taken a Ship of *Guſuratte* upon the Coaſt of *Coromandel*; and tho our late Seizure happen'd not to prove much to our diſadvantage, yet can't we at all times promiſe our ſelves the ſame ſucceſs, it being certain, that tho the *Moors* court our Friendſhip, yet are they on the other hand very ſtubborn, and not eaſily reconcil'd.

Some Remarks upon the Traffick in theſe parts.

Another thing abſolutely requiſite for the carrying on of the Trade here, is, the King's *Firman*, or Patent, to keep the avaritious Governours of *Cambaja*, *Suratte*, *Brochia*, and other places, in awe; beſides, that the *Portugueſe* Prieſts are always buſy to create an ill Opinion of us in the *Moors*: They muſt be carefully watch'd in their Meaſures and Weights, without which they will play you the ſame Game as *Godjaniſan* and *Godjaaſſan* did many years ago to Sir *Henry Middleton*, an *Engliſh* Knight, who put them in Irons aboard his Ship till they had given him full ſatisfaction. §

Our Traffick to *Mocha* is likewiſe of great Conſequence to us: *Mocha* is ſeated in the *Happy Arabia*, at the entrance of the *Red Sea* at 13 deg. 28 min. Northern Latitude: It is of a conſiderable extent, without any Walls, in a barren ground, but well built with red and blue Stones, the Houſes flat on the top like thoſe of *Conſtantinople*; it has three very fine Pagodes, or *Pagan* Temples, two whereof have no Steeples, the third, in the midſt of the City, being adorn'd with a very high Steeple. At the North end ſtands a ſmall Caſtle like a Redoubt built, of blue Stone, for the Defence of the Harbour, 1612. *A Deſcription of Mocha.*

Mocha was about 90 or 100 years ago no more than a Village inhabited by Fiſhermen; but ſince its Reduction by the *Turks*, is ſo encreaſed by degrees, that it is one of the chief Places on that Coaſt now; the Traffick of the *Indian* Ships that uſed to come to an Anchor at *Aden* (formerly a great Trading City) being transferr'd to *Mocha*, by reaſon of the Caravans which come thither with more conveniency at certain times of the year. Its Inhabitants are *Turks*, *Arabians*, *Benjans* and *Jews*: Here is conſtantly a great concourſe of People from the beginning of *March* to the middle of *September*; about which time the great Ship call'd *Manſouri* (which is kept by the *Turkiſh Sultan* for the Tranſportation of the richeſt Commodities from the farthermoſt parts of the *Red Sea* hither) arrives here, its Cargo being generally eſteem'd at 2500000 or 3000000 Reals, and conſiſting in Pieces of Eight, Golden Ducats, Italian Golden Tiſſues, Camlets, Saffron, Quick-ſilver, and divers other Commodities, beſides Slaves of *Its Encreaſe.*

The Trade of Mocha.

of

of both Sexes taken in the *Levant*, or *Baldæus.* thereabouts, being generally *Grecians*, *Hungarians*, or of the Iſle of *Cyprus*; of all which they pay 10 *per Cent.* Cuſtom. The ſame Ship ſails back again the firſt of *January*, laden with Spices, Indigo, fine Callico's, Turbants, and ſuch like *Indian* Commodities.)

Beſides this, there comes every year in *March* a *Caffila* or *Caravan*, conſiſting commonly of 1600 Camels, the Merchants being for the moſt part *Turks*, *Arabians* and *Armenians*; theſe come by the way of *Aleppo* and *Alexandria* hither, and ſpend commonly two Months in their whole Journy, becauſe they travel not above three or four *Dutch* Leagues in a day. They bring along with them twiſted Silk, Gold Wire, red Coral, Cinabar, Saffron, Myrrhe, divers ſorts of ſmall Wares, Needles, Spectacles, Knives, Sciſſars, Looking-glaſſes, *&c.* This *Caravan* leaves the place again in *December*, loaden with all ſorts of *Indian* Commodities, and thus ſpends near a twelve month in their whole Journy.

Caravans over Aleppo and Alexandria.

At *Cayro* you ſee a vaſt multitude of Pilgrims towards the beginning of the year, who take the conveniency of this *Caravan* to travel to *Mocha*, eight Leagues from whence lies *Medina*, where is the Tomb of *Mahomet*, which is thus yearly viſited by betwixt 30000 and 40000 Pilgrims.

Pilgrims going to Mocha.

Mocha has been ſo rich for many years paſt, that in Cuſtoms and Taxes it pays no leſs than 200000 Reals, or Pieces of Eight every year to the *Grand Signior*, being one of the largeſt and moſt conſiderable places under the Juriſdiction of the Baſſa of *Yemak*. The Governour of the City ſits ſometimes in Perſon at the Cuſtom-houſe viſiting the Packs and Cheſts, he having a certain allowance out of every Cheſt or Pack. All *Indian* Ships coming to an Anchor here are oblig'd to pay, beſides the ordinary Cuſtoms, Anchorage-mony, according to their Bulk, from 10 to 50 Reals, which with ſome other Exactions makes the whole amount to 15 *per Cent.* The *Turks* here have alſo another Invention of ſqueezing ſome Mony out of the *Mooriſh Nachodes*, or Officers of the Ships; for the Governor having ſummon'd them immediately after their arrival to appear in his Preſence, they are conducted thither in great State, attended by his Drums, Pipes, *&c.* and being reconducted to their Lodgings, the Clothes are taken away again. The ſame is repeated afterwards juſt before their departure, when they are reconducted to their Boats; and their Clothes being taken off again, each Officer is oblig'd to pay for this mock Dreſs 20 or 25 Reals each time.

Riches of Mocha.

Anchorage-mony.

No ſooner are the *Mooriſh* Ships come into the Roads after they have dropt their Anchor, but they muſt carry their Rudder and Sails aſhore, and unload the whole Cargo of the Ship (whether they ſell it or not) of which they are oblig'd to pay the full Cuſtoms. After they are quite unloaden, they give a Signal with a Cannon for the Governor or his Deputies to come aboard, to ſee whether any thing be left behind; and then they have liberty to ſell.

Rudder and Sails to be brought aſhore.

In the Spring the *Portugueſes* come hither with their Ships from *Goa*, *Goga*, and other places; their Cargo is commonly Indigo, Sarcaa, Callico's, Sail-cloth, all ſorts of *Guſuratte* Stuffs and Clothing, Tobacco, Rice, and Medicines; moſt of which Commodities are ſold to the *Turky* Caravans, except the Rice and Tobacco, which is conſum'd in the Country. They carry back Reals or Pieces of Eight, Golden Ducats, a certain Root uſed by the *Indians* in dying red. A little before, or about the ſame time, uſed alſo to come to *Mocha* the Ships of *Daman*, *Cambaja* and the *Malabar* Coaſt, loaden with Pepper, Clothings of *Cambaja* and *Coromandel*, *Allegias*, *Taffacelas*, red and white *Caſſen*, red *Jetas*, *Canekyns*, *Baſlas*, fine Turbants, white and blue Girdles, painted Callico's, Rice, Tobacco, coarſe and fine Porcelain, in lieu of which they carry back Horſes, Raiſins, Almonds, Camlets, Elephants Teeth of *Soffala*, red Roots for dying, which grow only in *Arabia*, *Chauru* or Coffee-berries. Beſides theſe, the Inhabitants of *Achin*, of *Paty*, and other places on the Coaſt of *Melinda*, trade hither; they commonly ſet ſail from home in *February*, or beginning of *March*, and return from *Mocha* about *Auguſt*, to take the conveniency of the *Mouſſon*.

Truffick of the Portugueſes at Mocha.

The want of good Water and Fuel, which the Ships much purchaſe here at a dear rate, is a great defect in *Mocha*: However, not far from the City lies a ſmall Iſle, where the *Engliſh* uſed to lay up and careen their Ships; here you may have Proviſions for old Clothes in abundance, as likewiſe Fuel and Water enough; whence it is evident that the Trade of *Suratte*, *Agra*, *Mocha* and *Libiry* (a City ſeated on the Red Sea at 14 deg. 30 min. fortified with four round Baſtions, and adorn'd with three Temples) is one of the moſt conſiderable in thoſe parts;

Water and Fuel ſcarce at Mocha.

parts; as the *Engliſh* have found by Experience.

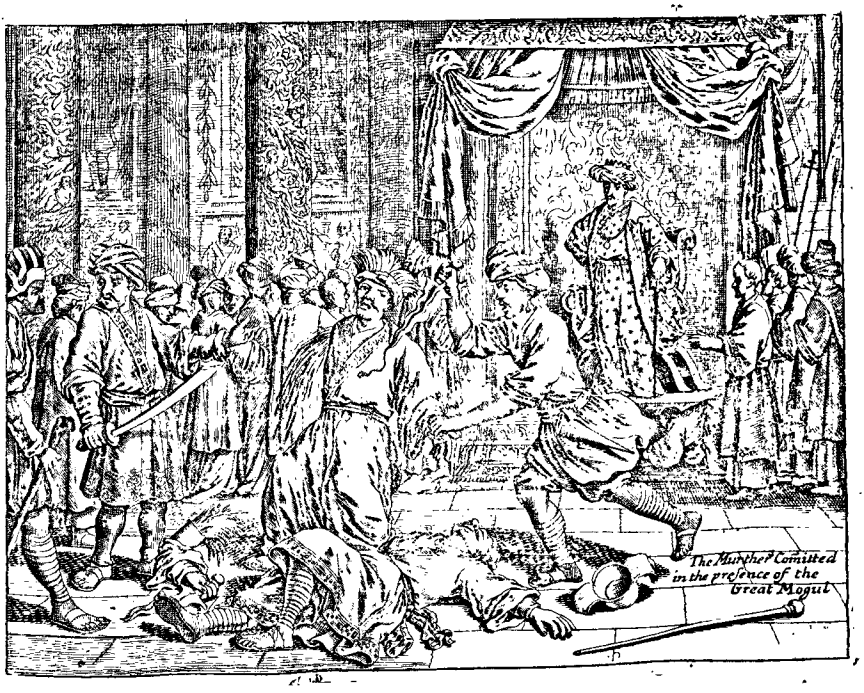
The City and Caſtle of Agra.

But before we take quite our leave of *Suratte*, and the adjacent Territories, we muſt ſay ſomething alſo concerning the City and Caſtle of *Agra*. This Caſtle, the ordinary Reſidence of the *Great Mogul*, is one of the moſt noble Structures of the Eaſt, ſeated upon the Banks of the River *Jemeni*, fortified with a ſtrong Wall of red Stone, with large and deep Ditches, Draw-bridges, and four Gates. Here is alſo kept the King's Treaſury, and the whole Court, or General Aſſembly of the Great Men of the Empire, who oftentimes are not refrain'd by the Abſolute Authority of their Monarch, from committing moſt barbarous Enormities.

Murders committed in the preſence of the King.

Thus it happen'd *Auguſt* 4. 1644. in the Evening after Sun-ſet, when all the Perſons of Quality uſed to appear in the *Goſalchanna* to ſalute the King; among the reſt, *Raja Ammerſing* (a Commander over 5000 Horſe, who had been abſent ſome days by reaſon of his Indiſpoſition) making his appearance there, was ask'd by *Sillabatchan* the King's chief *Bakia*, why he had not appear'd there in ſeveral days? He anſwer'd him, That he had been prevented by his Indiſpoſition; wherewith the other being not ſatisfied, gave *Raja* ſome opprobious words, which ſo exaſperated him, that without more ado he run *Sillabatchan* with his Scymeter thro the Body, laying him dead upon the gound. Another Lord named *Galichan*, ſeeing the other murder'd in the King's ſight, cut almoſt off the Arm of *Raja*, and another Gentleman, the Son of *Raja Rittelda*, diſpatch'd him quite. The King ſeeing this Tragical Spectacle, gave immediately Orders that the Body of *Sillabatchan* ſhould be carried to his Houſe in order to his Burial; but that the Body of *Raja Ammerſing* ſhould be thrown into the River: but ſcarce were they got with the Body without the Gate to execute the King's Command, when ſome of the *Rasboutes* (a rebellious Crew) who had ſerv'd under him, ſeeing their Commander's Body drag'd thus along, did fall upon the King's Servants, and kill'd above thirty of them, among whom was the King's Scepter-bearer; ſo that if the King would ſee his Orders put in Execution, he was oblig'd to ſend for conſide-

Baldæus.



rable Force to protect them againſt the *Baldæus*, *Rasboutes*.

Agra has four Gates, one on the North-ſide, cover'd by ſtrong Works; the ſecond on the Weſt-ſide, where is the Market-place, and the Royal Court of Judicature; the third on the South-ſide leads to the Royal Palace, being always chain'd up to prevent any body from paſſing through it on Horſe-back, except the King and his Children: The fourth faces the River, where the King every day ſalutes the Sun, and about Noon ſees the Engagements of Elephants, Lions, and other wild Beaſts.

The City of *Agra* therefore is now the Capital City (as *Labor* was formerly) of that part of the *Indies* on this ſide of the *Ganges*, which is under the Juriſdiction of the *Great Mogul*. The Caſtle is ſaid to have been founded by King *Accabar* (deſcended from the Great *Tamerlan*) after the Conqueſt of *Guſuratte*.

Wealth and Strength of the Mogul. I will not pretend to give you an exact account of the Wealth of the *Mogul*, but leave you to gueſs at his Strength by the Forces he brought into the Field 1630. againſt *Chasjaan*, which conſiſted in 144500 Horſe, and 5000 Elephants; theſe laſt the *Mogul* alſo uſes for his Diverſions, and he is often ſeen in great State on the back of an Elephant richly accoutred, attended by a great number of Horſe. When theſe Elephants are to engage againſt one another before the King, they pay their Reverence by bending their Knees, and ſhaking their Trunks to the King; which done, they fall on with a great deal of fierceneſs; but as ſoon as they are hotly engag'd, certain Perſons are appointed to part them; which done, all Enmity ceaſes betwixt them, they touch one another with their Trunks, and are fed with Sugar Reeds, and *Arack*, or Strong-waters.

Combat of the Elephants.

As to the Wealth of the *Great Mogul*, the ſame appears in its Luſtre on certain Feſtival days: The New-year's Feaſt kept on the day of the firſt New-Moon in *March*, which laſts eighteen days. On the young Prince's Birth-day every body brings his Offerings to the King, who in his turn makes Preſents to his Courtiers, beſtows new Places and Dignities upon ſuch as have deſerv'd well, and augments their yearly Salaries. The People flock on that day to the Queen's Palace (if ſhe be living) where having likewiſe made their Offerings under the ſound of their Muſical Inſtruments, the Prince is weighed in a Golden pair of Scales againſt Gold and Silver, which (after the weight thereof is ſet down) is diſtributed the next day among the Poor.

Feſtival-days.

The Prince's Birth-day.

The preſent King's Birth-day is celebrated the ſecond of *September*, when the King is weighed in the ſame manner, againſt Precious Stones, Gold, Silver, Gold Tiſſues, Silk Stuffs, Butter, Rice, Fruits, *&c.* which is afterwards beſtow'd upon the *Brahmans*; and Nuts made ſo curiouſly of Gold Wire (as likewiſe Almonds, and other Fruits) are thrown among the People, that 1000 of them weigh not above 20 Ropias, and coſt about 60 Ropias. The whole Ceremony is concluded with drinking to a great exceſs all the night long, notwithſtanding *Mahomet*'s Law. Sir *Thomas Row* relates, that he had a Golden Cup beſet with *Turquoiſes*, *Rubies* and *Smaragdes*, preſented him by the Great *Mogul* on his Birth-day, but not till he had emptied it four or five times.

The King's Birth-day.

The *Moors* alſo celebrate a certain Feaſt to the Memory of two Brothers, Servants to *Mahomet Raly*, who being on their way to *Coromandel* on Pilgrimage, were forced by the *Pagans* of the Country to ſeek for ſhelter in a certain Caſtle; but being diſtitute of Water, they ſallied out courageouſly upon the Pagans, and after having killed many of them, were at laſt ſlain themſelves. Their Memory is celebrated in *June* ten days after the New-Moon, when they carry a Bear along the Streets loaden with Turbants, Arrows, Bows and Scymeters, certain Prieſts ſinging doleful Tunes, and ſlaſhing themſelves with Knives, till the Blood follows very plentifully. In the Market-place they ſet up the Figures of two Men of Straw, repreſenting the Murderers of theſe two Saints, at which they let fly their Arrows, and at laſt burn them to Aſhes. They keep alſo another Feaſt in *June*, when they kill abundance of He-Goats, and afterwards feaſt upon the Meat: This is ſaid to be done in Commemoration of the Sacrifice of *Abraham*.

Another Feaſt.

The *Great Mogul* being abſolute Lord over 37 large Provinces and Kingdoms, the Perſons and Eſtates of all which are at his ſole diſpoſal, beſides the immenſe Preſents of his Subjects (none of whom dare approach his Perſon without them) muſt needs be Maſter of immenſe Treaſures. The King of *Viſiapour* ſent at one time 30 Elephants, two whereof were girded by Golden Chains, weighing 400 Pound weight, two others with Silver Chains, the reſt of Braſs, beſides 500 Horſes, the Saddles and

Bridles

Bridles whereof were beſet all over with Diamonds, Pearls and Rubies. Mr. *John Twiſt* has given the World an exact account of the Treaſury of King *Accabaar*. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. V.

The Title of the Great Mogul, *and of the Kings of* Achem *and* Siam. *The Origin of* Mahomet; *ſome of his pretended Miracles,* Alcoran, *&c.*

IT is moſt ſurprizing to underſtand what God-like Titles the Subjects of the *Great Mogul* beſtow upon their Lord and Maſter! How all his Words are look'd upon as Oracles, and all his Actions receiv'd with a profound Amazement! Hence it is that the vulgar ſort are really of opinion, that certain Rays dart from his Head and Turbant, which admit not of the near approach of indifferent Perſons; and that they ſcarce ever mention his Name without the additional Titles of *the Moſt Potent upon Earth, Lord of the World, Great Monarch, The moſt exalted Majeſty, The brighteſt of Princes among the Great Ones*, &c. 'Tis true, moſt of the *Indian* Kings affect moſt magnificent, or rather vainglorious Titles; but the Kings of *Achem* and *Siam* ſeem to outvie all the reſt in this point: (The firſt ſtiles himſelf 'King of the World, 'created by God, whoſe Body ſhines 'like the Sun at Noon-day: A King 'unto whom God has given the Luſtre 'of Full-Moon; a King choſen by God, 'a King perfect as the North-ſtar, King 'of Kings, of the Poſterity of *Alexander* the Great; a King before whom all 'other Kings muſt bow their Heads, and 'pay Homage; a King as wiſe as a round 'Globe, and happy like the Sea; a King 'who is God's Slave and Servant; who 'ſees God, and lets the World know 'the Juſtice of God; a Protector of 'God's Juſtice, a King bleſſed by God, 'a King who covers the Iniquities of 'Men, and forgives their Offences; a 'King, under whoſe Shade Slaves ſeek 'for ſhelter; a King perfect and infallible in his Councils; a King and Benefactor to his People; a juſt King, who 'maintains God's Juſtice; the moſt beneficial King upon Earth, the Soles of 'whoſe Feet emit a moſt odoriferous 'Scent, beyond all other Kings; a King 'whom God has bleſſed with his Gold 'Mines, whoſe Eyes are as bright as the 'Morning Star: A King who is Maſter 'of many Elephants of all ſorts: A King 'unto whom God has given Riches to adorn his Elephants with Gold and precious Stones; beſides a great number of 'Elephants of War, armed with Iron 'Teeth and Copper Shoos: A King upon 'whom God has beſtowed Horſes with 'golden Harneſſes beſet with precious 'Stones, and many thouſand Horſes for 'War; the choiceſt Stone-horſes of *Arabia, Turky, Catti*, and *Balacki*: A 'King whoſe Territories extend from 'the South to North: A King who beſtows his Favours upon all that love 'him, and rejoices ſuch as are diſturbed 'in Mind: A King who has in his cuſtody every thing that God has created; 'A King whom God has plaſed above all 'things, to rule, and to ſhew the Luſtre 'of the Throne of *Achem*.

The King of Achem's *Titles.*

The King of *Siam* goes ſtill beyond it, as may be ſeen by his Letter written 1636. to the late Prince of *Orange*, *Frederick Henry*. *The King of* Siam's *Title.*

"THIS is a Golden Letter of Friendſhip and Confederacy, repleniſh'd "with the Brightneſs of God, the moſt "Excellent, comprehending all that is "to be known; the moſt fortunate a"bove what is to be found by Men; the "beſt and the moſt ſecure in Heaven, "Earth, and in Hell; the moſt magnifi"cent, delicious, and moſt agreeable "Words; the Glory and irreſiſtible Vir"tue whereof paſs all over the Earth, "with the ſame Vigor, as if thro God's "Power the Dead were revived from "their Graves, and purify'd from all "their Iniquities, to the ſurpriſe, not "only of the Prieſts, but alſo of Mer"chants, and all the ſervile ſort of Man"kind. For what King can compare "with Me, who am the moſt Potent, "moſt Illuſtrious and Invincible? The "Maſter of 100 Crowns, adorn'd with "nine ſorts of precious Stones: Supreme "Lord *(we paſs by ſome blaſphemous Expreſſions)* of the vaſt and moſt noble "Kingdom of *Siam*; the Brightneſs of "the moſt beautiful City of *India*, the "Capi-

" Capital City of the World, the Streets
" whereof are crowded daily with Peo-
" ple; a City adorned with all the Beau-
" ties of the World, and irrigated with
" delicious Brooks; whoſe Lord has a Pa-
" lace of Gold and precious Stones; a
" Maſter of gilded Thrones, of the white,
" red, and round-tail'd Elephants, which
" three ſorts God has not beſtowed up-
" on any other Kings; a Divine Lord,
" in whoſe Territories is depoſited the
" Victorious Sword, and who reſembles
" the God of War with four Arms.)

aldæus.

*he Mo-
ul's
urt.*

But to return to the *Great Mogul* and his Court: The *Perſian* Language is the Court Language there, tho beſides this there are at leaſt three other Languages uſed throughout his Territories. The chief Lords of his Courts have their certain monthly Salaries allotted them, out of which they are obliged to maintain a certain number of Horſes; among theſe are four who maintain 12000 Horſes each (the King's Sons entertain 15000 Horſe) others 1000, others 100, in proportion to their Salaries; the whole number of Horſe maintained by his Courtiers, being computed at 100000 Horſe.

The *Mogul* changes his Clothes every day for new ones, which he beſtows upon his Courtiers. The *Mogul* entertains certain Officers of Quality, call'd *Nababes*, at *Suratte* and other places, whoſe buſineſs is, to enter upon Treaties with Foreigners, and to keep the Roads free from Robbers, by puniſhing them with the utmoſt Severity. The *Mogul* has alſo a laudable cuſtom, to lay up vaſt Sums of Mony and Proviſions in certain places, to be reſerved for neceſſitous Occaſions. He appears three times a day, and ſits in Council, from ſeven till nine in the Evening.

eligion.

The *Moguls* profeſs the *Mahometan* Religion, but are no great Zealots in it, as *Athanaſius Kircher* has well obſerved in *Gelal Edim Mahomet*, the tenth of the *Moguls* deſcended from the *Great Tamerlan* the firſt, who call'd the *Jeſuits* into his Empire; and their continual Debaucheries in ſtrong Liquor (directly contrary to the Law of *Mahomet*) is an infallible ſign of their indifferency in point of Religion: Beſides, that throughout all the Empire they are not near ſo well verſed in the *Alcoran*, and the Law of *Mahomet*, as the *Africans*, thoſe of *Fez* and *Morocco*, &c. Notwithſtanding all their Ignorance, this accurſed Doctrine has ſpread it ſelf within fifty or ſixty Years, from hence all over the Iſles of *Java*, *Borneo*, and *Celebes*, beſides divers other Countries in thoſe parts.)

The Mahometan Religion.

The *Mahometans* are obliged to pray five times every day, *viz.* in the morning, at noon, in the afternoon, after Sunſet, and at midnight; certain People being appointed, who from the Steeples of the *Moſques*, exhort them to their Prayers, by crying *Lailla illa illa*, *Mahomed Reſul Lalla*: when they are going to pray, they ſtand upright upon a Carpet ſpread upon the ground, holding both their Hands to their Ears; ſometimes bowing towards the ground, ſometimes ſtanding upright again. The *Alcoran* is the Law Book of the *Mahometans*, containing 114 Chapters, being a mixture of the *Jewiſh* and *Chriſtian* Doctrine. *Mahomet* flouriſhed about the Year of Chriſt 600, and died 632. His Companion was one *Sergius* an *Arian*. The Father of *Mahomet* was one *Abdalla*, and his Mother *Emine*, deſcended of the Illuſtrious Family of the *Koreiſhites*.

Mahomets Origin.

Mahomet firſt ſerved in the Wars under the Emperor *Heraclius*, and afterwards ſerved a Merchant; after whoſe death he married *Chadiga* a rich Widow; and being addicted to Enthuſiaſm, he and his Companion *Sergius* compiled the *Alcoran*, pretending that he kept correſpondence with the Arch-Angel *Gabriel*, who in his Trances (which were nothing but Epileptic Fits) had revealed to him theſe Secrets. He was born at *Mecca*, but being forced from thence fled to *Medina*, from which time the *Mahometans* take their *Epocha*, and call it *Medina Alnabi*, or the City of the Great Prophet. His Doctrine was firſt received by his Wife *Chadiga*, and his Servant *Seydin*; afterwards by *Hali*, *Abubeker*, *Omar*, *Otman*, and others his Followers, who were call'd *Caliphs*. The *Perſians* prefer *Hali* before *Mahomet*, and the *Turks*, *Omar*. *Abubeker* reign'd two Years, *Omar* ten Years; it is he who regulated the *Alcoran*, and inſtituted the Faſt in the Month *Rammedan*. *Otman* reign'd 12 Years, and conquered *Mauritania* and *Cyprus*. *Hali* was by *Mahomet* appointed his Succeſſor; but the other three having uſurped the Kingdom, with the excluſion of *Hali*, this is the reaſon the *Perſians*, who adhere to the laſt, abominate the three former.

The hatred between the *Perſians* and *Turks* (tho both *Mahometans*) proceeds from the different Interpretations of the *Alcoran*, and certain Ceremonies relating to their Prayers, covering their Heads, &c.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Baldæus

The Feaſts, Sabbath, and ſome other things belonging to the Mahometans; *their Prieſts, Holy Orders, Manners and Cuſtoms.*

NOT to inſiſt here upon the fabulous Trifles of *Mahomet*'s Viſions, contained in ſome parts of the *Alcoran*, we will proceed to give you a ſhort Account of the moſt material Parts of the *Mahometan* Religion.

Their Circumciſion. They commonly circumciſe Boys and Girls at thirteen Years of Age, *viz.* ſo ſoon as they are able to ſay their Confeſſions; *There is but one God, and* Mahomet *his Prophet.* If a *Jew* turns *Turk*, he is not circumciſed again, but only waſhed with Water. Their Waſhing, or Bathing, is performed upon a threefold occaſion.

Waſhing. 1. After they have eaſed Nature, or cohabited with their Wives.

2. When they are to go to the *Moſque*, or to read the *Alcoran*. And,

3. After they have committed ſome enormous Sins.

Their High Prieſt is call'd *Mufti*, in great eſteem with the Grand Seignior, and a Member of his Privy Council. Next to him are the *Cadileſheri*, or Provincial High Prieſts of *Europe*, *Natolia*, &c. Theſe are followed by the *Cady*, *Seriphes*, *Santones*, *Hoggy*, *Taliſmans*, and *Derviſes*.

Sabbath. The Sabbath of the *Mahometans* is on Friday, which they keep with the ſame ſtrictneſs as the *Jews* do theirs on Saturday, at leaſt with more devotion, as the Chriſtians their Sunday. They have in each City, beſides the other *Moſques*, one great *Moſque*, where they then aſſemble to perform their Devotion. Their Lent begins in *February* with the New Moon, and continues thirty days, with a great deal of ſeverity, for they neither eat nor drink all the day long; but ſome make themſelves amends at Night, tho the Zealots will not taſte the leaſt of Wine, or any other ſtrong Liquor all that time, nor converſe with their Wives. They are permitted to marry as many Wives as they pleaſe, tho the *Alcoran* allows no more than four Wives.

Churches or Moſques. Their Churches are flat on the top, commonly built on a riſing Ground, ſo as to be ſeen at a diſtance above the other Houſes. They have within nothing but bare white Walls, without Pictures or Hangings; tho on ſome of their Tombs we ſee certain Paſſages ingrav'd out of the *Alcoran*. On the South-Eaſt of the *Moſque* ſtands the Pulpit made of Brick-work, about three ſteps from the Ground, from whence their Teachers ſay their publick Prayers, and explain the *Alcoran*. Their Great *Moſques* are generally adorn'd with two high Steeples, each having Stairs within from the bottom to the top. Their Moſques have ſcarce any Revenues belonging to them, except what the Prieſt makes by letting ſome few Chambers belonging to them: Many of them are built by charitable Perſons, and ſome of theſe have a ſettled Income. It is further worth obſervation, that if a *Jew* will turn *Mahometan*, he muſt firſt own Chriſt, before they will receive him among the *Muſſelmen*.

Divers Orders. They have many Eccleſiaſtical Orders among them, three whereof have no Poſſeſſions, or any other Propriety; and ſome pretend to ſuch a degree of Purity, that they profeſs themſelves born without manly Seed. Some make certain Vows, like the *Roman Catholick* Monks; ſome appear quite naked, others only cover their Privities. Some have vow'd perpetual Silence; ſome carry Water without Reward; ſome prick themſelves with ſharp-pointed Needles or Inſtruments; others carry a Ring of three pound weight in their Privy Members.

Tenets of their Religion. For the reſt, they believe God a Corporeal Being, who is carried in a Throne by the Angels, and Chriſt to be only a Man, and *Mahomet* the Comforter mentioned by *John* 14. 16. They believe a third place beſides Heaven and Hell, and therefore pray for the Dead; as alſo a General Judgment, but implicated in many fabulous Abſurdities; for they tell you that two black Angels, one call'd *Munger*, the other *Quaregner*, will appear, the firſt with an Iron Club, the other with a large Fork in his hand; that every Man beſides is to have two Angels to aſſiſt him; but if after all he cannot give a good account of himſelf, the Angel with the Club knocks him down, and ſo he is carried to Hell. And becauſe they are of opinion that thoſe Angels appear to them in their Graves, theſe are generally built hollow; whence alſo they often make the following Ejaculation: *Good God, preſerve us from the Interrogating Angel, from*

from the Pain of the Grave, and from the Evil Way. They add many fabulous things concerning the Angel *Adriel*, who at the approach of the day of Judgment, is to kill all living things, and to hang himſelf at laſt, till after forty Years the Angel *Seraphiel* ſhall waken the Souls; and ſuch-like Fables too long to be inſerted here.

Baldæus.

Paradiſe. Concerning Beatitude, and the Paradiſe, they believe it conſiſts in a continued enjoyment of Pleaſures there. They divide it into ſeven different Apartments; one whereof is of Gold, the ſecond of Silver, another of Pearls, precious Stones, and ſo forth. Here they are to paſs their time in Pleaſures, with certain moſt beautiful Women, created for that purpoſe by God, whilſt their Wives ſhall look through a Grate, and be Spectators of the Enjoyments of their Husbands with theſe moſt beautiful Women, who ſhall not be ſubject to the monthly times, or Childbearing, and the Men as vigorous as *Mahomet* himſelf, who gloried in his having ontdone by double the number *Ovid* himſelf, *Et memini, numeros ſuſtinuiſſe novem.* They ſay they ſhall drink in Paradiſe of the Spring of *Alcazar* mentioned by *Mahomet*; they ſhall be delighted with the ſcent of the moſt odoriferous Citrons, which ſhall produce moſt beautiful Virgins that ſhall imbrace the *Muſſulmans*, and delight them with their Charms for fifty Years together: and more ſuch like Notions tending to elevate the Thoughts with imaginary corporeal Pleaſures to be injoy'd in the next World, by ſuch as have obſerv'd the following Rules in their life-time, which they reckon abſolutely requiſite to attain to this Bliſs.

Rules to attain Eternal Bliſs. To believe one God, and *Mahomet* his Prophet, and a Day of Judgment; to pray at certain times; to waſh, bow, and obſerve certain other Ceremonies in praying: To pay the Tenths, to faſt in the Month *Rammedan*; to go on Pilgrimage to *Mecca*; to abſtain from Extortions, Wine, and Hogs-fleſh, becauſe they believe the Hogs to have been progenerated out of the Elephants and Mens Dung in the Ark of *Noah*. They are alſo forbid not to uſe Tables nor Dice, not to ſwear by God, not to be raſh in our Judgment, or deceive a Brother either in publick or private; not to part from a virtuous Wife; not to be too forward to object and diſcover the Faults of a Brother, or to deſpiſe him; not to ſet the Fear of God and his Puniſhment out of our Eyes, or to calumniate our Neighbour, and ſpread what is heard upon ſlight Reports. On the other hand, they are enjoined to be thankful for God's Mercy; to be patient in Adverſities, and not to deſpair of God's Mercy; and to believe that whatever happens to us does not come by chance (for the *Mahometans* maintain ſtrongly God's Providence) not to deny a Brother's Requeſt out of Avaritiouſneſs, not to raiſe God's Anger out of love to his Creatures, or to prefer a Temporal Intereſt before that which is to come: In all Ghoſtly Affairs to have a reſpect to him that is above us, and in Temporal Matters to thoſe that are below us: Not to enter into any Aſſociation with the Devils; to refrain from Vanity, allow Orphans and Widows their own; to inſtruct their Children in ſuch things as relate to the Divine Service; to do good to your Neighbour, not to curſe any of God's Creatures, but to praiſe him in his Works; to read the *Alcoran* (except when you are unclean) to appear at the publick Congregations, and to do as you would be done by. It is further their opinion, that the Souls of the Brutes are likewiſe to be reviv'd and join'd with their Bodies.

Their Manners and Cuſtoms. In relation to their Manners and Cuſtoms, I will begin here with the Character given them by a Perſon of extraordinary Learning, *viz. That in their whole Behaviour they are declar'd Enemies to Vanity, as well in their Words and Deeds as in their Clothing, which makes them look upon many of us Chriſtians like Monkys, who are apt to imitate every thing they ſee; whereas the* Turks *of both Sexes, young and old, rich or poor, are as regular and decent in their Habits, as if they belong'd to one certain Order; and are ſo careful in the Education of their Youth, that their School-Maſters preſcribe every day a certain part of the* Alcoran, *which they learn by heart, and ſo in two years time paſs through the whole* Alcoran.

Tokens of Marriageableneſs. In their Marriages, and the tokens of Marriageableneſs and Virginity, they obſerve the following Rules: As ſoon as the monthly Times begin to appear, they carry the Maiden for ſeven days together, adorn'd with Flowers, and as it were in Triumph, to the next Brook, during which time ſhe is to eat nothing but what comes from the Coco-tree. The *Portugueſes* (who perhaps have got it from the *Moors*) publiſh the Mariageableneſs of their Daughters by the ſound of Trumpet, and invite their next Relations to a Feaſt. When a Marriage is

Their Marriages. to

to be concluded; they bargain very hard for the Dowry; but this being paſt, and the Agreement made betwixt the Parents, Guardians, or other neareſt Relations, the Day for the Conſummation thereof is appointed: then the Bridegroom on Horſe-back adorn'd with ſweet-ſcented Flowers, under two Umbrello's, paſſes with his next Friends through the chiefeſt Streets under the ſound of Trumpets, Hautboys, Drums, and other ſuch like Inſtruments, to the Bride's Houſe, where having ſtay'd half an hour at the door, and entertain'd his Bride with the Muſick and the throwing of ſome Squibs, and other ſmall Fireworks, he is admitted into the Houſe; and being ſeated upon a Chair raiſed ſomewhat from the ground, and cover'd with Tapeſtry, the Bride is brought to him by her Parents and Relations, in the preſence of a Prieſt and the Judg of the Place (without whoſe Conſent no Marriage is valid): The Prieſt having read certain Paſſages out of a Book, the Bridegroom ſwears, that in caſe of a Divorce from his Wife, he will be ready to reſtore her Dowry; which done, the Prieſt gives the Benedictions, and they are married, the whole being concluded at that time with a Preſent of *Betel* and *Arack* to the Gueſts, yet not to any exceſs, tho afterwards they keep the Wedding for three, four, ſix, ſeven or eight days together, according to every ones pleaſure and ability.

Divorces. However Divorces are very frequent among the *Moors* (or *Indian Mahometans*) which is ſoon done, if the Husband purſuant to his Promiſe returns the Dowry, which conſiſts commonly in nothing elſe but the Woman's Apparel. A Man is at liberty to kill his Wife in caſe of Adultery, but a Woman may not ſo much as ſue a Divorce upon the ſame ſcore. When a Woman is divorced from her Husband, ſhe takes generally her Daughters along with her, leaving the Sons to the Husband's diſpoſal. The next morning after the Bridegroom has lain with his Bride, and found her a Virgin, publick Proclamation is made thereof throughout the whole Town (for the honour of her Parents) when the Bride's Mother haſtening to her Daughter's Bed-Chamber, and finding the uſual tokens of Virginity in the Sheets or Clothes laid for that purpoſe, ſhe carries them to the Bridegroom's Parents, who rejoice with her at the Conqueſt of their Son over the Maiden's Virginity. But if theſe Tokens are not apparent, matters are carried off with leſs Pomp and more ſilence.

The *Mahometans* in general are Enemies to Inceſt, ſo that even the Grand Signior's Son after the death of his Father never touches his Concubines, but ſhuts them up in a certain Caſtle; on the other hand, they are extremely addicted not only to Luſt, but alſo to Sodomy it ſelf, and Combination with Brutes. There are Inſtances, that two Proſtitutes in *Perſia* have been condemned, one to be occupied by a Horſe, the other by an Aſs; the firſt died, but the ſecond eſcap'd with Life.

Baldæus. *The Mahometans Enemies to Inceſt, but addicted to Sodomy.*

The *Moors* feed generally upon Rice inſtead of Bread, which is well taſted here, and grows in great plenty in *Bengale*, and divers other Provinces; the ſame is in much requeſt throughout the *Indies*, in *China*, *Japan*, in the Iſles of *Formoſa*, *Java*, *Celebes*, *Borneo*, *Ceylon*, in *Malabar*, and other places, tho *Japan* and *Bengale* produce likewiſe very good Wheat. The poorer ſort, who can't get above 4 or 5 *d.* a day to maintain themſelves, are forc'd to be contented with *Kitzery* (a mixture of Beanflower and Rice) boil'd in Water. Their Habitations are alſo very low and mean, made of Clay, and their Houſhold-ſtuff ſutable to their Houſes; for beſides a few Veſſels of Braſs, and the two Bedſteds where the Man and Wife lie (who never ſleep together) there is nothing to be ſeen there, they having neither Benches nor Chairs, but only Mats to ſit upon. In ſome places they uſe Cording inſtead of Wood for Fuel: But the Houſes of People of faſhion are ſpacious, and divided into many Apartments, flat on the top, whereupon they take the cool Air in the Evening. They are very ſplendid in their Entertainments, Wives and Houſes, but eſpecially in Gold and Silver Plate.

Their Food. *Habitation.*

Their Clothing is very grave, and they ſcarce ever change the faſhion thereof; the Men wear Coats of Callico, or rich Tiſſues and Silks; they are ſtrait above, cloſe to the Body, faſtened with a Girdle round the Waſte, and reach down to the Knees: their Breeches are wide above, and narrow at the bottom, reaching down to the Legs, and trimm'd with Fringes; their Shoos are of gilt Leather, which they turn down at the heels, for the conveniency of throwing them off upon occaſion. When they ſalute one another, they touch the Turbant with the Hand only, but never move them as we do our Hats. They are girt about their Loins with a Girdle of ſome fine Stuff, over which they wear another of fine Linen, and a broad Dagger on the left ſide.

Their Cloathing.

The

The Ornament of the Women conſiſts chiefly in Bracelets about their Arms and Feet, Ear-pendants, Noſe-rings, and other Jewels; when they are going abroad, they cover their Heads with a Veil, with ſeveral hair Locks twiſted together, hanging down their backs. *Baldæus.*

Their Burials. They obſerve certain peculiar Cuſtoms in their Burials; for no ſooner is the Breath out of the Body, but their Wives, Children and Neighbours make a moſt lamentable Outcry, asking ever and anon the Deceaſed, what made him die, whether he wanted any thing in his life-time? This they continue for three days ſucceſſively; then they invite his Friends to a Feaſt in memory of the Dieceaſed, whoſe Corps being in the mean while well waſhed, and ſow'd up in ſome white Stuff, with all ſorts of odoriferous Drugs, is laid upon a Bier, and accompanied by three Prieſts (who ſing and read all the way) carried by ten or twelve Perſons to the Grave: here they lay him upon his right ſide, with the Feet to the South, the Head to the North, and the Face to the Weſt. This done, they lay Boards over the whole Corps to keep the Earth from touching it; and whilſt they are filling up the Grave, the Standers-by mutter out certain Prayers, and then return to the Houſe of the Deceaſed, with the Prieſts, who for ſeveral days after pray for his Soul, ſhorter or longer, according as they are able to pay them. During this time no Fire muſt be ſeen in the Houſe, what Victuals they uſe being dreſs'd without doors. Upon the Grave they lay two Stones, one at the Head, and another at the Feet, the Interſtice being of the ſame length with the dead Corps underneath it: upon theſe the Prieſts read certain Chapters out of the *Alcoran*, and diſtribute ſome Bread among the Poor: Upon the ſame at the Head, they ſet ſometimes a Turbant, and if a Female be buried there, a kind of a Bonnet. Thus much of the *Mahometan* Subjects of the *Great Mogul*; of the Idolatry of the *Gentives* we ſhall have occaſion to treat at large in the third Book.

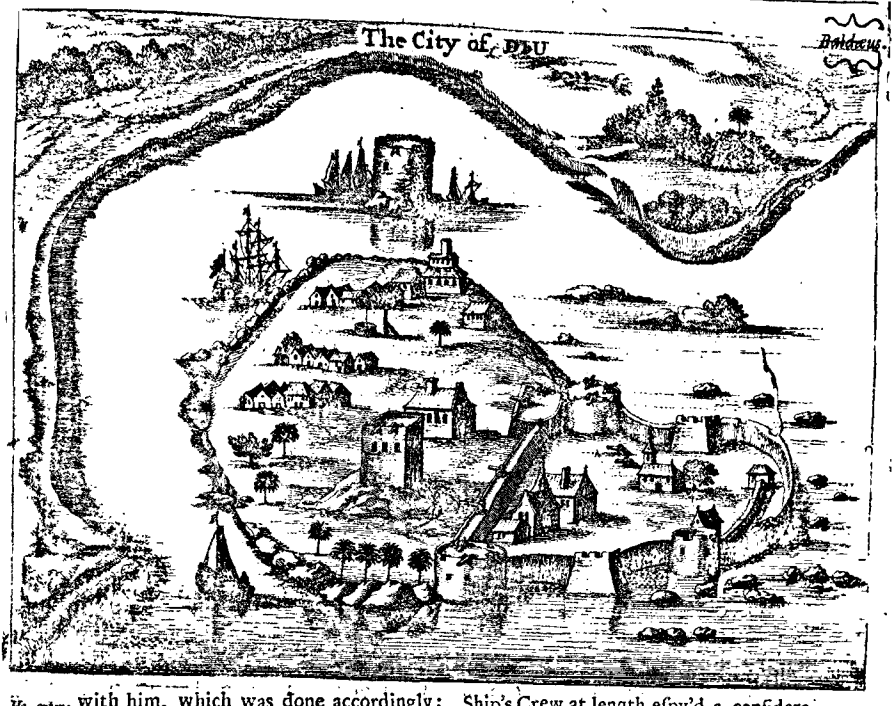
CHAP. VII.

Deſcription of Diu. *A Sea-Engagement of the* Portugueſes *with* Jazy *and* Hocenus. *The ſingular Bravery of* Laurence d'Almeyda, *and* Nonnius Vaſques Pereria. *The Harbour of* Diu *taken by the* Portugueſes. *The Flight of* Jazy *and* Hocenus. *Mooriſh Colours ſent to* Portugal.

AT the uttermoſt Southern Point of *Guſuratte* lies the City of *Diu*, the Draught whereof you ſee here annexed, where the *Portugueſes* have three ſtrong Forts. It's commonly call'd *Diu*, tho its right Name is believ'd to be *Tivo*, i. e. an Iſle, in the *Malabar* Language, as may be ſeen in the Names of *Naynativo*, *Anchativo*, *Maltivo*, or the *Maldive* Iſlands, which being in all ſixty in number, extend from the Cape *Commoryn* from the 7 deg. of Northern Latitude, to the third deg. of Southern Latitude, a Tract of 140 or 150 *German* Leagues.

Origin of Diu. As to the Origin of *Diu*, they relate, that one *Jazy*, a Native of *Sarmatia*, did ſettle in this Iſland; but being taken Priſoner and made a Slave by the *Mahometans* in theſe parts, he chang'd the Chriſtian Religion for that of the *Turks*, and being ſold into *Cambaja*, was at laſt for his ſingular dexterity in managing the Bow and Arrow, prefer'd to the Service of K. *Madrafakaon* the Father of K. *Mamudius*. *Jazy*, to give a Proof of his Skill, ſhooting one day a certain Bird of Prey flying, he gain'd thereby ſo much Credit, that the King not long after gave him his liberty, and reſtor'd to him the Iſle of *Diu*.

This Iſle, which at that time had nothing to ſhew but the Ruins and miſerable Remnants of a once flouriſhing City, began to recover part of its former Splendor under *Jazy*, by reaſon of its convenient Situation, betwixt the *Arabian* Shoar, and the Kingdom of *Decan*. *Reſtor'd by Jazy.* Having provided for the ſecurity of the place, by erecting divers Forts and other Fortifications, and his Wealth increaſing in a few years, he began to equip a Fleet, in order to attack his Enemies Ships at Sea. *Hocenus* (otherwiſe named *Mir Amirazem*) a *Perſian* by Birth, and Commander in chief of the Ships that were to come from *Egypt* into the *Indies*, having lately had a ſmart Engagement with the *Portugueſes*, *Laurence* and *Francis d'Almeyda*, and coming that way, *Jazy* thought fit to enter into a Confederacy with



He enters into a Confederacy with Hocenus.

with him, which was done accordingly: Whilſt they were conſulting by what means beſt to annoy their Enemies with their joint Fleets, News was brought, that *Laurence d'Almeyda* was with a few Ships come to an Anchor before *Chaul*, and had landed his Men (as being quite ignorant of the arrival of the *Egyptian* Fleet in thoſe parts.) One *Nizamaluc* reign'd at that time at *Chaul*, for the great Perſons of *Decan* having impriſon'd their King, had divided his Kingdom among themſelves, whereof this part was fallen to his ſhare. *Nizamaluc*, tho no great Friend to the Chriſtians, yet for Intereſt ſake had order'd his Subjects to maintain a good Correſpondence with the *Portugueſes* trafficking in thoſe parts; which *Almeyda* being not ignorant of, he thought he might ſtay here with ſafety enough, till he had the opportunity of convoying the *Portugueſe* Merchant Ships to *Cochin*. It was indeed rumour'd abroad, that the *Egyptian* Fleet had been ſeen on that Coaſt; but the *Portugueſes* imagining that the ſame might be occaſion'd by the arrival of certain Ships coming about that time of the year from *Mocha*, they made no great account of it: One of the Ship's Crew at length eſpy'd a conſiderable Fleet from the top of the Main-maſt, but could not diſcern their Strength, till at laſt they began to ſuſpect the truth; for *Hocenus* was advancing that way, and *Jazy* preparing to follow him, in order to attack the *Portugueſes*. Certain Intelligence being at laſt brought to *Almeyda*, that the Enemy was at hand, he order'd his Men aboard, which was ſcarce done when they ſaw the *Egyptians* advancing againſt them. Theſe *Barbarians* had flatter'd themſelves with hopes to ſurprize the *Portugueſes*, but theſe having juſt had time enough to put themſelves in a good poſture of Defence, receiv'd their Enemies ſo warmly, that they thought fit to ſtay for the arrival of *Jazy*; however, they charged one another (but at a diſtance) all that day, but towards night *Hocenus* retreated with his Veſſels to the other Bank of the River among the Sands, for his greater Security's ſake.

The Portugueſe *Fleet comes to* Chaul.

The Night being ſpent on the *Portugueſe* ſide in preparing for the Combat againſt next day, when *Almeyda* being ignorant of the Confederacy betwixt *Hocenus* and *Jazy*, attack'd the firſt with

The Portugueſes *engage* Hocenus.

great fury, in hopes of boarding the *Egyptian* Ships; but not being able to come cloſe enough up with them by reaſon of the Sands, he was forc'd to reſt ſatisfied with plying them with his Cannon, which he did all the day long, notwithſtanding the Enemy were much ſtronger in Ships and Men. The Engagement was very hot, *Laurence d' Almeyda* being himſelf wounded twice with an Arrow: The Combat continued thus with conſiderable loſs on both ſides, till towards night, *Jazy* came to the Relief of the *Egyptians* with 40 Ships, but not daring to engage with the *Portugueſes*, came to an Anchor at the Entrance of the River, to be nearer to *Hovenus* in order to join with him the next day.

Baldæus.

Advices of the Portugueſes to their mirth.

The *Portugueſes* being ſomewhat moved at this unexpected ſight, repreſented to their Admiral *Almeyda*, that having gain'd ſufficient Honour in the yeſterday's Engagement, they ought now to conſult Prudence, and to endeavour to bring their Ships out of the Harbour in the night time into the open Sea. *Almeyda* did not diſapprove the Advice of his Sea-Commanders, but as he was of a haughty Temper, ſo he could not reſolve to ſteal away by night, but determin'd to make the beſt of his way to morrow by day-light; with this Reſolution he order'd all his Ships, as well Merchants as others, to be ready to ſet ſail with the firſt Tide by break of day. The *Moors* no ſooner perceiv'd his Intention, but they made towards them in order to intercept their Paſſage; in this Engagement a Bullet happening to ſtrike through the *Portugueſe* Admiral next to the Rudder, ſhe took much Water, and was caſt upon the Rocks, whence ſhe could not be got off: The *Portugueſe* Commanders ſeeing the impoſſibility of ſaving the Ship, ſent a Boat to the Admiral, deſiring him to ſave his Perſon, and preſerve himſelf for another occaſion; but in vain, for he told them, *that he would never be guilty of ſuch a piece of Treachery, as to leave thoſe who had hitherto been his Companions in the Danger, in the lurch.* Accordingly he animated his Men both with his Words and Example to defend themſelves to the utmoſt extremity; being thus animated by their Admiral, they fought like Lions, rejecting all Propoſals offer'd them by the Enemy, reſolving either to ſave the Ship, or die in the defence thereof.

Is rejected.

The Portugueſe Admiral caſt upon a Rock.

His Bravery.

Is wounded.

In the mean while *Almeyda* having one of his Thighs ſhot off by a Bullet, loſt however not his wonted Courage, but ordering his Men to place him upon a Chair near the Main-maſt, he there gave his Orders as occaſion requir'd; but whilſt he was buſy in incouraging his Men, another unfortunate Ball took away part of his Breaſt and Ribs, ſo that his Entrails falling out he gave up the Ghoſt immediately, and his dead Carcaſe was carried below Deck immediately. This was the end of the Brave *Almeyda*, who had ſignalized himſelf ſo often by his Bravery in the Service of his King and Country.

And kill'd.

There were beſides him two other brave Fellows, tho much inferiour in Rank, whoſe Names do well deſerve a place in this Hiſtory; one was *Laurentius Frerius Catus*, a Servant to the deceaſed Admiral, who being wounded with an Arrow in one of his Eyes, threw himſelf notwithſtanding this upon his Maſter's Body, and when he ſaw the *Moors* enter the Ship, fell in pell-mell among them, and kill'd ſeveral of them with his Sword before they could diſpatch him. The other was a Sailor, named *Andrew Van Portua*, who ſtanding on the top of the Main-maſt, and being wounded by a Muſquet-Ball in his Shoulder, and having before loſt the uſe of his Right-hand, defended himſelf from thence with his left hand for two whole days againſt thoſe *Barbarians*, till at length they promiſed him his Life, upon which he ſurrender'd, and afterwards return'd ſafely into *Portugal*, where he was honourably rewarded for his Bravery.

Two other brave Exploits.

The taking of the Admiral's Ship of the *Portugueſes*, tho it coſt the *Barbarians* 600 Men (140 being loſt on the Chriſtians ſide) yet occaſion'd no ſmall joy in their Fleet; as on the other hand, the loſs thereof ſoon reach'd to *Cochin* by ſuch Ships as were fled thither: However the *Portugueſes* were ſo far from being diſmay'd thereat, that reſolving to be reveng'd upon thoſe *Barbarians*, they left no ſtone unturn'd to gather a more formidable Strength at Sea; and *Albuquerque* after having ſettled matters at *Socotora* (an Iſle at the entrance of the *Red-Sea*) did conſiderable miſchief to the *Moors* near *Ormus*, as *Laurence d' Almeyda* (the Father of the Admiral lately kill'd) reveng'd himſelf for the Death of his Son, by the taking of *Dabul*, *Diu* and *Panane*, whereof we ſhall give you a more ample account anon.

For *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, being inform'd concerning the convenient Situation of the Harbour of *Diu*, ſent his Orders

Orders to *Sequeria* to build a Fortreſs there, coſt it what it would. Accordingly *Francis d' Almeyda*, after the taking of *Dabul*, ſteer'd his courſe for the Harbour of *Diu*. *Hocenus* was for engaging the *Portugueſes* without the Harbour; but at the perſwaſion of *Jazy* laid aſide that Deſign, it being thought much more expedient to expect the coming of the Chriſtians with their joint Forces, and to annoy them at their approach both by Sea and Land; for which purpoſe they had beſides the *Egyptian* Ships and thoſe of *Diu* receiv'd 80 Brigantines of *Calecut*, and had planted their Cannon at convenient diſtances along the ſhore. The *Portugueſe* Admiral was ſomewhat ſurpriz'd to ſee the Enemy keep ſo cloſe beyond expectation; yet interpreting the ſame as a good Omen of his future Victory, he ſpent the remainder of the day in viewing the Poſture of the Enemy, and Conſultations what was beſt to be done.

Diu attack'd by the Portugueſes.

He having declar'd his Reſolution of attacking the Admiral's Ship of the *Egyptians*, aboard of which was *Hocenus*, the ſame was approved; but he deſir'd not to expoſe his Perſon at this critical Juncture, but to commit the management of the Deſign to *Nonnius Vaſques Pereria*: Accordingly, every thing being got in readineſs, they enter'd the Harbour the next morning with the firſt Tide, and a ſtrong Sea-Wind, *Nonnius* leading the Van in his Ship with 200 choſen Men, being follow'd by the Admiral *d'Almeyda* to protect and cover his Rear. *Nonnius* advanced bravely under the thundering Noiſe of the Cannon (by which ten Seamen that were furling the Sails were kill'd at once) and making his way through the midſt of the *Barbarians*, at laſt boarded *Hocenus* in his Ship, tho not without great ſlaughter on both ſides, he himſelf having the misfortune to be wounded in the Throat by an Arrow, of which he died three days after.

They attack the Moors Ships in the Harbour.

10 Men kill'd by one Bullet.

Nonnius wounded.

The *Portugueſes* not being diſmay'd at the diſaſter of their Commander, but inflam'd with Revenge, redoubled their fury, which the *Barbarians* being no longer able to withſtand, they gave all over for loſt, *Hocenus* himſelf narrowly eſcaping in a Boat to the ſhore, and (being ſomewhat diffident of *Jazy*) took Horſe immediately, in order to fly to the King of *Cambaja*, where he was well receiv'd. Thoſe of *Calecut* ſeeing the beſt of their Brigantines ruin'd by the Enemy's Shot, thought it their beſt way to ſave themſelves with the lighteſt over the Sands, and two of *Hocenus* his Gallies were carried off by *Roderic Zoares*; many of the *Barbarians* leap'd into the Sea, where they loſt their Lives, the reſt got aſhore, and diſperſed, *Jazy* not being able to ſtop their flight.

Hocenus flies.

So do thoſe of Calecut.

Baldæus.

There was as yet remaining the Ship of *Jazy*, a Veſſel of a vaſt Bulk, appearing like a Caſtle well provided with Artillery and Men, being beſides this cover'd with Oxes Hides to keep off the Arrows, and hinder the Enemy from boarding by its ſlipperineſs: The *Portugueſes* made ſeveral attempts to maſter it, but being as often repulſed, at laſt ſunk her with their Cannon. The loſs of the *Barbarians* was computed at 3000 Men, the *Portugueſes* had only 30 kill'd, but 300 wounded. The *Portugueſes* relate, that *Nonnius* his Ship being very old, held out very well during the Combat, but immediately after was found leaky in many places; moſt of the *Mamaluques* or *Egyptians* were ſlain in this Engagement. How ſlenderly the *Portugueſes* were provided with all manner of Neceſſaries, may be gueſſed from hence, that when *Nonnius* his Wound was to be dreſs'd, there was no Linen in the Ship to do it with, but they were forc'd to tear a Shirt for that purpoſe. Certain it is that the *Portugueſes* can make harder ſhift than moſt other Nations, a thing of great conſequence in time of War, Plenty and Luxury being often the ruin of the beſt Armies. The Booty got by the *Portugueſes* in this Engagement was conſiderable; for beſides four War-ſhips, and as many Merchant-Men, with their Artillery, they got a conſiderable quantity of Gold, Silver and precious Stuffs and Cloths, all which was given a Prey to the Soldiers and Ships Crew: Three of the *Sultan*'s Colours were ſent to *Portugal* to be preſerv'd there in memory of ſo remarkable a Victory; which made an ample amends to the *Portugueſes* for the loſs they had ſuſtain'd ſome time before near *Chaul*.

Jazy's Ship ſunk.

Baldæus.

CHAP. VIII.

Peace made with Jazy. Ferdinand Coutinho *made Viceroy. Differences arisen betwixt* Almeyda *and* Albuquerque. *The* Portugueses *take* Diu, *which is refortified by* Jazy. Nonnius *goes to* Diu. *The Isle* Betel *taken.* Saldania *surprizes* Goga.

Jazy *sues for Peace.*

JAzy thought it now time to sue for Peace, to obtain which he was not sparing in his Promises, to endeavour to engage all the Neighbouring Princes into the Interest of *Portugal*; so the Peace was concluded under condition that he should surrender all the remaining *Egyptian* Ships to the *Portugueses*, release the Prisoners taken near *Chaul*, and provide their fleet with all manner of Necessaries. Jazy being very willing, or rather necessitated, to comply with the Conditions, the *Portugueses* thought fit not to attempt any thing further against *Diu* for that time, as being unwilling to embroil themselves with the King of *Cambaja*. Thus *Almeyda* retir'd victorious to *Cochin*, having paid to *Nizamaluc*, as he passed that way, the usual Presents that were in Arrears.

Almeyda *is succeeded by* Ferdin. Coutinho.

But *Almeyda* did not long enjoy the fruits of his late Victory, for *Ferdinand Coutinho* a Person of Quality, was soon after sent with 15 Ships and 3000 Men to join with *Albuquerque* in order to attack the *Moors*, and especially the City of *Calecut*; for some Differences being arisen betwixt *Almeyda* and *Albuquerque*, which were fomented by some malicious Persons, the King of *Portugal* thought he could pitch upon no better Expedient to prevent the ill Consequences thereof, than by sending *Coutinho* to succeed *Almeyda*, who preferring the King's Interest before his private Interest, quietly surrendred his Charge, and at the same time was reconcil'd to *Albuquerque*, after he had managed the Government of the *Indies* with more than ordinary Conduct and Wisdom; a Person worthy of a much better Fortune than what happen'd to him afterwards. For in his return to *Portugal* having occasion to touch at the *Cape of good Hope*, to take in some fresh Provisions, some of his Men being got ashore, and falling into Differences with some of the Natives about the exchange of their Commodities; *Almeyda* running thither with Sword in hand, to see what was the matter, the Natives began to fall upon him and his Men; and being reinforc'd with fresh Numbers, set so hard upon the *Portugueses*, that they were not able to get to their Ships without fighting their way through them, which they did with a great deal of Bravery, but alas! not without the loss of their Commander *Almeyda* (who was run through the Body with a Stick pointed at the end) and twelve more of their best Soldiers; this was the unfortunate end of this great Man, so famous for his great Atchievements both in *Europe* and *Asia*, being forc'd to end his days upon the shore of *Africa*, which robb'd him both of the Rewards due to his Services, and even of a Christian Sepulture.

Differences betwixt Almeyda *and* Albuquerque.

The Death of Almeyda.

We told you before, that the *Portugueses* thought fit not to attempt any thing further against *Diu*; it is now time to shew you what further measures were taken to bring about their design to erect a Fort in that Island. They had so far agreed the matter with the King of *Cambaja*, that he favour'd their Intentions, or at least was not against them; but *Jazy* not only used all his Endeavours at Court to obstruct the design of the *Portugueses*, but also prepar'd every thing for a vigorous Resistance in case of need. In the mean while he was not sparing in fair Words or Promises, nay even in Deeds, to the *Portugueses*; for no sooner arriv'd *Sequeria* at *Diu* from *Ormus*, but he regal'd the Fleet with fresh Provisions, and the Officers with Presents, with a great many Protestations of Friendship to the Crown of *Portugal*: but when *Sequeria* began to talk to *Jazy* concerning the intended Fort, he declin'd the matter, alledging that it lay not alone in his power, and therefore they must obtain the King of *Cambaja*'s Consent, in which he would assist them with all his Interest.

Jazy *plays the Hypocrite with the Portugueses.*

Sequeria was not so stupid as not to smell the Rat, but thinking it best to repay him in his own coin, he dissembl'd the matter, and returning his Compliments with much Civility, he prepar'd underhand for War; but *Jazy* who had a watchful Eye upon all his Actions, knew so well how to improve his time, and provide for his Security, that *Sequeria* thought it most advisable to delay his

Is discovered.

Project

Project till the next year, againſt which time he expected ſome conſiderable Reinforcement.

Jazy fortifies himſelf. *Sequeria* was no ſooner departed, but *Jazy* imbrac'd this opportunity of ſtrengthning himſelf on all ſides; he added ſeveral new Works to the place, and erected a Caſtle in the midſt of the Entrance of the Harbour, and betwixt that and the City, defended it with a ſtrong Chain: He kept ſeveral Ships loaden with Ballaſt ready to be ſunk upon occaſion, to ſtop up the Paſſage on the other ſide, and order'd vaſt pieces of Stones and Rocks to be ſunk under the Walls, to prevent the *Portugueſes* Gallies from approaching near to them: He alſo for the better Defence of the Harbour hir'd 180 Brigantines, and ſome Merchant-men, man'd with *Arabians*, *Perſians* and *Turks* (profeſs'd Enemies of the Chriſtians) leaving in the mean while no ſtone unturn'd to thwart the deſign'd Project of the *Portugueſes* at the Court of the King of *Cambaja*.

Neither were the *Portugueſes* idle on their ſide, but having made what Preparations they thought fit for ſuch an Undertaking, *Nonnius Acunia* the chief Commander of the *Portugueſes* in the *Indies*, ſet forward in order to put it in Execution: But being reſolv'd to make uſe both of Cunning and Force at the ſame time, he had by Preſents engag'd ſeveral bold and cuning Fellows, who were to paſs to *Diu* in the Quality and Habit of Merchants, but in effect to ſerve for Spies, and to give notice of what they thought worth his knowledg. Thus prepar'd, the time and place of the Rendevouz of the whole Fleet being appointed at *Chaul*, he ſet ſail from thence with 300 Sail great and ſmall, well provided with Artillery and Ammunition, having aboard 3000 *Portugueſes*, as many *Malabars*, and 2000 *Canarines*, for *Dabul*, a ſmall City in the Confines of *Cambaja*; where the *Portugueſes*, being much animated by the Preſence and Speech of a certain *Franciſcan* Frier, named *Anthony Petron*, declar'd that they would not deſiſt, till they had forced the *Barbarians* from their ſtrong Holds in thoſe parts. But finding the Place deſerted by its Inhabitants, they ſteer'd their courſe towards *Betel* (a ſmall rocky Iſle not above a League in compaſs, ſeparated from the Continent only by a narrow Strait) about 80 Leagues from *Diu*. The Situation of this Iſle being ſuch, by reaſon of the Rocks which incloſe the Iſle near the ſhore, that it might eaſily be made defenſible by an indifferent Force, the King of *Cambaja* had not long before ſent thither a certain Commander, a *Turk* by Birth, with 2000 Soldiers, and 1000 Workmen, to erect certain Fortifications there; but having not had ſufficient time to bring them into ſuch a condition as to be able to reſiſt ſuch a Force as this, they thought it their ſafeſt way to capitulate. *Baldæus.*

Nonnius Acunia goes for Diu. *His Rendevouz.* *Sail for Dabul.*

The Commander in chief (having obtain'd a Paſsport for that purpoſe) had an Interview with the *Portugueſe* General, offering to ſurrender the Iſle, under condition that they might have liberty to depart with all their Baggage and Goods. *Nonnius* allow'd the firſt, but would not conſent to their taking the leaſt thing away with them, except what they had about them. This harſh Anſwer was no ſooner known in the Iſle, but they reſolv'd to abide the utmoſt extremity, rather than comply with it. The King's Treaſurer found means to have a Boat built, wherewith he tranſported all the King's Mony and Goods to the Continent: Many of the Gariſon enraged with Revenge and Deſpair, brought all their Horſes, beſt Moveables, Wives and Children together, and burnt them and themſelves. There were about 700 left, moſt of them Votaries, reſolv'd to die with Sword in hand: Theſe like mad Men fell upon the *Portugueſes* with more fury than effect; for the *Portugueſe* General having repulſed them, attack'd the next night by the light of the Moon their Intrenchments with ſo much Vigor, that after a moſt obſtinate Reſiſtance (in which the *Turkiſh* Commander was kill'd) they left them to the *Portugueſes*, ſome running to the Rocks, from whence they precipitated themſelves into the Sea; others endeavouring to eſcape the Sword by hiding themſelves in the hollowneſſes of the Rocks, but being diſcover'd, ſome of them were cut to pieces, the reſt made Slaves. A certain *Moor* having nothing left but his Sword, and ſeeing his Comrade ſlain juſt by his ſide, and a *Portugueſe* advancing with his Pike towards him, in order to kill him, ran deſperately towards him, and thruſting himſelf upon the *Portugueſe*'s Launce, at the ſame time kill'd his Enemy with his Sword, ſo that they both died upon the ſpot.

Betel begun to be fortified by the Cambajans. *They offer to ſurrender upon Conditions.* *Almoſt deſperate Reſolution.* *The Portugueſes take the Iſle.*

The *Portugueſes* loſt in this Action about 17 Perſons of Note, and had 150 wounded, many of whom died afterwards. *Nonnius* thought fit to tarry here eight days, in hopes of receiving ſome Intelligence from his Spies at *Diu*; this prov'd of great advantage to thoſe of *Diu*, for in the mean while *Muſtapha* and

Sophar

Baldæus.

Sophar (who had been at the Siege of *Aden*) coming to an Anchor with 600 *Turks* and 1300 *Arabians* before *Diu*, the Inhabitants thereof (who before that time thought of nothing elſe than how to come to a good Compoſition) being encouraged by this Reinforcement, were reſolv'd to venture all for their Defence. *Muſtapha* was no ſooner enter'd the City but he order'd the Women, Children, and other defenceleſs People to be ſent out of the Town; the reſt being muſter'd were found 11000 in number (without the *Turks* and *Arabians*) able to bear Arms; ſtrict Watches were ſet in all places, to let nobody paſs in or out of the Town without ſpecial licence; the Cannon were planted on the Walls, Mines dug and fill'd, Chains made acroſs the Harbour, and the Entrance thereof defended by 73 well man'd Brigantines: To be ſhort, nothing was omitted that was thought neceſſary to ſtrengthen themſelves either by Sea or Land.

Preparations at Diu.

Nonnius Acunia in the mean time tarried at *Betel*, in expectation of the Tidings he waited for from his Spies there; but their being too narrowly watch'd to ſend any Intelligence, he reſolv'd to take his chance, and ſo ſet ſail for *Diu*, where he caſt his Anchor in hopes to come to a Parley with the Inhabitants: but he was not a little ſurpriz'd when he heard the Cannon from the Ramparts thunder among his Ships, and three Bullets that paſs'd croſs the Admiral's Ship, gave him ſufficient warning, that it was not ſafe ſtaying there long, which made him give immediate Orders for the whole Fleet to weigh Anchor, and to ſecure themſelves without the reach of the Cannon from the City. Being by this time ſufficiently convinc'd (without conſulting his Spies) that there were but little hopes of Peace or a Surrender, he took a full view of the Town, to ſee on what ſide it might be moſt conveniently attack'd; and finding more probability to ſucceed on the Harbour than on the Land-ſide (eſpecially ſince he was better provided for a Sea than Land Enterprize) he order'd all his Ships and Artillery to be got in a readineſs, in order to attack the Caſtle at the entrance of the Harbour, break the Chains, and to fall upon the Enemy's Fleet, from whence he might annoy the City with his Cannon on the North-ſide. The Attempt was made accordingly, but without ſucceſs, the *Portugueſes* being ſo fiercely gall'd on all ſides by the Enemy's Cannon, that they were forced to deliſt, and *Nonnius* thought fit to retreat to *Betel*, from whence he return'd with his Fleet to *Goa*, leaving *Anthony Saldania* with ſome Ships on the Coaſt of *Cambaja*, to watch the Enemy's Motions. *Saldania*, after having done conſiderable Miſchief to the Enemy, by the taking of the ſmall City of *Goga*, and burning 25 Brigantines, left *James Sylveria* behind him, and return'd afterwards to *Goa*, where having ſpent the greateſt part of the Winter in refitting their Ships, *Nonnius* in the Spring ſet ſail for *Chaul* about two Leagues from *Calecut*, to intercept the *Arabian* Ships trading in thoſe parts.

The Portugueſes aſſault Diu in vain.

CHAP. IX.

Nonnius *routs the* Mahometans, *takes* Bazain; *and* Martin Souza, Daman. Badur *King of* Cambaja *engages in a Treaty with the* Portugueſes. *His Forces, and Expedition to* Citor. *The Deſtruction of that City.* Badur *twice defeated, flies to* Diu. *His End.*

Sylveria was in the mean while not idle, but took many Ships bound for *Diu*, burnt ſome Villages, and kept the place ſo block'd up on all ſides, that in a little time they were within reduced to great ſcarcity of Proviſions: The next following year *Sylveria* continued to play the ſame game, by deſtroying many Towns, Villages and Ships; he alſo took the Cities of *Pate* and *Patane*, as alſo *Mangalor* in *Cambaja*, with a vaſt Booty, and a great number of Priſoners; the new King of *Cambaja* being not in a condition to aſſiſt thoſe of *Diu*, by reaſon of the inteſtine Troubles.

Nonnius at the ſame time keeping ſtill in remembrance the Diſgrace he had receiv'd before *Diu*, and being reſolv'd to let ſlip no opportunity of revenging himſelf, he laid his Deſign againſt *Bazain* in *Cambaja*; accordingly he ſet ſail with a Fleet of 80 Ships great and ſmall, with 4000 Land-men aboard them (half *Portugueſes*, half *Malabars*) he ſent *Emanuel Albu-*

Nonnius his Deſign againſt Bazain.

*

Albuquerque with ſome Ships before, to ſecure the Entrance of the Harbour, ſent for *James Sylveria*, who had his Station on the other ſide of *Diu*, and follow'd himſelf with the whole Fleet.

Tocan the Chief of *Diu*, had, upon notice that the *Portugueſes* were arming againſt him, intrench'd himſelf with a conſiderable number of Horſe and Foot at *Bazain*. *Nonnius* on the other hand, being well inform'd of the Condition of the place by certain Deſerters, divided his Troops into three Bodies: The Vanguard was led by *James Sylveria*, the main Battel by *Ferdinand de Za*, the Reer being commanded by *Nonnius* in Perſon.

The Portugueſes attack it. As they were advancing towards the Town, they receiv'd ſeveral ſmart Salutes from the Enemy's Cannon, and whole ſhowers of Arrows, *Tocan* having intrench'd himſelf with 10000 Men in the Out-works; notwithſtanding which the *Portugueſes* loſt not ſo much as one Man whilſt they were advancing towards the Enemy, whom they charg'd ſo briskly, that they were forc'd to betake to their heels; and the Inhabitants ſeeing themſelves deſerted by their Protectors, follow'd their Footſteps. Thus this City with all its Works fell into the hands of *And take it.* the *Portugueſes*, with the loſs only of ſix Men on their ſide; whereas the loſs of the *Moors* was computed at 550. They found in it a conſiderable Booty of Proviſions and Ammunition, as Bullets, Gunpowder, and Brimſtone. *Nonnius* highly extoll'd the Bravery of *Sylveria*, who commanding the Vanguard, had behav'd himſelf ſo gallantly, that the main Battel did not as much as come to the Charge, and as an acknowledgment of his Services preſented him and all his Officers. After they had deſtroy'd all the Fruits of the Field round about it, they deſtroy'd the City, and demoliſh'd the Fortifications, as thinking it not for their Intereſt to ſpare a ſufficient number of Troops to gariſon it. Thus *Nonnius* having taken an ample Revenge upon the *Barbarians*, return'd with his Fleet to *Goa*; and the *Mahometans* being convinc'd by this as well as the loſs of the Iſle of *Betel* (and afterwards that of *Daman*) of the Strength and Bravery of the *Portugueſes*, began to remit much of their Fierceneſs, and were at laſt forced to ſubmit to the building of a Fort upon the Iſle of *Diu*, as will appear out of the ſequel of the matter.

Soza attacks Daman. *Martinus Alphonſus Soza* being come lately from *Portugal* (in the quality of Admiral) to *Goa* with five ſtout Veſſels, and being join'd by 35 Ships and 600 Land-Souldiers of *Nonnius* his Squadron, he ſet ſail for *Daman*, a City of *Cambaja*, about 14 Leagues from *Bazain*: This being a Place of no ſtrength, the Inhabitants had deſerted their Habitations; but the *Rasboutes*, a daring and unruly Generation, being join'd by ſome *Turks* to the number of 5000 in all, had intrench'd themſelves near the Harbour, and defended the Entrance thereof with a good number of great Cannon. *Baldæus*

Alphonſus Soza took peculiar care in taking a view of the poſture of the Enemy; and as he was going in his Boat from the Harbour along the ſhoar, having taken notice of a place in the City which was but ill guarded, he order'd ſcaling Ladders to be hung to the Walls, ſo that whilſt they were ſcaling the Town the Defenders fled, and thereby gave an opportunity to the *Portugueſes* to make *Take and demoliſh it.* themſelves Maſters of a Gate; here it was the Slaughter begun, the Fight being carried on with equal Obſtinacy for ſome time, till the *Rasboutes* being forc'd to give way, many of them were cut to pieces by the *Portugueſes*, who loſt no more than ten Men in this Action, but had many more wounded. Three days were ſpent in demoliſhing the Fortifications, and laying the whole City level with the ground: Which done, *Soza* turn'd his victorious Arms towards *Diu*, and all along the Coaſt of *Cambaja*.

Badur King of *Cambaja*, being extremely nettl'd at the ſucceſs of the *Portugueſes*, whom he was not in a condition to oppoſe, at a time when he ſaw himſelf intangled in another War, thought it his beſt way to ſue for Peace with *Nonnius Acunia*, offering not only *Bazain*, but alſo *Peace betwixt the Portugueſes and Badur.* the adjacent Iſles (among which were likewiſe the *Salſetes*) and a conſiderable Tract of Land on the Continent, thereby to engage the *Portugueſes* in his Intereſt againſt his Enemies, *viz. Cremantina* the Queen Dowager of *Sanga*, and the *Mogores*, a Warlike Nation deſcended from the *Scytæ*, who are frequently at War with the *Perſians*: Their King *Miramudius*, who boaſted himſelf to be deſcended from the Great *Tamerlan*, having not long before made a powerful Irruption into *Cambaja*.

The Intention of *Badur* was firſt to vanquiſh the Queen of *Sanga*, and afterwards the *Mogores*: His whole Force conſiſted in 150000 Horſe, and 5[illegible] Foot, beſides 15000 hir'd Foreigners, 200 Elephants train'd for the War, and a very good Train of great Artillery,

with this Army he march'd to *Citor*, a very fine and populous City under the Queen of *Sanga*, who was not long before retreated thence with her Children. The Inhabitants of *Citor*, unable to resist so powerful an Army, resolv'd to follow the footsteps of those in the Isle of *Betel* (mention'd before) and having brought together all their Gold, Silver, and precious Stones, *&c.* burnt themselves with their Wives and Children, with the Treasure. It is said, that during the Conflagration, which lasted three days, more than 70000 Persons perish'd by the Flames. *Badur* enter'd victoriously into *Citor*, where having rewarded the Services of his Officers that behav'd themselves well with Presents, he march'd directly against the *Mogores*, but with very different success; for being twice put to the rout by them, and deserted by *Mustapha* his General, he was forc'd to fly to *Diu*, and being full of despair, would have taken a Resolution to leave his Kingdom, and to send his Treasure to *Mecca*; but being, at the earnest entreaty of his Friends, remov'd from that Resolution, he sent an Ambassador to *Soliman* the Grand Signior, to offer him 600000 Crowns, provided he would send a certain number of well-disciplin'd Troops to his Assistance; but fearing lest the desir'd Succours should come too late, he offer'd to *Soza*, who then lay before *Chaul*, as also to *Nonnius Acunia*, a proper place for the erecting of a Fort near *Diu*, provided they would assist him against his Enemies.

Baldæus. *He takes Citor.* *Sues for Peace.*

The *Portugueses* willing to take the opportunity by the forelock, *Soza* sail'd to *Diu* immediately, and being follow'd by *Nonnius*, the Treaty was sign'd, and a place assign'd, *viz.* the Hill which overlooks the Harbour of *Diu*. This happen'd in the year 1535. The *Portugueses* went to work immediately, and laid the Foundation of a Triangular Fort, the Wall from the Sea-side to the Hill being 17 Foot thick, and 20 high, at the end whereof just upon a Hill near the City was erected a Redoubt, and on the other end a Stone Tower (such a one as the *Portugueses* have at *Cranganor* and *Cananor*) from whence extended another Wall to the other Corner of the Island: The Wall was defended by a deep Ditch as far as the Rocks would permit. In the midst whereof was a Gate defended by two Towers, named St. *Thomas* and St. *James*. Thus King *Badur* saw a goodly Fortress perfected by the *Portugueses* within 49 days, that part to the Sea-side being set aside till another opportunity.

The Portuguese Fort near Diu.

One *James Bottelho* a brave Commander, but fallen into Disgrace with *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, being willing to court any opportunity of being restor'd to the King's favour, got a Brigantine built on purpose of 18 foot in length, and six broad; and having provided himself with as many Seamen as were requir'd to manage her at Sea, he set sail from *Diu*, without letting them whither they were bound, and prov'd so prosperous in his Voyage, that without any remarkable Accident, he arriv'd safely at *Lisbon*, and brought the kind Advice of their good success at *Diu*.

Baldness of James Bottelho.

The *Portugueses* left a Garison of 800 Men under *Emanuel Soza* in the Fort, and were no sooner retir'd from thence with their Fleet; but *Badur* began to repent of his having admittted the *Portugueses* into the Isle of *Diu* (especially since the promised Succours arriv'd but slowly) whereupon he order'd the Governor *Ninaar* to surround the City with a new Wall, and to enclose the Royal Square without the place, whereby their Fortifications must approach very near to, and lie directly opposite to those of the *Portugueses*. These being resolv'd not to permit a thing of this nature, which must needs tend to their Prejudice, *Badur* was much incensed thereat, exclaiming highly against their Proceedings, and endeavour'd to have surpriz'd them in their Fort, which not succeeding, he sought for Aid from the *Samoryn* of *Calecut*, and several *Malabar* Kings against them.

New Differences betwixt Badur and the Portugueses.

Nonnius being advertised of all these Treacheries, sets sail once more with 20 Ships, and 500 chosen *Portugueſe* Soldiers for *Diu*, ordering *Martin Alphonso* to follow him from the *Malabar* Coast. No sooner had he cast Anchor before *Diu*, but feigning himself sick aboard, he sent certain Persons to compliment King *Badur*, and beg his Excuse for his not coming in Person: Whereupon *Badur* went aboard together with *Soza* the Governor of the Fort to give a Visit to *Nonnius*, who met *Badur* at the Door of his great Cabin, and saluted him with a great deal of Civility. For tho the Death of *Badur* was resolv'd on before-hand, yet that they might not seem to violate the Laws of Hospitality, they had thought fit to defer the Execution thereof till his return towards the shore: It was not long before *Badur* went into his Boat again in order to return, but was no sooner got

Nonnius sails once more to Diu. *Badur gives him a Visit aboard.*

into

into it, and making the beſt way to the ſhore, when *Nonnius* giving the Signal to his Men, and exhorting them to do their Duty, they leap'd into Boats kept for that purpoſe, and following that of *Badur* attack'd him on all ſides. The King being grown deſperate, exhorted his People to a brave Defence, encouraging both by his Words and Example, which made the Fight ſo obſtinate, that the *Portugueſes* were in danger of loſing their Prey, *Soza* himſelf being ſlain in the firſt Attack. The Bravery of a certain Servant of *Badur* deſerves our particular notice, he being obſerv'd to have wounded with 18 Arrows, as many *Portugueſes*, till he was kill'd by a Muſquet-ſhot himſelf.

Is kill'd.

The Bravery of a Servant of Badur.

In the mean while three Yachts arm'd with *Turks* were ſent from the ſhore to ſuccour the King; but being moſt of them kill'd, and the King's Galley ſtruck upon a Bank, he leapt into the Sea, and tho ſorely wounded, did ſwim to the Galley of *Triſtan Pavia*, and diſcovering himſelf to be the *Sultan*, beg'd his Life, which *Triſtan Pavia* would willingly have granted, but juſt as the King was entring the Veſſel, he was ſlain by a Seaman, who knock'd his Brains out with a Club. This was the unfortunate end of *Badur*, one of the moſt Potent Kings of *Aſia*, who not long before had been a Terror to all the circumjacent Countries.

Baldæus.

Badur *ſlain.*

CHAP. X.

Sofar *made a Priſoner.* *The* Portugueſes *become Maſters of the whole Iſle.* Mamud *King of* Cambaja. *A conſiderable number of* Ottomans *ſent to the* Indies. Diu *beſieg'd by the* Turks. *A ſmart Engagement betwixt the* Mahometans *and* Portugueſes. Diu *reliev'd.* Garzias Noronia *conſtituted Vice-Roy.*

BUT to return to *Diu*, and the Sea-Engagement, where *Sofar* being taken Priſoner, was kindly entertain'd by *Nonnius*. The Death of *Badur* (tho not very honourable on the *Portugueſes* ſide) prov'd however of very great conſequence, the *Portugueſes* becoming thereby Maſters of the whole Iſland without much oppoſition, the ſaid *Badur* being deſervedly hated by his Subjects, by reaſon of his Tyranny and Cruelty; 600 Foot were left there in Gariſon, and all neceſſary care was taken that the Cuſtoms both at *Diu* and *Rumenſtadt* might be regularly paid. *Maffæus* in his 4th Book of the *Indian* Hiſtory, ſays, that *Rumenſtadt* or *Rumopolis* (lying not far from *Diu*) was built by *Jazy* (mention'd before) and got its Name from the *Conſtantinopolitan Turks*, that ſcour ſometimes in the *Indies*, call'd by them *Rumes*.

Sofar a Priſoner.

Portugueſes Maſters of the Iſland.

Rumenſtadt.

The Portugueſes fortify the Sea-ſide.

The *Portugueſes* found no great Treaſure of ready Mony at *Diu*, but conſiderable Stores of Ammunition and Proviſion, and the better to ſtrengthen themſelves, fortified the City on the Sea-ſide.

Mamud King of Cambaja.

Badur was ſucceeded in the Kingdom of *Cambaja* by *Mamud* his Siſter's Son, who being an Infant, under the Tuition of *Driacan*, *Madremaluc* and *Alucan*, theſe were ſollicited by *Sofar* (out of a hatred to the *Portugueſes*) to engage in a War for the recovery of *Diu*. *Alucan* having got together a Body of 5000 Horſe, and 10000 Foot, and *Sofar* 3000 Foot, and 1000 Horſe, they pitch'd their Tents in *June* not far from *Rumenſtadt*. *Sofa* attack'd the Town vigorouſly, but being in one of the Attacks wounded in both his hands, the *Portugueſes* got a little breathing time, and in the mean while repair'd the Walls of *Rumendſtadt*, which for ſome reaſons they had demoliſhed before: For *Anthonius Sylveria* having reſolv'd to fortify and defend the whole Iſland againſt the *Indians*, was diſappointed in his deſign by *Alucan*, who improving the loſs of ſome *Portugueſe* Ships by Tempeſt to his advantage, gall'd the *Portugueſes* ſo ſorely from his Ships in their Entrenchments, that they were forced to quit their Poſts; ſo that *Alucan* landing his Men, ſoon became Maſter of the whole Iſle and the Suburbs, where there happen'd frequent Skirmiſhes betwixt them; the *Indians* being not ſtrong enough to attack the Fort, which was bravely defended by *Lupo Soza Coutinho*.

His Tutor engage in a War.

The Portugueſes forced into the Fort.

Whilſt theſe things were tranſacting in *Cambaja*, the Grand Signior, to revenge the Murder of *Badur* (at the requeſt of his Widow) had equipp'd a Fleet of 64 ſtout Gallies, which being

Baldæus.

join'd by 7 Ships of *Cambaja* and three *Moors* of *Malabar* with 3500 Land-men aboard them, under the Command of *Solyman* Bassa of *Egypt*, they set sail from *Aden*, not questioning but they would soon be masters of the *Portuguese* Fort, and consequently of the Island, from whence they might extend their Conquests into the Continent of the *Indies*. Matters being concerted beforehand betwixt *Solyman* and *Sofar*, the last went out to meet the *Turkish* Squadron about 15 Leagues at Sea; and *Anthonio Sylveria* being advertis'd of their appoach, took all imaginable Precaution for his Security, in disposing what Force he had to make a vigorous Defence, and at the same time gave notice thereof to *Goa*, to sollicite for prompt Succours from thence, encouraging his Men both by his Example and Exhortations. By this time *Solyman* having cast Anchor in the Road of *Diu*, he order'd 700 chosen Men to land, and attempt the Attack of the *Portugueses* Fortress, which they did accordingly, but were forced to retire to *Sofar*'s Fort with the loss of 50 *Janizaries* kill'd, and a greater number wounded; the *Portugueses* had also six Men kill'd, and 20 wounded.

Sylveria prepares for a brave Defence.

Solyman lands, and attacks the Portugueses.

About the same time the *Turkish* Fleet being in great danger of being forc'd by a strong South Wind upon the Coast, and much expos'd to the Enemy's Shot, he retreated to the Harbour of *Madrafaba* five Leagues from *Diu*; where having concerted new measures with *Sofar*, he sent back his Land Forces to renew the Siege of *Diu*. But *Alucan* one of the Tutors of King *Mamud* having conceiv'd a jealousy of the Design of the *Turks*, retir'd with his Forces from before *Diu*, and having represented their ambitious Projects to the King, he soon obtained of him a Prohibition in all his Territories not to furnish the *Turkish* Camp with Provisions.

Retreats to Madrafaba.

Alucan leaves Diu.

This prov'd no small disappointment to *Solyman*, who notwithstanding this did not lose Courage, but pursued his design of carrying the place, cost it what it would: For this purpose the *Turks* contriv'd a very large Fireship, which under favour of the Tide and the smoak of some burning Wood, they intended to send into the Harbour, and to fix to the Fortifications; and whilst the *Portugueses* were busied in quenching the Flames, they were to attempt the surprising of the Fort on the Land-side: but whilst they were staying for the Spring-Tide, *Francisco Goveano* a *Portuguese* found means to set it on fire, tho not without great hazard, being oblig'd to pass twice the Enemies fire; 20 of the *Turks* aboard the Fireship leap'd into the Sea, and were all slain. The *Turks* were so incensed at this disappointment, that they exerted all their Fury against *Rumenstadt*, the Walls whereof being so ruin'd as not to be maintain'd any longer against a vigorous Attack, *Patieco* the chief Commander thereof thought fit to quit it in time. The *Turks* flush'd with this Success, renew'd the Siege of *Diu* both by Sea and Land with more vigor than ever, leaving nothing unattempted, with Cannonading, Mining, or whatever might be attempted to reduce the place; whilst the *Portugueses* on the other hand with Countermines, Retrenchments and frequent Sallies endervour'd to stop their Fury. The *Turks* being at last by means of a Gallery advanc'd over the Ditch, and entring the Breach, a most furious Combat ensu'd for four hours successively, the *Portugueses* defending themselves like Lions. *Maffæus* relates, that a *Portuguese* having spent all his Balls, pull'd out one of his Teeth and charg'd his Musquet with it. At last the *Turks* were forced to retire with the loss of 500 Men slain, and 1000 wounded: The *Portugueses* also on their side had 14 of their best Officers slain, and so many of their Soldiers either kill'd or wounded, that they had scarce 40 Men left fit for Service. Besides this they began to be in such want of Provisions and Ammunition, that they were very near reduced to the last extremity. However they did not lose Courage, but incouraged one another rather to die upon the spot, than to submit to the most sordid slavery; the Women and Children were even not backward in giving all the Assistance they were able.

Fire-Engine of the Turks.

Set a fire to the Portugueses.

Rumenstadt left by the Portugueses.

The Turks renew the Siege of Diu.

The Turks storm the place.

Are repulsed.

In the mean time *Nonnius Acunia* being sufficiently sensible of the danger of the Fortress of *Diu*, had left no Stone unturn'd for the relief thereof; but the case admitting of no delay, he sent 16 *Patachos* or Yachts thither: these coming to an Anchor in the night time before *Madrafraba*, had each put four Lanthorns on their Sterns, with an intention to terrify the Enemy. This succeeded accordingly; for the *Turks* having by this time lost above 3000 Men, and fearing the Succour expected from *Goa* might be much stronger than really it was, set fire to the City, and leaving 500 wounded Men, and most of their great Cannon behind, reimbark'd the first of *November*, steering their Coast towards *Arabia*; and

Diu relieved.

Sofar

Sofar with the Remnants of his Forces retir'd to the Continent, to the no ſmall honour of the *Portugueſes*, who with ſo ſmall a number had defended themſelves not againſt barbarous undiſciplin'd *Indians*, but againſt a Body of warlike well-exerciſed *Turkiſh* Troops. It's ſaid, that *Francis* I. King of *France*, was ſo highly pleaſed with this brave Action, that he deſir'd and had an Original Picture of the brave *Sylveria*, the Governour of the place.

To the great Honour of the Portugueſes.

Whilſt *Nonnius* was buſied in making all the neceſſary Preparations for the Relief of *Diu*, *Goa* *Garzias* *Noronia* was ſent by *Don John* King of *Portugal* with 11 Men of War, and 7000 Land-Men to relieve *Nonnius*: Among theſe there was one Ship fill'd with Malefactors and Criminals of all ſorts, who had obtain'd their Pardon from the King; but this being ſeparated from the reſt, was never heard of afterwards. *Nonnius Acunia* having ſurrender'd the Government to *Noronia* after a ſtay of ten years in thoſe parts, ſet ſail for *Portugal*, his Native Country, but before he could reach it died at Sea, near the *Cape of Good Hope* on the *African* Coaſt.

Baldæus. *Nonnius relieved by Garzias Noronia.* *Nonnius his Death.*

CHAP. XI.

Noronia *makes an Agreement with King* Mamud. Lupius Soza *conſtituted Governour of* Diu. Sofar's *ſiniſter Deſigns againſt the* Portugueſes. *He beſieges* Diu *in conjunction with* Mamud: *is ſlain in the Enterpriſe. The City is vigorouſly aſſaulted, and as bravely defended. An unſucceſsful Sally made by the* Portugueſes.

Noronia ſends his Deputies to Mamud.

NOronia apply'd all his Thoughts to the Affairs of *Diu*; and having diſpatch'd certain Deputies to *Mamud* to treat with him of a Peace, they at laſt, not without a great deal of difficulty, came to the following Agreement, in the Negotiation of which they met with no ſmall oppoſition from the Grand-mother of *Mamud* and *Sofar*, who were continually inciting the young King to revenge the Death of his Uncle King *Badur*; *viz.* That the King of *Cambaja* ſhould remain in the Poſſeſſion of the City of *Deu*, and the *Portugueſes* continue Maſters of the Fort and Harbour thereof; that they ſhould divide the Cuſtoms ſhare and ſhare alike, and that the *Cambajans* ſhould be at liberty to erect a Wall to front the Caſtle, provided the ſame were done at a convenient diſtance.

Their Agreement.

Matters being thus ſettled, *Lupius Soza* was conſtituted Governour of the place inſtead of *Sylveria*, with a Gariſon of 900 Men. But it was not long before *Mamud*, at the Inſtigation of his Grand-mother, ſent a conſiderable Body to attack *Bazain*; but *Laurentius Tavora* making a vigorous Sally upon them, conſtrained them to ſeek for Peace. *Sofar* in the mean time having recover'd himſelf, had for ſix years together bent all his thoughts upon the ruin of the *Portugueſes*; and having found means to ingratiate himſelf into King *Mamud* his favour, they ſent underhand their Emiſſaries to the neighbouring *Indian* Princes, to engage them againſt the *Portugueſes*, who they told them did lord it over them, under pretence of trafficking in the *Indies*. The Affairs of the *Portugueſes* were at that time but in a very indifferent condition in thoſe parts, their Treaſuries exhauſted, their Naval Strength neglected, their Seamen very ſcarce; and the Land Soldiers deſerted in ſuch numbers, that of the 900 that were in Gariſon under the Command of *Lupius Soza*, there were not above 250 left in the Government of *Maſcarenhas*; and what was worſe, there was not above a month's Proviſion, and a ſlender ſhare of Ammunition left.

Miſerable ſtate of the Portugueſes.

Sofar was not unacquainted with theſe things, having learn'd them from divers *Portugueſe* Merchants; ſo that looking upon this as a fit opportunity to execute their projected Deſign, they pitch'd upon the Winter-ſeaſon, when they knew the *Portugueſes* could not be ſo eaſily ſecured from *Goa*. *Sofar* being in the mean while not negligent to cajole *Maſcarenhas* the *Portugueſe* Governour by his Letters into a belief of his Sincerity, the ſame did not diſcover his real Intentions, till it was almoſt too late; but finding no other redreſs but in a brave Defence, he made all the neceſſary Preparations for it, by ſending away all the uſeleſs Mouths, and fortifying himſelf after the beſt manner he could; and having bought up what

Treachery of Sofar.

what quantity of Rice, Fleſh and dried Fiſh he could get of the *Portugueſes*, he ſent Advice of his approaching danger to *Bazain*, *Chaul* and *Goa*. This happen'd in the year 1546. *Sofar* took for a pretence the new Walls that were to be erected at one end of the City, which being built too near the *Portugueſe* Forteſs, theſe ſtopt the Progreſs thereof, which ſoon gave occaſion to open Hoſtilities. *Maſcarenhas* to animate his Soldiers told them, "That they ought to "remember the brave Actions of the "*Portugueſes* in this very place, where "they had fruſtrated the Deſigns of the "*Turks*, of which the ſame *Sofar* who "now came to attack them had born his "ſhare; that God would certainly puniſh the breach of Faith of this "Wretch; and that they ought not to "be diſmay'd at the Winter-ſeaſon, "there being no queſtion but that the "*Portugueſes* by their Skill in Maritime "Affairs, would overcome theſe difficulties, and ſuccour them in due time. The next thing he did, was to take care of all the Poſts; the Water-Redoubt he committed to the care of *Martinho Carvalho* with 30 Men, and the Defence of the ſhore towards *Cambaja* to *Jacobo Leti*.

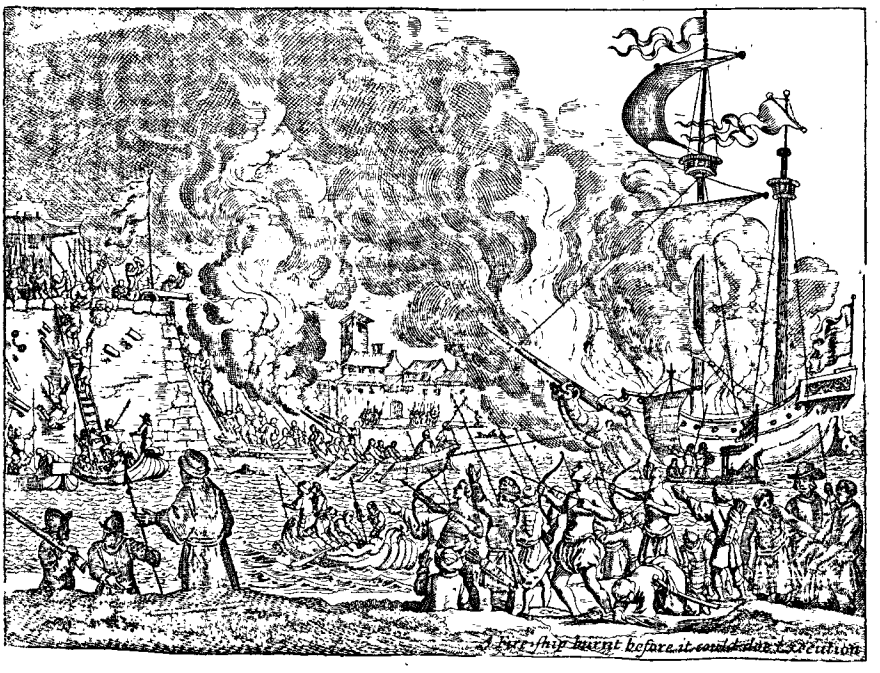
Baldæus.

Breaks out into open Hoſtilities.

Sofar by this time had begun to carry on his Approaches a good way, and ply'd the place warmly with his Cannon, but could not without much difficulty attempt an Aſſault by reaſon of the Ditch, which being inlarg'd of late, was as broad again now as it was in *Sylveria* his time; however he ceaſed not to play with his Cannon, eſpecially in the night time; and being ſenſible of what advantage it would be to him if he could make himſelf Maſter of the Harbour, by taking the Water-Redoubt, he contriv'd ſuch another Engine or Fireſhip as the *Turks* had made uſe of in the former Siege, which they intended to ſet on fire, and to carry with the high Tide under the Fort: But the *Portugueſes* having receiv'd Intelligence of this Deſign, ſent out *Jacobo Leti* with 20 Men to burn her, which he did with incredible Bravery, and the loſs of one Man only, being forc'd to carry the Veſſel through the Enemy's Fire on both ſides, till he brought her within a certain diſtance of the Fort, where ſhe was ſet on fire, and conſequently *Sofar*'s Project vaniſh'd into ſmoak.

Sofar attacks Diu.

Sofar's Fireſhip burnt.



A Fire-ſhip burnt before it could do any Execution

Not long after the *Portugueſes* were rejoic'd with a freſh ſupply of Men, Proviſions and Ammunition from *Goa*, under the Command of the young *de Caſtro*, a brave Gentleman, who, after he had been afflicted with very hard Tempeſts at Sea (in which ſeveral of his Veſſels were ſeparated from his Squadron) came with the reſt, being eight in number, into the Road of *Diu*, and in ſpite of the Beſiegers, landed his Men, Ammunition and Proviſions, which increaſed the Number of the Gariſon to 450 Men. About the ſame time *Mamud* King of *Cambaja* came in Perſon with a good number of Troops into the Camp: *Maſcarenhas* being willing to know their exact number, ſent out ſeveral Deſperado's, who engaging the Outguard of the Enemy, three of them were kill'd in the Skirmiſh, but the reſt had the good fortune to carry off one of the Enemy's Sentinels, by whom *Maſcarenhas* was inform'd of what he had a mind to know. *Maſcarenhas* having order'd certain Signals of rejoicing to be made, the Enemy ſent a Meſſenger to know the reaſon thereof, who was anſwer'd, that 'twas done on account of the King's arrival in the Camp, which put them in hopes that for the future they ſhould fight againſt a great Prince, whereas hitherto they had been engag'd with Vagabonds and Rogues.

The Portugueſes receive ſome Succours.

K. Mamud comes into the Camp.

Mamud immediately after his arrival levell'd his Cannon with great fury againſt the Walls of the Fortreſs, and having brought along with him an expert Gunner, he order'd him to caſt certain fiery Balls into the place, tho without much ſucceſs, till the ſaid Conſtable being kill'd, another ſucceeded in his place, who was ſo unskilful in his Art, that his Fireworks did more miſchief in the Camp than to the Enemy. However by the continual battering of the Enemies Cannon, a large Breach was made by this time in the Wall, which the Beſieged repair'd to the beſt of their power; but their main Reliance was upon the breadth of the Ditch, which the Beſiegers were endeavouring to paſs by the help of their Galleries. To prevent this, the *Portugueſes* had open'd an old Vault at the foot of the Wall, in which they ſpent ſeveral days and nights, but turn'd to their advantage, ſince from thence they could take away great part of the Materials the Enemy had brought thither for the filling up of the Ditch. From hence it was alſo that *Sofar* receiv'd his Death's wound, being ſlain by a Bullet which paſs'd through his Hand and Forehead, which occaſion'd no ſmall diſturbance in the Enemies Camp; and had it not been for *Rumecan* his Son, the Siege had been likely to have been raiſed at that time.

Makes a Breach in the Wall.

Sofar kill'd.

Baldæus.

The Joy the *Portugueſes* had conceiv'd at the death of *Sofar* their mortal Enemy, was not a little allay'd by the perſeverance of the Beſieged in filling up the Ditch, and that with ſuch ſucceſs, that having ſtopt up the before-mention'd Vault, *Maſcarenhas* began to be reduced to the utmoſt ſtreſs, of which he gave notice to the Viceroy at *Goa*, requeſting immediate Succours. It was now about the middle of *Auguſt*, when the *Mahometans* were preparing for the general Aſſault: They viſited their Moſques with a great deal of Devotion, and St. *James*'s day being appointed for this Attack, they advanc'd without the leaſt noiſe in two Bodies before break of day towards the Breach, in hopes of ſurprizing the *Portugueſes*; but finding 'em upon their guard, they enter'd the Breach with moſt terrible and dreadful Outcries, which however was ſo far from terrifying the brave *Portugueſes*, that they were repulſed with great ſlaughter: Some of the *Indians* taking the advantage of the low Tide, got into the Water-Fort, where they pitch'd *Mahomet*'s Standard, which *Maſcarenhas* no ſooner perceiv'd, but flying thither, he gave them ſuch a Reception, that after 30 of them were ſlain upon the ſpot, the reſt were forc'd down headlong over the Wall. This done, he return'd to his Poſt, where both by his Words and Actions he ſo encouraged his Men, that *Rumecan*, after a hot Diſpute of ſix hours, ſaw himſelf oblig'd to ſound a Retreat. In this Action not only *Maſcarenhas*, but alſo *Ludovico Soza*, *Ferdinando de Caſtro*, *Anthonio Paſſando*, and all the *Portugueſes* in general acquir'd immortal Honour, ſeveral Women having expoſed themſelves in the midſt of the Combat.

The Indians ſtorm the Fort.

Are repulſed.

Notwithſtanding this Repulſe, the *Indians* did not ceaſe to continue their Fire againſt the Fortreſs, which not ſucceeding according to expectation, they began to apply their Mines, not without ſome ſucceſs. *Maſcarenhas* having taken notice that the Enemy retreated ſometimes without any neceſſity, near a certain Tower, gave notice thereof to *de Caſtro*, and ſome other Officers of note, commanding them to quit it; but theſe ſlighted with their laſt ſucceſs, refus'd to obey, for which they paid dear ſoon after: for the Enemy taking the opportunity, when they perceiv'd the Tower full of Soldiers,

blew

blew it up on a ſudden with at leaſt 100 *Portugueſes* in it, and among them *de Caſtro*, and ſeveral others of Quality; and ſuch was the Barbarity of the *Indians*, that they thruſt their Swords through the half-dead Bodies of ſuch *Portugueſes* as were thrown up into the Air before by the Mine. They were for improving this opportunity, and during the Confuſion occaſion'd by this Diſaſter, attack'd the Fort with incredible Fury, but were ſo warmly receiv'd by *Maſcarenhas*, that they were glad to retreat. To prevent the like for the future, the *Portugueſe* Governour order'd his Men to act with more caution for the future, and the Tower of St. *James* to be blown up, which was executed; and not long after, finding the Enemy ready to attack the Tower of St. *Thomas*, he blew up the Mine underneath it, and with it 300 *Indians*.

Baldæus. *t Mine lows up oo Portugueſes.* *300 Indians blown up by a Mine.*

The *Portugueſe* Affairs in the Fortreſs began notwithſtanding all this to grow worſe and worſe; for tho they had made ſeveral Intrenchments within Intrenchments, yet had they (after a Siege of four Months) not above 150 Men left for the defence thereof; and being reduc'd to great extremity for want of Proviſions, were forc'd to feed upon unwholeſom things, which ſo diſcourag'd the Gariſon, that they were reſolv'd to put an end to their Miſery by fighting their way through the Enemy.

But being juſt upon the point of putting their Deſign in execution, they were rejoic'd with a moſt unexpected Relief from *Goa*, whence they had ſent 50 Frigats under the Command of *Alvares de Caſtro*, and *Franciſcus de Meneſes*, who arriv'd happily at *Bazain*. *Alvares* ſail'd ſtraitways thence with part of his Forces (amounting to 900 in all) for *Diu*, and good ſtore of Ammunition and Proviſions, the reſt follow'd before the end of *September*. You may eaſily imagine with what Joy the poor emacerated Soldiers of the Gariſon receiv'd this welcome News, which however they would not improve to ſo much advantage as they might have done, out of a perverſe Temper, peculiar to the *Portugueſes*, who as they are ſoon dejected in Adverſity, ſo are they inſupportable in Proſperity: For now the Soldiery began to accuſe *Maſcarenhas* of Cowardice and Neglect, telling him in plain terms, that they were reſolv'd no more to be ſhut up within the Walls, but to act like brave *Portugueſes*, to attack the Enemy in their Works, and to make him once for all to repent that ever he had attempted the *Portugueſes*, whoſe Glorious Name was dreadful all over the *Indies*; this they told him they were fully reſolv'd to put in execution, and if he refus'd to head them, they would chooſe another, the firſt, the beſt they could. *Maſcarenhas*, who knew very well the ſtubborn Pride of the *Portugueſes*, when flush'd with Succeſs, did what he could to divert them from their Deſign by all the mild Inſinuations and moſt forcible Arguments he could invent, telling them that the ſecureſt Methods were always the beſt, and how dangerous it might prove to hazard the loſing of the Fort, when they were in a condition to keep it till the approaching Spring, when they expected ſufficient Succours from *Goa*; but finding them deaf to his Perſwaſions, he ſpoke to them in the following manner: "Soldiers, ye are not inſenſible that, if you would conſider your "Duty, you ought rather to follow my "Commands than your own Directions; "but ſince you have ty'd up my hands, "and both by your Words and Actions, "nay by your very Looks, give me ſuffi-"ciently to underſtand, that inſtead of "commanding, I muſt obey; go on and "ſhew your Courage, your Knowledg "and Experience in Martial Affairs: Go "on, I ſay, I will inſtead of leading you "on, follow you, with this Caution how-"ever, that I would have you remember "to take care to return with the ſame "marks of Bravery as you march out. Then dividing the whole Gariſon into three Bodies, he order'd *Alvares de Caſtro* to command the Van, the main Battel he gave in charge to *Franciſco de Meneſes*, himſelf remaining to guard the Reer. Thus they march'd towards the Enemy, but with far different ſucceſs from what they had promiſed themſelves; moſt of them after the firſt Charge retreating towards the Town, inſtead of puſhing forward; the Body commanded by *Meneſes* being charg'd in Front and Flank, betook themſelves to their heels, and *de Caſtro* himſelf being ſorely wounded by a Stone was hardly ſav'd by *Maſcarenhas*, who crying out to the Soldiers, that it was now time to ſhew their Bravery they had ſo much boaſted of before, would fain have ſtopt their Flight, but in vain; for they retreated with ſo much fear and precipitation, that for ſome time after they ſcarce durſt look the Enemy in the face, or keep their Poſt; whereas the *Indians*, incourag'd by this Succeſs, approach'd with their Engines nearer and nearer to the Walls of the Town.

Diu reliev'd with ſome Men and Proviſions. *Mutiny among the Portugueſes.* *Maſcarenhas his Speech to his Soldiers.* *Their ill ſucceſs.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Baldæus. i.

De Caſtro *comes to* Diu. *Takes ſome* Arabian *Veſſels. Routs the* Indians, *who leave the Iſle.* Rumecan *kill'd.* Soliman's *Tranſactions before* Aden. *He cauſes the King of that place to be hang'd on his Maſt, and makes himſelf Maſter of the City. A Deſcription of* Daman, Dabul *and* Viſiapour.

De Caſtro *ſends* Acunia *to* Diu.

DE *Caſtro* Viceroy of *Goa* had no ſooner receiv'd the unwelcome News of the Death of his Son, and the diſtreſſed Condition of *Diu*, but he ſent at the beginning of the Spring *Alvares de Acunia* with five Men of War and 400 Land-Men thither, with ſtrict Orders that they ſhould keep within their Fortifications till the whole Fleet with the intended Succours ſhould arrive there. *Alvares* in his Paſſage thither took ſeveral *Arabian* Veſſels, aboard of which were ſeveral Perſons of Note belonging to *Sofar*, who, tho they offer'd a great Sum of Mony for their Ranſom, were all cut to pieces, and their Heads thrown into the River.

He takes ſome Arabian *Veſſels.*

The Spring being pretty well advanc'd by this time, *De Caſtro* ſet ſail for *Bazain* with 40 Yachts, having aboard 1400 *Portugueſe* Land-Soldiers, and 300 *Canarins*. With theſe, after having for ſome time infeſted the Coaſt of *Cambaja*, he arriv'd in the *Ilha dos mortos*, whence he ſent an Expreſs to *Maſcarenhas* with Orders to batter the Enemies Entrenchments near the Sea-ſide with his Cannon, to facilitate his landing; which being bravely executed by *Maſcarenhas*, *De Caſtro* enter'd the Harbour without much oppoſition, and ſoon after landed his Men. *De Caſtro* being not a little ſurpriz'd to ſee the Fort appear more like a heap of Rubbiſh than a Fortification, the very Ditches being laid level with the ground, he call'd a Council of War to conſult of the moſt proper means to put an end to the Siege: Some were of opinion, that ſome time ought to be allow'd to the Soldiers to refreſh themſelves after the Fatigues of the Sea; but *De Caſtro* telling them, that it would be a great diſgrace for a *Portugueſe* Viceroy to be lock'd up in a Fort, it was reſolved to attack the Enemy next day.

De Caſtro *relieves* Diu *in Perſon.*

The Portugueſes *make a general Sally.*

Accordingly they march'd out in good order, *De Caſtro* ordering the Drawbridges to be drawn up, to cut off all hopes of retreating into the Fort, and leaving *Anthonio Correa* with ſome Men to guard it againſt any ſudden Attempt. The better to diſtract the Enemy's Forces, *Nicolao Gonſalvo* was commanded to make a falſe Attack with ſome Ships on the backſide of the Iſland. *Rumecan* on the other hand, truſting to his Number, took care to guard his Poſts on all ſides, againſt which *De Caſtro* marched with a much leſſer Force, exhorting his Soldiers in a few words: *That they ought to remember that they ſerv'd a King, who never fail'd to reward ſuch of his Soldiers as fought bravely for God's Cauſe, and the Defence of his Territories in the* Indies, *the Preſervation whereof depended on this Battel; that therefore they ſhould fight like Men, and conſider that all their Safety lay in their hands, all hopes of retreating being cut off by the ſhutting up of the Gates of the Fort, and the removal of the Fleet to the backſide of the Iſle.*

De Caſtro's *Speech to his Soldiers.*

Things being thus diſpos'd, *Gonſalvo* made his falſe Attack on the other ſide of the Iſland, which ſo alarum'd the *Indians*, that they haſtned in whole Troops thither, which gave opportunity to the *Portugueſes* (who were about 3000 ſtrong) animated by the Example of *De Caſtro* and *Maſcarenhas* their Leaders, to break in upon the *Indians* with ſuch fury, that they were not able to reſiſt them. *Rumecan* finding his Forces to give way, and imagining that the Fort was left deſtitute of Men to defend it, aſſaulted the ſame full of deſpair; but being repulſed by *Correa*, was forced to follow the reſt, and being cloſely purſued by the *Portugueſes*, quitted the Iſle, and with the Remnants of his Forces paſſed over to the Continent. The *Portugueſes* enter'd the City, where they kill'd all they met with, without any regard to Age or Sex, where they got an incredible Booty, and among other things the Standard of *Cambaja*, a prodigious quantity of Arms, and 35 Braſs Cannon, one whereof being of an extraordinary ſize, is kept to this day in the Arſenal at *Lisbon*, with certain *Arabick* Characters upon it. The *Portugueſes* loſt not above 60 Men in this Action, whereas of the *Indians* were kill'd no leſs than 4000, and 600 taken Priſoners; *Rumecan* himſelf loſt his Life as he was preparing to paſs over to the Continent.

He routs the Indians.

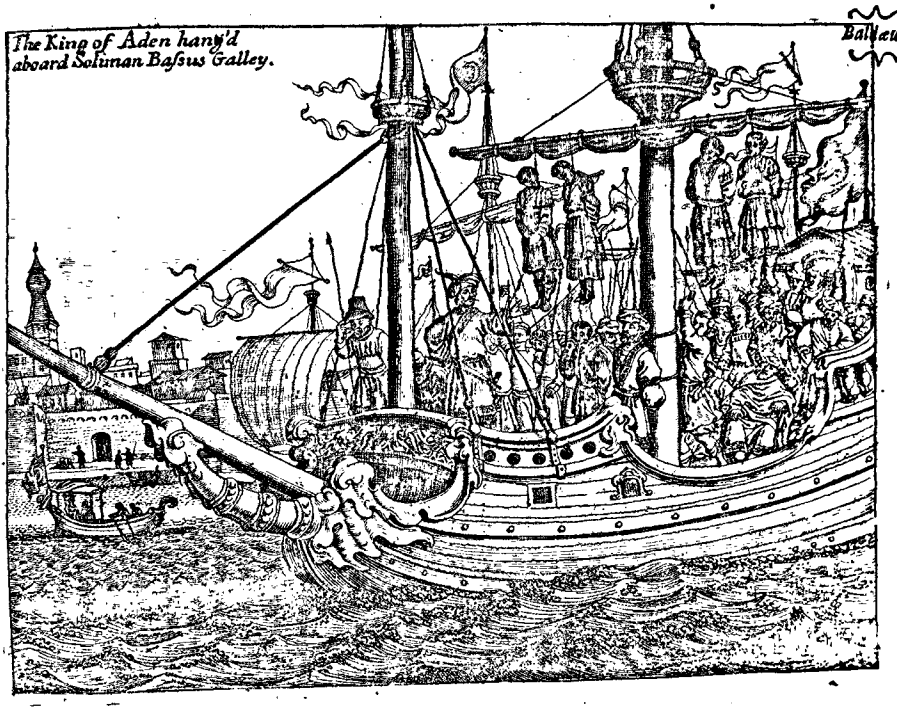
Rumecan *ſlain.*

tinent. *De Caſtro* after having given the King of *Portugal* an account in his Letter of this glorious Victory, and the Bravery of his Officers and Soldiers, gave Orders for the repairing the Fortifications of the Fort, and return'd triumphant to *Goa*, where he was receiv'd with the general Acclamations of the People. *Baldæus.*

Caſtagnedo gives a ſomewhat different Relation of this Action; for he tells us that *Rumecan* wanted neither Bravery nor Conduct, and that he put the *Portugueſes* ſo hard to it, that had it not been for *Maſcarenhas*, who led in Perſon the Soldiers to the Charge, the *Portugueſes* would in all likelihood have loſt the day. He ſays further, that they had 150 Men kill'd, and among them divers brave Officers, *George de Souſe*, *John Manoel*, *Franciſco Azevedo*, *Coſmo de Paiva*, *Balthaſar George*, *Eduardo Rodrigo*, *Juliano Ferdinando*, *Vaſque Ferdinando*, and others; that the *Indians* loſs amounted to 3000 Men, and that the whole Siege of *Diu* conſumed the *Portugueſes* at leaſt 2000 Men.

We told you before, that *Solyman* did come with his Fleet before *Diu*, from *Aden*; about 20 Leagues thence coming to an Anchor to take in freſh Water, he ſent certain Deputies with a Letter to the King of *Aden*, with the uſual Preſent of a Brocado'd Veſt of Tiſſue of Gold, offering him his Friendſhip, and requiring him in the *Grand Signior*'s Name to furniſh his Fleet with Fleſh and Fuel, if he could not aſſiſt in Perſon in the Expedition he was going upon, to extirpate the *Portugueſes* (declar'd Enemies of the *Mahometans*) out of the *Indies*. The King of *Aden* was at that time a Tributary to the *Portugueſes*, unto whom he paid yearly 10000 Ducats Tribute, notwithſtanding which he gave a very honourable Entertainment to the Meſſengers, promiſing to furniſh them with what Neceſſaries they wanted. About ſeven days after the whole *Turkiſh* Fleet entring the Harbour of *Aden*, was receiv'd with ſingular Demonſtrations of Joy, the King ſending one of his chief Courtiers aboard to congratulate *Solyman* upon his arrival, and to invite him aſhore. *Solyman* return'd for Anſwer, That he ſhould be glad to imbrace the King's kind Offers, but that the late Fatigues of the Sea had put him into ſuch a diſorder, that he could not ſtir at preſent; but as ſoon as he ſhould be recover'd of his preſent Indiſpoſition, he would not fail to pay his Reſpects to the King. *Solyman's Treachery with the King of Aden.*

The King's Meſſengers were no ſooner return'd to the City, but *Solyman* ſent 300 Men after them, under pretence of refreſhing themſelves, and taking a view of the place (being all choſen Men) and the better to cover his Treachery, he ſent word to the King, that to prevent any Diſorders, he would ſend 100 Men the next day to bring them aboard again. The King of *Aden* was ſo credulous as to aſſign theſe 300 Men their Quarters in his Caſtle, which *Solyman* had no ſooner notice of, but he ſent the next day inſtead of the 100 Men, no leſs than 2000 *Janizaries*, to the no ſmall Aſtoniſhment of the King, who now beginning to miſtruſt the matter, did not know what courſe beſt to take; but whilſt he was conſidering what meaſures to take, News was brought, that a much ſtronger Body of *Turks* was advancing into the City, who had no ſooner poſted themſelves near the Caſtle, but the Commander in chief told the King with a ſmile, that he would be pleaſed to give a Viſit with two or three of his Courtiers to *Solyman*, who was indiſpoſed aboard his Veſſels. The King now began plainly to ſee the danger that threatned him, but not being in a condition to make any oppoſition, he was forced to ſubmit; and being brought before *Solyman*, he aſ'd them with an unparallel'd Magnanimity, Under what colour he could preſume to take in Cuſtody a Prince in Amity with the Grand Signior, and to treat him no otherwiſe than as a Criminal? Unto which *Solyman* reply'd, *And are you not aſham'd to let the Admiral of the Grand Signior ſtay three days in your Harbour without paying him a Viſit?* The King return'd, *Had the Grand Signior been here in Perſon, I ought to have done no more than what I have done, and I am ſure I ſhould not have been treated thus. 'Tis true, I am now in your power, which I might have prevented had I not truſted my ſelf and my Kingdom with thoſe who now are going to betray both; without which* Aden *need not have ſtood in fear of your Strength: I am now, tho too late, ſenſible of my approaching Deſtiny, ſeeing myſelf in the hands of a treacherous Tyrant; but tho you may diſpoſe of my Body, I hope the Bravery of the Inhabitants of* Aden, *and the Grandure of their Princes will outlaſt your barbarous Cruelties.* He had no ſooner ended his Speech, but *Solyman* order'd him to be hang'd on the Main-maſt Yard, with four of his chief Courtiers, and afterwards ſeized upon the City, excuſing his Treachery with the Grand Signior's *The King of Aden forc'd aboard the Turkiſh Fleet.* *The King of Aden hang'd.*



Signior's Order, to puniſh the King for his being a Friend to the *Portugueſes*.

Diu being one of the chiefeſt places of the *Indies*, we thought it would not be unacceptable to the Reader to inſert the entire Hiſtory thereof here. We will now proceed to the Deſcription of the other places: *Daman* was one of the moſt antient and noted Places of the Kingdom of *Cambaja*, which, as we told you before, was taken and deſtroy'd by *Martino Alphonſo de Soza*. As to *Chaul* and *Bazain*, there is ſcarce any thing remarkable to be ſaid of them, except what has already been mention'd in the account of *Diu*.

Daman.

Chaul. Bazain.

Dabul is a City ſeated at 17 deg. 45 min. of Northern Latitude upon a moſt pleaſant River, ariſing out of the Mountain *Ballaguatte*, about two Leagues from the Sea, in former times much frequented by Foreign Merchants, and famous for its Traffick and Riches. *Sabajus* (a declar'd Enemy of the *Portugueſes*) had ſurrounded this City with a Wall, and fortified the Harbour thereof with a ſtrong Caſtle, which being gariſon'd with 6000 Men, (among whom were 500 *Turks*) he thought himſelf ſecure againſt any Attempts of the *Portugueſes*.

A Deſcription of Dabul.

But *D'Almeyda* the *Portugueſe* Admiral, appearing with his Fleet (aboard whereof were 1300 *European* Land Souldiers, beſides 400 *Malabars*) ſent ſome of his Gallies to make a falſe Attack upon the Caſtle, whilſt he took this opportunity of landing his Men at ſome diſtance from thence. The *Indians* perceiving their Error, march'd with all poſſible ſpeed out of their Gates againſt the *Portugueſes*, whom they gall'd ſorely with their Arrows; but theſe advancing with Sword in hand againſt their Enemies, made ſuch a havock among them, that they were glad to retreat towards the City, and being cloſely purſued by the *Portugueſes*, theſe enter'd pell mell with them, and made a great ſlaughter, killing all they met with, without ſparing Men, Women or Children. They got here a conſiderable Booty, tho a great part of the beſt Moveables were burnt with the City, which was ſet on fire by the *Portugueſes*.

Is taken by the Portugueſes.

We have hitherto given you an account of the moſt conſiderable Cities of the Kingdom of *Decan*, bordering to the

Limits of the Kingdom of Decan.

the South upon *Malabar*, upon *Bisnagar* to the East, upon the Sea to the West, and upon *Cambaja* to the North; it's divided into three parts, *viz.* into *Cuncan*, *Canara* and *Ballaguatte*, the last of which is a ridg of high Mountains flat on the top, with most excellent Pastures, extending even beyond *Goa*. The next in order is the Kingdom of *Visiapour*, the length whereof is no less than 250 Leagues, and its breadth 150. Its Capital City, which bears the same Name, lies 70 Leagues beyond *Goa*, 80 from *Dabul*, and is said to be five Leagues in Compass, with very strong Walls, and five noble Gates, on which are mounted above a thousand Brass and Iron pieces of great Cannon; they tell us, that among these there is one carrying no less than 540 Pound weight of Gunpowder, cast by a certain *Italian*, a Native of *Rome*, who being question'd by one of the King's Commissioners concerning the Mony he had disbursed upon this account, threw him into the same hole where he had cast the Cannon before. Some have reckon'd this City, but erroneously, among the Cities of *Cambaja*.

The Kingdom of Visiapour.

The King of Visiapour now a Vassal of the Great Mogul.

The King of *Visiapour* was formerly absolute Sovereign of this Kingdom, but after a long and heavy War was forced with divers other Princes in those parts, to become a Vassal to the *Great Mogul*: He used also sometimes to be embroil'd with the *Portugueses*.)

This Kingdom borders to the South of *Wingurla* upon the River *Mirsee*, the Boundary of the Country of *Carnatica*, in the Territory of *Sivipaneyk*. To the North of *Wingurla* lies the Sea-port of *Danno*, the Boundary of the Kingdom of *Visiapour* on the side of the Empire of the *Great Mogul*, about 10 Leagues from *Daman*. The River here has 4½ fathom Water at high Tide, and 1½ fathom at low Water. The second River is named *Terrapour*, having at low Water half a fathom, and with high Tide two fathoms depth. The third call'd *Chunam*, has generally two fathoms. The fourth call'd *Machyn*, has 2½ fathom at high Water, and half a fathom at low Tide. The fifth Harbour is call'd *Quelleny*; the sixth *Bazain*; the seventh *Bombain*, (*Bombay*) where the depth is six fathom at high, and four at low Water: The eighth is call'd *Siouwel*, where at high Water there is six fathom deep. All these Rivers belong to the Kingdom of *Visiapour*, but are for the most part in the possession of the *Portugueses*, who have built their Forts upon them: As for instance, at *Bombain* (*Bombay*) a spacious Harbour (at 18 deg. 50 min. Northern Latit.) where Ships may lie safe at Anchor against all the Winds; here the *Portugueses* have built a very fine Castle, (the Draught whereof you may see in the next Cut) which commands the whole Road, and was in 1662 given in part of a Dowry, together with *Tangier* in the Straits of *Gibraltar*, to the Infanta of *Portugal*, upon her Marriage with *Charles* II. King of *England*; whereby the *English* thought to have got a great Booty from the *Portugueses*, whereas they are in effect Places of no considerable Traffick. The Rivers *Dabul*, *Radiapour* and *Carapatan*, are entirely possess'd by the Natives.

Its Limits.

Bombay.

For the rest, this Kingdom abounds in Saltpeter Works. The Royal Palace lies in the Center of the Capital City, defended by a double Wall and Ditch, with 100 battering Pieces, and a Garison of 2000 Men; the richest Merchants dwell in the Suburbs. The other Cities of note of this Kingdom are *Cintapour*, a Seaport Town, *Razapour*, *Banda*, *Rajebaag*, Inland Cities; *Arec*, *Mirdsy*, *Asta*, *Tamba* and *Wingurla*, where the *Hollanders* have a stately Factory; it is seated at 15 deg. 7 min. of Northern Latit. a place very considerable, not only for its plenty in Wheat, Rice, and all sorts of Provisions and Refreshments, but also for its situation near *Goa*, which stood the *Dutch* in no small stead, whilst they were engag'd in War with the *Portugueses*, and had block'd up that Harbour. The Forces of the King of *Visiapour* consists in 150000 Horse, and 8000 Foot, of which more anon in the Description of *Negapatan*. We will in the next place proceed to the Description of *Goa*, together with its Origin, and what afterwards happen'd most remarkable in those parts, betwixt our Nation and the *Portugueses*.

The Royal Palace.

Wingurla.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Baldæus.

Goa *taken by* Albuquerque. *The Death of* Sabajus. Hidalcan *comes before* Goa. Albuquerque *takes* Goa *a second time: Routs the* Moors, *and eſtabliſhes Chriſtianity in that City. The Life and Actions of* Xaverius *in the* Indies, China *and* Japan. *His Zeal and Piety.*

Goa has a bad Air, and moſt of its Proviſions from the Continent.

THE City of *Goa* is ſeated in an Iſle of a conſiderable bigneſs, at 16 deg. of Northern Latit. The Air or Climat is not very wholeſom here, ſo that the *Portugueſes* have in this place (as the *Dutch* have at *Batavia*) their great Hoſpital of the *Indies*, becauſe many of the *Europeans* die here immediately after their arrival, and many more fall ſick by reaſon of the moiſture of the Air, as it was formerly at *Batavia*, which has been remedied ſince in ſome meaſure, by draining the Fens thereabouts. *Goa* is the Capital City of the *Portugueſe Indies*, the chief Reſidence of their Viceroy and Archbiſhop. The City is built after the *Portugueſe* manner, each Houſe having its peculiar Garden, as at *Cochin*, and other *Portugueſe* Cities in the *Indies*.

Goa taken by Albuquerque.

The famous City of *Goa* was conquer'd for the *Portugueſes* by *Albuquerque* in the following manner: One *Timoja* a famous Perſon in thoſe parts, having poſſeſs'd himſelf of a ſmall Iſle belonging to the Kingdom of *Onor*, was a declar'd Enemy of *Sabajus* (of whom before) and the *Mahometans* of *Goa*, who interfering with him in their Commerce, he had deſtroy'd many of the Ships of the *Egyptians* and *Saracens* trading thither. Thus being link'd in point of Intereſt to the *Portugueſes*, he had declar'd to *Almeyda* his readineſs to do what Service he was able to perform to *Emanuel* then King of *Portugal*.

Albuquerque coming into thoſe parts, ſent for *Timoja*, to conſult with him concerning certain matters of moment relating to thoſe parts, who inform'd him, that *Sabajus* being a declar'd Enemy of the *Portugueſes*, had after the taking of *Dabul*, beſtow'd vaſt Sums of Mony in making Preparations againſt the Chriſtians; but being prevented by Death from putting them in execution, he was ſucceeded by his Son *Hidalcan*, who being engag'd in a War with the neighbouring Kings, and *Goa* at this time embroil'd with inteſtine Diviſions, which had made moſt of the Gariſon deſert his Service, he was of opinion, that in caſe *Albuquerque* would for this time ſet aſide his Expedition againſt *Ormus*, and attack *Goa*, he might make himſelf maſter of that City without much oppoſition: and to convince him of the ſincerity of his Intention, he offer'd to go along with him in Perſon, and to take his ſhare in all the danger. *Albuquerque* approving of the Counſel of *Timoja*, call'd together a Council of War, in which it being agreed to lay aſide the Deſign upon *Ormus*, and in lieu thereof to attack *Goa*, *Timoja* liſted a good number of Soldiers (under pretence that they were to be imploy'd againſt *Ormus*) and ſoon after having join'd *Albuquerque* with 14 Ships, they tarried near 11 days in the Iſle of *Anchediva*: For ſome of the *Portugueſes* began to queſtion the ſucceſs of this Enterprize, alledging that there were 4000 Men in Gariſon in the City, and that it was imprudence to rely too much upon *Timoja*; but *Albuquerque* perſiſting in his Reſolution, ſet ſail from the Iſle, and came to an Anchor before the Bar of *Goa*.

Sabajus his Death.

Albuquerque ſets ſail for Goa.

From hence he detatch'd *Anthony Noronia* his Siſter's Son, and *Timoja* with ſome light Veſſels, to make themſelves maſters of the two Forts that defended the Entrance towards the City; which being done with all imaginable ſucceſs, he ſent his Meſſengers to *Goa*, to let the Inhabitants know, that if they would ſubmit, they ſhould be treated like Friends, and be diſcharged of one third part of the Tribute they were oblig'd to pay to *Hidalcan*; but in caſe of refuſal they muſt expect no Mercy. The Inhabitants of *Goa* ſeeing themſelves reduc'd to this nonplus, in the abſence of *Hidalcan*, moſt of their Soldiers having deſerted, and their Forts in the Enemies hands, thought it their wiſeſt courſe not to abide the extremity, but to accept of the Offers of the *Portugueſes*, which they did accordingly, and receiv'd *Albuquerque* with all the Demonſtrations of Friendſhip, who rode triumphantly on Horſe-back into the City under the Acclamations of the People, a *Dominican* carrying an Enſign with the Croſs in it, and another the Keys of the City (ſurrender'd to him) before him. He was very punctual in performing all the Articles agreed

Two Forts taken.

Goa ſurrender'd to the Portugueſes.

agreed upon betwixt him and the Inhabitants, forbidding the Soldiers under the moſt ſevere Penalties, to commit the leaſt Outrages. His next care was, to take a view of the condition of the City, where he found divers goodly Veſſels, ſome lately built, others upon the Stocks; the Arſenal very well provided with Artillery, and the King's Stables with a conſiderable number of the beſt *Arabian* Horſes. And finding by the ſituation of the Place, of what conſequence it might prove to the *Portugueſes* for the future, in carrying on the War upon the Continent of *Canbaja* and the Cape of *Corus*, and to keep the neighbouring Princes in awe, he left no ſtone unturn'd to provide for its Security.

Baldæus.

Thus much for the firſt Enterprize of the *Portugueſes* upon *Goa*. We will now alſo give you a ſhort account of their further ſucceſs, how they loſt it again by Treachery, and regain'd it a ſecond time the 25th of *Novemb.* 1510. where theſe following Perſons ſignaliz'd themſelves to their immortal Honour, *Manuel de Cunha*, *Manuel de Lacerda*, *Don John de Lima*, and his Brother *Don Jeronimo de Lima*, *Denys Fernandes*, *Diego Mendes de Vaſconcelos*, with many others.

Loſt again by the Portugueſes.

For *Hidalcan* had no ſooner receiv'd the ſurprizing News of the loſs of *Goa*, but he made a Peace with the neighbouring Princes upon the beſt Conditions he could, with an intention to bend all his Forces towards the recovery of *Goa*. The better to compaſs his Deſign, he ſent *Camalcan* his General, a brave Soldier, before with 8000 Foot, and 1500 Horſe, to endeavour to paſs a certain Branch of the Sea which incloſes the Iſle, he himſelf intending to follow with an Army of 5000 Horſe, and 40000 Foot, as ſoon as he had made all the neceſſary Preparations for ſuch an Enterprize.

Hidalcan prepares for the recovery of Goa.

Camalcan having pitch'd his Tents near the Sea-ſhore, this, together with the News of the approach of *Hidalcan* with a moſt powerful Army, caus'd no ſmall Conſternation in the Iſland. *Goa* was inhabited at that time by two ſorts of People, *viz.* the Mahometans and Pagans; the firſt out of an irreconcilable hatred to the Chriſtians, cry'd out for *Hidalcan* the Son of *Sabajus*, who was of the ſame Religion with them; and the Pagans fearing leſt they ſhould be ſeverely chaſtiſed for their having ſurrendred the City upon ſuch eaſy terms, were for purchaſing *Hidalcan*'s favour by betraying *Albuquerque*'s Counſels to him. The worſt of all was, that many even among the *Portugueſes* began to upbraid *Albuquerque* with want of Conduct, who they ſaid, out of Vain-glory only, without the leaſt regard to the Intereſt of *Portugal*, had with a handful of Men ventur'd upon ſo deſperate an Enterprize as the ſeizing of ſo populous a City.

Albuquerque nothing diſmay'd at all theſe Obſtacles, endeavour'd to appeaſe the *Portugueſes* by fair words and promiſes, took 100 of the chief Inhabitants into cuſtody, and having intercepted a Letter directed to *Camalcan*, he puniſh'd the Author thereof with Death, with divers others who were convicted of a Correſpondence with the Enemy. But as his chief aim was to diſpute their Paſſage croſs the Branch of the Sea, he had erected Batteries provided with Cannon, at convenient diſtances near the Sea-ſide, and ſecur'd all their Boats, by which means he had repulſed them ſeveral times in their Attempts. At laſt taking the advantage of a dark tempeſtuous night, they brought over both their Horſe and Foot, without receiving any conſiderable damage from the *Portugueſes*. Thus approaching to the City in Battel-array, moſt of the Inhabitants join'd with them, which oblig'd the *Portugueſes* to retreat thither, tho without any great proſpect of Security.

Albuquerque endeavours to hinder their Paſſage into the Iſle.

Camalcan paſſes into the Iſle.

Camalcan ſummon'd *Albuquerque* to a ſurrender under certain Conditions; but tho he was ſenſible of the approaching danger, and the difficulty there would be of receiving any Relief in the Winter-ſeaſon from *May* till *September*, when the frequent Storms render the Seas thereabouts unnavigable, and choak up the Entrance of the Harbour of *Goa*, yet was he reſolv'd to expect the arrival of *Hidalcan*, and to abide the utmoſt Extremities rather than to ſurrender the place, reſolving if all fail'd to paſs the Winter in his Ships in the Harbour in ſpite of the Enemy. *Camalcan*, aſtoniſh'd at the Reſolution of the *Portugueſes*, made ſeveral fierce Attacks upon them, but in vain, till at laſt *Hidalcan* appearing with all his Forces, he reſolv'd to cut off all manner of Proviſions from the *Portugueſes*, by which means he did not queſtion to become Maſters of the Place without Bloodſhed.

He reſolv'd however to ſend a Herald to *Albuquerque* to offer him honourable Conditions if he would depart; but whilſt they were treating upon that Head, he found means to have a Ship loaden with Ballaſt ſunk below the City, where the Branch of the Sea is pretty narrow, and the

Channel very ſtrait, with an intention to have another ſunk hard by it: *Albuquerque* was no ſooner advertiſed thereof, but he call'd a Council of War, in which it was unanimouſly agreed, that they ſhould embark the next night, before they had ſtopt up the whole Channel, that the Enemy might not intercept their Paſſage.

Accordingly they march'd out in the dead time of the night; but having ſet fire to their Magazine, they were diſcover'd and attack'd by the Enemy, ſo that with much ado they got to their Ships, when they weigh'd their Anchors, and with incredible difficulty paſs'd through the narrow Channel at ſome diſtance from the Town: By which however they were not freed from their Miſery or Danger; for by the continual windings of the River they were frequently expoſed to the Enemy's Fire, and being deſtitute of freſh Water, they were forc'd to drink ſalt corrupted Water; what Horſe-fleſh they had left being alſo conſum'd, they were reduc'd to feed upon Mice, Cats and Leather, which occaſion'd a great Mortality among the *Portugueſes*: Add to this, that they were continually annoy'd with the Enemy's Cannon from the two beforemention'd Forts (left by the *Portugueſes* for want of Men) and ſaw no way how to paſs them without a moſt manifeſt hazard.

The Portugueſes in great diſtreſs.

Albuquerque being put to theſe ſtraits, reſolv'd upon a thing which at firſt ſight appear'd rather to be a madneſs than founded upon ſerious Conſiderations: but the Event ſhew'd, that in Extremities the boldeſt and moſt hazardous Undertakings are often the beſt. Both theſe Forts were provided with good Gariſons, but being ſenſible of the Miſery of the *Portugueſes*, they regarded them ſo little, that they ſcarce thought it worth their while to guard their Poſts: *Albuquerque* having receiv'd ſome notice thereof, detatch'd 300 choſen Men, whom he divided into two Troops; theſe being animated with great Promiſes and Revenge, advanced towards the Forts at the ſame time, and finding the Centrys aſleep, kill'd them, and ſo entring the Forts ſoon put the reſt to flight, took poſſeſſion of the Fort, and carried off the Cannon aboard their Veſſels. *Hidalcan* was ſo ſurpriz'd at this bold Enterprize, that not thinking himſelf ſecure in the place where he was, he order'd his Tent to be pitch'd at a greater diſtance.

A hazardous Attempt of the Portugueſes.

The next thing the *Indians* attempted was, to endeavour to ſet fire to the *Portugueſe* Fleet by means of dry Bruſh-wood and Faggots dipt in Pitch and Roſin; to prevent which *Albuquerque* man'd out certain Boats to burn them before they could come near enough: This occaſion'd a ſmart Engagement, wherein *Anthony Noronia* (a brave young Gentleman, declar'd Viceroy of the *Indies* after *Albuquerque*) being dangerouſly wounded in the Knee, died a few days after. The Enemy's loſs was alſo very conſiderable; but the Death of *Noronia*, together with the manifold Miſeries, Daggers, and Difficulties they had daily to ſtruggle with, made the *Portugueſes* reſolve to ſail to the Iſle of *Anchediva* to let ſhore their ſick Men, who ſtood in great need of Refreſhments for their Recovery.

Baldæus.

Anthony Noronia ſlain.

The Portugueſes ſail to Anchediva.

Whilſt *Albuquerque* was here ruminating with himſelf how to recover *Goa*, a Squadron of 10 *Portugueſe* Men of War arriv'd in the *Indies*. Strengthened with this Succour, and having new model'd his Forces by purging them of ſome mutinous Spirits, he embark'd 1500 Land-Soldiers, and 300 *Malabars* aboard 34 Veſſels; and ſteering his courſe to the Iſle of *Onor*, he concerted new meaſures with *Timoja* for the Recovery of *Goa*: and having engag'd him to liſt as many Forces as poſſibly he could, he ſet ſail immediately towards *Goa* with ſuch an aſtoniſhing Confidence of ſucceſs, that the *Indians* upon his approach deſerted the Forts without firing a Cannon.

Advancing from hence to the City, a bloody Engagement enſued near the Royal Palace, which *Hidalcan*'s Soldiers pretending to defend to the utmoſt extremity, but being routed, the reſt threw down their Arms, ſome precipitating themſelves from the Walls into the Ditch, others ſeeking Refuge, or rather Death, among the Waves, whilſt the reſt diſperſed in the Iſland. This Engagement laſted above ſix hours. Immediately after *Timoja* coming to the Aſſiſtance of the *Portugueſes*, they enter'd the City, where they made a moſt miſerable havock among the *Moors*, whom they were reſolved to extirpate root and branch; 7000 whereof are ſuppoſed to have been ſlain in four days times; the Pagans themſelves being exaſperated at them for having diſpoſſeſs'd them of their Lands, cut many of them to pieces, and among the reſt the Treaſurer of *Hidalcan*, in whoſe Houſe they found a good Booty. Such of the *Mahometans* as were taken Priſoners, *Albuquerque* order'd to be incloſed in a *Turkiſh* Moſque, together with a certain Renegado Chriſtian, who had deſerted to *Goa*, and to ſet it on fire.

Attack Goa a ſecond time.

And take it.

Commit great Cruelties.

fire, which was executed accordingly.

Baldæus. The next thing *Albuquerque* took care of, was to have Bricks and Lime made for the rebuilding and ſtrengthening of the Fortifications; and (if we may credit the *Portugueſes*) as they were digging under the Ruins of ſome old Walls, they found a Brazen Croſs, which (conſidering no Chriſtians were ever known to have liv'd there before) was look'd upon by them as a miraculous good Omen, preſaging the Eſtabliſhment of the Chriſtian Religion there.

A Croſs found in the Ruins of Goa.

Albuquerque having puniſh'd with Death ſuch of the Inhabitants as had had a hand in the firſt Mutiny, order'd that the *Portugueſes* ſhould marry the young Women of the Country (after they had been baptiz'd) the better to people the City, which from that time began to encreaſe conſiderably: *Sequeria* having cauſed the firſt Church that was built, with the adjacent Houſes and Convent, to be dedicated to S. *Francis*. And in the year 1548. the Church and Convent of *Dominicans* was erected of Brick-work, 12 Fathers of that Order being about that time introduced into the *Indies* by *James Bermudius* a *Caſtilian*. After the arrival of the Jeſuits in thoſe parts (who have alſo a fine College here) there were in four years time baptiz'd no leſs than 17290 *Indians*, without reckoning thoſe converted by the *Franciſcans* and *Dominicans* before. In the Jeſuits Chappel lies intrench'd the Body of *Francis Xaverius*, of which the *Portugueſes* relate ſtrange Miracles, as well as of his whole Life; an ample relation whereof may be ſeen in *John de Lucena* in *Portugueſe*, by *Daniel Bartholi* in *Italian*, and by ſeveral others in *Latin*; and in another Treatiſe of *Bartholi* printed at *Rome* 1653. concerning the Actions of the antient Fathers of the Jeſuitical Order. It will be ſufficient for us to touch upon ſome of the chief Heads related by the *Portugueſes* of this Saint.

The Church of the Franciſcans and Dominicans.

Increaſe of the Chriſtians.

The Death of Xaverius. He died in the Iſle of *Sanchan* in *China* 1552. the ſecond of *December*, of a violent Fever, in the eleventh year of his Voyage over the *Indies*. His dead Carcaſe was laid in a Coffin with his Clothes on, fill'd with Lime, with an intention to tranſport his Bones thence after the Fleſh had been conſum'd by the quick Lime. Many days after the *Portugueſes* opening the Coffin, found his Body not only uncorrupted, but alſo of a lively Colour, and moſt agreeable Scent: Thence being tranſported to *Malacca*, and the Coffin being opened a ſecond time, above three Months after his Deceaſe, they found neither the leaſt ſigns of Corruption, or any nauſeous Stench. After he had been buried here five Months, a certain Jeſuit travelling that way from *Goa*, being deſirous to ſee the Body of *Xaverius*, found not only the Body, but alſo his Clothes uncorrupted, and of a very odoriferous Scent.

His Body uncorrupted.

Thus it being judged unſeemly that his Body ſhould remain any longer under ground, *Didacus Pereria* cauſed a magnificent Coffin adorn'd with Gold and Silk to be made, wherein the Body was depoſited at *Malacca*, till it could be tranſported to *Goa*, where it was received with incredible demonſtrations of Joy by the Viceroy, all the Perſons of note, and eſpecially by the Jeſuits, and depoſited with a great deal of Ceremony in the Chappel of S. *Paul*. And finding that the People were ſo eager to touch his Body, that it was to be fear'd they would in time conſume it, or carry it away by piece-meals, it was incloſed in an Iron Grate; ſuch being the Zeal of the People of *Goa* at that time, that they would imbrace the Body of *Xaverius* without intermiſſion, lay their Beads upon it, rub it with their Hands, &c. and the whole City rung of the Praiſes of this Saint, of his uncommon Zeal, Piety, Charity, Mildneſs, his Dangers in his Voyages, his Chaſtity, Temperance, Faſts, Prayers, Miracles, Conſtancy, Prudence, and great Actions for the Honour of Chriſt.

Is tranſported to Goa.

The Speech he made upon his departure for *Japan* and *China* to his Friends, who were for diſſwading him from ſo dangerous an Undertaking, is ſo excellent in its kind, that it very well deſerves a place in this Treatiſe.

Xaverius his Speech.

" I am ſurpriz'd to ſee you who ſpend " your days in the Praiſe of God Al- " mighty's Power and Mercy, ſhould " now be ſo diffident thereof in regard " of my Perſon. Have you forgot who " is the Supreme Governour of the Uni- " verſe, and that every thing is rul'd by " his Will? Can you be deſtitute of " Inſtances of this nature? Don't the " Waves of the Sea, who open'd a way " to the Servants of God through the " depth thereof, furniſh you with an " undeniable Example? Don't the Winds " who allay'd their fury by his Com- " mand, proclaim his Power? Pray " look upon *Job*, who could not be af- " flicted by the Devil without God's " ſpecial Permiſſion. The Mouth of " Truth himſelf tells you, that the Hairs

" of

" of our Heads are number'd. As we " ſee Ambaſſadors of Temporal Princes, " relying upon their Characters, and the " Power of their Maſters, paſs unarm'd " and undiſturb'd through an Enemy's " Camp; ſo it becomes us who bear the " Character of Interpreters of the Di- " vine Law, and of Teachers of the " Heathens, to rely upon nothing but " the Aſſiſtance and Power of the Di- " vine Majeſty, which without any other " Weapons can carry us ſafely through " all Dangers both by Sea and Land, " through Fire and Sword, or what elſe " may ſeem to oppoſe the accompliſh- " ment of his Will. And if it happen " that ſome of his faithful Miniſters fall " into the hands of cruel Perſons, if they " are devour'd by wild Beaſts, ſuffer " Shipwracks, or are expoſed to Hunger, " Thirſt, Cold, Heat, Sickneſſes, and " other Miſeries, all theſe are to be " look'd upon as the Effects of the Di- " vine Pleaſure, to try the Faith and " Conſtancy of his Servants: For were " it not ſo, we are ſufficiently convinc'd " by many Examples, in what manner " our God has a careful Eye over them; " how he has ſent the Ravens to feed " them, the Angels to feed them, how " the wildeſt Beaſts have depoſited " their natural Fury and become mild, " how the Flame it ſelf has not been " able to hurt them, nor the greateſt " Tyrants to execute their Cruelties " upon them. 'Tis true, the Victory " does not always incline on our ſide, " and we are often fruſtrated in the ex- " pectation of the fruits of our Labour; " but thoſe Diſappointments ought not " in the leaſt ſtop the hand of a zealous " Miniſter, in attempting every thing " that may conduce to God's Honour, " and the Salvation of Souls. If a Sol- " dier in hopes of a ſmall ſhare of Ho- " nour, ventures his Life in the midſt of " his Enemies; if the Seaman for the " hopes of an inconſiderable Lucre, leave " the ſhore, and commit his Life to the " mercileſs Waves, would it not be a " ſhame for a Miniſter of Chriſt to re- " fuſe to hazard his Life for God's Ser- " vice, and to look upon every thing as " a trifle in compariſon of the Kingdom " of Heaven, and its Increaſe? Let no " ſuch thoughts enter our Minds, there " being nothing ſo precious, that ought " in this regard to hinder us from the " promoting of God's Service. *Baldæus.*

A moſt excellent Speech, worthy to be imprinted in the Hearts of all faithful Miniſters of Chriſt, and the more valuable upon that ſcore, that his Deeds were altogether agreeable to his Words. For embarking at *Goa* for *Malacca*, he thence ſet ſail in a *Chineſe* Jorake or Veſſel for *Japan*, where he arriv'd happily at *Cangoxima*, where this great Man did not think it below himſelf to be inſtructed in the firſt Rudiments of that Language for Chriſt's ſake. The next thing he applies himſelf to was, to have the chief Articles of the Chriſtian Faith tranſlated into the *Japoneſe* Language, making uſe for this purpoſe of an Interpreter, till he attain'd himſelf to the Perfection thereof, in which he ceaſed not to labour day and night; being mov'd by an uncontroulable Zeal of planting the Goſpel among theſe Pagans. Truly a very commendable Zeal, not to be forgotten by all who bear the Name of Chriſtians; and tho *Xaverius* his Religion differs in certain Points from ours, yet might his Piety and other commendable Virtues ſerve as an Encouragement to all pious Miniſters, to follow his Footſteps in performing the Service of God to the utmoſt of their Power. It muſt be confeſs'd on all hands, that had not the active Spirit of the Jeſuits awaken'd the *Franciſcans*, and other Religious Orders from their Drouſineſs, the *Roman* Church had before this time been buried in its Ruins: And as for my ſelf, I am very willing to own, that my Pen is not capable of expreſſing the worth of ſo great a Man; tho at the ſame time I am of opinion, that if *Xaverius* were alive now, he would diſown many things, eſpecially as to his Miracles, ſince publiſh'd by his Followers.

CHAP.

Baldæus.

CHAP. XIV.

Increase of the City of Goa. *Its Traffick, Manners, and way of living of the* Portugueses *there. The War betwixt the* Dutch *Company and the* Portugueses. *Their Ambassadors appear in the Great Council at* Batavia; *their Propositions and Transactions.*

THE City of *Goa* increasing every year in Riches and Traffick, increased also in Strength by the addition of several Forts near the Water-side; this being the Capital City of the *Portugueses* in the *Indies*. Its Traffick was much more considerable formerly than of late years, since by our blocking up the Bar of *Goa* they were not a little disturb'd by our Ships. Whilst *Goa* was in its flourishing State, they used to send their Ships to *Pegu*, *Siam*, *Japan*, *Persia*, *Cambaja*, *Arabia*, *Malabar*, *Coromandel*, *Bengale*, *Achem*, besides divers other places. It's well inhabited not only by *Europeans*, but also *Canarins*, *Moors*, and *Pagans* of all Nations, who live for the most part upon trading, or are Handicrafts Men. The great Street of *Goa* has many rich Shops well-stor'd with Silks, Porcellain, and other precious Commodities, Drugstery Wares, Manufactories, &c. Some of these as well as fresh Provisions are sold every day in the Market-places, where you hear a Crier, or Auctioneer (call'd by them *Lalang*) to sell in publick all sorts of Goods, both movable and unmovable, Cattle, Slaves, &c. to the fairest Bidder; but they leave off early, by reason of the excessive Heat about mid-day.

Increase and Traffick of Goa.

Inhabitants.

The manner of living of the *Portugueses* is the same here as in most other places of the *Indies*; they are distinguish'd into *Casados*, *i. e.* married People, and *Soldados*, single People; the last are most esteem'd. The *Portugueses* here are generally very idle, seldom applying themselves to any Employment, leaving the management of their business for the most part to their Slaves, even the Women committing the care of their Children to the Female Slaves, who also give them suck. The Men frequently marry with the Natives of the Country, yet not so much now as formerly: The Children begot betwixt a *Portuguese* and an *Indian* Woman are call'd *Mistices*, as the Children of these *Mistices* are call'd *Castices*.

The way of living of the Portugueses.

The Men are generally addicted to excessive Lust; and I remember to have seen three Women Slaves lie in at once, who were got with Child by their Masters; Fornication and Adultery being consider'd among them as Errors of little moment: but they are very averse to Drunkenness, notwithstanding which Quarrels and Murders are frequent among them.

The Men are also generally excessive proud, there being scarce any of them that thinks himself remov'd a little above the vulgar sort, but what has his Umbrello carried over his Head, another Servant to carry his Cloke after him, and another who holds his Sword: They use frequently Snuff, not excepting even the Maidens and Women; and as they walk along the Streets, they are continually stroking and setting up their Whiskers. The Women never appear abroad either a foot or in Chairs unveil'd, their Husbands being (and perhaps not without reason) very jealous of them; for which reason also they keep them at home in their Apartments above stairs, the Windows whereof are so contriv'd, that they can look upwards, but not downwards into the Streets.

Their Lust and Pride.

Their Jealousy.

The Distempers most in vogue at *Goa* are the burning Fevers, which the *Portugueses* cure by Venesection, sometimes five or six times aday, but they let but little at a time. The *French* or *Spanish* Pox are also so common here (as in most other parts of the *Indies*) that a *Fidalgo* or Gentleman here does not look upon it as a disgrace to have been afflicted with it twice or thrice in his life-time. For the rest, the *Portugueses* use much Sweetmeats, and take a Draught of cool Water after it, they being Enemies to strong Liquors, and moderate in their Diet, a small share sufficing for a good number of People. The Women feed much upon Rice, tho they have excellent Wheaten Bread; they also use frequently *Betel* and *Areek*, and all sorts of Pickles, which makes them have a pale Colour.

Distempers.

The King of *Visiapour* has more than once shewn his Inclination of attacking *Goa* by Land, especially at that time whilst *Cornelius Simonsz* commanded the *Dutch*

The King of Visiapour willing to attack Goa.

Dutch Fleet in thoſe parts, he being much reſpected among the *Mahometans* ever ſince his burning of the Galleons near *Mormagon:* But the Death of the ſaid Admiral prevented the deſign of that King, as much queſtioning whether his Succeſſor might be a Man of the ſame ſtamp. In the year 1641. the ſaid King promiſed a ſecond time to form the Siege of *Goa*, provided the *Dutch* Company would engage to let a certain number of their Ships winter at *Dabul*, *Ortzery*, or ſome other of his Majeſty's Harbours, which was no more than a neceſſary Precaution; it being certain, that in caſe the Siege ſhould miſcarry, the *Portugueſes* without our Aſſiſtance would have made themſelves Maſters of theſe Harbours. Formerly it was accounted dangerous to ſend our Ships to the Bar of *Goa* before *October*; but Experience has taught us ſince, that this Coaſt of the *Indies* is navigable towards the latter end of *Auguſt*, or in *September*, the exact time when the rich Ships come from *Moſambique*, *Maſcatte*, and divers other places, which have ſometimes been taken by our Ships; whereas if they come later, they have nothing elſe to do but to attempt the Galleons under the Caſtle. In the year 1640. the *Portugueſes* made ſhift to bring into the Harbour two *Caracks*, and as many Galleons, well provided with Men, and all other Neceſſaries, which gave them the opportunity to fortify the Iſle of *Mormagon*; ſince which time, to render the Blockade by Sea the more effectual, the *Hollanders* have order'd certain Frigots to cruiſe with a Sloop near the Cape and the *Burned Iſlands* (call'd *Ilhas quimadas*) whereby the *Portugueſe Caſſilas*, which ſupply them with Proviſions, are prevented from going out or in.

How Goa is to be block'd up by Sea.

The Dutch care not to be Maſters of Goa.

It is ſufficiently demonſtrable, that the *Dutch* Company did at firſt judg it for their intereſt to be Maſters of *Goa*, but laid it aſide afterwards, thinking it more for their intereſt to block up the Bar of *Goa*: Certain it is, that both the Directors and the Governor and Members of the Great Council of the *Indies*, look'd upon the War betwixt them and *Portugal* as propitious to them, as is evident from the Petition deliver'd in *May* 1641. by the ſaid Directors in the *Hague* to the States General of the *United Provinces*.

The War betwixt the Dutch and Portugueſes propitious to the firſt.

The chief intent of this Petition was, to ſhew, That tho it was beyond all queſtion that the *Dutch Eaſt-India* Company was erected in its firſt beginning in the years 1601, 1602, and 1604. to carry on a peaceable Commerce in the *Indies*; but that ſince Experience had ſufficiently convinc'd them, that the *Portugueſes*, who had play'd the Maſters in the *Indies* for many years before, had left no ſtone unturn'd to diſturb the Commerce of the *Dutch*, by ſeizing their Ships, and imprinting very diſadvantageous Notions of them into the *Indian* Princes. That in 1602. when the *Dutch Eaſt-India* Trade was incorporated into one Society or Company, two peculiar Advantages were (among others) obtain'd thereby at that time: Firſt, Full Authority of protecting their Traffick jointly in the *Indies* by force of Arms: The Conſequence whereof had been, ſecondly, That the *Indian* Princes were enter'd into an Engagement with the ſaid *Dutch* Company, out of hatred and fear of the *Portugueſes*; that by theſe means the Ships of the *Dutch* Company having purged the Seas of the Pirats, had ſettled ſince the year 1604. their Factories and Traffick, not only in all the Iſlands from the Red Sea as far as *Japan*, but alſo in the Territories of the Grand Signior, in *Arabia*, at *Mocha*, in *Perſia*, even in the Capital City of *Iſpahan*, in the Kingdom of *Cambaja*, and the Empire of the Great *Mogul*, in *Decan*, in *Malabar*, *Narſinga*, *Coromandel*, *Golgonda*, *Bengale*, *Aracan*, *Pegu*, *Achin*, *Sumatra*, *Jambi*, *Paliimban*, *Bantam*, *Cambodia*, *Siam*, *Cochin-China*, *Tonquin*, &c. That ſince the Eſtabliſhment of theſe Factories, the ſecurity of their Commerce was chiefly founded upon this Maxim, to maintain a War againſt the declar'd Enemy of theſe *Indian* Princes, their Engagements to us being founded upon their opinion of our Enmity with the *Portugueſes*. To prove this they alledg the following ten Reaſons.

Baldæus.

Factories of the Dutch in the Indies

Ten Reaſons for the continuance of a War with the Portugueſes.

1. Becauſe the *Dutch Eaſt-India* Company was chiefly by means of the War with the *Portugueſes* arriv'd to that Greatneſs it is now at, their whole Traffick in the *Indies* being founded upon this Baſis, whence they draw yearly a return of 78910 Millions of Gelders; and if the ſaid Foundation were not ſhaken, they might expect every year larger Returns.

2. That in caſe of a Truce they ſhould not reap the fruits of the Victories, *viz.* to put a ſtop to their Power, a thing abſolutely to be conſider'd.

3. In caſe of a Truce the Equipment of many Ships of War would be laid aſide, by which means *Holland* would be depriv'd of the Strength of a conſiderable number of Men of War in caſe of neceſſity.

Valleus.

4. That in caſe of an abatement of the Equipment of Ships of War for the *Eaſt-Indies*, and conſequently of the diminution of our Trade in the *Indies*, and the return of our Ships from thence, the advantage accruing to *Holland* by the Convoys muſt alſo be neceſſarily diminiſh'd.

5. That many thouſands of Families in the *Indies* would thereby be depriv'd of their livelihood.

6. That the whole *Eaſt-India* Trade, by which many Millions are gain'd yearly, would decay in proportion as the *Portugueſes* ſhould increaſe in the ſaid Traffick.

7. That in regard of the Intereſt of the *Dutch* Company it ought to be conſider'd, that ſince of late years they had been at vaſt Expences in providing Ships of War, and liſting of Soldiers, they were (through God's Bleſſing) in a probability of making further Conqueſts upon the *Portugueſes*.

8. That in caſe the *Eaſt-India* Trade ſhould come to decay, and conſequently their Profit be diminiſh'd, they would be in danger of being quite oppreſs'd by the heavy burden they lay under of providing Gariſons and other Neceſſaries againſt the Attempts of the *Europeans* their Enemies.

9. That thereby the *Dutch* Company would be expos'd to the hazard of being depriv'd of all the advantages they had gain'd by right of Arms from the *Portugueſes*, or otherwiſe.

10. In caſe of a Peace or Ceſſation of Arms betwixt the *Dutch* Company and the *Portugueſes*, it was to be fear'd, that the good underſtanding betwixt the ſaid Company and the *Indian* Princes, would ſoon decay, to the no ſmall detriment and danger of the Company and their Servants, eſpecially in *Japan*: which Traffick if it were loſt, the Trade of *China* would be of little conſequence; a Peace or Truce with the *Portugueſes* being abſolutely contrary to the Engagements they had with the *Indian* Kings.

In conſideration therefore of the great detriment that would accrue to the ſaid Company by a Peace with the *Portugueſes*, the ſaid Directors did moſt humbly petition their High and Mightineſſes to take it into ſerious Conſideration, whether the Damages their Subjects, and eſpecially the Company, were likely to ſuffer thereby, would not in a great meaſure overballance the Advantages the States might promiſe themſelves from a Peace with *Portugal*; and in caſe they judged the Peace with *Portugal* abſolutely for their Intereſt, whether the *Eaſt-Indies* might not be excepted in the ſaid Peace, as was done in the Truce concluded 1609. and whereof other Inſtances were in freſh memory betwixt *France*, *England* and *Spain*, who notwithſtanding they were enter'd into Alliances ſince the Concluſion of the Peace in *Europe*, yet did continue the War in the *Indies*, as is evident from the *Engliſh* Squadrons appearing before *Moſambique*, *Goa* and *Manilha*, and the aſſiſting of the *Perſians* in the Conqueſt of *Ormus* againſt the *Portugueſes*.

Laſtly, They requeſted, that in caſe their High and Mightineſſes did not judg their Reaſons of ſuch weight as to ſtop the Truce in the *Eaſt-Indies*, betwixt the Company and the *Portugueſes*, who lately have ſhaken off the *Spaniſh* Dominion, and imbrac'd the Intereſt of K. *John* IV. their High and Mightineſſes would be pleaſed at leaſt to delay the Concluſion thereof till Advice could be had whether any of the Places belonging to the *Portugueſes* in the *Indies* had declar'd for the new King, that the Directors might have the opportunity (in caſe of an enſuing Truce) to recal ſuch of their Servants as were perhaps engag'd in the Service of ſome of the *Indian* Princes, without which they might be in danger of being ſurpriz'd and ſeiz'd there, to their irrecoverable Detriment.

Goa block'd up by the Dutch.

The Bar of *Goa* had for a conſiderable time been kept block'd up by a Squadron of *Dutch* Ships, the better to annoy the *Portugueſes* in their Traffick. *James Cooper* kept the ſaid Harbour block'd up for three years ſucceſſively, as Commodore, who was ſucceeded by *Adam Weſterwold* (of which hereafter in the Deſcription of *Ceylon*) and he by *Anthony Kaan*. In the year 1639. commanded before that place *Cornelius Simonſon Van der Veer* (mention'd before) a brave Commander; and 1641. *Matthew Hendrikſz Quaſt* with 10 Ships, and 1147 Men: This Fleet took a *Carack* richly laden from *Portugal*; but he being kill'd in the Engagement, was ſucceeded by *Cornelius Leendertſz Blaau*, Reer Admiral.

Two Portugueſe Ambaſſadors come to Batavia.

In the year 1642. two *Portugueſe* Ambaſſadors, nam'd *Diego Mendes de Britto*, and *Gonſalvo Villoſo de Sanct Joſeph*, a Religious of the Order of S. *Francis*, being ſent by the *Portugueſe* Viceroy of the *Indies* to the General and Great Council of the *Indies* at *Batavia*. The ſame were order'd to be receiv'd with all marks of Honour and Reſpect: For which purpoſe Mr. *John Maatzuyker*, chief Penſionary,

Juſtus

Juſtus Schouten, a Member of the Great Council of the *Indies*, *Simon van Alphen*, Doctor of the Laws, Sheriff of the City of *Batavia*, *Sebald Wanderaar*, Receiver-General, *Peter Soury*, *Barent Wichmans*, *Dirk Snoek*, *Ewoud Spieringh*, head Factors, *John Lamoot*, Serjeant-Major, *Gerard Herbers*, Doctor of the Laws, head Factor, *Franciſco de Souza de Caſtro*, and *Anthonio Fialho Fereira*, both *Portugueſe* Gentlemen, were ſent to conduct them from aboard their Veſſel to the General's Palace, under the diſcharge of five pieces of Cannon; and being immediately introduc'd into the Apartment where the Great Council was then aſſembled, after the firſt Compliments on both ſides, one of the Ambaſſadors began to make his Harangue: "That *Portugal* having with-"drawn it ſelf from the *Spaniſh* Juriſ-"diction, had choſen *Don John* Duke of "*Braganza* their King; that the ſaid "King having ſoon after ſent an Am-"baſſador to their High and Mightineſſes "to treat of a Peace and an Alliance "betwixt both Nations, they had all the "reaſon to believe that the ſame was "brought to a happy Concluſion before "this time: In regard of which they "were ſent by the Viceroy of *Goa*, to "treat with their Excellencies about a "Ceſſation of Arms, as would more at "large appear out of their Credentials, which they deliver'd at the ſame time to the Governor-General with this Superſcription:

Their Reception.

Appear in the Council.

A. O. Senhor Anthonio de Diemen, Capitaon General de Naçaon Ollandeſa n' eſte Oriente. On the other ſide was written, *De Conde d' Aveiras Viceroy e Capitaon d' India.*

The Letter was ſeal'd with the Arms of *Portugal*, and written in the *Portugueſe* Language, as follows.

Their Credentials.

"IN the beginning of *September* ar-"riv'd in our Fort *Onor*, a *Caravel*, "ſent from *Portugal*, whereby we were "inform'd, that the *Portugueſes* have "proclaim'd and acknowledg'd a King "of their own, by the general Conſent "of that Nation. His Majeſty of *Por-"tugal* did in one of his Letters give "notice to us, that certain Ambaſſadors "having been diſpatch'd to their High "and Mightineſſes the States General, "to treat about a Peace, it was not "doubted, but the ſame would be ſoon "concluded, a Truce having been al-"ready agreed upon betwixt the two "Nations in *Europe*, whereof notice had "been given by the ſaid Majeſty to the "Commodore *Quaſt*, intimating, that "as a Ceſſation of Arms was concluded "in *Europe*, ſo the ſame might take "effect in theſe parts, and that he had "given orders to the Viceroy of *Goa* "accordingly. After the Deceaſe of "the ſaid Commodore, we gave notice "thereof to *Cornelius Leendertſz Blaau* "his Succeſſor, who excuſing himſelf "with his want of Power, as being ob-"lig'd to follow ſtrictly the Orders of "the Great Council of the *Indies*, &c. "thought fit to ſend *Diego Mendes de "Britto*, Gentleman of the King's Houſ-"hold, and Father *Gonſalvo Villoſo*, to "treat with your Excellencies concerning "this Point; they being provided with "Credentials from his Majeſty, that "whatever ſhall be agreed upon with "them, ſhall be valid and kept inviola-"bly. We wiſh all Bleſſings to the "Crown of *Portugal*, and the *United "Provinces*. Dated 6 *Decemb.* 1641.

Baldæus.

Subſcribed, *Conde d' Aveiras.*

The Great Council having told them, that they would take the matter into ſerious Conſideration, the Diſcourſe began to turn upon indifferent matters, and among the reſt concerning the *Caraque*, lately taken by the *Dutch*. The Ambaſſadors being ask'd whether the Captain did not preſent the Viceroy with two or three Casks of Wine; they anſwer'd, No; At which the Governor-General ſhew'd a great diſlike, telling the Ambaſſadors, that they muſt pardon the matter, it being a common thing for the beſt Seamen to make the worſt Courtiers. After the Ambaſſadors had din'd with his Excellency, they were conducted to their Lodgings at Mr. *James Harder*'s Houſe. They were both Perſons of a goodly Aſpect, the *Franciſcan* being betwixt 60 and 70 years of Age, the other of about 50. Their Train conſiſted in two Pages, and four *Portugueſe* Footmen, beſides the *Negroes* and *Miſtices*, a Gentleman, a Secretary, Surgeon, and two Boys; their Livery was Orange Colour.

Their Age and Train

The 8th of *February* the ſaid Ambaſſadors demanded a ſecond Audience, which being for weighty Reaſons defer'd till the 10th, they appear'd a ſecond time at Nine a Clock in the Morning in the Great Council, reiterating their former Propoſitions concerning a Ceſſation of Arms: And leſt the Governor-General might not as yet have receiv'd a full account of what had been tranſacted in *Europe*, they produc'd certain Original

Their Second Audience.

Baldæus. Letters, ſent by his *Portugueſe* Majeſty to the Viceroy; but theſe being only private Letters from certain *Dutch* Merchants living at *Lisbon*, and another Letter from the States-General to the Admiralty of that place, and conſequently the ſame that were before ſent hither from our Squadron at *Goa*, by the way of *Coromandel*, by the Sloop call'd the *Pipeli*: His Excellency the Governor-General reply'd, that the laſt being ſent to the Council before by the Commodore *Quaſt*, they had peruſed the ſame, and found that in the Letter of the States-General, it was expreſly ſaid that the *Dutch ſhould not moleſt the* Portugueſes *on the other ſide of the Line*; which being to be underſtood of the North-ſide, the *Indians* were not comprehended therein; beſides that they had not receiv'd any Inſtructions upon that account from the Governors and Directors of the *Eaſt-India* Company.

But to convince the Ambaſſadors that they were not enter'd into this War out of any other motive than to obtain an honourable Peace; they could not but put them in mind, that tho they had deliver'd their Credentials from the Viceroy, they had not brought along with them any poſitive Proof whether the ſaid Viceroy were authorized by his Majeſty of *Portugal* to treat concerning matters of ſuch great conſequence; and it was conſequently to be doubted whether the ſame would be approv'd of and ratify'd by his Majeſty.

One of the Ambaſſadors reply'd, that the Viceroy of *India* was always endow'd with a Power of making Peace and War, many Inſtances of which could be alledg'd upon divers occaſions; which would leave no room to queſtion his Authority in this caſe; but if they did, they were ready to remain as Hoſtages for the accompliſhment of what ſhould be agreed upon. His Excellency the Governour-General return'd, That he was ſatisfied of the Authority of the Viceroy in making Peace or War with the *Indian* Princes, but remain'd doubtful, whether the ſame did extend alſo to the *European* Nations: Nevertheleſs, that he believ'd the Viceroy would not tranſgreſs his Commiſſion, and that therefore they had been acknowledg'd as Plenipotentiaries; which being done, there remained nothing now to do, but to proceed to the Treaty it ſelf, and to make their Propoſitions under what Conditions they would have the Truce ſettled.

The Ambaſſadors anſwer'd, that they look'd upon it as unneceſſary to inſiſt upon many Conditions or Limitations at this juncture, when they expected every day to hear of a Peace concluded betwixt both Nations in *Europe*, according to the Conditions of which, both Parties would be oblig'd to regulate themſelves hereafter: That their only aim now being to obtain a Ceſſation of Arms, the main thing in queſtion was, to fix a certain time of its beginning, which they thought ought to be taken from that very hour the Truce was agreed upon and ſign'd betwixt them.

The Governor-General told them that he agreed with them in that point, that not many Conditions were requir'd at this time, but that it would be next to an impoſſibility the Truce ſhould commence from the very hour the ſame was ſign'd, it being very probable that the *Dutch* Squadron would in the mean while not let ſlip any opportunity of taking their advantage over the *Portugueſes*; as the Forces lately ſent to *Ceylon*, perhaps might have made an Enterprize upon *Negumbo* or *Columbo*; as on the other hand, the *Portugueſes* might probably have undertaken ſomething againſt *Galle*, or have obtain'd ſome advantages againſt the *Dutch* in other places: The Viceroy himſelf having commanded *Don Philippo Maſcarenhas*, that he ſhould (till the News of the Truce did arrive) act with his utmoſt vigor againſt the *Dutch* in *Zeylon*. He urg'd, that all theſe things conſider'd, it was to be fear'd that in caſe the Truce commenced according to their deſire, this might furniſh occaſion to new Miſunderſtandings, it being more than probable that neither of the two Parties would be willing to reſtore what they had conquer'd in the mean while; that therefore it was his opinion, that the beginning of the ſaid Truce muſt be ſo fix'd, as that ſufficient time might be allow'd for giving notice thereof to the Subjects of both Parties.

The Ambaſſadors made many Objections againſt this, inſiſting to have the beginning of the Truce ſettled from the Date of the ſigning thereof, alledging among the reſt, that they could ſcarce imagine the Viceroy ſhould have ſent ſuch Orders to *Maſcarenhas*. The Governor-General reply'd, that he had certain advice of it from *Ceylon*, but that notwithſtanding this, he hoped the Ambaſſadors ſhould not leave *Batavia* unſatisfied. He at the ſame time invited them to dine with him, where they were ſplendidly entertain'd, and drank to the Health of the King of *Portugal*, and the Prince of *Orange*.

The

*

Their third Audience. The 18*th* of *February* the ſaid Ambaſſadors had another Audience, wherein they deſir'd a poſitive Anſwer to their Propoſitions, the time deſir'd by the Governor to conſult with the Great Council being expir'd. They urg'd, that ſince the 14*th* of *February* ſome Yachts were arriv'd, which had brought the Confirmation of the News of the Peace lately concluded betwixt both Nations, therefore they did not queſtion but their Excellencies would no longer deny them the deſir'd Trade.

The Governour-General gave for Anſwer, That the ſaid Yachts had touch'd at *Fernambuco*, from whence they had brought the Articles of a ten years Truce betwixt his *Portugueſe* Majeſty *Don John* IV. and the High and Mighty the States General of the *United Provinces*, in reſpect of their Territories in *Europe*, with Exception however of the Places and Colonies belonging to the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-India* Companies; that they had alſo brought along with them the Articles or Conditions agreed upon betwixt their High and Mightineſſes and *Triſtan de Mendoza* the *Portugueſe* Ambaſſador, concerning the *Weſt-India* Company: whence it appear'd, that the ſame ought to be firſt ratified by his *Portugueſe* Majeſty, and ſent back to the States General; and that the ſame after that ſhould not take effect before notice be given thereof in *Brazil*: and the ſame being agreed upon in reference to the *Eaſt-India* Company, and our Ships which left *Holland* in *September* laſt, being expected every day in theſe parts with the Ratifications of the ſaid Treaty, it was thought convenient by the Great Council to expect their coming, and to regulate themſelves according to the Conditions agreed upon betwixt their reſpective Maſters, eſpecially ſince the ſaid Ships would probably arrive before the ſeaſon would permit the Ambaſſadors to depart for *Goa*, and conſequently there would be no loſs of time in this reſpect.

The Ambaſſadors told them that they could not but think it ſtrange, that ſince both Nations liv'd in Amity in *Europe*, they ſhould act in a hoſtile manner againſt one another in the *Indies*. The Governor-General reply'd, that ſince their reſpective Maſters had thought it convenient it ſhould be ſo, till the Ratification of the Treaty by his *Portugueſe* Majeſty, and that notice had been given thereof to them, they were oblig'd to take their meaſures accordingly. The Ambaſſadors anſwer'd, that they had promiſed themſelves a quite other Anſwer, tho in all other reſpects they acknowledg'd the Honours and obliging Entertainment they had receiv'd, deſiring that a Copy might be given them containing an exact account of all the Tranſactions during their ſtay here, betwixt their Excellencies and them, by which it might appear that they had not been defective in their Zeal and Induſtry to bring this matter to the deſir'd effect. This was promiſed by the Governour-General, with this addition, that to give them all imaginable Satisfaction concerning the Truce, they would alſo give them a faithful Copy of the Articles thereof, not queſtioning but that the Ships would arrive in the mean while; but if they ſhould happen to ſtay longer, beyond expectation, they would conſult all proper means to give them what ſatisfaction they could. They thankfully receiv'd this Anſwer, extolling once more the obliging Entertainment they had met with at their hands; they din'd with moſt of the Members of the Great Council at the Governour-General's Houſe, and towards the Evening took the Air on Horſe-back.

Baldæus

Their fourth Audience. The 30*th* of *March* the ſaid Ambaſſadours had another Audience, in which they deliver'd a Memorial to the Great Council; which being read, the Governour-General told them, that what was alledg'd in the ſaid Memorial was a Matter of Fact, and agreeable to what had been enter'd in their Records; but that they would not have them deſpond concerning the arrival of the Ships, which he was ſorry ſtaid ſo long behind; but that notwithſtanding this, he hoped they ſhould not depart without Satisfaction. The Ambaſſadors reply'd, his Excellency would be pleaſed to remember his Promiſe, of not letting them depart without Satisfaction, or obtaining the end of their Commiſſion, in caſe the Ships ſhould not arrive.

The Governour-General return'd for Anſwer, That by ſaying ſo, he did not intend to conſent to the Truce, which was beyond his Power, at leaſt till the arrival of the ſaid Ships; but to give them all the poſſible marks of his Good-will and Eſteem, and that they ſhould be diſmiſs'd with all the marks of Reſpect they were able to pay them. That ſince his Maſters had thought fit to limit the beginning of the Truce to the time of its being ratified by his Majeſty of *Portugal*, and being return'd into *Holland*, and thence to the *Eaſt-Indies*, they were abſolutely oblig'd to wait for the arrival of it, leſt it ſhould ſeem as if they thought them-

themſelves more underſtanding in this Point than the States-General. *Baldæus.*

One of the Ambaſſadors made Anſwer, That they were perſwaded his Excellency the Governour-General, was ſufficiently authorized to make Peace and War at his pleaſure in theſe Countries, the ſame tending to the advantage of the *Dutch* Nation; and that this Ceſſation of Arms could not but be acceptable to the States-General, who had ſo lately concluded a Peace with the King of *Portugal*. He further told them, that the Viceroy of *Goa* was always authorized with ſuch a Power, but in a more peculiar manner at this time, having receiv'd expreſs Orders for that purpoſe by a *Caravel* from his Majeſty.

At laſt the Ambaſſadors perceiving that the Great Council remain'd ſtedfaſt in their Reſolution, they thought it unfit to puſh the matter any further for that time, reiterating their former Requeſt of having a Copy granted them concerning their Tranſactions here, and deſiring that ſince the Seaſon began to open the Paſſage by Sea to *Coromondel*, they might be diſmiſs'd forthwith, in order to proſecute their Journy by Land to *Goa* before the Winter, the ſame being impracticable afterwards, by reaſon of the frequent Rains. The Governour-General promiſs'd them entire Satisfaction upon both theſe Heads, and that a Ship ſhould be got ready for their Excellencies; but that however he could not forbear to tell them, that in his opinion they would do better to tarry a little longer, in expectation of the before-mentioned Ships, and the Ratification expected to be brought over by them. They reply'd, That having receiv'd expreſs Orders from the Viceroy to return to *Goa* with the firſt opportunity, they were oblig'd to obey, unleſs his Excellency would lay his Commands upon them to the contrary. The Governour-General anſwer'd, That it was not in his power to command them, what he had ſaid being only by way of Advice; but if they were reſolv'd to the contrary, they ſhould not be in the leaſt detain'd: That if they thought fit, Advice might be ſent thereof to the Viceroy by the Ship that was then juſt ready to ſail for *Coromandel*; or if they diſliked this Propoſition, one of them might tarry at *Batavia* till the arrival of the Ratification, whilſt the other return'd to *Goa*. This Expedient being approv'd by them, it was agreed that the *Franciſcan* Father ſhould go back to *Goa* by the way of *Coromandel*, and the other ſtay at *Batavia*, till the arrival of the Ratification.

Some particular Requeſts of the Ambaſſadours.

Then the Ambaſſadors deſir'd the Releaſement of certain *Miſtices* and *Negroes* that were Priſoners among us; which being ſoon granted by the Governour-General, he ask'd the ſame favour in behalf of four other Perſons who had been clapt in Irons on occaſion of ſome Mutiny at *Batavia*, in which they were the Ringleaders; which was alſo granted, under Condition that they ſhould depart the Country with the *Franciſcan* Father. They alſo made the like Requeſt concerning *Franciſco de Souza de Caſtro*, who (at the requeſt of the Governor-General) being releas'd out of his Priſon by thoſe of *Achin*, was deliver'd up to the *Dutch*; he had likewiſe leave given him to depart with the *Franciſcan* Father, provided he paid his Debts before his departure.

Another Audience.

The firſt of *April* the two Ships call'd the *Tiger* and *Naſſaw*, which had left *Holland* the 16*th* of *September* laſt, being arriv'd at *Batavia*, the ſaid Ambaſſadours appear'd once more in the Great Council, intimating, that they being inform'd that at the time of the departure of theſe Ships out of *Holland*, the Ratification of the Articles of his *Portugueſe* Majeſty concerning the *Eaſt-Indies* was not arriv'd, at which they were much ſurpriz'd, as not knowing what might be the reaſon thereof: They deſir'd to know whether his Excellency had not receiv'd any more particular Intelligence, which might induce him to grant the deſir'd Ceſſation of Arms. The Governour-General reply'd, that he had put it beyond all doubt, that the Ratification would have been brought along with theſe Ships; but ſince it had happen'd otherwiſe, it was not in his power to grant the requir'd Truce. The Ambaſſadours ask'd whether they ſhould both depart, or whether his Excellency thought convenient that one of them ſhould ſtay behind: The Governour-General told them that they were at their own diſpoſal; but that, ſince they expected every day the arrival of their Winter-Ships, which infallibly would bring over the ſaid Ratification, he judg'd it might be beſt for them to continue a little longer at *Batavia*.

One of the Ambaſſadours returns to Goa.

Hereupon they reſolv'd once more, that the *Franciſcan* Father ſhould go back over *Coromandel* to *Goa*, whilſt the other ſhould ſtay at *Batavia* for the arrival of the Ratification. Accordingly a written Certificate was given to the Ambaſſadors concerning their Zeal and Induſtry, in in-

compaſſing their Commiſſion, ſign'd by his Excellency the Governour-General *Anthony van Diemen*, by *Cornelius van der Lijn*, *John Maatzuyker*, *Juſtus Schouten*, *Cornelius Witzen*, and *Peter Boreel*, in the Caſtle of *Batavia*, *April* 9. 1642. To the *Franciſcan* Father the Council gave the following Letter, directed to the Viceroy of *Goa*.

Moſt Illuſtrious Lord!

A Letter to the Viceroy of Goa.

" DIego *Mendes de Britto*, Gentleman of the King's Houſhold, and the " Reverend Father, Brother *Gonſalvo de* " *S. Joſeph*, your Excellency's Ambaſſa- " dors, being come in our Road the 28*th* " of *January* aboard the *Dolphin*, were " honourably receiv'd by us the next day. " They have deliver'd to us your Ex- " cellency's Credential Letters, dated in " *Goa* the 6*th* of *December* of the laſt year, " as alſo the Letters of his *Portugueſe* " Majeſty to you, concerning the Truce " betwixt *Portugal* and the *United Pro-* " *vinces*. The before-mentioned Am- " baſſadors have not been remiſs in their " Zeal, Induſtry and Duty, to preſs in " their ſeveral Audiences the obtaining " of a Truce; which we would willing- " ly have granted, had not we receiv'd " certain Advice by ſome Ships arriv'd " the 14*th* of *February* by the way of *Fer-* " *nambuco*, and others arriv'd the firſt of " *April* here, of a Truce concluded be- " twixt his Majeſty of *Portugal* and the " States-General of the *United Provinces*; " wherein it was expreſly agreed with " his Majeſty's Plenipotentiary *Triſtaon* " *de Mendoza Furtado*, among other " Points, that the Truce agreed upon for " 10 years in *Europe*, ſhould be of the " ſame validity in theſe parts, yet ſo that " the ſame ſhould not commence before " that his *Portugueſe* Majeſty ſhould have " ſent back his Ratification into *Holland*, " and the ſame be publickly proclaim'd " afterwards in theſe parts, as will more " fully appear to your Excellencies out " of the encloſed Letters. Thus being " oblig'd to follow the Directions of our " Lords and Maſters, we could not pro- " ceed further in this buſineſs till the " arrival of the next Ships from *Holland*; " which being expected daily, with the " ſaid Ratification, we did adviſe your " Ambaſſadors to ſtay (or at leaſt one " of them) for the coming of the ſaid " Ships, as the only means not to render " your Excellency's Embaſſy altogether " fruitleſs: Accordingly Mr. *Diego Men-* " *des de Britto* intends to haſten his " Journy to *Goa*, immediately after the " firſt further notice of the ſaid Rati- " fication, which we hope will prove " agreeable to your Excellency's Senti- " ments. We recommend your Excellen- " cy to God's Protection. Dated in " the Caſtle of *Batavia*, April 8. 1642.

Subſcribed,

The Governour-General for the *United Provinces* in the *Eaſt-Indies*.

CHAP. XV.

The Ratification of the 10 *years Truce brought to* Batavia. *A Proteſtation ſent to the Count* d'Aveiras. *Treaty of Peace with the Viceroy. The Articles thereof. Agreements about the diviſion of the Limits betwixt the* Portugueſes *and* Hollanders *in the Iſle of* Ceylon. *Agreement betwixt* Maſcarenhas *and* Cornelius van Sanen.

The Ratification publiſh'd.

THE ſo much deſir'd Ratification (ſigned at *Lisbon* the 16*th* of *January* 1642. and deliver'd at the *Hague* the 15*th* of *February* following) being at laſt brought to *Batavia*, the ſame was publiſh'd the 8*th* of *October* throughout the *Indies*.

" ANthony van *Diemen* Governour- " General, and the Members of the " Great Council of the *Eaſt-Indies* un- " der the Juriſdiction of the *United* " *Provinces*, make known to all it may " concern; That whereas by two ſeve- " ral Letters, dated the 22*d* of *February*, " and 15*th* of *March* 1642. brought over " by the Ship the *Salamander*, we have " been advertis'd, That the 12*th* of *June* " 1641. a firm Alliance and Truce has " been concluded for 10 years betwixt " the moſt Potent *Don John* IV. King of " *Portugal*, *Algerve*, and Lord of *Guinea*, " and of the Conqueſts made on the " Shoar of *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Perſia* and " *India*,

Baldæus.

" *India*, on one ſide, and their High and
" Mightine ſſes the States General of the
" *United Provinces* on the other ſide, in-
" cluding all the before-mentioned King-
" doms, Countries, Provinces, Iſlands,
" and other places on both ſides of the
" Equinoctial Line (without exception)
" all ſuch as now actually are, or for the
" future may be under the Juriſdiction
" of the ſaid King and the States-Gene-
" ral; during which ſpace of ten years
" ſucceſſively all Hoſtilities betwixt their
" reſpective Subjects ſhall ceaſe both by
" Sea and Land, without limitation or
" exception of any Places, Perſons or
" Circumſtances, as by the Articles of
" the ſaid Truce does more amply and
" fully appear. It is therefore that we
" are commanded to ſurceaſe all manner
" of Hoſtilities from this day for the
" next ſucceeding ten years, according
" to which all our Subjects ſhall regulate
" themſelves; and to take effectual care
" that nothing may be tranſacted any
" wiſe contrary to the true intent of the
" Articles of the ſaid Alliance and
" Truce, but to maintain the ſame in-
" violably. And that nobody may plead
" ignorance in this caſe, we have or-
" der'd theſe Preſents to be publiſh'd,
" enjoyning every body under ſevere Pe-
" nalties, not to infringe any of the
" before-mentioned Articles, as they will
" anſwer the ſame at their peril. Dated
" in the Caſtle of *Batavia*, *Octob.* 4. 1642.
" and firſt publiſh'd the *7th* of the ſame
" Month, under the Great Seal of the
" Company in red Wax.

Anthony van Diemen.

By Order of his Excellency,

Peter Meſdach, Secretary.

The Proteſt ſent to the Count d' Aveiras.

However this Truce was but ill obſerv'd by the Viceroy of *Goa*, eſpecially in the Territories of *Gale* in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, which induc'd the *Dutch* General and Great Council to ſend him this following Proteſt.

" BY Letters from our Commiſſary
" *Peter Boreel*, whom (after the
" Ratification of the Truce betwixt
" his *Portugueſe* Majeſty and the States
" General of the *United Provinces*) we
" diſpatch'd to *Goa*, to give notice there-
" of to your Excellency, we have been
" inform'd beyond all expectation, that
" upon his arrival there, and his earneſt
" requeſt to your Excellency (purſuant
" to our Orders) to withdraw the
" Army under the Command of *Don*
" *Philip* of *Maſcarenhas*, from the Ter-
" ritories of *Puntegale* under our Juriſ-
" diction, your Excellency has been plea-
" ſed to ſhew ſo much averſion to com-
" ply with his Demands, tho founded
" upon undeniable and juſt grounds re-
" preſented to your Commiſſioners in the
" ſeveral Conferences held upon that
" Subject *, that he finding his Preſence
" uſeleſs at *Goa*, he was forced to return
" from thence without being able to en-
" compaſs his juſt Deſigns, and (pur-
" ſuant to his Orders receiv'd from us)
" to denounce before his departure, the
" Continuation of the War to your Ex-
" cellency, till Satisfaction might be ob-
" tain'd upon this ſcore. And ſince the
" unjuſt detention of the Territories of
" *Gale* tends to our conſiderable Detri-
" ment, we declare, that upon peruſal
" of the Writings ſent to us by your
" Excellency by the hands of our Com-
" miſſary, we can make no better Con-
" ſtruction of the whole matter, than
" that your Excellency's Intention is,
" under this framed Pretext, to render
" the Truce concluded betwixt our re-
" ſpective Maſters, invalid and of no
" worth. It is therefore that we think
" our ſelves oblig'd to approve every
" thing that has been tranſacted upon
" this Head by our Commiſſary, and
" to make uſe of ſuch means for the
" Juſtification of our Rights, as God
" has put into our hands, and are al-
" together ſutable to the Laws of Na-
" tions. And as upon theſe Conſidera-
" tions, we have ſent back this Fleet,
" by which your Excellency will at once
" receive this *Proteſt*, and be made ſen-
" ſible at the ſame time of our Reſo-
" lution of maintaining our juſt Cauſe,
" which will queſtionleſs prove the oc-
" caſion of new Differences betwixt
" his *Portugueſe* Majeſty and the States
" General of the *United Provintes*, as
" alſo of much Effuſion of Blood, of
" vaſt Expences, and many other In-
" conveniences; we call God to wit-
" neſs, and declare and proteſt by theſe
" Preſents, that we are innocent, and
" are not anſwerable for the direful
" Conſequences of this breach of the
" Truce, which we were ready to have
" punctually obſerv'd on our ſide, pur-
" ſuant to the Intention of our Maſters,
" had not your Excellency bereav'd
" us of all hopes of adjuſting matters
" by an amicable Compoſition, for the
" recovery of our Rights in the Country

" of

* *The Portugueſes pretended that the Dutch Juriſdiction did not extend without the Walls of Gale.*

" of *Gale*, unjuſtly detain'd by your " Excellency. Dated in the Caſtle of " *Batavia*, the 5*th* of *Auguſt* 1643.

Signed,

Anthony van Diemen, *Cornelius van der Lyn*,
Francis Caron, *John Maatzuyker*,
Juſtus Schouten, *Salomon Sweers*.

Thus matters remain'd in ſuſpence betwixt the *Portugueſes* and us till the year 1644. when Mr. *Maatzuyker* being authorized by their High and Mightineſſes, as alſo by the General and Great Council of the *Indies*, to treat with the Count *d'Aveiras* Viceroy of *Goa*, concerning a firm Truce, and to adjuſt the remaining Differences for that purpoſe (yet upon approbation of their reſpective Maſters) the ſame at laſt concluded a Truce the 10*th* of *November*, upon the following Conditions.

Truce betwixt the Portugueſes and Dutch in the Indies.

The Conditions.

" I. Both Parties declare, that this " preſent Agreement, intended for the " compoſing of ſuch Differences as have " hitherto occaſion'd much Bloodſhed, " and obſtructed the ſo long deſir'd Peace, " ſhall in no wiſe be deem'd, or be pre- " judicial to the Rights and Sovereignties " either of the moſt Illuſtrious King of " *Portugal*, or of their High and Mighti- " neſſes the States-General of the *United* " *Provinces*, as the ſame are eſtabliſh'd " (by the Truce agreed upon betwixt " his *Portugueſe* Majeſty and the ſaid " States General) in their reſpective " Cities, Caſtles, Fortreſſes, Towns, Har- " bours, and Seas in the *Indies*; and that " this Agreement ſhall be inviolably ob- " ſerv'd on both ſides immediately after " its ſecond Publication at *Goa*.

" II. Since the happy Effects of the " Truce have been obſtructed hitherto, " by certain Differences ariſen about the " juſt Diviſion of the Limits in the Iſle of " *Ceylon*, it is agreed that the Deciſion " thereof ſhall be entirely remitted to " the reſpective Maſters and Lords of " both Nations, and in the mean while " a full Ceſſation of Arms and all Hoſti- " lities to be kept inviolably, and all " Forts, Territories, and other matters " to remain in the ſame ſtate as they " were at the day of the Publication of " theſe Preſents at *Goa*; ſo that not the " leaſt Alteration or Innovation is to be " made either in building, rebuilding, " or mending any thing, much leſs in " making any Preparations either for a " Defenſive or Offenſive War.

" III. But that, whilſt the before-men- " tioned Differences remain undecided, " the Products of the Country may not " be neglected, or loſt, by reaſon of the " Differences betwixt the Poſſeſſors, it " is agreed that the ſame ſhall be di- " vided into two equal ſhares betwixt " the *Portugueſes* and the *Dutch*, yet ſo " that the ſame ſhall be depoſited (re- " main in Cuſtody) with the laſt, till the " deciſion of theſe Differences by their " reſpective Principals in *Europe*: where- " by they oblige themſelves at the ſame " time to a full Reſtitution in caſe the " ſame be agreed upon by the ſaid Prin- " cipals. And the ſaid Ambaſſador de- " clares and proteſts, that the word " *depoſited*, inſerted at the requeſt of the " Viceroy (for the better adjuſting of " matters) ſhall not in any wiſe be in- " terpreted as prejudicial to the Poſſeſſi- " on and Title of the States General to " theſe Lands and their Products. And " to avoid all Conteſts concerning the " gathering of theſe Fruits, it is agreed " the *Portugueſes* ſhall have full liberty " to gather, without any moleſtation or " hinderance, ſuch Fruits as grow in one " part of the Lands in diſpute, *viz.* that " part which is next adjacent to their " Fort; as on the other hand, the *Hol-* " *landers* ſhall enjoy the ſame freedom in " gathering the Fruits in that half part " adjoyning to their Fortreſs. The ſame " is alſo to be underſtood of equally " ſharing the Adminiſtration of Juſtice " in theſe parts, leſt Malefactors may be " encourag'd, and Crimes paſs unpu- " niſh'd, by reaſon of the uncertainty of " the Adminiſtration of Juſtice; publick " Proclamation hereof being to be made " in this Iſle by the reſpective Gover- " nours of both Nations.

Baldæus.

" IV. *Raja Singa* the King of *Candy* " ſhall be comprehended in this Truce, " (according to the third Article) with " all his Kingdoms, Provinces and Poſſeſ- " ſions.

" V. All Proprietors, Owners, or Far- " mers in the Villages, ſhall have full " liberty to return to their Poſſeſſions " and Farms of what nature ſoever, " with their Families, provided they re- " turn within the ſpace of ſix Months, " either in Perſon, or ſend their Depu- " ties, and pay the uſual Taxes and Du- " ties to thoſe under whoſe Juriſdiction " they live, without any trouble. And " that no Inconveniences may ariſe in " point of Conſcience, it is agreed, that " Liberty of Conſcience ſhall be allow'd, " and the free exerciſe of Religion in " all

Baldæus.

" all Pariſhes or Villages, except in " the fortified Places belonging to the " *Hollanders*, till the before-mentioned " Deciſion be arrived out of *Europe*.

" VI. The Labourers of the Iſle of " *Ceylon*, call'd *Schalias*, employ'd in peeling of the Cinnamon, ſhall have liberty to work with both Parties, yet not without the conſent of that Party under whoſe Juriſdiction they live; and the better to maintain the Truce, neither Party ſhall be permitted to entice theſe Labourers of *Ceylon*, or any other of the Natives out of one another's Service, without mutual Conſent, but ſhall be oblig'd to ſend them back to their reſpective Dwelling-places.

" VII. All the Goods ſeiz'd on account of or during theſe Differences, ſhall be reſtor'd, or elſe the Value thereof paid in Mony, provided they were actually in the Poſſeſſion of either Party, and not otherwiſe; upon which account the *Dutch* Ambaſſador promiſes to pay here at *Goa*, or at *Suratte*, in the next following Month of *January* at fartheſt, the Sum of 100000 *Spaniſh* Reals, to be accounted for according to the true value thereof they bear at *Batavia*, as the payment of the Mony ſhall be made, according to the courſe of Mony in thoſe places where theſe Goods were taxed; to be underſtood of ſuch Goods as notwithſtanding the payment of the before-ſaid Mony, are found to remain as yet unſatisfied for from the 22*d* day of *February* 1643. being a twelve-month after the Ratification of his *Portugueſe* Majeſty was ſent to the *Hague*.

" VIII. In caſe during this Truce any Differences ſhould ariſe betwixt both Parties, this Agreement ſhall remain firm and inviolable, and every thing remain in the ſame ſtate, till the Deciſion of the reſpective Principals; and in caſe the nature of the matter admits of no delay, the ſame is to be refer'd to the Determination of certain Arbitrators, to be choſen by both Parties; and whilſt the ſame is in agitation, the pretended Party to remain in Poſſeſſion till the Point is decided by the ſaid Arbitrators.

" IX. This preſent Agreement is not in the leaſt to be prejudicial to ſuch Judgments or Deciſions as have been made or given betwixt contending Parties, or may be given for the future by our reſpective Principals; but the ſame ſhall be regarded and taken as valid in all reſpects by both Parties, notwithſtanding this Agreement, intended only for the removing of Differences till the ſame can be approv'd of by our reſpective Principals. Which Agreement for the ceaſing of all manner of Hoſtilities, and maintaining a firm Truce in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, is promiſed by both Parties to be publiſh'd immediately, and inviolably obſerv'd both in reſpect of the Governours and Subjects: as his Excellency the Viceroy engages the ſame for himſelf and his Succeſſors, Generals, and Governours; and my Lord Ambaſſador for the States of the *United Provinces*, and the *Eaſt-India* Company, purſuant to the Authority granted him by the moſt Noble *Anthony van Diemen*, General-Governour of the *Indies*. In Confirmation whereof this Agreement is authoriz'd and confirm'd by a ſolemn Oath taken upon the Goſpel in the preſence of the moſt Reverend Archbiſhop and Primate of *Goa*, *Don Frey Franciſco de Martyres*, and *Don Alphonſo Medis*, Patriarch of *Ethiopia*, Members of the Privy-Council of his Majeſty; and in the preſence of the other Privy-Counſellors of *Goa*, who have given their full Approbation and Conſent thereunto; as alſo in the Preſence of *Wollebrand Gleynzen*, Chief Director in *Perſia*, *Abraham Fierens*, Miniſter of the Goſpel, *John Pottey* Fiſcal, *Andreas Friſius* Secretary, *Thomas Kuyk*, head Factor; who together with his Excellency the Viceroy, and his Excellency the Ambaſſador, did ſet their Hands to it; *Joſeph de Chaves Coto Major*, his Excellency the Viceroy's Secretary, having taken care to make the Draughts thereof.

Signed thus,

Conde d' Aveiras,
John Maatzuyker,
Fr. Franciſco de Martyres,
Alphonſo Medis,
Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro,
Don Manoel Pereira,
Anthonio Saria Mochado,
Anthonio Movis Baretto,
Joſeph Pinto Pereira,
Wollebrand Gleynz. the younger,
Abraham Fierens,
John Pottey,
Don Bras de Caſtro,
Lovis Mugilhaon,
Andreas Friſius,
Andr. Sclem.

" Several

*

" Several Draughts of this Agreement " having been made both in *Latin* and " *Portugueſe*, it is agreed betwixt the Vice-" roy and the Ambaſſador, that in caſe " any Doubt ſhould ariſe about the In-" terpretation of certain words, recourſe " is to be had to the *Latin*, which being " the Original, is to be interpreted ac-" cording to the plain ſignification of " the words, without any collateral Con-" ſtruction, in Confirmation of which " this Declaration was thought fit to be " made: Subſcribed a ſecond time on " the ſame day by the under-written " Perſons.

Conde d' Aveiras,
John Maatzuyker,
Fr. Franciſco de Martyres, Archbiſhop and Primate;
Alphonſo Mediz, Patriarch of *Ethiopia*;
Franciſco de Melo,
Don Manoel Pereira,
Anthonio Saria,
Anthonio Monis Baretto,
Joſeph Pinto Pereira,
Wollebrand Gleynz. the younger.

In the year 1645. *Jan.* 10. the Diviſion of the Limits in the Iſle of *Ceylon* was agreed upon in the City of *Columbo*, *Don Philippo Maſcarenhas*, Succeſſor to the Count *d' Aveiras*, being then Viceroy of *Goa*.

" The Countries betwixt *Columbo* and " *Negumbo*, ſhall be divided into two equal " ſhares, according to their ſeveral Di-" ſtricts (call'd *Corles*) as far as the ſame " can be done, to prevent the Confuſion " which might otherwiſe ariſe from the " Diviſion of the antient Juriſdictions; " but in ſuch places where the ſame is " not to be done, this Diviſion is to be " made by ſharing the Villages: ſo that " conſidering there are 17 Diſtricts be-" twixt the two before-mentioned Forts, " ſeven thereof are to be annexed to the " Juriſdiction of *Columbo*, viz. *Herra-corla*, " *Omapauduna-corla*, *Quatigora-corla*, *Bi-" ligal-corla*, *Galbare-corla*, *Apitigan-corla*, " and *Pernacur-corla*, lying altogether " towards that ſide. To the Fort of " *Negumbo* are to be annex'd eight Di-" ſtricts, *viz. Pitigal-corla*, *Diomede-corla*, " *Urupula-corla*, *Carvagal-corla*, *Vili-corla*, " *Madura-corla*, *Hieriela-corla*, and *Man-" gur-corla*; the reſt to be divided into " two equal ſhares, *Alicur-corla* by the " River *Dandagan* to be the common " Boundary of both Nations; ſo that " part which lies to the North ſhall be- " long to *Negumbo*, and to *Columbo* what " lies on this ſide. The Province of " *Catugambala-corla* is to be divided by " the ſame River, together with its " three leſſer Diſtricts, *Udacabapato*, " *Miendapato* and *Jetigalapato*; ſo that " *Jetigala* ſhall fall to the ſhare of *Ne-" gumbo*, and *Udacaba* to *Columbo*; but " *Miendapato* ſhall be divided into two " equal parts, in proportion to its Villa-" ges, ſuch Villages as lie next *Jetigala-" pato* to be under the Juriſdiction of " *Negumbo*, and thoſe on the ſide of *Uda-" caba* under *Columbo*. The *Portugueſes* " ſhall remain in the poſſeſſion of *Pu-" telaon* and *Calpentyn*; but the River of " *Alican* is to be the Boundary betwixt " *Columbo* and *Gale*: ſo that part lying " on the other ſide of the River ſhall " remain to the *Hollanders*, but the other " part on this ſide, together with the " River and Harbour to the *Portugueſes*, " in the ſame manner as they were for-" merly poſſeſs'd of it, under this Con-" dition however, that the *Hollanders* " living here or in any other parts ſhall " have the free uſe of the ſaid River " in fiſhing, or exporting and importing " their Merchandizes without paying any " Cuſtoms. And whereas by the *7th* Ar-" ticle of the Agreement made at *Goa*, it " was agreed, that the Labourers (call'd " *Schalias*) who peel the Cinnamon, ſhall " be employ'd by both Parties to prevent " all further Differences for the future " upon this Head; it is agreed, that the " *Hollanders* ſhall every year in Harveſt " time ſend one half of theſe Labourers " out of the Villages of *Bili* and *Coſgure*, " under their Juriſdiction on the other ſide " of the River *Alican*, to aſſiſt as former-" ly the *Portugueſes* in peeling of Cinna-" mon, under condition that the Cinna-" mon thus peeled by them in the *Portu-" gueſe* Territories, ſhall be laid up in a " certain place upon the River *Dandagan*, " to be divided once every year in two " equal ſhares betwixt the two Parties, " provided that each Party pay the uſu-" al Price to the *Schalias* for the peeling " of their ſhare of Cinnamon. This Di-" viſion is to take place, and to ſtand " firm till the ſame be otherwiſe de-" cided by our reſpective Principals in " *Europe*, with this reſerve nevertheleſs " in regard of the *Hollanders*, who being " ignorant hitherto in the true ſituation " of the Country, may eaſily be deceiv'd " in this point, and therefore ought to " have the liberty to appeal to better " Judgment, and deſire a recompenſa-" tion

Baldæus

Baldæus.

" tion of their Losses: But in case the " Parties should disagree upon this Head, " this shall not occasion any Rupture, but " the Truce shall notwithstanding this " remain in its full force, according to " the intent of the 9th Article of the " before-mentioned Agreement. *Don* " *Philippo Mascarenhas* the present Vice- " roy, and Mr. *John Maatzuyker* do also " engage to cause this Treaty of the Di- " vision of the Limits to be publish'd " immediately, for the general benefit " of all such as have any concern therein, " that the Inhabitants of this Isle may " no longer remain in ignorance under " whose Jurisdiction they live; and for the " due performance thereof, have con- " firm'd the same with their Oaths, and " subscrib'd the Draughts thereof both " in *Latin* and *Portuguese*; yet so, that " in case of any doubt, recourse is to " be had to the *Latin* Original.

Agreement betwixt Philippo Mascarenhas, and Cornelius van Sanen.

In the year 1647. a provisional Agreement was made by *Don Philippo Mascarenhas*, the then Viceroy, and *Cornelius van Sanen*, head Factor and Director of *Wingurla*, for the adjusting of the Differences concerning the Fortress of *Malacca*.

" IN the Name of God, *Amen*. Be it " known to all who are concern'd in " this present Agreement, That 1647. " *April* 18. the following Agreement has " been made in the Castle of the City " of *Goa*, in the presence of his Excel- " lency *Don Philippo Mascarenhas* Vice- " roy of *Goa*, and *Cornelius van Sanen*, " head Factor and Director of *Wingurla*, " authorized by the Governour-General " and Great Council of the *Indies*, for " the adjusting of the Differences arising " concerning some pretended Rights of " the City and Fortress of *Malacca*, con- " cerning the Customs and Duties to be " paid at *Malacca*; several Conferences " having been held with the Merchants " of *Macau*, yet could not the same be " reduc'd to any just Equilibrium, or " settled upon a firm Basis, tho we made " as reasonable offers as possibly could " be expected: so that in case your Ex- " cellency thinks it convenient to pro- " ceed further in this matter, you may " treat upon this Head with *Cornelius* " *van Sanen*, our head Factor at *Win-* " *gurla*. By virtue of this Commission " I represented to the Viceroy, that in " point of Justice, such of our Ships as " pass by *Malacca* without unlading or " selling any of their Commodities, " ought to pay no Customs there: unto " which his Excellency having given for " Answer, that it appear'd out of the " Treaties and Writings agreed upon " betwixt both Parties, that they ought " to pay the same; it was thought fit for " the preventing of further Differences, " and maintaining a good Correspon- " dence betwixt both Nations, to agree " upon the following provisional Treaty, " till the full Decision of our respective " Principals, and with this Proviso, that " this Agreement shall not in the least " tend to the prejudice either of his " *Portuguese* Majesty, or of the States " General in their respective Rights and " Possessions. That his Majesty's Ships " as well as the *Dutch* Merchant-men " bound to *China*, or any other of the " Southern parts, coming to *Malacca*, " shall only be oblig'd to pay *6 per Cent.* " for such Goods as they shall actually " sell there; the same to be paid to the " *Dutch* from all such Goods as they shall " sell in any of his Majesty's Harbours. " Pursuant to the Agreement made at *Ba-* " *tavia* by the Great Council with the " Merchants of *Macau*, in the presence of " the Reverend *Frey Gonsalvo de S. Joseph*, " each Vessel, whether small or great, " bound to *Macau*, whether it sells or un- " loads any Goods at *Malacca* or not, shall " pay two *Schuitleins* of Gold for its Passage " thither and backwards; from which " Duties however are to be exempted " his Majesty's Ships, provided they may " be searched, and an Oath taken there- " upon, that they have no Merchandizes " aboard; and if any are found, the " Owners are to pay 4½ *per Cent.* That " such Ships as pass by *Malacca*, and are " not bound to *China*, shall pay 4½ *per* " *Cent.* whether they unload or sell any " Goods or not; then they may proceed " in their Voyage without any Molesta- " tion. Which Agreement is to be pub- " lish'd and strictly observ'd by both Par- " ties, and confirm'd by Oath, till the " Decision of our both sides respective " Principals.

Signed,

Don Philippo Mascarenhas,
Cornelius van Sanen,
Duarty de Fugeredo de Mello,
Frey Gonsalvo de S. Joseph.
Francisco de Melo de Castro,
Anthonio Souza Coutinho,
John van Teylingen, Head Factor,
Anthony Ondermeulen,
Jacob Roscam,
Leendert Johnson.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Baldæus

A Description of Anchediva, Canara, Onor, Batecalo, Malabar. Cananor, *built and besieged by the* Malabars, *bravely defended by* Laurence de Britto; *besieged and taken by the* Hollanders.

The Isle of Anchediva.

THE Isle of *Anchediva*, not far from *Goa*, and about 50 Leagues from *Calecut*, is almost covered with Woods and Forests, but well stor'd with Fish; the *Portugueses* had formerly a Fort here: *Sebajus*, the Father of *Hidalcan*, sent a Fleet of 60 Ships to *Anchediva* (whilst *Glineyda* was at *Cananor*) to chase the *Portugueses* from that Island, under the Command of *Anthony Fernando*, a most impious Wretch, who having forsaken both his Religion, and the Service of his Native Country, turn'd *Mahometan*, assuming the Name of *Abdala*; and being well versed in Maritime Affairs, was in great Favour with *Sebajus*. This Renegado having landed a good Body of Men in this Isle, left no Stone unturn'd to make himself Master of the Fort, erected there by the *Portugueses*: But being bravely defended by *Emanuel Passangio*, a Native of *Genoa*, descended from a great Family, and famous for his brave Actions; *Abdala* hearing of the return of the victorious Fleet, was glad to leave both the Fort and the Isle. The Fort was not long after demolished by the *Portugueses* themselves, who had been taught by experience, that too great a number of Fortresses consum'd all their Profit, and exposes them besides to no small danger; like a Hen who has more Chickens than she can protect with her Wings, often loses one by the rapacious Kite.

The Portugueses Fort besieged.

Is demolished.

The Reason thereof.

Canara.

The Country of *Canara* is very fertile in Rice and other Necessaries of human Life; its Inhabitants, commonly called *Canarins*, are very robust, and fit for all manner of hard Labour. The chief Citys near the Sea-shoar, are the City and Kingdom of *Onor*, not far distant from *Goa*, where the *Portugueses* had also a Fort, it being formerly a Place of considerable Traffick. Next to *Onor* lies *Batecalo*, about 25 Leagues from *Goa*, the King whereof became tributary to the Crown of *Portugal* under the Reign of *Emanuel*; but refusing afterwards to pay the usual Tribute, *Sequeria* sent *Alphonso Menes* with some Ships to block up the Harbour, which soon reduc'd the King to Obedience. Afterwards the Queen of *Batecalo* entertaining the Pyrats in her Harbours, and refusing likewise to pay the Tribute, *Sosa* sailed thither with 49 Ships and 1500 Landmen; and after he had cast Anchor in the Harbour, sent his Messengers into the City to require the Payment of the Tribute, and the surrendring of the Pyrats: She being frightened at the Sight of so powerful a Fleet, surrendred four of the Pyrats Ships; but endeavouring for the rest to detain the *Portugueses* with fair Words, these landed their Men, not a little incommoded by the Arrows shot at 'em by the Inhabitants from the Coco Trees; but having put themselves in order of Battel, they advanced towards the City, where they were (in the Absence of the Queen) so warmly engag'd by the Inhabitants, that the Combat remain'd doubtful for some time, till these being worsted, they set the City on fire, with the Loss of 12 Men only on their side. In this Action one *Almeyda* a brave *Portuguese*, seeing his Comrade enclosed on all sides by the Enemy, fought his way thro 'em; and having rescued his Companion, withstood the whole Force of the Enemy, till he was relieved by a Body of the *Portugueses*. Afterwards they made Incursions into the Country, which soon obliged the Queen to consent to the Payment of the Tribute.

Onor.

Batecalo.

Barcelor, *Batanor* and *Mangalor*, being Places of no great consequence, deserve no particular Descriptions; wherefore we will proceed to the Country of *Malabar*, which (according to common Computation) begins about 50 Leagues to the South of *Goa*, and extends to the Cape of *Comoryn*, to the utmost Borders of *India*, on this side of *Ganges*. This whole Country being full of Rivers, is consequently of an easy Passage; tho most of the Rivers here are so shallow, that they are not capable of bearing any Ships of Bulk or Burden. The largest Rivers are *Bergera* (a great Receptacle for Pirats) *Panane* and *Cranganor*, the common Boundaries of the Kingdoms of *Calecut* and *Cochin*; these as well as the River of *Cochin* are about 18 or 19 Foot deep at High-Water. The whole Country of *Malabar* is divided into five Kingdoms, *viz. Cananor*, *Calecut*, *Cranganor*, *Cochin* and *Coulang*, unto which some add the Kingdom of *Trevancor*, the least fertile

Malabar.

Its Extent.

Its Rivers.

tile of all, and the two petty Kingdoms of *Porca* and *Calecoulang*.

Baldæus.

In former Ages *Malabar* was ſubject to one Sovereign Prince, who kept his Court at *Calecut*, now the Reſidence of the Great *Sammoryn*. This King having at the Perſuaſion of ſome of his Courtiers, undertaken a Voyage over the *Red-Sea*, to viſit *Mahomet*'s Tomb, and to be thorowly inſtructed in that Faith, died in his return from thence; and leaving no Iſſue, the whole Empire was divided between his Eſquire, Sword-bearer, and Scepter-bearer: The firſt taking for his ſhare *Canañor*, the ſecond *Calecut*, and the third *Cochin*.

The anti-nt State f Malabar.

ammo-yn, i.e. Emperor.

The Nights are very cold all along the Coaſt of *Malabar*, with very thick Fogs, eſpecially in *January*, *February*, and *March*, when the days are exceſſive hot. They have every day a Sea and Land Wind; the firſt begins every Morning at 9 or 10 a Clock, and holds till Sunſet. This Coaſt is ſcarce navigable from *June* till *November*, the beſt time here being from *April* till *June*. Their Winter begins in *May*, and continues till *November*.

he Cli-nate.

nd Sea-ns.

The chief Products of *Malabar*, are *Pepper* and *Cardamome*: *Cochin* affords great Quantities of Pepper, but *Cananor* yields the beſt; eſpecially in the Inland Countries, whence the *Moors* and other Merchants from *Carnatica* and *Viſiapour* uſe to fetch it in conſiderable Quantitys. The Pepper of *Calecut* is leſſer of Grain than thoſe of *Cananor* and *Cochin*. This Commodity is generally cheaper at one Place than another. They buy it by the *Canda*, at the rate of 390 or 400 *Fanams* a *Canda*, a *Fanam* being worth about 10 Pence of our Money. In the Year 1640. the Price roſe to 450 *Fanams*. The Pepper delights in ſhady Places, the Stem is weak like thoſe of the Vines, and uſes to be upheld by Stalks like our Hops: Each Stem bears commonly 6 Bunches, every one a foot long, reſembling in colour to our Grapes before they are ripe. They are gathered green in *October* and *November*, and dry'd in the Sun upon Mats, when they turn black. Beſides the Pepper and Cardamome, this Country produces alſo *Ginger* and *Borborri* of a Saffron Colour. Formerly theſe two Commodities us'd to be ſold for 5 *Fanams* a *Man*: It affords alſo ſome *Aloes*, but in no great Quantity. Beſides theſe, *Malabar* affords very few Commodities, except a few *Bezoar*-Stones, * found about *Cananor*, Salt-peter, *Gummilacca* (tho none of the beſt, being ſold for a *Fanam* the *Man*) and abundance of Wax and Honey.

roducts.

epper.

Tin is a ertain eight.

Found in he Ba-ons, and old at 6 or 7 Reals a piece; ſome are as big as a Hen's Egg, and ſold for 12 Reals a piece.

The whole Country is covered with innumerable *Coco*-Trees, beſides ſuch other Trees as generally grow in the *Eaſt-Indies*. The Commodities carry'd to, and to be ſold in *Malabar*, are *Amſion* or *Opium*, much in uſe here, eſpecially among the *Nairos* when they are to fight, to intoxicate their Brains. *Ambergreeſe* alſo is in great Eſteem among the *Malabars*, and tranſported thither from the *Maldive* Iſlands. I have ſeen an Ounce of it ſold at *Cananor* for ſix *Reals*. *Malabar* conſumes alſo abundance of *Cloves*, *Nutmegs* and *Mace*, as alſo *Allum*, *China-root*, *Lead*, *Tin*, *Braſs*, *Copper*, *Brimſtone*, *Cinnabar*, *Scarlet* and *Crimſon Clothes*, red *Damasks*, *Benzorn*, and coarſe *Porcellain*.

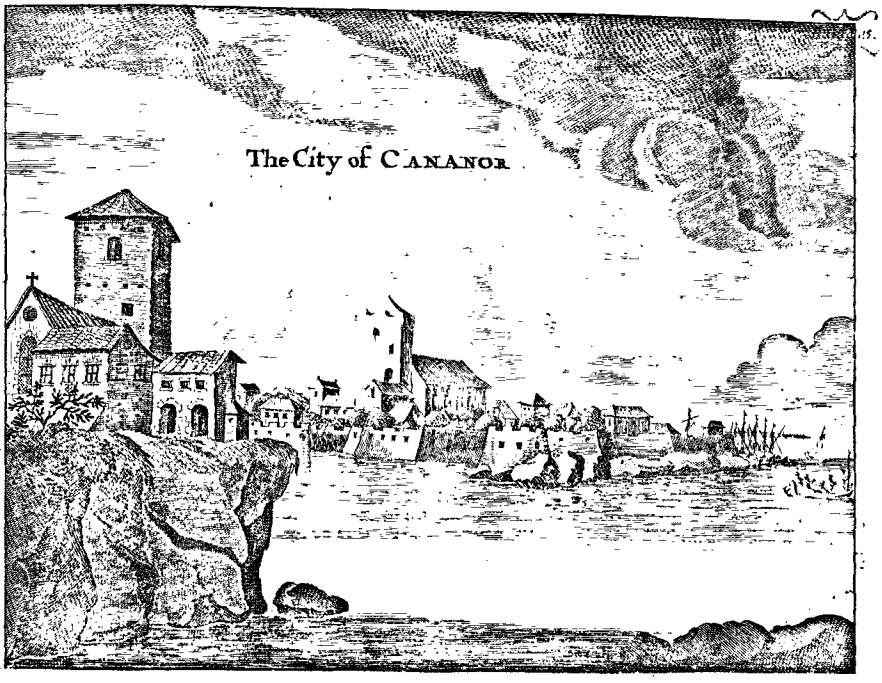
The whole Coaſt of *Malabar* abounds in Fiſhes, and at *Cochin* they have moſt excellent *Cods*. Belly Proviſions are alſo here in great Plenty, and bought at an eaſy rate; for they abound in Oxen, Swine and Poultry. The Coco-Trees furniſh them with Drink, which if not uſed to exceſs, is tolerably wholeſome. Out of this Liquor they diſtil their *Arack*, much courted by the common Soldiers and Seamen, to their great detriment.

The firſt is the King of *Cananor*, not in reſpect ſo much of his Power, but of his Situation next to *Goa*. His Reſidence is about three or four Leagues in the Country from the River of *Balipatan*; the extent of his Kingdom is from *Montedely* to *Bergera*; he maintains a conſiderable number of Muſqueteers and Archers, who are very expert in managing their Scymeters.

Cananor is a populous City, inhabited chiefly by rich *Mahometan* Merchants, who live without, yet under the Cannon of the Fortifications. They had formerly a conſiderable Traffick to *Suratte*, *Cambaja* and the *Red-Sea*, whither they uſed to ſend yearly 25 or 30 Ships; but this Place is much decayed in Trade of late Years, and is likely to be worſe. Cananor.

About two Leagues to the South of *Cananor*, lies the City of *Termapatan*, under the Juriſdiction of a *Mahometan*; it is ſtrengthened to the Land ſide by a good Wall. The rebellious Pirats of *Bergera* do conſiderable Miſchief to the King of *Cananor* and his Subjects, who, as well as the other Nations trading in theſe Seas, are forced to buy Paſsports of them for their Security. They uſed formerly to infeſt theſe Seas with 40 Frigats at a time, but are not ſo potent of late Years, ſince the *Dutch* have frightened the *Portugueſes* Termapatan.

Pirats of Malabar.



tugueſes out of theſe Parts, ſince which time they have now and then attempted the *Dutch*, as they did with the Ship called the *Dolphin*, but got nothing but Blows. Their Chiefs are *Mahometans*, and the Soldiers partly *Moors*, partly *Pagans*.

Cananor lies about 40 Leagues to the North of *Cochin*, having a ſpacious and ſecure Harbour; the Country thereabouts abounding in *Pepper*, *Cardamom*, *Ginger*, *Mirabolans*, *Tamarinds*, &c. *Peter Alvarus Capralis*, Commander in Chief of the ſecond Fleet ſent by *Emanuel* King of *Portugal* into the *Indies*, after having given a Viſit to the King of *Cochin*, and the Great *Sammoryn*, came alſo to *Cananor*, where being kindly received, the King ſent an Ambaſſador along with him to the King of *Portugal*. *Almeyda* did erect here (with the King's Conſent) a ſtrong Fort, for the Security of their Commerce; which being afterwards moſt vigorouſly attack'd by thoſe of *Calecut* and *Cranganor*, was bravely defended by *Laurence de Britto* to his Immortal Honour. And upon this occaſion it will not be beyond our purpoſe, to give you the Reaſons which induced the *Moors* to enter upon this War, which was accompany'd with many moſt remarkable Actions.

The Portugueſes build a Fort at Cananor.

The *Portugueſes* having made themſelves Maſters at Sea, not only on the Coaſt of *Æthiopia*, but alſo of *India* and *Arabia*, would not permit the Inhabitants of theſe Countries to ſend out their Ships, without Paſsports obtain'd from them; for which purpoſe they kept a ſtrict eye over all the *Malabars*, in a moſt peculiar manner. A certain *Portugueſe*, Captain of a Man of War, having attack'd a Veſſel of *Cananor*, which he ſuppoſed to have come from *Calecut* without a Paſs; he cauſed the Maſter thereof, and another Perſon of Note on board her, to be ſowed up in a Cloth, and ſo threw them overboard; which being done not far from *Cananor*, the dead Carcaſes were caſt aſhore there. The Inhabitants knowing the Perſons, and underſtanding their Fate, were ſo exaſperated at the *Portugueſes*, that they cry'd out for Vengeance, and aſſaulted the Fort: *Almeyda* offer'd them Satisfaction, and caſhier'd the Captain, but in vain, the *Moors* continuing obſtinate, and reſolving to revenge the Death of their Countrymen upon the *Portugueſes* in the Fort.

Reaſons why the Malabars entred into a War with the Portugueſes.

Lan-

Laurence de Britto being sensible that he must expect a formal Siege, resolved to stand the Brunt bravely, and sent his Messengers to *Almeyda*, to desire prompt Succours. In the mean time the King of *Cananor* was not idle, but having entrenched himself near the Harbour, all along the Sea-side he erected certain Forts, to cut off the Communication betwixt the City and Castle: At the same time being reinforced by 200 Men, sent from *Calecut*, they now resolved upon a formal Siege. There was a certain Spring betwixt the City and Castle, which being the only one whence the *Portugueſe* Garison could be supply'd with fresh Water, this occasion'd frequent and bloody Skirmishes, so that they were forc'd to purchase their Water with much effusion of Blood. *Laurence Britto* had with him in the Fort a certain Mathematician, named *Thomas Ferdinand*, by whose Advice they digged from the Fort underground to the Spring, and by Pipes conveyed it to the Place where they had occasion for it; so that after having supplied their own Wants, they stopt in the next Sally the Spring, so that the *Moors* were forc'd to remove their Camp from thence, but they in the Fort enjoyed the Benefit thereof. They then began their Attack on the other side, and by the help of Sacks filled with Cotton, advancing to the Ditch, fill'd it with Faggots, and made a fierce Assault; but being bravely repulsed by the *Portugueſes*, and forc'd to retreat, these sally'd out upon them, and made a great Slaughter of the Barbarians.

Baldæus.

Britto sends to Almeyda.

The Spring was afterwards enclos'd within the Fortifications.

These finding that Force was not likely to do their Business, resolv'd to reduce it by Famine, knowing that the Winter Seasons would cut off all hopes of Relief to the Besieged. On the other hand the *Portugueſes* made many successful Sallies upon them; in one of which a *Castilian*, nam'd *Guadalajara*, charg'd with 150 Men a strong Body of the Enemy, killing above 300 of them upon the Spot, and taking some of their great Cannon. Soon after it happen'd unfortunately for the *Portugueſes*, that a Fire arising in the Fort by the carelessness of a Slave, some part of their Magazines of Provisions was consum'd, whereby a great Scarcity being occasion'd in the Fort, many Negroes run over to the Enemy, and gave them a full account of the condition of the Garison, who were now forc'd to feed upon Cats, Rats, Mice, *&c.* At last Heaven was pleas'd to commiserate the miserable State of the *Portugueſes*, by sending a prodigious quantity of Locusts from the Sea (a thing not unfrequent in those Parts) which serv'd them both for Food and Refreshment. The Spring beginning to approach, when the *Sammoryn* fearing the Besieged might be shortly reliev'd by their Countrymen, redoubl'd his Fury against the Fort; and having sent them divers considerable Supplys of Men (which had increas'd his Army to 50000 Men) he resolv'd to try his utmost to reduce them by Force (the *Portugueſes* being in the mean while supply'd with Provisions by a certain Prince of the Country, an Enemy to the *Sammoryn*) *De Britto* having receiv'd Intelligence that the Enemy were preparing for a general Assault, took care to guard all the Avenues both on the Sea and Landside. The *Moors* assaulted the *Portugueſes* with their utmost Fury, promising themselves an assur'd Victory, by reason they continually reliev'd their Men with fresh Troops; but the *Portugueſes* receiv'd them so warmly, that after a smart Fight they put them to the Rout, and pursuing them with great Slaughter, the King of *Cananor* thought it his best way to make Peace with the *Portugueſes*.

Great Distress in the Fort.

Peace with the King of Cananor.

Thus much of *Cananor* whilst in the Hands of the *Portugueſes*; the next thing which falls under our Consideration is, how it came to fall into the Hands of the *Hollanders*. These having made themselves Masters of *Cranganor*, *Cochin*, and *Coulang*, sail'd 1663. from *Cochin* with a considerable Fleet, and a good Number of Land Forces, under the Command of *Jacob Hustar*, *Peter du Pon*, *Henry van Rhede*, and divers other brave Officers, for *Cananor*. Having landed their Men, and soon made themselves Masters of the City (which was without defence) they batter'd the Fort with their great Cannon, but without any great Success: the Bastions and Ditches on the Land side being cut out of the Rocks, and the Fortifications to the Sea side impregnable. However after a Siege of few days the *Portugueſes* considering, that by the taking of *Cochin* all hopes of Relief were banish'd, they surrendred upon honourable Terms; and the *Dutch* having put a Garison of 200 Men in the Fort, entr'd into a strict Alliance with the King of *Cananor*, 1664.

How Cananor was reduced by the Dutch.

Cananor surrendred to the Dutch.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Baldæus.

A Deſcription of Calecut *and* Panane. *The Arrival of* Vaſco de Gama. *His Treaty with the* Sammoryn. Panane *fortified, beſieg'd, and demoliſh'd by the* Portugueſes. *Alliance betwixt the* Dutch *and the* Sammoryn. *The* Portugueſe *Fort in* Calecut *attack'd by the* Sammoryn, *and defended by* John de Lima.

The Kingdom of Calecut.

THE ſecond Kingdom of *Malabar* is that of *Calecut* under the Juriſdiction of the *Sammoryn*; it begins about three or four Leagues to the South of *Bergera*, and ends at the River *Cranganor*; its whole extent being in length 32 Leagues, and 20 in breadth. This King is the moſt Potent of all the *Malabar* Kings, having a conſiderable number of *Nairos* under his Juriſdiction, who are very expert both in handling the Bow and Fire-Arms. He has made conſiderable Encroachments upon his Neighbours of late years; the Revenues of his new Conqueſts amounting now to 300000 *Fanams* yearly. The *Sammoryn* who reign'd 1662. was when I ſaw him not above 50 years of Age, and yet much impair'd in his intellectual Parts by the exceſſive uſe of *Opium*, a Drug much in requeſt among the *Malabars*.

An. 1502. the Sammoryn *brought into the field* 60000 *Men; and* 1529. 100000.

In the Kingdom of the *Sammoryn*, and in moſt others along the Coaſt of *Malabar*, the Crown is not inherited by the Son of the King, but by him who is next of kin to his Mother or Siſter; for they looking upon that as the ſurer ſide, they have introduc'd this Cuſtom to prevent the baſtardizing of the Crown. Thus the King who reign'd 1642. was ſucceeded by his Uncle on the Mother's ſide, and he was to be ſucceeded by his Siſter's Son. The *Sammoryn* monopolizes all the Pepper of the growth of his Country, none of his Subjects being allow'd to ſell it to any but his Factors.

An odd Cuſtom of Succeſſion to the Crown.

Panane.

Betwixt *Cananor* and *Calecut* lies the Town of *Panane*, ſeated upon the Seaſhoar: Here the *Dutch* came 1697. to treat with the *Sammoryn*, but he being then in the field againſt the *Portugueſes*, the Admiral ſent three Deputies to him with a Letter from Prince *Maurice* of *Naſſaw*. In this place the *Sammoryn* kept his Reſidence at that time, when *Don Vaſco de Gama* came into theſe parts. He having caſt Anchor before *Calecut*, diſpatch'd immediately a Meſſenger to the *Sammoryn*, to give notice of his arrival, and to let the King know that the Renown of his great Name having reach'd the Ears of the King of *Portugal*, his Majeſty had intruſted him with a Letter, which he being deſirous to deliver in Perſon, therefore deſir'd leave to wait on his Majeſty.

The *Sammoryn* being extremely pleas'd with the Complement, ſent immediately certain Pilots to conduct the *Portugueſe* Fleet into the Harbour of *Capocate*, where there was much better and ſafer Anchorage, from whence he was conducted with extraordinary Pomp to the *Sammoryn*.

Gama comes to Panane.

For *Don Gama* being got aſhore attended by eight Gentlemen richly attir'd, was receiv'd in the *Sammoryn*'s Name by the *Catual* (or he that manages all Foreign Affairs) accompanied with a vaſt number of Guards, Hautboys, Drums and Litters, and thence carried through *Calecut* to *Panane* (where the *Sammoryn* then reſided) under ſuch a vaſt concourſe of Spectators, that ſeveral were crowded to death. At Court *Gama* was welcom'd by the *Caimales* (or chief Courtiers) and afterwards by the High-Prieſt of the *Brahmans* dreſs'd in white Callico, who taking *Gama* by the hand conducted him to many ſpacious Apartments (at the Door of each whereof ſtood about ten Sentinels) into a ſpacious Hall, the Walls and Floor whereof were cover'd with rich Tapeſtry, and Carpets of Silk and Gold, the chief Men of the Kingdom ſitting round the Hall upon Wooden Seats, artificially wrought one above another, like the Seats in an Amphitheater. The *Sammoryn* himſelf was ſeated (according to the Cuſtom of the Country) upon an *Alkatyf*, or Carpet, dreſs'd in white fine Callico, brocado'd with Flowers of Gold, adorn'd with divers rows of Diamonds of great value: In his Ears he had ſtately Pendants of precious Stones, and on his Head a Cap (after their Country faſhion) cover'd with Diamonds, Pearls, and other precious Stones; his bare Feet being likewiſe adorn'd with Rings ſet with all ſorts of precious Stones.

His Reception.

His Reception at Court.

The Sammoryn's Dreſs.

Raldæus.

The Reception of Don Vaſco de Gama by the Samoryn.

One of the King's Attendants offer'd his Majeſty a Golden Veſſel with *Arak* and *Betel*, which the *Indians* chaw almoſt continually to preſerve their Teeth and Gums, and treat their Gueſts with it as we do with Wine, ſtrong Liquors being not much in uſe here. *Gama* after having paid his Obeyſance to the King began thus:

Gama's Speech to the Samoryn.

" *Emanuel*, the preſent King of *Portugal*, " my Maſter, mov'd by the Renown of " the Greatneſs of your Majeſty among " the Kings of *Malabar*, has ſent me " with Credentials, to enter into a ſtrict " League with You, in order to ſettle a " firm Correſpondence and Commerce " betwixt both Nations; which my Ma- " ſter would have been willing to have " perform'd in Perſon, had not the vaſt " diſtance of your Majeſty's Dominions " prov'd an invincible Obſtacle to his " generous Intentions. After which having deliver'd his Preſents, the King

The King's Anſwer.

anſwer'd by his Interpreter: " That he " had not the leaſt doubt of the good " Intentions of his Brother *Emanuel*, " King of *Portugal*, having ſuch convin- " cing Proofs thereof before his Eyes, by honouring him with ſo ſplendid a " Legation notwithſtanding the vaſt " diſtance of their Countries; that he " was willing to enter with them into " a ſtrict League and Amity, and that " they ſhould enjoy the benefit of a free " Commerce in his Territories. Then the King having ask'd them ſeveral Particulars concerning their Voyage, Shipping and Traffick, order'd *Gama* to be conducted to the Lodgings prepar'd for his Reception.

The News of this Embaſſy ſoon came to the Ears of the *Mooriſh* Merchants in thoſe parts, who fearing, not without reaſon, that the *Portugueſes* would do them conſiderable Miſchief in their Traffick, join'd with the *Arabians* trading in thoſe parts, to hinder the Conſummation of this Treaty; for which purpoſe having purchaſed the favour of many of the Courtiers by Mony, they inſinuated into the King, that *Gama* was no more than a great Pirate, who endeavour'd to get a footing in the King's Dominions, which in time might prove his ruin; whereas he might reſt ſecure in his Dominions, by incouraging his Sub-

The Moors endeavour to obſtruct the deſign of the Portugueſes.

jects in their Traffick with the exclusion of Foreigners. These Insinuations prov'd so effectual, that the *Sammoryn* began to give a favourable Ear to them, and had perhaps prov'd of very ill Consequence to *Gama*, had not a certain *African*, a Native of *Tunis*, who understood *Portuguese*, and had formerly convers'd with them, discover'd the danger to him, who thereupon without further delay got aboard his own Ships with his Attendants, and having weigh'd his Anchors kept at a greater distance from the Shore, whence he writ to the *Sammoryn*.

Gama gets presently aboard.

His Letter.

"That the ill Designs of the *Moors* "against his Person being discover'd to "him, he had thought fit to retire a- "board, and to desire his Majesty not to "be diverted from his Promise by their "false Insinuations, assuring him that "he would reap much more benefit by "the Friendship of the King of *Portugal* "than by the *Moors* and *Arabians*. The *Sammoryn* promis'd the Messenger to make a strict Enquiry after and to punish severely these Offenders, who had infringed the Law of Nations; and in his Letter to the King of *Portugal* assures him, "That the arrival of the *Portu-* "*gueses* in his Dominions was very ac- "ceptable to him, provided they might "regulate themselves so, as not to give "any occasion of disturbance there, and "that the League he was entring upon "with his Majesty, might not prove pre- "judicial to the good Correspondence he "had hitherto entertain'd with divers "other Nations. *Gama* having receiv'd this Letter, set sail for the Isle of *Anchediva*, where having furnish'd himself with fresh Provisions, he return'd to *Portugal*, to give an account of his Transactions to King *Emanuel*. The famous *Vasco de Gama* died 1524. being the first who discover'd the Passage into the *East-Indies* by the Cape of *Good Hope*.

The King's Answer to it.

And upon this occasion I can't pass by in silence what is mention'd by *Ferdinand Lopes de Castanheda* *, *viz.* That *Gama* with some of his Retinue being at *Calecut*, and entring into one of the Pagan Temples, paid their Reverence to the Images, as taking them for the same they had left in their own Churches in *Portugal*; a convincing Proof that Superstition and Idolatry very near resemble one another.

* *Hist. Ind. l.* 1. *c.* 16.

Panane.

Panane being well fortified by the *Sammoryn* with two Forts, erected on both sides of the Entrance of the Harbour, the *Portugueses* notwithstanding this resolve to attempt it. They no sooner appear'd in sight of the Harbour, but a certain number of the *Mahometans* associated themselves in one of the *Pagodes*, and with direful Execrations engag'd to one another to defend the City, or die in the Attempt. *Tristan d' Acunha* the *Portuguese* General detach'd a certain Body of his best Troops under the Command of *Laurence* and *Nonnius* in small Gallies, to lead the Van, being to be follow'd by the great Ships: These enter'd the Harbour with unspeakable Bravery, notwithstanding the Enemies Fire, who sent their great and small Shot very thick upon them from both sides of the Shore, but without any considerable effect, most of their Bullets passing over their Heads, because the Soldiers kept close lying upon their Bellies in the Gallies. The Enemy seeing them enter'd the Harbour, leap'd in whole Troops into the Water, attacking them with incredible Fury in hopes of boarding them: but the *Portugueses* stood to it with so much Resolution, that at last they forced the *Indians* to give way; and pursuing them to the Shore, made themselves Masters of the two Forts, and set fire to all the Ships in the Harbour, which were richly loaden, as also to the City. In this Action a certain *Portuguese* Ensign with his Soldiers did Wonders, and the *Mahometans* fought like Lions; but one of their Commanders, a Fellow of a huge bulk, being slain by *Laurence*, the rest betook themselves to their heels. The *Indians* lost 500 Men in this Engagement, and the *Portugueses* about 22. After which *Almeyda* and *Acunha* sail'd to *Cananor*, from whence the first steered his course to *Cochin*, and the second for *Portugal*. About *Panane* grows besides Cardamom, the best Pepper, and is sold here at a very reasonable rate.

Baldæus.

Attack'd by the Portugueses.

The Forts taken.

500 slain of the Indians.

Thus much of *Panane*; we will now proceed to give you an account of *Calecut*, the Capital City of *Malabar*, and the Residence of the *Sammoryn*, where *Steven van der Hagen* the then *Dutch* Admiral, in 1604. enter'd into a strict League with that King, who granted a free Commerce to the *Dutch* throughout all his Dominions. Many years before the *Portugueses* had obtain'd the same liberty of the *Sammoryn*, who had assign'd them certain Habitations in that City; so that they began to flourish in their Commerce, and the *Portuguese* Priests were very successful in the Conversion of many of the Pagans. This exasperated the *Moors* and *Arabians*, who inticed the *Nairos* (always greedy after Prey) to fall

Calecut.

League betwixt the Dutch and the Sammoryn.

The Factory of the Provinces of Calicut aſſaulted by the Indians.

fall to the number of 4000 upon the *Portugueſes* (not above 70 ſtrong) in their Factory, who were almoſt all maſſacred by them.

Portugueſes maſſacred.

Pedro Alvares Capral the *Portugueſe* General in thoſe parts, being inform'd of this barbarous Attempt, and finding that the *Sammoryn* had not been altogether ignorant of the matter, to revenge the Death of his Country-men, burnt ten of their Merchant Ships richly loaden, batter'd the City with his Great Guns, and kill'd them above 600 Men. The ſame Treatment theſe *Barbarians* receiv'd afterwards from *Meneſes*. We will not in this place pretend to give a particular account of all the Differences and War-like Exploits of the *Portugueſes* here, and of the famous Actions of *Albuquerque*, *Henry Meneſes*, *James Sylveria*, *Capral*, &c. we will only mention in this place, that the *Portugueſes* having found means to erect a Fort at *Calecut* by the Connivance of *Nanbeadar* the old *Sammoryn*'s Siſter's Son (who favour'd the *Portugueſes*) the Kings of *Cananor* and *Cochin* were ſo nettled thereat, that they did not deſiſt till they had engag'd the *Sammoryn* to attack it.

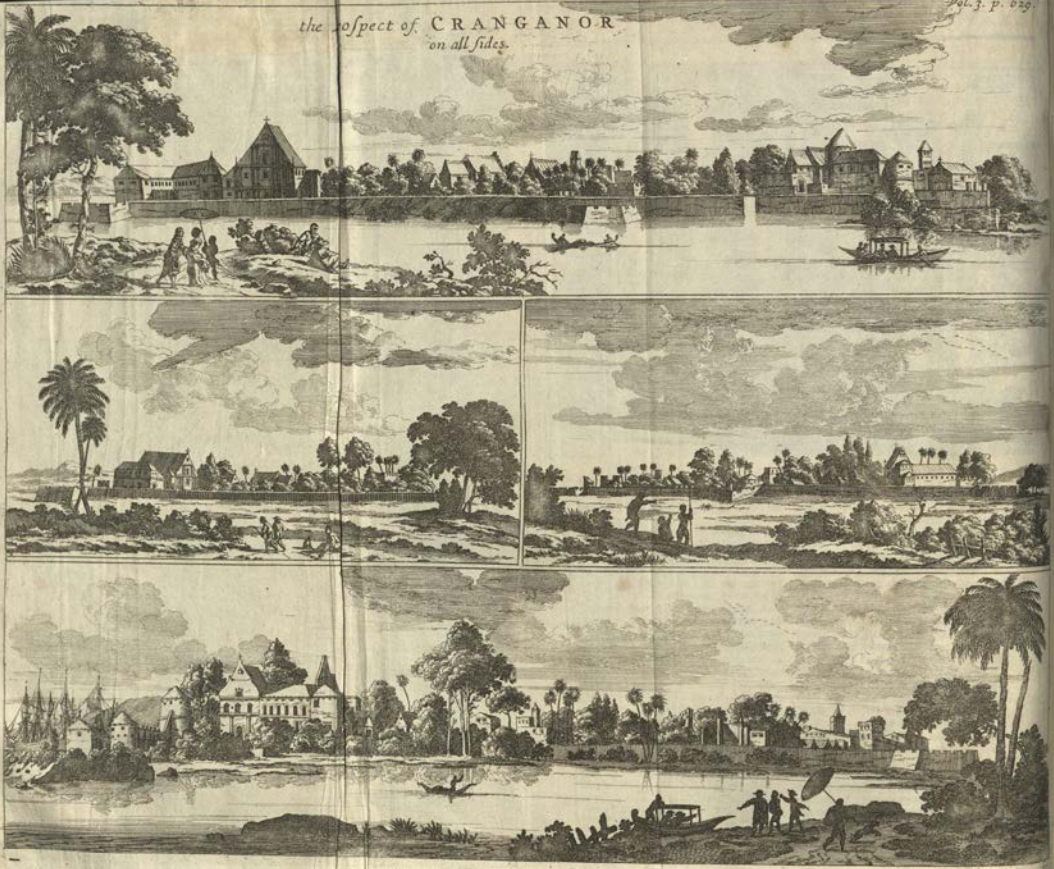
Their Death reveng'd.

The Portugueſe Fort beſieg'd.

It being then in the Winter-ſeaſon when the *Portugueſes* could ſcarce expect any Relief, and the Fort provided with a Gariſon of 300 Men only, they were driven to great Diſtreſs; a certain Renegado, a Native of *Sicily*, who had ſerv'd as an Engineer in the Siege of *Rhodes*, directing the *Moors* in their Attacks. Hereupon *John de Lima* Governor of the Fort did all he could to defend himſelf, in hopes of the approaching Spring; and having extended his Fortifications (by means of great Casks fill'd with Sand) to the Shore, ſent notice of his diſtreſſed ſtate to *Henry de Meneſes*, who without delay ſent 140 Land Soldiers aboard two Ships commanded by *Chriſtopher Juſart* and *Edward Fonſeca* to his Relief: but the laſt being becalm'd near the Shore of *Calecut*, and the other not having above 80 Men aboard, *John Lima* did not think it adviſable to land with ſo ſmall a number, as being not ſufficient to break through the Enemies Works into the Fort. However *Juſart* being reſolved to venture at all, landed in a Boat with 20 Volunteers, who fought their

Bravery of the Portugueſes.

the Aospect of CRANGANOR
on all sides.



their way through the Enemy, and with the loſs of four of their Men reach'd the Fort, which in the mean while was aſſaulted by the *Barbarians*, who were ſo warmly receiv'd by the *Portugueſe* Granadeers, that they were glad to retire in great Confuſion to their Works.

Soon after *Fonſeca* arriving with his Ship, convey'd a Letter faſtned to an Arrow into the Fort, intimating his arrival, and deſiring his Inſtructions how to ſerve him. *Lima* ſent an Anſwer, that he thought it not adviſable to expoſe himſelf and his Men to the ſame danger as *Juſart* had done, but that he ſhould return with all ſpeed to *Meneſes*, and ſolicit a Succour of 500 Men, with a good quantity of Ammunion, wherewith he did not queſtion but to defend the place. *Fonſeca* being return'd to *Cochin*, and having deliver'd his Meſſage to *Meneſes*, he diſpatch'd immediately *Anthony de Sylva* with ſome Ships, for the relief of the beſieged, whilſt he was making all neceſſary Preparations to follow with a much greater Force in the Spring.

Fonſeca order'd not to land.

The *Sammoryn* fearing the worſt, left no ſtone unturn'd to oblige the Beſieged to a Surrender before that time: and the before-mention'd *Sicilian* having done his utmoſt Endeavours with Mines, Mortars and Battering Pieces, but in vain, he reſolv'd to reduce them by Famine, which he might queſtionleſs have effected, had he had only a ſmall Squadron of Ships to block up the Harbour. But the Beſieged being from time to time ſupply'd with Proviſions and Refreſhments by ſmall Boats which enter'd in the night time, they held it out bravely till Spring, when *Meneſes* arriving with 1500 *Portugueſes*, landed his Men, and having put the *Malabars* to the rout, with the loſs of 3000 Men on their ſide (among whom was alſo the *Sicilian*) the *Sammoryn* was ſo terrified thereat, that to prevent his Country from being ravag'd by the *Portugueſes*, he clap'd up a ſudden Peace: And the *Portugueſes* judging the Fort too chargeable to keep, did afterwards demoliſh it of their own accord; in the ſpringing up of which many *Malabars* (greedy after Prey) were blown up into the Air.

The Fort reliev'd.

Baldæus.

And demoliſh'd.

Notwithſtanding this Peace, the *Sammoryn* let ſlip no opportunity of doing miſchief to the *Portugueſes*; being incourag'd thereunto by the Differences ariſen betwixt the *Portugueſe* Generals, as betwixt *Meneſes* and *Gama*, and *Sampajo* and *Maſcarenhas*, about the Viceroyſhip, which had almoſt prov'd fatal to the *Portugueſe* Affairs in the *Indies*. This is evident from a Letter writ by *Chriſtopher de Souſa* to the ſaid *Sampajo*, in which he repreſents to him the danger unto which the *Portugueſes* (a ſmall number in compariſon of their Enemies) were expoſed daily in the *Indies*, by his Difference with *Maſcarenhas* about the Viceroyalty, exhorting him not to have recourſe to Violence, but the Arbitration of ſuch Perſons as were competent Judges; telling him, that in caſe of refuſal he muſt not expect to be obey'd by him. Which coming from a Perſon noted for his Courage, Liberality and Generoſity in theſe parts, did not a little abate the Haughtineſs of *Sampajo*: and *Maſcarenhas* returning into *Portugal*, was favourably receiv'd by the King, who having recall'd *Sampajo*, oblig'd him to give full ſatisfaction to *Maſcarenhas* for the Impriſonments, Affronts and Damages he had ſuſtain'd upon that account. For the more ample Relation of which we refer our ſelves to the *Portugueſe* Hiſtorians. From *Calecut* we will turn towards *Cranganor*, in order to give you a Deſcription of its Origin and Situation, and by what means it fell into the Hands of the *Hollanders*.

Differences among the Portuguese General.

CHAP. XVIII.

A Deſcription of Cranganor. *How it was beſieged and taken by the* Dutch. *Its Excellencies. The Iſle of* Vaypin. Cochin *Fortified. Its Inhabitants, Buildings, plenty of Proviſions,* &c. *Is beſieged the firſt time by the* Dutch, *who raiſed the Siege.*

The River and City of Cranganor.

CRanganor lies five Leagues to the North of *Cochin*, and 20 to the South of *Calicut*, upon a ſandy Hill. On the South ſide of the entrance of the River, is built a ſmall Fort call'd *Paliport*; a mile above which, higher up the River, lies the City and Fortreſs of *Cranganor*, a Place ſtrongly fortify'd by the *Portugueſes* at divers

divers times; for in the beginning they had only a Tower, which they afterwards ſtrengthen'd by a Wall, and at laſt encloſed the whole by regular Fortifications of Earth. The King of *Cranganor* keeps his Reſidence not far from *Cranganor*: He that then reigned, was a young, luſty, and tall Perſon; a declared Enemy of the *Portugueſes*, as well as the *Sammoryn*.

Baldæus.

In the Year 1661. after the *Dutch* had made themſelves maſters of *Coulang*, and by ſtrengthening the ſame with Fortifications, and a good Gariſon, had ſecured the South ſide, they thought it expedient (before they attempted the Conqueſt of *Cochin*) to get alſo a firm footing on the North ſide at *Cranganor*, eſpecially ſince they fear'd they might be obliged to paſs the Winter thereabouts, it being in *December*. According we landed our Men, but found (beyond expectation) the Fortifications in ſuch a ſtate, as not to be attack'd without great Cannon. Above 14 days being ſpent in raiſing Batteries, making of Trenches and Breaches, but to no great purpoſe, and the approaching Seaſon obliging us to carry on the Siege with all poſſible expedition, it was reſolved (upon intelligence given by a certain Perſon, concerning the Condition of the Place) to attack the Point next to the River, on *Sunday* Jan. 15. 1662. very early in the morning.

Is beſieged by the Dutch,

And taken by ſtorm.

The Signal being given accordingly by a Cannon Shot, our Forces advanced, under the favour of the Smoke of our great Artillery, to the Bulwork, which they took with Sword in hand, chaſing the *Portugueſes* thence to the *Jeſuits* Church. In this Action the *Dutch* Captains, *Poolmann*, *Schulenburg*, and *Simon Werding*, as alſo Lieutenant *Silveſter*, acquired immortal Honour, being ſlain as they were mounting the Breach, with 78 common Soldiers, and many wounded.

Loſs on both ſides.

On the *Portugueſe* ſide above 200 Chriſtians were killed, beſides a great number of the *Nairos*; and among the reſt *Urbano Fialho Fereira* the Governour of the Place.

The *Portugueſes* then hung out a white Flag, deſiring a Parley upon reaſonable Conditions; which were granted them, and by virtue thereof the *Portugueſe* Soldiers tranſported into *Europe*. During this Siege we found the Nights very cold, tho the Days were almoſt inſupportable by the exceſſive Heat. And after the Conqueſt thereof, being ordered to preach the Thankſgiving Sermon in one of the Pariſh Churches (of which there were 7) I pitch'd upon a Text in *Deuteronom.* Chap. 23. v. 14.

The *Hollanders* judging it at that time convenient to ſurrender the Place into the King's hands, the ſame was done accordingly; but regain'd and refortify'd the ſame afterwards, when they found themſelves engag'd in a War with the *Sammoryn*, who made frequent Excurſions as far as *Cochin*; a thing ſo common among theſe *Barbarians*, that no ſettled Peace can be expected with ſo many Kings.

And upon this Occaſion I can't ſufficiently commiſerate the Condition of the Inhabitants of the Countries about *Cranganor* and *Cochin*, who being guided by ignorant *Romiſh* Prieſts, are in great danger of falling by degrees into *Paganiſm* again; the Diſtrict of *Cranganor* having formerly been ſo conſiderable for the great numbers of Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* (as they are call'd) inhabiting there, that a *Portugueſe* Archbiſhop had his Reſidence in that City. It is the general Opinion here, that St. *Thomas* the Apoſtle coming firſt to *Socotora*, an Iſle at the entrance into the *Red Sea*, there preached the Goſpel with good ſucceſs; whence coming to *Cranganor* and *Coulang*, he converted a great number to the Chriſtian Faith. From hence taking his way thro *Coromandel* into *China*, he returned to *Maliapour*, where he ſuffered Martyrdom. But of theſe Chriſtians of St. *Thomas*, we ſhall have occaſion to ſay more hereafter, our preſent purpoſe being to ſay ſomething of the State of Affairs in the *Portugueſe* Times.

Cranganor once an Archbiſhoprick.

Firſt then, at our arrival at *Cranganor*, we found there a Noble College of the Jeſuits, with a ſtately Library belonging to it, the Structure it ſelf being not inferior to many in *Europe*. Beſides the Church of the *Franciſcans*, they had a ſtately Cathedral, adorn'd with the Tombs of the Archbiſhops of this Place. Without the Wall of *Cranganor* was the College of *Chanotte*, famous for the reſort of the Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* hither, who exerciſed their Religious Worſhip here in the *Syriac* Language; and having erected a School for the Education of their Youth, had ſeveral Maſters and Prieſts of their own: Of which more in the Deſcription of *Cochin*.

The Jeſuits College.

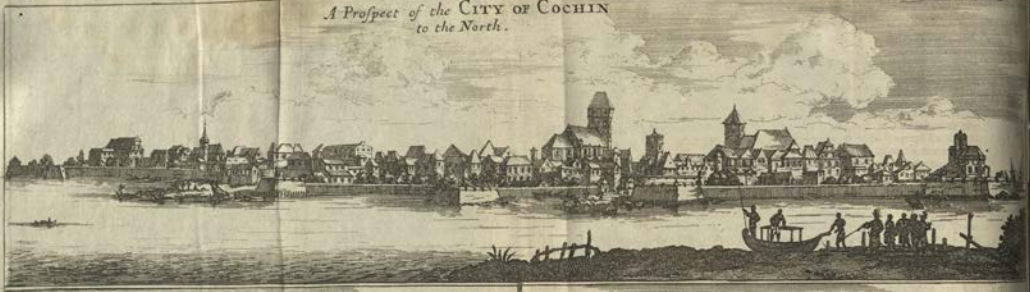
The College of Chanotte.

This Language being in high eſteem among the Natives here, and uſed ſometimes alſo by our Saviour and his Apoſtles; not only a Printing Houſe, but a Seminary has been erected at *Rome* for the cultivating thereof, and propagating the ſame among the Youth.

Thus

*

A Prospect of the CITY OF COCHIN to the North.



COCHIN, to the Sea side.

COCHIN, on the Land side.

Intier COCHIN, on the Land side.

The Syriac Language propagated at Rome.

Thus 1622. a *Syriac* Dictionary was publiſhed at *Rome*, by *John Baptiſt Ferrarius*, a Native of *Siena*; and the *Syriac* Grammar of *Georgius Ameira*, a famous Divine and Philoſopher of the College of the *Maronites*, born near the Mount *Libanus*. And 1628. *Abrahamus Ecchelenſis* obliged the World with his *Introduction to the Fundamentals of the Chriſtian Faith*, in the ſame Language. Whence it is evident that the *Roman* Clergy exceed ours, in their zeal of propagating the *Roman* Religion; tho on the other hand it muſt be allow'd that their Plenty furniſhes them with ſufficient opportunities of performing thoſe things which the *Reformed Miniſters* for want of Means are forced to let alone. I have ſeen divers Books printed with the *Portugueſe* Characters, in the *Malabar* Language, for the inſtruction of the *Paruas*, one whereof I keep by me to this day; tho at the ſame time I muſt confeſs, that in caſe we ſhould follow the ſame Method, in printing with our Characters, though in their Language, it would not have the ſame effect, they being much bigotted both to the *Roman* Clergy and the *Portugueſe* Language; ſo that I have met with ſome of the *Paruas* who ſpoke as good *Portugueſe* as they do at *Lisbon*. For the reſt, the Products of *Cranganor* are the ſame as in the other Parts of *Malabar*, except that now and then they meet with ſome Gold Duſt, but in no great quantity.

The Iſle of Vaypin.

Betwixt the River of *Cranganor* and that of *Cochin*, lies the Iſle of *Vaypin*. When the *Dutch*, in *Feb.* 1662. beſieged *Cochin* the firſt time, they erected a Fort upon the Bank of the River, from whence they batter'd the Place, the River being there not above a Musket-ſhot over: This Fort was call'd the *New Orange*, and here we found a goodly Edifice, formerly belonging to the Biſhop of the Place; as alſo a very large Church, in which I preach'd the 29*th* of *Jan.* 1662. The Iſle it ſelf is tolerably fertile, under the Juriſdiction of the King of *Cochin*, whoſe Dominions extend from the River of *Cranganor*, ſix Leagues South of *Cochin*, the whole length being about ten Leagues. The Kings of *Cochin* have always kept firm to the *Portugueſe* Intereſt, ever ſince *Triumpara*, being conquered by the King of *Calecut*, ſought for refuge among the *Portugueſes*, who reſtored him to his Kingdom, tho he afterward prefer'd a private Life before his Crown.

Cochin.

Cochin is a very antient City, but was not fortify'd till 1504. in the time of the two *Albuquerques*, who ſet ſail 1503. from *Belem* in *Portugal*; and after many ſmart Engagements with the *Sammoryn*, *Alphonſus* return'd into *Portugal*, where he obtain'd the Sirname of *The Great*, his Actions being deſcrib'd in a peculiar Treatiſe publiſh'd at *Lisbon* 1576. by *John Batreira*. Soon after the *Portugueſes* built a Church there, and entred into a League with the *Sammoryn*, and the Fortifications were conſiderably augmented by *Edward Patieco*, and a Wall erected by *L. Vaſco* towards the Sea ſide. In ſome Years after this City began to increaſe ſo conſiderably, that it might compare with ſome of the beſt in *Europe*, its length being near two *Engliſh* Miles. *Baldæus.*

Chriſtians and Mahometans lived firſt together.

At firſt the Chriſtians and Mahometans lived promiſcuouſly in the City; which occaſioning frequent Diſturbances, *Albuquerque* obtain'd from the King *Naubeadora*, that each ſhould have their peculiar Quarters aſſign'd them to live in. In and about the City of *Cochin*, lived alſo formerly ſome *Jews*, who even now have a Synagogue allow'd them without the Fortifications; they are neither White nor Brown, but quite Black. The *Portugueſe* Hiſtories mention, that at a certain time, certain blaſphemous Papers againſt our Saviour, with ſome ſevere Reflections againſt the Jeſuit *Gonſalvus Percira* (who afterwards ſuffer'd Martyrdom at *Monopatapa*) being found in a Box ſet in the Great Church for the gathering of Alms; and the ſame being ſuppoſed to be laid there by ſome *European Jews*, who now and then uſed to reſort thither privately, this gave occaſion to introduce the Inquiſition into *Goa*.

Cochin may for its bigneſs juſtly challenge the ſecond Place after *Goa* among the *Indian* Cities formerly in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſes*, tho at preſent it is not near ſo big as the City of *Batavia*. Its ſituation lies at 10 Degrees of North Latitude, bordering to the Weſt upon the Sea, and the River has about 17 or 18 fathom Water at high Tide; but its Entrance is very difficult in the Winter-time, being commonly choak'd up by the Sands which are carried thither by the Stream in the Winter Seaſon, which however are again removed by the violence of the Current in the Summer-time.

Cochin not very wholeſom, but plentiful.

About *Cochin*, as well as all along the Coaſt of *Malabar*, they have every day two ſorts of Winds, *viz.* The Land Wind beginning in the Evening, and the Sea Wind at ten in the Morning. *Cochin* is not accounted ſo wholeſom as moſt of the other places ſeated on the Coaſt of *Malabar*, by reaſon of its ſituation in low

and

and marſhy Grounds; but abounds both *Baldæus.* in Fiſh and Fleſh, and its ſituation is extremely delightful, by reaſon of the many Brooks, and adjacent little Iſlands in the River, wherein many of the *Portugueſes* have built themſelves very pleaſant Summer Seats.

The River runs on the back-ſide of the beſt Houſes of the City, where they catch Fiſh with Caſting-nets, at which the *Chineſes* inhabiting here are very dexterous. Formerly this City could boaſt of divers ſtately Churches, ſince demoliſhed by the *Dutch*. The Jeſuits Church and College facing the Sea-ſhore, had a lofty Steeple and a moſt excellent ſet of Bells: The College, which was 3 Stories high, and contained about 20 or 30 Apartments, being ſurrounded with a ſtrong Wall. The Cathedral was alſo a noble piece of Architecture, adorn'd with two rows of Pillars, and a lofty Steeple.

Antient Churches and Convents of Cochin.

The Church and Convent of the *Auſtin* Friers ſtood upon the Bank of the River; and the Church of the *Dominicans* with their *Convents*, were two rare pieces of Workmanſhip, beautified with a double row of Pillars of moſt excellent Stone. The Church and Monaſtery of the *Franciſcans* is the only that remains ſtanding as yet, but has no more than two Brothers left, who are allow'd the free exerciſe of their Religion.

The beſt Houſes of *Cochin* have their Court-yards and Gardens belonging to them, encloſed with very thin, yet ſtrong and high Walls, ſo that the Neighbours can't overlook one another. The ſituation of the City is much more in length than breadth, without any Channels in the Streets; however that end towards the Sea-ſide is much broader than the other, as may be ſeen by the annexed Draught, which alſo repreſenting an exact view of its Fortifications, we will refer the Reader to it.

The Malabar Cochin.

The *Malabar Cochin* is ſeated ſomewhat lower, and built after the *Indian* faſhion, with very broad Streets: it is very populous, and the Royal Palace is built with Bricks and Mortar after the *European* way, with Apartments very ſpacious and lofty; near which ſtands the *Pagode*, with a very large Ciſtern adjoining to it.

Anno 1662. in *Febr.* at the time of our firſt landing before *Cochin*, the *Nairos* inhabiting hereabouts (notwithſtanding we poſitively declar'd we were no Enemies of the King, but only of the *Portugueſes*) aſſembled in great Numbers in this Palace and the *Pagode*, and from thence aſſaulted our Forces, which obliged us to drive them from thence, with the ſlaughter of 400 on their ſide, they fighting very deſperately, by reaſon they had beforehand intoxicated their Brains with very large Doſes of *Opium*. The old Queen of *Cochin* being taken Priſoner in the Fray, by *Henry van Rhede* an Enſign, was kept in ſafe cuſtody for ſome time after.

400 Nairos *ſlain. The Queen of* Cochin *taken Priſoner.*

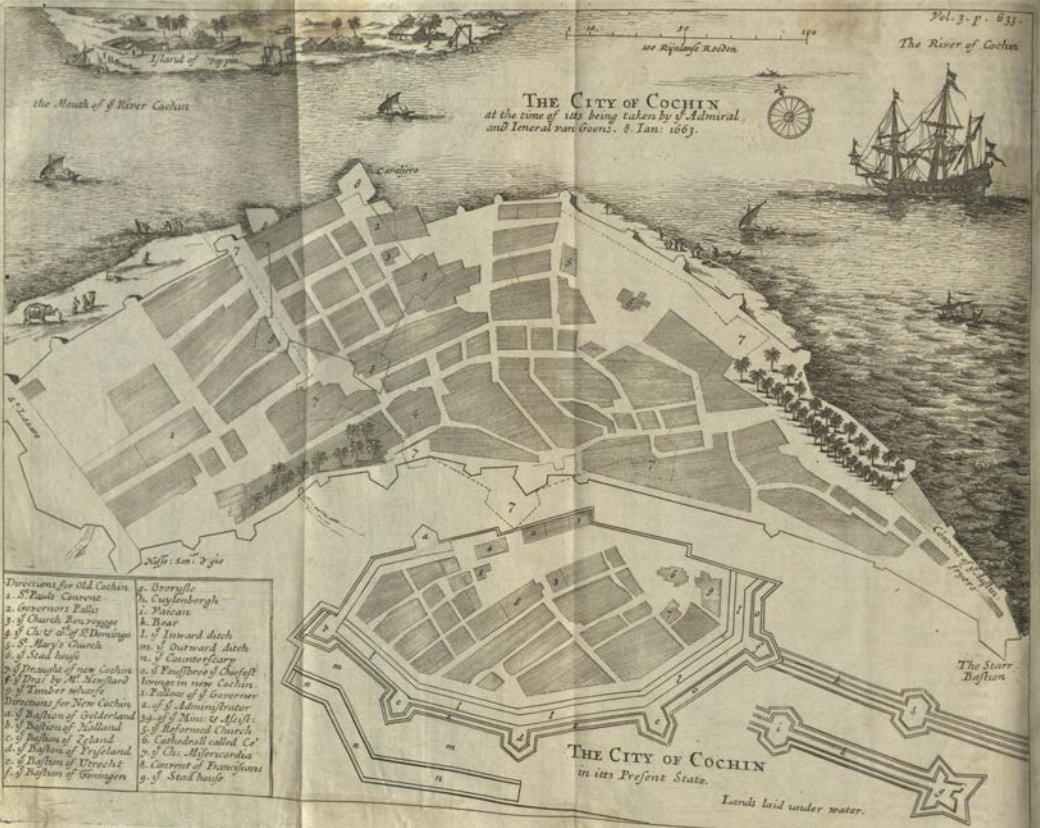
Afterwards we began to form our Attacks againſt the *Portugueſe Cochin* in three ſeveral places; that on the Land-ſide near the Church of St. *Thomas* (which ſerved us for a Chappel and Hoſpital) being commanded by the General in Perſon; that along the Sea-ſide by *Tsbrand Gotsken*; and the third near the River by the Commodore *Roothaus*. After ſome time ſpent in making of Trenches, and raſing of Batteries, it was thought expedient to ſurprize the Enemy on that ſide near the River. The firſt *Sunday* in *February* being appointed for that purpoſe, Capt. *Peter Waſh* was ordered to begin the Aſſault with a certain Detachment at four a Clock in the Morning: but it being after Sun-riſing before they could reach the Place, the *Portugueſes* took the Alarum; and being timely ſuſtain'd by freſh Troops drawn thither by the ringing of the Bells, gave ſuch a warm Reception to the *Hollanders*, that after a moſt obſtinate Engagement, they were forced to ſound the Retreat, with the loſs of divers of their beſt Men, and among them the beforemention'd Captain, who was kill'd by two Musket Bullets. The General *Ryetos van Goens*, and the Commodore *Roothaus*, were alſo both in great danger, the firſt receiving ſeveral Shots through his Hair, the laſt being likely to have been caſt into a deep Well.

An unſucceſsful Aſſault upon Cochin.

Notwithſtanding this Diſappointment, the Trenches were carried on with all imaginable ſpeed, tho not without great difficulty, by reaſon of the marſhy Grounds, which coſt us a good number of Men, more than we could conveniently ſpare at that time, when our Forces were not a little weakned before; we having left at leaſt 300 ſick and wounded at *Coulang*, and a conſiderable Gariſon at *Cranganor*, and in the Fort of *New-Orange* on the Point of the Iſle of *Vaypin*. We continued however to batter the Town inceſſantly with our great Artillery, and to omit nothing we thought might annoy the Enemy; till a whole Month being ſpent in this Siege, and the Number of our Men reduced to 1400. we began to conſider of the approaching Winter, the uncertainty of the Event, and

The City of Cochin

at the time of its being taken by ye Admiral and Ieneral van Goens. 8. Ian: 1663.



and the want of several things necessary to carry on a long Siege; so that after mature deliberation, it was judged necessary to raise the Siege, and delay the Execution thereof to a more convenient time.

The Siege raised. Accordingly our Cannon, Ammunition and other Moveables being sent aboard upon Floats, the General made a safe Retreat in the Night-time without beat of Drum; and the better to cover his Design, had gain'd a certain *Jew* by Money to make the Clock of S. *Thomas* Church strike as usually: to which also contributed not a little the ingenious Invention of a certain Gunner, named *Henry Boerdorp*, who went the Rounds all Night long, and calling *Who is there? Stand*, and that in a different Tone, deceived the Enemies Centinels, that they had not the least Suspicion of our Retreat; so that all the *Dutch* Forces got safely aboard, without the Loss of as much as one Man, except a *Negro* Slave. When the *Dutch* Soldiers saw the Artillery and Baggage going on board, they were not a little dissatisfyed thereat, but being appeased by Commodore *Roothius*, who told them that it was done only to secure them against the Enemy, who intended to make a general Sally, they were afterwards glad to follow their Officers Directions in the Retreat. *Baldæus.*

The Retreat of the Dutch.

It was almost noon before the *Portugueses* were convinced of our Retreat, as suspecting the same to be only a Stratagem to draw them into an Ambush; but when they saw us weigh our Anchors, they express'd their Joy with the Discharge of their Cannon round the Walls. The *Dutch* General having left a sufficient Garison for the guard of the Fort of *New-Orange*, another at *Cranganor* under the Command of Captain *Verspreet*, and constituted *Peter du Pon*, a brave Soldier, Commander in Chief of all the Forces in those Parts, sail'd to *Coulang*; which Place being likewise provided with all Necessaries, he took his course towards *Batavia*, with an intention to give *Cochin* a second Visit in the Spring, which he did accordingly with better Success.

CHAP. XIX.

The Isle of Formosa *surprized by the* Chineses. Cochin *besieged a second time by the* Dutch, *is forced to surrender; the chief Articles of the Capitulation. The City made more compact, and strengthened with regular Fortifications. The* Roman Catholick *Bishop of the* Christians *of* S. Thomas *comes to* Cochin. *His Original Bull of Indulgence.*

BY this time we were sufficiently inform'd of the miserable State of our Countrymen in the Isle of *Formosa* (which the *Portugueses* would often upbraid us with during the Siege) a compleat account whereof would be perhaps too tedious, and look'd upon as beyond our purpose; therefore I will only for the Satisfaction of the Reader, insert a Letter written by the Reverend Mr. *John Kruyf*, Minister of the Gospel there in the Fort of *Zealand*, and afterwards at *Negapatan* on the Coast of *Coromandel* (where he died) and directed to me, and Mr. *A. Breyl* my Fellow-Minister in these Parts.

" AFter my Arrival here the *6th Oct.* " with my Family, I was seized " with so violent a Fever, as disabled " me to write to you, yet did not hinder " me to remember my hearty Service to " you by Mr. *Roos*, Captain of our Ship; " and the Factor Mr. *Reuf*. Whether the " same was brought to you or not, I am " ignorant as yet, having for some time " after been so dangerously ill with my " Distemper, that my Recovery was " almost despaired of; but am now by " God's peculiar Mercy so far recovered, " that I went first to Church on Thurs- " day last, and preached twice the Sun- " day following, and intend to visit the " Sick to morrow, and to administer the " Holy Sacrament on Sunday next. To " give you a particular Account of the " late miserable State of the Isle of *Formo-* " *sa*, is both beyond the compass of a Let- " ter, and my present Strength; and " tho' I tremble at the very Thoughts " of it, yet will I mention the chiefest " Transactions: The first Assault of the " furious *Chineses* was made against the " Castle of *Sacam*, whereabouts, after " they had cut some of our Soldiers in " pieces, they took my eldest Son and " my Wife's Brother, who, tho very " young, *Miserable Condition of* Formosa.

Baldæus.

" young, had one of his Arms cut off. " The next day our Ship called the *Hec-* " *tor* being engag'd with a vaſt Number " of *Chineſe Joncs*, was blown up, and " in her ſome of our beſt Soldiers, a- " mong whom was alſo my Father-in- " law *Thomas Pedel*. The Fort of *Sacam* " being, after a defence of a few days, " forc'd to ſurrender for want of freſh " Water and other Neceſſaries, the Mi- " niſters, Officers, Schoolmaſters, Sol- " diers, and in general all the Inhabi- " tants of the flat Country, were for- " ced to make the beſt Terms they " could for themſelves. The Squadron " of Ships commanded by Mr. *Kauw*, " (after it had for a ſmall time rejoic'd " our drooping Spirits) being diſpers'd " by Tempeſts, and the Ship the *Urk* " forc'd upon the Sands, and taken by " the Enemy, the ſame was neither ſeen " nor heard of in five or ſix Weeks af- " ter. To be ſhort, the whole Country " being over-run by the *Chineſes*, our " Soldiers every where routed, *Kouker-* " *ken* laid in Aſhes in ſight of our Fort: " Such of our Countrymen as had not ſe- " cur'd themſelves by a timely Flight, " fell into the Hands of the mercileſs E- " nemies, who ſacrific'd the Reverend " Mr. *Hambrock* with his Son, and divers " others in *Tilocen*, to their Fury: As alſo " Mr. *Peter Mus* Miniſter of *Favorlang*, " and Mr. *Arnold Winſheim* Miniſter of " *Sinkan*, who had their Heads cut off, " and their Wives with many others " carried into Slavery. By this there " being great want of Neceſſaries in the " Fortreſs, the Soldiers died daily of " the Bloody Flux, Scurvy and Dropſy; " ſo that in nine Months time, having " loſt above 1600 Men, both by Famine " and the Sword, we were forc'd (for " the Preſervation of our Lives) to ca- " pitulate. Who can without Tears re- " member the unexpected Deſtruction " and Ruin of ſo many Families, and of " near 30 Miniſters, partly in their " Lives, partly in their Fortunes (a- " mong whom I had my ſhare, having " loſt all that I had gather'd in 15 Years " time) the Loſs and Diſhonour of the " Company, with the unſpeakable Mi- " ſeries, among which I reckon mine none " of the leaſt, as the Loſs of three Parts " of my Library? All which we ought to " look upon as the effects of God's juſt " Indignation, on account of our mani- " fold Sins. I have no more to add, " than that it is none of the leaſt among " my other Afflictions, that Matters are " both ſo ill repreſented, and worſe ta- " ken at *Batavia*.

Subſcribed,

Your affectionate Collegue
to ſerve you,

Negapatnam 13. Octob. 1662.

Joannes Kruyf.

But it is time to leave the miſerable in the Iſle of *Formoſa*, and to come to the ſecond Siege of *Cochin*. *Anno* 1662. in *September*, *Jacob Huſtart* late Govenour of the *Moluques* and *Amboyna*, and afterwards reſiding in the ſame Quality in *Ceylon* and *Malabar*, ſet ſail from *Batavia* with a good Squadron of Ships, *Tsbrand Goske* Commodore, for *Cochin*, leaving Mr. *Ryklof Van Goens* at *Batavia* by reaſon of his Sickneſs, but follow'd ſoon after. In *November* we began to batter the place moſt furiouſly, being willing to reduce it before we could receive the News of a Peace concluded betwixt us and the *Portugueſes* (which we expected every day) and having the laſt year receiv'd certain Inſtructions from the Governours of our Company to allow free Commerce, and Liberty of Religion to all ſuch *Portugueſes* as would ſubmit to us, we propoſed to the Beſieged that they ſhould be left in full poſſeſſion of their Churches (except one) provided they would receive a *Dutch* Gariſon. This was not ill reliſh'd by ſome, but *Ignatio Sermento* the Governour refuſing to comply with it, we reſolv'd to loſe no time to reduce the place by force.

The ſecond Siege of Cochin.

Several Miniſters beheaded by the Chineſes.

Propoſals made to the Beſieged.

Accordingly it was reſolv'd in a Council of War to aſſault it on the River ſide at low Tide; and to render the Paſſage the leſs difficult, a great number of Sacks fill'd with Sand were prepar'd to be thrown into the River. But this Attempt prov'd unſucceſsful, our People meeting with ſo hot a Reception there, that they were glad to think of retreating. But as we had no time to loſe, ſo we ſoon pitch'd upon another, which was carried on with better ſucceſs: For that brave Commander *Peter du Pon* being order'd to aſſault the Baſtion on the Bank of the River, he executed his Commiſſion ſo ſucceſsfully, that (tho not without great Reſiſtance) he broke through the Enemy, and maintain'd himſelf in ſome of the adjacent Houſes againſt the whole Force of the Enemy, till being ſeconded by freſh Troops of his own, they put out the white Flag, and ſent their Deputies

Unſucceſsful Attempt of the Dutch.

puties to capitulate upon the following Conditions.

Articles of Surrender of Cochin. The *Franciſcans* to enjoy the free Exerciſe of their Religion under the Protection of the States: The Clergy to have free liberty to carry away all their Images, Church-Ornaments, Relicks, *&c.* and what elſe belong'd to them. The Governour *Ignatio Sermento* and his Family, together with all the Officers, to be receiv'd civilly by the *Dutch*. The Gariſon to march out with Enſigns diſplay'd, Drums beating, with Bag and Baggage, and to be conducted in *Dutch* Veſſels to *Goa*, except ſuch of the Soldiers as were in immediate Pay of his Majeſty, who were to be tranſported to *Portugal*. Such of the Inhabitants as were willing to ſtay behind under the Juriſdiction of the *Dutch* Company, to have free liberty to remain in their full Poſſeſſions, and that care ſhould be taken of the ſick and wounded. All which was punctually perform'd, and the Keys of the City deliver'd to our General, who ſoon after enter'd victorious on Horſe-back in great Pomp, and order'd a ſolemn Thankſgiving to be made in the great Church lately belonging to the Jeſuits, for the Conqueſt of ſo important a place, which was done accordingly. *Baldæus.*

Orders given by the Dutch General. Being thus become entirely Maſters of *Cochin*, after it had been 150 years in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſes*; the *Dutch* General made it his chiefeſt care to iſſue his Orders not to moleſt the *Portugueſes*, but to obſerve punctually the Articles of the Capitulation. The next was to demoliſh a certain part of the Houſes and Churches of the City, in order to draw it into a more narrow compaſs, and to render the Fortifications the more regular, the former requiring too great a number of Men to defend them. The King of *Cochin* being crown'd, and divers of the neighbouring petty Princes oblig'd to become his Tributaries, ſeveral ſtrict Alliances were made with the neighbouring Kings to the South of the River of *Cochin*.

A Roman Biſhop over the Chriſtians here, comes to Cochin. About the ſame time *Joſeph de Sancta Maria*, of the Order of the *Diſcalceated Carmelites*, ſent by the Pope in quality as a Biſhop among the Chriſtians of St. *Thomas*, came (in his return into *Europe*) to *Cochin* to ſalute our General, and was very

very kindly receiv'd by his Excellency: *Baldæus.* He had two ſorts of Enemies to contend with during his ſtay in theſe parts; firſt of all with the *Portugueſes*, who could not brook that any other but their Countrymen ſhould be exalted to that Dignity, and that not by the Pope, but by their own King: The other was the *Archidabo* (as the *Portugueſes* ſtile him) or chief Head of the Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* hereabouts, who being a *Negro* would neither ſubmit himſelf nor his Flock to the *Romiſh* Juriſdiction.

Concerning the Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* we ſhall ſpeak more at large anon.

But to return to the Biſhop, Brother *Joſeph de Sancta Maria*, he was ſent from *Rome* with a Bull of Indulgence, granted *Jan.* 16. 1660. in the fifth year of *Alexander* VII. Pope of *Rome*, ſubſcribed by the Cardinal *Barberini*, *Joſeph Caetanus*, &c. the true Original whereof being in my Cuſtody, and containing many things tending to the Elucidation of the Affairs of the Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* (of whom we are to treat immediately after) we thought it not beyond our ſcope to oblige the Reader with the Tranſlation thereof.

Franciſcus *Biſhop of* Portua, *Cardinal* Barberini, *Vice-Chancellor of the Holy* Roman *Church, and Protector of the Honourable Fraternity of the Church of* S. Jerome.

Joſephus Caetanus, *Keeper of both the Seals of his Holineſs, Referendary and Prelate;* Carolus Antonius à Puteo, *Knight;* Franciſcus Cinus, *Sollicitor-General of the Court of* Rome; Johannes Baptiſta Valentis, *Abbot;* Petrus Baſſanus, Carolus de Comitibus, Pompejus Serinus, Marianus Vecchiarellius, *and* Joh. Bapt. Ciofanus, *Commiſſioners:*

The Bull of Indulgence.

"WIſh to our dearly beloved Brothers and Siſters in Chriſt of "the moſt Reverend Fraternity of the "Apoſtle of St. *Thomas*, of the Church "dedicated to that Saint, without the "Walls of *Cochin*, founded by Legal "Authority, Eternal Salvation in the "Lord.

"The more than ordinary Inclination "you have ſhewn to Piety, Charitable "Works, and other holy Exerciſes, have "induc'd us, who according to our Duty "are to take care of the Salvation of "the Faithful, and promoting of Piety "and Religious Exerciſes, to receive in"to and unite with our Society your "Fraternity intended for the Exerciſe "of pious and charitable Works; and "by theſe Preſents receive you as ſuch, "and thereby make you Partakers of all "the Indulgences, Authority and other "Spiritual Gifts granted us by Pope "*Paul* V. of happy Memory. And the "Reverend Father, Brother *Johannes de Sancta Maria*, Frier of the Order of "the Diſcalceated *Carmelites*, Preſident "of your Fraternity, having in your "Name earneſtly ſollicited for the ſaid "Reception, and a grant of the Indul"gences, we the above-mention'd *Pre*"*lates* and *Commiſſioners*, relying upon "the Authority of Pope *Clement* VIII. "of happy Memory, and his Grant of "*Nov.* 7. 1604. and mov'd with a holy "Zeal and Chriſtian Love for the pro"moting of the true Religious Worſhip, "we do by virtue of theſe Letters re"ceive your Fraternity founded accord"ing to the Apoſtolical and Canonical "Inſtitution, with the Approbation of "the moſt Reverend Biſhop, or the Or"dinary of that place, into our Commu"nion and Society, purſuant to the Apo"ſtolical Authority granted us for that "purpoſe; and therefore impart to the "ſaid Fraternity and to all its Members "all the Indulgences and other Spiritual "Gifts, ſpecified and granted to our So"ciety by the ſaid Papal Bull of *Paul* V. "to give Encouragement to your Frater"nity for the performance of all ſorts of "pious Works, and the obtaining of "eternal Salvation (by God's Mercy) "after this Life.

N. B. The Bull of *Paul* V. being very long, fulſome, and not material, was not thought fit to be inſerted.

"And

" And it being our full intention that " all the Indulgences, and other Spiritual " Gifts granted us at large, as before- " ſaid, ſhould be enjoy'd by your Fra- " ternity and its Members, purſuant to " the Inſtitution of Pope *Clement* VIII. " of happy memory; we will and com- " mand, that theſe our Letters ſhall " have the ſame Authority (when pro- " duced) as if they contain'd the Origi- " nal it ſelf. For the Confirmation " whereof we have order'd this Letter " to be ſign'd by the Secretary of our " Society, and our Seal, together with " that of the Protector thereof, to be " affixed to it. Given in *Rome* at the " uſual place of our Aſſembly, in the " year after the Nativity of our Saviour " Jeſus Chriſt, 1660. of the XIII. In- " diction, the 16*th* of *January*, in the " fifth year of the Reign of our holy " Father *Alexander* VII. *Baldæus.*

Subſcribed,

Cardinalis Barberinus, Protector.
Joſeph Caetanus, Prelate.

Franciſcus Cinus,
Carolus Antonius à Puteo,
Marianus Vecchiarellius,
Petrus Baſſanus,
John Bapt. Ciofanus,
Philippus de Rubeis,
} Commiſſioners.

Andreas Leonius, Secretary.

CHAP. XX.

The Voyages, Miracles and Death of St. Thomas *the Apoſtle. The Doctrine of the Chriſtians of St.* Thomas; *of the* Greek, Syriac, *and* Georgian *Chriſtians*; *of the* Ruſſians, Neſtorians, Jacobites, Coptes, Abyſſines, Armenians, Maronites. *A good Correſpondence betwixt the Eaſtern and Weſtern Churches very neceſſary.*

St. Thomas *his arrival in the* Indies.

IT is the general opinion that the Apoſtle St. *Thomas* did come into the *Indies*, but eſpecially into theſe parts: His firſt coming was in the Iſle of *Socotora* (at the entrance of the *Red Sea*) where he converted many to the Chriſtian Faith; it being certain that to this day many of the Inhabitants ſtile themſelves *Chriſtians of* St. *Thomas*, which alſo induced *Xaverius* to touch at that Iſland in his Voyage to the *Indies*; and, if we may credit *John de Lucena*, would fain have ſtaid there. From *Socotora* St. *Thomas* ſail'd to *Cranganor*, whence, after he had converted many to the Chriſtian Faith, he went to *Coulang*. Upon the Rocks near the Sea-ſhore of *Coulang* ſtands a Stone Pillar *, erected there (as the Inhabitants report) by St. *Thomas*. From *Coulang* croſſing the high and dangerous Mountains he travell'd into *Coromondel*, where having likewiſe planted the Seed of the Goſpel he ſail'd into *China*, where, after he had preach'd the Goſpel to the Infidels, he return'd to *Maliapour*, to confirm ſome of the new converted Chriſtians in their Faith, and there ſuffer'd Martyrdom.

His ſeveral Voyages.

* *I ſaw this Pillar* 1662.

Maliapour (afterwards call'd St. *Thomas* by the *Portugueſes*) was at that time a famous City in *Coromandel*, where this holy Man would fain have built a Church, but was prevented by the *Brahmans*, and their King *Sagam*. They relate a very miraculous thing of St. *Thomas*. The Sea having caſt up a Tree of a vaſt bulk, the King, who was deſirous to uſe it in the building of a Houſe, had imploy'd a great number of Men and Elephants to bring it from thence, but in vain, the Wood being not to be moved from the place: St. *Thomas* ſtanding by told the King, that if he would preſent him with the piece of Wood, he would carry it alone to the City (then ten Leagues from the Shore): The King looking upon him as a mad Man, told him he ſhould do with it what he pleas'd; whereupon St. *Thomas* tying his Girdle to one of the Branches, and making the ſign of the Croſs, drew the whole Tree after him with a great deal of eaſe, follow'd by a vaſt number of People; and coming to the City erected a *Stone Croſs* there, telling the Spectators, that whenever the Sea ſhould riſe up to that place, God would ſend certain Strangers from far diſtant places to ſettle the Chriſtian Religion here, which the *Portugueſes* would have to be verified at the time of their coming there.

One of St. Thomas *his Miracles.*

St. *Thomas* having by this Miracle, and the

the Conversion of a vast number of Pa-
Baldæus. gans, arriv'd to a great Authority among them; this so incensed the *Brahmans*, that one of them kill'd him with his Launce upon a Hill near the City, where he used to perform his Devotion. They had before that accus'd him falsly of a Murder,
Another Miracle. but St. *Thomas* having resuscitated the Child from Death, he declar'd his own Father to have been his Murderer; which had so powerful an influence upon many of the chief Men of the Country, and the King himself, that they receiv'd Baptism. Some say that St. *Thomas* was kill'd at *Calaminba*, by mistaking this word for *Calurmina*, i. e. *upon a Stone*; *Calur* signifying in the *Malabar* Language a *Stone*, and *mina upon*; St. *Thomas* having been slain upon a Rock: whence it is, that if to this day you ask one of the Christians of St. *Thomas*, where St. *Thomas* suffer'd Martyrdom, they will tell you, *Maliapour Calurmina*, at *Maliapour* upon *the Stone*, where he was ston'd, and at
His Death. last run through with a Launce.

They tell you of a certain Cross made by his Blood, and a vast number of Miracles wrought by it, for which I will refer my self to *Lucena*, *Osorius*, and
* Tom. 1. 1557. *Baronius* *. The Christians of St. *Thomas* teach their Children in their very Infancy these following Heads concerning St. *Thomas*. St. *Thomas* was the Man who first abolish'd Idolatry; it was he who converted the *Chineses* and *Negroes*; it was he that baptiz'd them, and taught them the true Faith, and to profess God the Father, the Son, and Holy Ghost. They also tell you, that he converted the three Kings of the East (one of whom, call'd *Perumal*, they say was King of *Ceylon*) and that St. *Thomas*'s Body was transferr'd from *Maliapour* to *Edessa* in *Mesopotamia*.

But setting aside all these uncertain Relations, the most secure way (founded upon no small Probabilities) is, that St. *Thomas* was actually in these Parts, and converted a great number of People to the Christian Faith; which contradicts that bold Assertion of the *Roman* Catholicks, that all Nations have receiv'd the Christian Faith from *Rome*; it being beyond all question, that at the time of the arrival of the *Portugueses* in those parts under *de Gama*, the Inhabitants declar'd themselves to be Christians from most antient times, desiring the Protection of the King of *Portugal* against the Pagans, and in token of their Obedience presented him with a Silver Scepter gilt. Nay, the Church of *Rome* can't boast of that Honour, even of all parts of *Europe* it self; since the Kings of *England* and *Scotland*, *Lucius* and *Donaldus*, embrac'd the Christian Faith 124 years after our Saviour's Nativity, without having the least Communication with the Church of *Rome*; whence *Tertullian* rightly says, *Britannorum loca Romanis inaccessa Christo subdita sunt.* And *Cyprianus* says to the same purpose, 240 years after the Birth of Christ, *That the Vine-branches of the Gospel have spread themselves beyond the extent of the* Roman *Empire.* Thus *Dorotheus* Bishop of *Tyrus* under the Reign of *Constantine* the Great, positively asserts, That the Chamberlain of Queen *Candace* did introduce the Gospel into *Ceylon* and the Happy *Arabia.*

Vain Boasts of the Church of Rome.

The Christians of St. *Thomas* remain'd many years in the Primitive Purity of the Christian Religion, till in time, for want of good Pastors, they began to be infected with some Pagan Superstitions, and were in most imminent danger of losing the Remnants of the Truths of the Gospel, had not *Martome* a Native of *Syria*, taken care of the decay'd state of Christianity in these parts; and being seconded in his Endeavours by divers other Teachers out of *Syria*, *Babylonia*, *Chaldæa* and *Egypt*, the *Syriac* Language was introduc'd, and the former Purity of Religion restor'd among them, till in time the *Nestorian* Heresy got footing in *Syria*, and was from thence transplanted hither, as is sufficiently evident from the Records of the *Malabars.*

The Christians of St. Thomas decay'd, and afterwards restor'd to their Primitive Purity.

This *Martome* (signifying in their Language as much as Lord *Thomas*) being much respected by the Kings of *Cranganor* and *Coulang*, and by the Christians of St. *Thomas* in general, was declar'd by them their Head: and the Bishops of *Cochin*, *Coulang* and *Cranganor*, being afterwards sent for out of *Syria*, these introduc'd the *Syriac* Language, and acknowledg'd the Patriarch of *Alexandria* or *Babylon* for their Metropolitan, till at last they submitted to the Pope of *Rome*: For the Supreme Ecclesiastical Head of the *Indians* (at the perswasion of the *Portugueses*) did 1562. acknowledg the Supremacy of the Pope of *Rome*, provided they might continue in the former free Exercise of their Religion, which was confirm'd in the Synod of *Goa*, where they would not consent to the least Alteration of any of their Church-Ceremonies. But after the Decease of this Bishop, his Successor 1599, embrac'd with the rest of his Clergy in another Synod, the *Roman* Faith.

Had their own Bishops.

Acknowledg the Jurisdiction of Rome.

The

*

Where the Chriſtians of S. Thomas inhabit.

The Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* inhabit for the moſt part on the Coaſt of *Malabar*, about *Cranganor*, *Cochin*, *Coulang*, *Travancor*, and ſome in *Coromandel*, amounting in all to a conſiderable Number. Before they were united with the Church of *Rome*, they were infected with the *Neſtorian* Hereſy, as ſome are ſtill to this day; whence it is that they deny the two Natures in the Perſon of Chriſt. This *Neſtorius* was Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, and *Eutyches Archimandrit* was Abbot in the ſame City. His Doctrine was received at firſt in the Council of *Epheſus*, by the Intereſt of *Chryſapius* (to pleaſe *Eudoxia* the Empreſs) Lord Chamberlain to *Theodoſius* the Emperor; but *Chryſapius* being ſlain at the Inſtigation of *Pulcheria*, the Siſter of the Emperor, the ſame was afterwards condemned in another Synod of *Epheſus* held in the Year 431. two Years after the Death of St. *Auſtin*, wherein *Cyril* Biſhop of *Alexandria* preſided; as the beforemention'd Council of *Epheſus*, and the Doctrine of *Eutyches* was condemned in the Council of *Chalcedon* 451.

Their Doctrine.

For the reſt, the antient Chriſtians of St. *Thomas* did adminiſter the Holy Sacrament in both Kinds, uſing Salt, Bread, and the uſe of Raiſins inſtead of Wine. It was a very antient Cuſtom among them, not to baptize their Children till they were forty days old, except in caſe of imminent danger of Life: They uſed no Unction, neither any Images, except that they had Croſſes in their Churches. Their Prieſts were forbid to marry a ſecond time. They were declared Enemies of *Cyril* of *Alexandria*, a great Antagoniſt of the *Neſtorians*, but reverenced *Neſtorius* and *Dioſcorus* as Saints. They did not acknowledg the Superiority of the Pope of *Rome*, and uſed the *Syriac* New Teſtament in their Churches.

Many Sects in the Eaſt.

As divers Religions have been broach'd of late Years in *Europe*, ſo there are many Sects of antient ſtanding in the *Eaſt*.

1. *The Greeks.*

The chiefeſt of theſe are the *Greeks*, who acknowledg the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* for their Head, *viz.* thoſe of *Natolia* (except *Armenia* and *Cilicia*) *Grecia*, *Ruſſia*, *Bulgaria*, *Servia*, *Boſnia*, *Walachia*, *Moldavia*, *Podolia* and *Muſcovia*.

2. *The Melchites.*

The next are the *Melchites*, the moſt numerous of all the Sects in the *Eaſt*; they are call'd *Syrians* from *Syria*, and *Melchites* by their Enemies, becauſe they conformed themſelves in their Religious Worſhip, according to the Emperor's Orders. * They acknowledg for their Head the Archbiſhop of *Damaſcus*, who antiently had his Reſidence at *Antioch*.

* *See* Niceph. *Hiſt. Eccl.* l. 18. c. 48. & l. 28. c. 45.

Baldæus.

The third Sect is that of the *Georgians*, inhabiting the antient *Iberia* between the *Euxine* and *Caſpian* Seas. Some would have them to be call'd *Georgians*, becauſe, as they ſay, they reverence S. *George* as their Patron; but erroneouſly, the *Georgians* having been mention'd both by *Pliny* and *Mela*, long before S. *George* was known. They are of the ſame Religion with the *Greeks*, and have eighteen Biſhops of their own, beſides a Metropolitan.

3. *The Georgians.*

4. *The Ruſſians.*

The fourth Sect is the *Ruſſians*, who likewiſe profeſs the *Greek* Religion, denying with them the Proceeding of the Holy Ghoſt from Father and Son, the main Point in queſtion betwixt the Eaſtern and Weſtern Churches.

5. *The Neſtorians.*

The fifth Sect of the *Neſtorians*, follow the Heretical Doctrine of *Neſtorius*, and live for the moſt part among the Pagans and Mahometans, in *Babylon*, *Aſſyria*, *Meſopotomia*, *Parthia*, *Media*, &c. Nay, *Paulus Venetus* affirms, that they are found from the North ſide of *Cataja*, to the moſt Southerly Parts of the *Indies*; ſo that on the Eaſt ſide beyond the River *Tigris*, ſcarce any other Chriſtian Sect is to be met with: The reaſon whereof they alledg to be, that *Coſroes* King of *Perſia*, a declared Enemy of the Emperor *Heraclius*, forced all his Subjects to embrace this Doctrine. The Patriarchal Seat of the *Neſtorians* is at *Muzal*, a City of *Meſopotamia* upon the River *Tigris*, now ſubject to the *Turks*; notwithſtanding which it has 40000 Chriſtians and 15 Churches. Some of the *Neſtorians* did ſubmit to the *Roman* Juriſdiction under Pope *Julius* III. who was created Pope 1550. and reign'd five Years. And the Patriarch *Abdieſu*, who was inveſted with the Epiſcopal Dignity by Pope *Pius* IV. was preſent at the Council of *Trent*.

6. *The Jacobites.*

The ſixth is that of the *Jacobites*, having got their Name from one *Jacob* a Native of *Syria*, and a Follower of the Doctrine of *Eutyches*, 530. according to *Nicephorus* and *Damaſcenus*. They inhabit for the moſt part in *Syria*, *Aleppo*, *Cyprus*, *Meſopotamia*, *Babylon*, and *Paleſtina*, whence the Patriarch of *Jeruſalem* is alſo a *Jacobite*; but the Patriarch of the *Jacobites* reſides at *Caranut*, an antient noted City in *Meſopotamia*. They acknowledg but one Nature in Chriſt, make the Sign of the Croſs with one Finger only; they mark their young Children with the ſign of the Croſs by means of an hot Iron; uſe both Baptiſm and Circumciſion, and reject the Purgatory, it being their Opi-

nion

nion that the Soul remains with the Body under-ground till the Day of Judgment; and that the Angels are compoſed of a fiery and lucid Subſtance. *Baldæus.*

7. *The Coptes.* The ſeventh are the *Coptes*, or *Egyptian* Chriſtians, being rather the Name of a Nation, than belonging to any peculiar Religion: They are the ſame with the *Jacobites*, the word *Cophti* being the ſame with *Ægopbti*. For notwithſtanding the Doctrine of *Eutyches* was condemned in the Council of *Chalcedon*, and *Dioſcorus* Patriarch of *Alexandria* depoſed upon that ſcore, the ſame took deep Root in the Eaſtern Parts, and more eſpecially in *Egypt*. Theſe *Egyptians* (according to *Tecla Maria* an *Abyſſine* Prieſt) agree in Point of Doctrine with the *Abyſſines*, and acknowledg the Juriſdiction of the Patriarch of *Alexandria*, whoſe Reſidence is now at *Cairo*.

8. *The Abyſſines.* The eighth Sect is that of the *Abyſſines*, or *Mediterranean Ethiopians*, being generally *Jacobites*, whence their King (call'd erroneouſly by ſome * *Preſter John*) is ſtiled the *Prince of the Jacobites*. They reject abſolutely the Council of *Chalcedon*, and will allow it no place in their Writings. To their Patriarch they give the Name of *Albuna*, i. e. *Our Father*, who muſt be a Native out of the Territories of *Alexandria*, and of S. *Anthony*'s Order; for it is obſervable that all the Patriarchs and Biſhops in the *Eaſt*, are either of the Order of S. *Baſil* Biſhop of *Ceſaria* and *Cappadocia*, or elſe of the Order of S. *Anthony*. The Patriarchs of *Conſtantinople*, *Antiochia* and *Armenia*, are of the Order of S. *Baſil*; thoſe of *Alexandria* and *Ethiopia*, and *Ethiopia*, as alſo thoſe of the *Jacobites* and *Maronites*, of S. *Anthony*'s Order; but the Patriarchs of the *Neſtoreans* are promiſcuouſly of either of theſe two Orders. The *Abyſſines* have for their Head the Patriarch of *Ethiopia*: They are rebaptized once every Year, on 12*th* day, as indeed are moſt of the other Eaſtern Chriſtians. They follow the Rules of the Old Teſtament in reference to clean and unclean things. It is obſervable, that contrary to the cuſtom of all the other Eaſtern Chriſtians, (except the *Armenians*) they uſe unlevened Bread in the Holy Sacrrment; tho ſome affirm that this is only done on *Thurſday* in the Holy Week, and that at other times they uſe levened Bread. All Perſons, both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil, take and receive the Sacrament ſtanding, and that always in the Church, the King himſelf not being diſpenſed with in this Point: The Prieſt gives the Bread, and the Deacons the Wine; and that day the Sacrament is received (which is generally once a week) they are forbidden to ſpit. They baptize both with Fire and Water; beſides which they circumciſe their Children on the 8*th* day, and that both Sexes, not according to the manner of the *Jews*, but after the Mahometan way, whence it ſeems as if it were rather a Cuſtom than a Point of Religion. And if we deduce their Original from the antient *Ethiopians*, *Herodotus* tells us, that they uſed to practiſe the ſame in very antient Times; if from the *Arabians*, the Matter is ſufficiently evident, the *Arabians* being deſcended from *Iſmael*, tho they are generally ambitious to trace their Origin rather from *Sarah* than *Hagar*. For the reſt, they reject Purgatory, and Prayers for the Dead; as alſo all Traditions, looking upon the Word of God as the only Rule of Faith; but with the *Jacobites*, allow no more than one Nature in Chriſt. Of the Religion of the *Abyſſines*, *Damian a Goes*, *Athanaſ. Kircher*, *Alvarius*, and others, have given a more ample account.

* Preſtegan *was the Title of a certain* Aſiatick *Prince; ſome will have it a* Perſian *word.*

9. *The Armenians.* The ninth Sect is that of the *Armenians*, in great eſteem among the *Mahometans*, by reaſon of their Traffick and Riches; tho ſome alledg another Reaſon, *viz.* that an *Armenian* did foretel *Mahomet* his future Greatneſs. In the Year 1656. a certain *Armenian* Merchant, named *Goja Salomon*, a very grave and ſober Perſon, travell'd in our company to *Macaſſar*, where we were to treat about a Peace with the King, and he to fetch ſome Mony due to him from the *Daniſh* Company, who gave us ſeveral needful Inſtructions concerning both the Eccleſiaſtical and Political Affairs of the *Armenians*. They antiently belonged to the Juriſdiction of the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, purſuant to a Decree of the Council of *Chalcedon*; but afterwards having withdrawn themſelves from the *Greek* Church, ſet up two Patriarchs of their own, *viz.* one in the *Greater*, the other in the *Leſſer Armenia*: We were told that they adminiſter the Sacrament to the very Infants, whereas the *Ruſſians* don't allow it to Children under ſeven Years of Age. They declare poſitively againſt the Purgatory and Tranſubſtantiation. They rebaptize ſuch as turn to their Religion from the *Weſtern* Churches; They don't allow any Happineſs to the Souls of the deceaſed till after the Day of Judgment.

10. *Maronites.* The tenth Sect is that of the *Maronites*, having got their Name, not from the

*

the famous Heretick *Maron* (as *William Tyrius* and *Prateolus* falſly imagine) but from a certain Holy Man, in certain antient Records, mention being made of the Convent of St. *Maron*, the Friers whereof were call'd *Maronites*: Some of them inhabit in *Aleppo*, *Damaſcus*, *Tripolis*, *Syria*, and *Cyprus*; but their chief Seat is the Mount *Libanus*, whoſe whole compaſs being computed of 700 Leagues, but in moſt places rocky and barren, is inhabited by about 12000 Families of the *Maronites*, who pay to the Grand Seignior ſeventeen Crowns *per annum* apiece for every Head that is above twelve years old; and a Crown a year for each piece of Ground of ſixteen Spans in the Square. The Mountain is of ſuch a height, that it may be diſcovered at 40 Leagues diſtance. The Patriarch of the *Maronites* has eight or nine Suffraganean Biſhops, he himſelf being always a Frier of the Order of S. *Anthony*, and reſides ſometimes near the Mount *Libanus*, in a Convent of S. *Anthony*, ſometimes at *Tripolis*. The *Maronites* are at preſent under the Juriſdiction of the See of *Rome*; and Pope *Gregory* XIII. (the ſame who cauſed the Alteration of the New Stile to be inſerted in the Almanack) erected a College of the *Maronites* at *Rome*. The *Maronites* agree with the *Greek* Church in this Opinion, That the Holy Ghoſt proceeds only from the Father, that every Soul was created in the beginning. They look upon a Female Infant as unclean for eighty days after its Birth, and the Males for forty, which is the reaſon they don't baptize them before that time; and adminiſter the Sacrament to the Children ſoon after they are baptized. They don't carry the Sacrament in Proceſſion, and allow not of a fourth Marriage; but don't ordain any Prieſts or Deacons without they are married before; and allow a Parent the power of annulling the Marriage of his Son or Daughter, if the ſame be done without his conſent. Beatitude they don't believe till after the Day of Judgment. For the reſt they follow the Opinion of the *Monothelites*, that there is but one Nature in Chriſt. The *Maronites* had united themſelves 400 Years ago with the See of *Rome*; but when *Saladyn* King of *Egypt* and *Syria* did conquer thoſe Parts, the *Maronites* relinquiſh'd the *Roman* Communion, till they were reunited to them a ſecond time under *Gregory* XIII. and *Clement* VIII. Of the S. *Thomas* Chriſtians we have ſpoken before.

The Mount Libanus *inhabited by the* Maronites.

See Will. Tyrius de Bel. Sacr. *l.* 22. *c.* 8.

Among all theſe *Eaſtern* Sects, there are few who teach any Points contrary to Salvation, except thoſe of *Neſtorius* and *Eutyches*; for they execrate the Adoration of Images, reject Purgatory, allow Marriage to the Clergy, adminiſter the Sacrament to the Laity in both kinds, deny Tranſubſtantiation, and don't acknowledg the Juriſdiction of the See of *Rome*.

Baldæus.

Maffæus relates, that the Patriarch of the *Abyſſines* being deſired by their King to diſpute with the Jeſuit *Roterigio*, told the King, That *he would not enter into Diſpute with an Heretick*, and charged the King, under pain of Eternal Damnation, not to read their Writings. It is beyond all diſpute, that the *Coptes* avoid the *Latin* Church as much as the *Jews*. Cardinal *Baronius* tells us indeed, that *Marcus* Patriarch of *Alexandria*, did ſend his Deputies to Pope *Clement* VIII. in order to ſubject himſelf and all *Egypt* to the Papal Chair; but the ſame proved abortive, and proved no more than a Complement in the end. See *Thomas* a Jeſuit, *l.* 7. *c.* 6. Whence it is evident, that ſetting aſide the Doctrine of the Holy Ghoſt proceeding from the Father only, they are ſubject to not near ſo many Errors as the *Roman* Catholicks.

The Eaſtern Churches deny the Supremacy of the Roman See. *The* Greeks *uſed always five days before Eaſter to excommunicate the Pope.*

The *Eaſtern* Chriſtians exerciſe their Religious Worſhip in different Languages: Some are of opinion that all the Primitive Chriſtians, for 120 Years after Chriſt's Nativity, *viz.* till the Reign of *Hadrianus* the Emperor, uſed only one Language, *viz.* the *Hebrew*, but without any certainty: Certain it is, that the *Armenians* have a Tranſlation of the Bible into their own Language; which by ſome is attributed to *Chryſoſtom* while in exile. *Alvares* affirms that the *Abyſſines* have tranſlated the Bible in their own Language, and ſo have the *Ruſſians*, or *Muſcovites*, contrary to what is practiſed by the *Romans*; for Pope *Pius* IV. put the Bible among the prohibited Books. And *Eraſmus* in his Letter to *Charles Utenhofer* tells him, that *Lewis Berquin* was 1529. burnt at *Paris*, for no other reaſon, but his having aſſerted, that the *Bible might be tranſlated into the Vulgar Tongue, and read by the common People*; notwithſtanding St. *Jerom* and *Chryſoſtom* had employed themſelves in the Work.

In what Language the Chriſtians worſhip God.

The other *Eaſtern* Chriſtians perform their Religious Service in the *Greek*, *Latin*, and *Chaldean* Languages; and uſe divers Liturgies, as thoſe compoſed by *Petrus*, *Jacobus*, *Sixtus*, &c. Whence it is evident that it would be no very difficult task, to ſettle a good mutual Correſpondence betwixt them and the Proteſtant Churches of *Europe*, which has

Baldæus. been too much neglected hitherto, tho we have had ſeveral opportunities given us by the *Eaſtern* Chriſtians to embrace ſo uſeful a Deſign. Thus (as *Camerarius* tells us) the *Greeks* of *Conſtantinople* did encourage the *Bohemians* and *Huſſites* againſt the *Roman Catholicks*. *Joſeph* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, ſent one *Demetrius* a Deacon to *Wittembergh*, to confer with the Divines there concerning an Union, who carried a *Greek* Copy of the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion back with him to *Conſtantinople*. At the Synod of *Thorn* in *Poland* 1595. certain Deputies ſent by the *Greek* Chriſtians appeared to exhort to a Unity, and endeavour a Reconciliation betwixt the *Calviniſts* and *Lutherans*. And in the Year 1616. *Cyril* Patriarch of *Alexandria*, ſent one of his Prieſts to *George Abbot* the famous Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, in order to have him inſtructed in the Univerſity of *Oxford* in the true Principles of the Proteſtant Churches. Neither ought we to paſs by in ſilence the Confeſſion of *Cyril* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, of his adhering to the Doctrine of *Calvin*, which drew upon him the hatred of the *Jeſuits*, who could not reſt ſatisfy'd till they had underhand procured his Death 1638.

A Correſpondence with the Eaſtern Chriſtians neceſſary.

His Letter, writ upon that Subject to a certain Friend of his, and preſerved by the Learned *Andrew Rivet*, is as follows.

" PErcio ho voluto ſcriver a V. R. e
" proteſtarvi che mi ſiate teſtimo-
" nio ſe jo more, que jo more *Catholico*
" *Orthodoxo*, nella fede del N. S. *Jeſu*
" *Chriſto* nella dottrina Evangelica con-
" forme la *Confeſſione Belgica* la confeſſio-
" ne mia e le altra delle chieſe Evangelice
" che ſoni tutti conformi. Abhorriſco
" li errori delli *Papiſti*, e le ſuperſtitio-
" ne delli *Greci*, provo e abraccio la dot-
" trina del dottore meritiſſimo *Giovanni*
" *Calvino* e de tutti che ſentono con lui,
" in queſto voglio che mi ſiate teſtimo-
" nio, per che con ſincera conſcienza coſi
" tengo, coſi profeſſo e confeſſo como
" anco la mia confeſſione moſtra, e re-
" commando a vos queſto depoſito, caſo
" che morſi, di farne partecipi Tutti li
" fratelli Chriſtiani Orthodoxi: e mi re-
" commando alle preghiere di V. R. Al-
" li 15. 25. Marzo.

Cyrillo Patriarcha di Conſtantinopoli.

*

Which tranſlated into *Engliſh* runs thus:

" Therefore I was willing to declare *Letter of the Patriarch of Conſtantinople.*
" to you, and deſire you to be my Wit-
" neſs, that in caſe I die an *Orthodox Ca-*
" *tholick*, and in the Purity of the Faith
" taught by *Jeſus Chriſt*, agreeable to the
" *Confeſſion* of Faith of the Church of
" the *United Provinces*, mine being alto-
" gether the ſame with theirs, and with
" the other Evangelical Churches. I
" abhor the Errors of the *Roman* Church,
" and the Superſtitions of the *Greek*, but
" approve and embrace the Doctrine of
" the moſt Worthy *John Calvin*, and of
" all thoſe that have the ſame Senti-
" ments with him. I call you to witneſs,
" that I believe, confeſs, and atteſt
" the ſame by theſe Preſents, recom-
" mending this my Confeſſion to your
" care, in order to communicate the
" ſame (in caſe of my Death) to all
" truly believing Brethren, and my ſelf
" to your Prayers.

The 15/25. *March.*

Cyril Patriarch of *Conſtantinople.*

As the preceding Letter is a convincing Proof of the ſtedfaſtneſs of *Cyril*, in his adhering to the Doctrine of *Calvin*; ſo out of what hath been ſaid before, it is evident that moſt of the *Eaſtern* Chriſtians have an averſion to the *Roman* Religion. And I remember that *Benjamin* the *Jew* in his Travels, makes the ſame Obſervation in particular, in reſpect of the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*. In the Year 1664. being at *Cochin*, I addreſſed my ſelf to Mr. *Jacob Huſtart* our General, to grant leave to the Arch-Deacon, or Chief of the Chriſtians of S. *Thomas* in Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, to come thither, in order to have a free Conference with him: Which being readily granted, he ſent his Letter to the Arch-Deacon for that purpoſe; but he excuſed himſelf, alledging (and not without reaſon) that we having given ſo extraordinary a Reception to the *Roman* Biſhop, *Joſeph de Sancta Maria*, he could not appear in Perſon among us, without his Prejudice, to my great Diſſatisfaction, being extremely ſorry it was not in my power to perform my Promiſe made in my Letters to the States General 1662. And upon this occaſion I can't, without praiſe, mention the generous Zeal of the States General, who at their own Charge did order

order to have the New Teſtament and our Catechiſm tranſlated into the Tongue uſed among the Modern *Greek* Chriſtians, the ſame being very different from the antient *Greek* Language. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. XXI.

A Deſcription of the Kingdom of Percatti, *and* Calecoulang. Coulang *twice taken by the* Hollanders. *The nature and manner of living of the* Nairos. *The* Paruas *made Chriſtians. Extraordinary Zeal of Don* John *King of* Portugal.

The Kingdom of Perca. THE Kingdom of *Percatti* (call'd by ſome *Porca*) begins about four or five Leagues to the South of *Cochin*, and extends to *Coulang*, its whole length being about 12 Leagues.

The Dutch treat with that King. In the Year 1642. the *Dutch* appear'd the firſt time in this Place, and treated with the then King of *Siam*, *Baatchery Vaubaar* (who was not above 23 Years of Age) concerning a free Trade with Pepper. Which the King was very glad to accept of, being three Years paſt engaged in a War with the *Portugueſes*, who had ſeized upon part of his Dominions, and would have erected ſome Fortifications there. He delivered to our Deputys a ſealed Letter, directed to the General and *Great Council* of the *Indies*, in which he requeſted, that we would at leaſt once a Year ſend thither a Ship freighted with ſuch Commodities, as before that time uſed to be carried to *Cananor* and *Calecut*; whereupon an Interpreter was ſent aboard the next day, to deſire a Paſſport from his Majeſty for ſuch of our Ships as paſs'd that way; which was granted.

The King who reign'd here 1664. of whom Mr. *Jacob Huſtart* and I had Audience at that time, was about 24 Years old; a very active and well-limb'd Perſon; his Hands, Feet, and Ears, adorn'd with Jewels of a great value. Formerly they uſed to tranſport their Pepper from hence to *Mocha*; but ſince that time the *Engliſh* have traffick'd there in that Commodity, who had their Factory juſt upon the Sea-ſhore. The greateſt Strength of this King conſiſts in about 500 ſmall Galleys, wherewith in the rainy Seaſon, when the Rice-fields lie under Water, he uſed to make his Excurſions from the utmoſt Point of the Cape of *Comoryn* as far as *Panane*, and eſpecially to annoy the King of *Cochin*. He proved a troubleſome Neighbour to the *Dutch* Company, till by the Terror of their Arms they brought him to ſubmiſſion, having in the Siege of *Cochin* ſided with the *Portugueſes* againſt us.

Factory of the Engliſh.

Deeper into the Country live abundance of Chriſtians converted by the *Portugueſes*: They get their Livelyhood by managing and gathering the Pepper, which they are obliged to ſell to the King's Factor, a *Brahman*.

The Air unwholeſom. The Air of this Country being accounted extremely unwholeſom; hence it is, that moſt of the Inhabitants are troubled with ſwell'd Legs, the Cauſe whereof they attribute to the Nitrous Water, which they uſe for their common Drink; Blindneſs is alſo an ordinary Diſtemper here. For the reſt, the Ground is exceeding fertile, and very fit for Tillage, ſo that moſt of the Inhabitants live upon Husbandry, eſpecially of Rice.

Calecoulang. The next adjoining Kingdom is that of *Calecoulang*, of no great extent; here the *Dutch* Company has had their Factory many years ago, which uſed to buy up a great quantity of Pepper in theſe parts.

Coulang. The leaſt among the *Malabar* Kingdoms is that of *Coulang*, extending to the utmoſt Point of the Cape *Comoryn*, about 15 or 16 Leagues in length. The City of *Coulang* was firſt built by the *Portugueſes*, being much of the ſame bigneſs as *Puntegale* in the Iſle of *Ceylon*; having no leſs than ſeven Churches, ſome very good Houſes, and many thouſands of Trees, eſpecially towards the Sea-ſide. This City is reckon'd one of the wholeſomeſt on the whole Coaſt of *Malabar* by reaſon of its pure Air, and moſt excellent Springs. The *Portugueſes* at their firſt coming erected only a ſtrong Houſe, defend to themſelves in caſe of neceſſity againſt the Inhabitants; notwithſtanding which, they were at a certain time ſurpriz'd by them, and cut all to pieces; which Barbarity was afterwards reveng'd by *Laurence Almeyda* Son to *Franciſcus Almeyda*, who burnt 20 of their Ships richly loaden. *The Air very wholeſom.*

Baldæus. In the year 1503. one Brother *Rhoteric* a *Dominican* Frier, coming into these parts to propagate the Gospel, did convert many of the Pagans, and incouraged the Christians of St. *Thomas* inhabiting here to persevere in their Faith.

The Inhabitants treacherous. The Inhabitants are generally very barbarous and treacherous, of which they have given several times sufficient Proofs to the *Dutch*. At a certain time they assaulted the City by night, and had almost carried it by Surprize; and at another time Capt. *Henry Gluwing* taking the fresh Air with some Officers without the Gate, were treacherously murder'd by them.

A Pagan Temple plunder'd by the Portugueses in time of Peace. In the time of the *Portugueses* there stood a certain *Pagode* about four Leagues without the City, famous for its Riches throughout the *Indies*, which induced *Sosa* to plunder it, notwithstanding there was then a Peace betwixt them and the *Portugueses*. The *Nairos* reveng'd the Loss by killing about 30 of the *Portugueses*; and *Sosa* having sent a large Vessel full of *Fanams* (their Coin) to *John* King of *Portugal*, the same was by the advice of the Pope sent back to the King of *Coulang*, by whom it was placed again in the said *Pagode*.

The Dutch *besiege* Coulang *a second time, having left it before.* In the year 1661. when the *Hollanders* came to these parts to besiege the City of *Coulang*, they were forc'd to have three smart Engagements with the *Nairos*, who to the number of 7000 or 8000 Men, arm'd with Scymeters and Musquets, and being intoxicated with Opium, fell upon them like desperate Men; in which Action Mr. *Dublet* our under-Factor lost his Life.

The Nairos. And upon this occasion we ought not to pass by the *Nairos*. These are the Gentlemen of *Malabar*, descended for the most part either from Royal Families, or *Brahmans*, and are for that reason exceedingly haughty, proud and bold: If they meet any of the common People in the Street, they cry out, *Po, Po*, i. e. *Give way, Give way*. They seldom appear without their Scymeters and Shields, which they leave at the door when (by a peculiar Privilege) they go to give a private Visit to one of their Neighbours Wives, as a sign that no body must enter there in the mean while to disturb them. They are all bred to the War, even from the seventh year of Age, when they begin to anoint their Limbs with certain Ointments to render the Nerves pliable, which makes them very active and nimble, and the best Wrestlers in the World. They are not only well acquainted with the use of Bows and Arrows, but also with Musquets and great Cannon; for I have seen them give a Salvo with the same order and dexterity as our best disciplin'd Troops in *Europe*; and they are of late years arriv'd to that Perfection, that they make their own Gun-barrels, Gun-powder and Matches. They commonly engage naked, having only a piece of Stuff wrapt about the middle: Being very nimble they often turn their Backs, but soon return to the Charge, when they find the least opportunity of having an advantage against their Enemies. On the Hilts of their Swords they wear certain pieces of Metal, which making a noise as they move, serves them for a certain Musick: They are very dexterous in defending their Bodies with their Shields, and consequently are better at handy Blows than at firing, for they commonly fire too high. Among the *Nairos* those who call themselves *Amok* are the worst, being a Company of Desperadoes, who engage themselves and their Families by Oaths to revenge such Injuries as are done them. They are often seen at *Batavia*. The Power of the Kings of *Malabar* is generally esteem'd by the number of the *Nairos* under their Jurisdiction. If any of their Kings should be murder'd, they would sacrifice all to revenge his Death. As they are naturally fierce and addicted to all manner of Lust and Pride, so they are declar'd Enemies of the Christians.

The Amok.

Scarce were the *Dutch* Masters of *Coulang*, but their Fleet consisting of 23 Ships great and small, were surpriz'd by so violent a Tempest (which lasted three days) that they thought to have been all lost, as lying at Anchor under a low Shore, and therefore expos'd to the utmost fury of the Winds. The Ships Names were, the *Vlieland*, *Seahorse*, *Haddock*, *Bantam*, *Flushing*, *Marygold flower*, *Cat*, *Tertolen*, *Red Lion*, *Erasmus*, *Sluyce*, *Achilles*, the *Romer*, *Flower-Valley*, *Walnut-Tree*, the *House of Swieten*, the *Elburgh*, *Stadthouse of Amsterdam*, and the *Exchange of Amsterdam*, the four last being lately come from *Holland* freighted with Provisions, such as Meal, Bacon, Cheese, Wine, Oil and Mum, besides a good number of Land-men, many whereof were ill of the bloody Flux. During this Storm we sent our fervent and constant Prayers up to Heaven for the delivery of our Fleet, on which depended all our Safety; for the *Stadthouse of Amsterdam* was in such distress, that she gave one signal after another for Relief,

The Dutch *Fleet in great danger of being lost.*

lief, having above ſix foot Water; the *Eraſmus* had loſt all her Anchors, but by good fortune got clear of the Sands; the *Sea-horſe* had taken fire, but was ſoon extinguiſh'd, ſo that we came off with the loſs of three Sloops only. The fury of the Tempeſt beginning to allay on the third day, juſt at the very time when we were coming from Prayers out of the Church, and by midnight the ſame being quite ceaſed, a ſolemn Thankſgiving was order'd to be kept the 23d of *Novemb.* 1661. when I preach'd upon the Text of *Pſal.* 66. 12. By this time it being judged fit for our Fleet to depart, a convenient Gariſon was left in the place under Capt. *Kocks* and Mr. *Nyhof*, for the defence of the Fortifications of the City, which were lately made of Earth.

The Fleet ſails for Cochin.

The Kingdom of Trevancor.

The Kingdom of *Trevancor* borders upon that of *Coulang*: All along the Sea-ſhore inhabite the *Paruas*, who being for the moſt part Chriſtians, you ſee the Shore all along as far as *Comoryn*, and even beyond it to *Tutecoryn*, full of little Churches, ſome of Wood, others of Stone. Theſe People owe their Converſion to *Franciſcus Xaverius*, he being the firſt who planted the Principles of Chriſtianity among them; they being ſo much taken with the reaſonableneſs of the Ten Commandments, that they receiv'd Baptiſm in great numbers, tho an accidental Quarrel betwixt a *Paruas* and a *Mahometan* prov'd a ſtrong Motive to their Converſion: whence it is that *John de Lucena* ſays, *As the Differences ariſen betwixt the* Jews *and the* Egyptians, *prov'd the means of the delivery of the People of God, and of the recovery of their Spiritual and Temporal Liberty; ſo by God's Direction a Quarrel which happen'd betwixt a* Paruas *and a* Mahometan, *prov'd the delivery of the firſt from their Spiritual and Temporal Slavery.*

Converſion of the Paruas.

The *Paruas* being ſorely oppreſs'd by the *Mahometans*, one *John de Crus*, a Native of *Malabar*, but who had been in *Portugal*, and honourably treated by *John* the then King of *Portugal*, adviſed them to ſeek for Aid at *Cochin* againſt the *Moors*, and to receive Baptiſm. Accordingly ſome of the chief Men among them (call'd *Patangatys* in their Language) were ſent upon that Errand to *Cochin*, where being kindly receiv'd, they (in honour of him who had given this Advice) took upon them the Sirname of *Crus*, a Name ſtill retain'd by moſt Perſons of Note among the *Paruas*. In ſhort, being deliver'd from the *Mooriſh* Yoke, and the Pearl-fiſhery (which formerly belong'd to them) reſtor'd to the right Owners, above 20000 of them receiv'd Baptiſm. *Baldæus.*

But tho they were baptiz'd, moſt of them being deficient in the knowledg of the true Fundamentals of the Chriſtian Religion for want of Teachers, they had in a little time ſcarce any marks of Chriſtianity left among them except the Ceremony of Baptiſm; as *Maffæus*, *John de Lucena*, and *Michael Vas* in his Speech to *Franciſcus Xaverius* ſufficiently teſtify. For the *Portugueſes* being too eager in baptizing theſe People, provided they could ſay by heart the *Creed*, *Our Father*, and *Avemary*, and being unprovided with Teachers to inſtruct them, they ſoon return'd to Paganiſm; ſo that upon this ſcore the *Romiſh* Prieſts need not talk ſo big as they often do.

John the then King of *Portugal* being ſenſible of this defect, did all that in him lay to remedy this Evil, by ſending divers young Scholars to the Univerſities of *Salamanca*, *Paris* and *Conimbria*, to be educated and fitted for the Miſſions into the *Indies*. About the ſame time *Ignatius Loyola*, the Founder of the Jeſuits Order, began to be famous at *Rome*, for having with his Society made a Vow to preach the Goſpel throughout the World: Whereupon the King of *Portugal* order'd *Peter Maſcarenhas* his Ambaſſador there, to confer upon that Head with *Ignatius*, and to deſire ſix Miſſionaries for the *Eaſt-Indies*; two being only granted, *Simon Roterigius* a *Portugueſe* (who had ſtudied at *Paris* at the King's Charge) and *Franciſcus Aſpilcota*, *Navarrus*, ſirnamed *Xaverius*, were ſelected for that purpoſe; but the firſt being ſeized by a Quartan Ague, and forc'd to ſtay at *Lisbon*, *Xaverius* (after having receiv'd Pope *Paul*'s Benediction) ſet out 1540. for the *Indies*. *One of the King of Portugal for their Converſion.* *Xaverius goes to the Indies.*

He was no ſooner come thither, but having underſtood the deplorable State of the *Paruas* from the mouth of *Michael Vas*, he did not reſt ſatisfied till he might deliver them out of their Darkneſs: For this purpoſe having had ſeveral Conferences with *John Albuquerque* Biſhop of *Goa*, and *Martin Alphonſo de Souſa* the Viceroy, he obtain'd leave to go among them; for tho he appear'd there in the quality of the Apoſtolical Nuncio, yet would he pay his due Reſpects to the Civil Government.

He left *Goa* in the beginning of *November* 1542. in Company of *Franciſcus du Mancias*, and two young Interpreters educa- *Comes among the Paruas.*

educated in the College of St. *Paul*; and coming among the *Paruas*, apply'd all his care in having the chief Fundamentals of the Chriſtian Religion tranſlated into the *Malabar* Language, or in inſtructing the School-maſters in the right way of educating their Youth. ¶ For the reſt, with what Zeal *John* King of *Portugal* proſecuted the Propagation of the Chriſtian Religion in the *Indies*, will beſt appear out of his Letter written 1546. to *Don John de Caſtro* his Viceroy of the *Indies*, as follows. *Baldæus.*

To John de Caſtro *Viceroy of* India, *all Happineſs:*

John *King of* Portugal's *Letter.*

"YOU knowing what an abominable thing Idolatry is in our Eyes, the ſame ſhall for the future not be tolerated in my Dominions. Being inform'd that in the Country about *Goa* the Pagan Temples are ſuffer'd and frequented both in publick and private, as well as divers ſorts of Pagan Diverſions, we command you once for all to have the ſame demoliſh'd, burnt and rooted out; and that all imaginable care be taken to prevent the Importation of Idols, either of Wood, Metal, Earth, or any other Matter. The Heatheniſh Sports ſhall be aboliſh'd, and the *Brahmans* not in the leaſt encouraged, and ſuch as contravene this our Mandat ſhall be ſeverely puniſh'd. And, conſidering that the Pagans may be brought over to our Religion, not only by the hopes of Eternal Salvation, but alſo by Temporal Intereſt and Preferments, you ſhall for the future not beſtow any Offices, or any other Places in the Cuſtom-houſe (as has been practis'd hitherto) upon the Heathens, but only upon the Chriſtians. We underſtand alſo that you commonly preſs the *Indians* for our Sea-ſervice; in which caſe we would have you ſhew as much Favour as you can to the Chriſtians, and, if neceſſity will not allow you to excuſe them from that Service, to encourage them with good Pay and Rewards: In which Point you ſhall conſult with *Michael Vas*, a Perſon well known to us for his Piety and Zeal in propagating the Chriſtian Religion. Being further inform'd, that oftentimes Negro Slaves that might be inſtructed in the Principles of our Religion, are for filthy lucres ſake ſold to the *Mahometans*, the ſame ſhall be ſtrictly prohibited, and care taken againſt all manner of Uſury. In the City of *Bazain* you ſhall build a Church, and dedicate it to St. *Joſeph*, and provide for the Subſiſtence of the Vicar and his Aſſiſtants; to accompliſh which you may employ ſomething out of our Revenues, and the 3000 *Pardaus* formerly employ'd to the maintenance of the *Mahometan* Moſque and their Service, ſhall for the future be allotted for the Subſiſtence of the Prieſts, and ſuch other Perſons as give a helping hand towards the Converſion of the Infidels. Among the new Converts, or all ſuch as have hitherto, or for the future may be brought over to the Chriſtian Religion, by the care of *Michael Vas*, you ſhall diſtribute yearly 900 Quarters of Rice, out of our Revenue: It being our Will, that all the Agreements made with the Chriſtians of S. *Thomas*, concerning the Weight, Meaſures, and Price of their Commodities, ſhall be inviolably obſerved. And underſtanding nevertheleſs that the contrary is practiſed in and about *Cochin*, in the Pepper-Trade, we command you to aſſiſt theſe Chriſtians, and to take effectual care they may not be damnified, but treated with all mildneſs as becomes Chriſtians. You ſhall alſo ſollicite the King of *Cochin*, not to permit any Sorcery or ſuch like things to be tranſacted, by the Sale of Pepper; and being inform'd that the ſaid King bereaves ſuch of his Subjects as embrace Chriſtianity, of all their means, you ſhall earneſtly intercede with him on their behalf, and we will alſo write to him for that purpoſe. We could wiſh heartily, that the Buſineſs of *Socotora* (which you have recommended to our care in your Letter) might be ſettled ſo as to deliver thoſe miſerable People out of their Slavery, provided the ſame could be done without exaſperating the *Grand Seignior*, under whoſe Juriſdiction they live. You may upon this Head conſult with *Michael Vas*, and act in the matter according to your diſcretion. It being alſo come to our Ears, that the *Paruas* are ſometimes but very indifferently uſed by our Officers, who force them to ſell their Pearls (got by fiſhing or diving) at what rate they pleaſe to take them; this you ſhall not allow of, but permit them to diſpoſe of their Commodities at the beſt Price they can get. You ſhall make an exact Inquiry, whether the Inhabitants of the Sea-ſhoar might

not

" not be protected, and our Revenues " secured without a Fleet, ſo that the " Ships employed in that Service might " be made uſe of upon other occaſions. " You ſhall conſult and debate with *Fran-* " *ciſcus Xaverius*, whether it were not " practicable for the better increaſe of " the Chriſtians, that the Pearl-fiſhery " might be permitted only to the Chriſti- " ans, with excluſion of the *Mahome-* " *tans* and *Pagans*: and as many among
Extraordinary Care of the Paruas. " the *Paruas*, who have embraced Chriſ- " tianity, meet with very ill Treatment " from their *Pagan* Friends and Relati- " ons, and are deſpoil'd of all; theſe you " ſhall aſſiſt out of our Revenues, ac- " cording as *Michael Vas* ſhall judg it " convenient.

" We have further underſtood that a " certain Royal Youth has eſcaped from " his Father or Uncle to *Goa*, in order to " be baptized; as his Converſion is of " great moment, ſo you ſhall be very " careful of his Perſon, and of his In- " ſtruction and Education in the College " of S. *Paul*, and provide for his Enter- " tainment in Clothes, Attendance and " other matters, ſutable to his Quality. " He having notified to us in his Letter, " that he is the legal Heir of the Crown " of *Ceylon*; you ſhall make due Enqui- " ry after that matter, and write to us " your Sentiment thereof. The furious " Attempts of the Tyrant of *Ceylon* a- " gainſt ſuch of his Subjects as embrace " Chriſtianity, oblige us to command " you, to take a ſlow and ſecure, but a " ſevere Revenge of him, to let the " World ſee, that we are ready to give " all imaginable Protection to thoſe poor " Creatures, who have renounced their " Pagan and Diabolical Idolatries. It " being a general Rumour here, that the " Images of our Saviour and the Virgin *Baldæus.* " *Mary* are made and ſold by the *Pagans*, " a thing unſeemly and unbecoming the " Chriſtian Name, the ſame ought not " to be allowed of. The Cathedral " Churches of *Cochin* and *Coulang*, which " have been building for a conſiderable " time, being (as we hear) going to de- " cay, we command to be finiſhed, and " covered with a good Roof, to keep " out the Rains. It is alſo our Pleaſure, " that a Church dedicated to S. *Thomas* " ſhall be built in the Street of *Noroa*, " and that the Church of St. *Cruz*, late- " ly begun to be built at *Calapor*, ſhall be " brought to perfection. In the Iſle of " *Ciovan*, you ſhall order a Church and " ſome Meeting-Houſes to be built, for " the conveniency of the new Converts " to be catechized in, and to be inſtruc- " ted in the Word of God. We could " alſo wiſh with all our Heart, that Ido- " latry might be baniſhed out of *Salſete* " and *Bardes*; but in this matter you " muſt proceed with Caution, for fear of " exaſperating the Minds of the People; " which End may be moſt conveniently " obtained, by ſhewing them with all " imaginable Mildneſs, their groſs Er- " rors, and how inſtead of the true God " they pay their Devotion to inſenſible " Images and Idols. For the ſame rea- " ſon you ſhall not neglect to confer with " their Principal Men upon this Head, " and to encourage ſuch as embrace " Chriſtianity by your Favour, Preſents, " and otherwiſe. It is our Will, that a " peculiar regard ſhall be had to this our " Letter, and the Contents thereof punc- " tually obſerved.

CHAP. XXII.

A Deſcription of Tutecoryn *and the Pearl fiſhery. That City taken by the* Hollanders. *The Iſle of* Rammanakoyel, Adams-*Bridg*; *the Shape of his Foot imprinted in a Stone.* Tindi. *The taking of* Negapatan, *which is beſieged by the* Naike, *reduced to great Extremity by Famine; once more attacked and maintained.*

The Paruas are now very obſtinate in the Romiſh Superſtitions.

THE *Paruas* ever ſince this Union with the *Romiſh* Church, are ſuch Zealots in that Religion, that there are ſcarce any hopes of ever bringing them over to our ſide; their Ignorance in Religious Concerns being ſuch, that beſides the uſe of their Beads, and making the Sign of the Croſs, they know nothing of the true Fundamentals of the Chriſtian Religion they pretend to profeſs. In the Year 1661. I was ordered to take a Journy from *Tutecoryn* to *Coulang*, to viſit the Churches along the Sea-ſhore, and endeavour to introduce a Reformation there; but my endeavours proved ineffectual by reaſon of the great number

of

of Popiſh Prieſts yet remaining in that Country; and ſuppoſing a Reformation could have been introduced, there were no Miniſters to maintain it in ſo large a Tract of Land, where the *Paruas* were for the moſt part great Favourers of the *Portugueſes*, and blind Zealots in their Religion, of which I had ſufficient Proofs before at *Tutecoryn*. For the *Dutch* being become Maſters of that Place, 1658. I was ſoon after employed in the buſineſs of Reformation, but without Succeſs; for when I preach'd in *Portugueſe*, ſcarce any one of the *Paruas* durſt enter into the Church, but remained in the Porch, for fear of the *Romiſh* Prieſts living among them; for tho theſe Prieſts did not then live in the City, nevertheleſs the Inhabitants would carry their Children a great way into the Country, to be baptized by the Prieſts.

Baldæus.

Blind Zeal of the Paruas.

I remember that paſſing one time thro the Market-place of *Tutecoryn*, a great number of People, at the accidental ringing of a Bell, proſtrated themſelves upon the Ground, whom I ask'd whether they thought this a fit place for their Devotion, when the Church was ſo near at hand, deſiring them to follow me thither; they anſwered, that ſince the Church was deſpoil'd of the Images and other Ornaments by us, they muſt look upon us as Enemies to their Religion. I replied, that we were no Enemies of Images, but only of the worſhipping of them, as appeared by ſeveral Hiſtories of the Baptiſm of our Saviour, the Converſion of S. *Paul* and others, remaining in the Churches: To be ſhort, I found that the whole knowledg of the *Paruas* (both young and old) conſiſted in being able to ſay by Heart the *Creed*, *Our Father*, the *Ten Commandments*, and the *Ave Mary*.

Fereira employed in reforming the Paruas.

After my Departure the Reverend Mr. *John Fereira Almeyda* a Native of *Lisbon*, was for a whole Year employed in the Reformationof the *Paruas*, but with leſs Succeſs than my ſelf, they having conceived an *Odium* againſt him, as one who had quitted that Religion, and whoſe *Effigies* upon that ſcore was burnt at *Goa*.

Tutecoryn taken by the Dutch.

In the Year 1658 in *Jan.* we ſet ſail from *Negumbo*, and in the beginning of *Febr.* landed near *Tutecoryn*, after ſome reſiſtance from the Natives, who ſet the City and their ſmall Galleys on fire, and ſo retired deeper into the Country. *Tutecoryn* is properly no more than a large Village without Walls, Ditches, or Gates; it has three ſpacious Churches, and abundance of goodly Houſes built of Stone, which afford a good Proſpect at Sea. Hereabouts they make the beſt Lime in *India*. The *Dutch* Company has been ſeveral times endeavouring to erect ſome Fortifications here; but the *Naike*, or Lord of the Country, not willing to conſent to it, they have hitherto been contented with a Factory in one of the three Churches; where always reſides a Factor and Under-Factor, with three Aſſiſtants, and ſix or eight Soldiers.

The Pearl-fiſhery.

Near this Place is the famous Pearl-Fiſhery, whereof there are no more than three in the Eaſt, *viz.* one near *Ormus*, the ſecond in the Bay of *Ainam* on the *Chineſe* Coaſt, and the third in the Bay betwixt Cape *Comoryn* and the Iſle of *Ceylon*, wherein are alſo comprehended *Manaar* and *Aripou*. The Pearls are found in certain Oyſter Shells (which are not good to eat) and are taken by diving 7, 8, 9, or 10 Fathom deep, ſometimes not without great danger. The Pearl-Fiſhery is not allowed every Year, ſometimes the Oyſter-banks being cover'd with Sand, and ſometimes the Oyſters not being come to their full Maturity. To make a Trial of the laſt, they take out a few, and by the quantity and quality of the Pearls taken in them, judg whether it will quit coſt to fiſh or not. If the Fiſhing be reſolved upon, the Inhabitants of the circumjacent Parts come in great Numbers with their Families and Boats, and pitch their Tents near the Seaſide, where they remain until the Fiſhery is over. The *Dutch* Company has a certain ſhare in what is taken for their Protection, the reſt being ſold publickly in the Markets of *Tutecoryn* and *Calipatnam*. The *Paruas* alſo dive ſometimes for certain hours for a kind of Sea-Snails called *Chancos*, whereof they make Rings, that bear a good Price at *Bengale*.

The Paruas tho Chriſtians, never dive before they have made certain Conjurations to prevent their being hurt by the Sharks.

The Pearls of *Tutecoryn* and *Manaar* are neither in colour nor brightneſs comparable to thoſe taken near *Ormus* on the *Perſian* Coaſt. The Pearls are queſtionleſs nouriſhed both by the Sea and River Water, as being often found at the time of low Tides in the Rivers. Abundance of Pearl Duſt is from hence tranſported into *Europe*, where it is uſed in the Cordial Medicines. The large Pearls are valued according to their bigneſs, ſhape and whiteneſs. Much Cloth is made at *Tutecoryn*, the Weaving-Trade being very conſiderable here, which together with the plenty of Eatables, Rice, Sugar, *&c.* makes this Place to be much regarded by the Company.

This

The Climate of Tutecoryn.

This Tract of Land is ſubject to moſt furious Winds in *October*, *November* and *December*; and in the Winter Seaſons to ſudden and heavy Rains. It is very ſandy near the Sea-ſhore, and has nothing but Salt-water, which produces Scabs and other cutaneous Diſtempers, as I can teſtify by my own Experience. During the Months of *January*, *February* and *March*, the Nights are extremely cold, by reaſon of the thick Fogs which fall conſtantly at that time, the Days being at the ſame time ſo exceſſive hot, that there is no touching of the Ground without their Shoos, called *Seripous* by the Inhabitants.

Different Seaſons on the North and South-ſide of the Mountains

And upon this occaſion I can't paſs by without making this Obſervation, that notwithſtanding the nearneſs of *Tutecoryn* and *Comoryn*, they at the ſame time have very different Seaſons: For in *April*, *May*, *June*, *July*, *Auguſt* and *September*, thoſe inhabiting on the *South-ſide* of the ſaid Cape, enjoy all the Bleſſings of the Summer Seaſon, whilſt thoſe living on the *North-ſide* are at the ſame time ſubject to all the inconveniences of the Winter: This ſide being then conſtantly peſtred with tempeſtuous Winds, whilſt on the other ſide the Air is ſerene and calm; the difference of which muſt needs be look'd for among the Mountains, the receptacles of Winds, Rains and Snow, the ſame being obſerved in other Parts of the *Indies*, as well as in *Africa*. For if *Africa* were not mountainous, it would be altogether barren and uninhabitable, no more than the Countries under the *Torrid Zone*, which if they were deſtitute of Mountains, would alſo want Rivers (the ſources of them being all in the Mountains) nor hard Rains. Thus it is obſervable, that about *Columbo*, *Gale*, and *Mature*, abundance of Rains fall at different times, becauſe that part of the Iſle of *Ceylon* is mountainous; whereas near *Manaar*, *Jafnapatnam* and the other Places, where there is a flat Country, it rains only in *October*, *November*, and a little in *December*, all the reſt of the Year being without the leaſt Rains, the defect whereof is however ſupplied in ſome meaſure by the Fogs or Dew; the South Winds, which blow then from the Cape of *Comoryn*, prevent the Rains on that ſide. The Inhabitants of *Peru* are very ſenſible of this difference; for whilſt the Inhabitants of the Mountains are often rejoiced with ſudden Showers of Rain, thoſe of the flat Country, and eſpecially hear the Seaſide, never feel any Rain, but only a thick Fog or Dew.

The Mountains occaſion the difference of Seaſons.

Whence it is evident, that according as the Mountains ſend forth the Winds and Rains on one ſide or the other, they produce the difference of Seaſons in theſe Parts; this is very perſpicuous on the Cape of South Point of *Africa*, where ſuch violent guſhes of Wind are ſometimes ſent forth out of the Concavities of the Mountains, that they are able to overturn all that meets in their way. I remember that travelling once that way, I had enough to do to keep my ſelf and my Horſe upright; and at another time a Coach belonging to the *Dutch* Company there, was overturn'd by ſuch a guſh of Wind. They take it for an infallible Sign of an approaching Tempeſt on the *Cape of Good Hope*, when they ſee thick Clouds appear on the top of *Tabl emaintainand*. The ſame is obſerved in moſt other Mountains under the *Torrid Zone*; for the Inhabitants near the *Equinoctial Line* have their due rainy Seaſons twice a Year, *viz.* in Spring and Autumn, occaſioned by the gathering of the Clouds in the Mountains, the Pinacles of which reaching very high, ſtop the courſe of the Air (which in thoſe Parts moves conſtantly from Eaſt to Weſt) which thereby being condenſed into Clouds, theſe produce of neceſſity either ſudden Winds or Rains on one ſide, and bleſſes the other ſide at the ſame time with a ſerene Air and happy Climate; the tops of theſe Mountains being in theſe Parts like a Partition Wall to Summer and Winter. For the further Elucidation whereof, I will refer my ſelf to the moſt ingenious Lord *Bacon*, and *des Cartes*.

Iſle of Rammanakoyel.

From *Tutecoryn* towards the Iſle of *Rammanakoyel*, are to be ſeen divers Churches of the *Paruas*, as at *Baipaar*, *Manapaar*, &c. where *Xaverius* planted the Chriſtian Doctrine. The Iſle of *Rammanakoyel* abounds in Cattel, having got its Name from *Bramma* or *Ramma*, and the *Malabar* Word *Koyel*, i. e. *The Temple of Ramma*; for near the Sea-ſide is to be ſeen the *Pagode* of the *Teuver*, or Lord of the Iſle, which they ſay contains an incredible Treaſure. The Foundation is ſtrengthened and ſupported with Stones of a vaſt bigneſs towards the Sea-ſide, to break the Force of the raging Waves, when the South Winds blow. The Iſle is however but indifferently fertile, being in ſome Parts very ſandy, which is very troubleſome to the Eyes, when the Winds blow very hard. The Lord of the Iſle has built a ſtrong Caſtle oppoſite to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, and the Country under the

Baldæus. Jurisdiction of the *Naik*. In the Year 1662. I and Lieutenant *Herman Egbertsz* travelling that way, were seized upon by the Inhabitants and committed Prisoners, being forced to live without Victuals or Drink for a considerable time; till a certain Inhabitant of *Manaar* coming that way, and knowing me, released us out of our Captivity. The Cannon of the Castle commands a certain strait Passage, which leading to *Manaar*, *Jafnapatnam* and *Negapatnam*, the same may be stopt at pleasure by the Lord of the Isle, by sinking only a few Stones in the Channel, whereby the Navigation that way is at his absolute disposal.

Strait Passage under the Castle of the Isle.

Adams Bridge.

Not far from hence is that they call *Adams*-Bridge, being a Ridge of Sands and Rocks extending as far as *Manaar*, being sometimes passable in small Boats. In the description of *Ceylon*, we shall have occasion to speak something more of this *Adams*-Bridg, and the *Adams*-Mount. Certain it is, that the *Cingalese* as well as the *Siameses* have some knowledg of *Adam*; for the last shew you the print of a Foot (said to belong to the first Man) in a rocky Mountain of a yard and a half in length, three quarters broad, and a quarter deep, edged round about with Silver, near which is built a most magnificent Temple, much frequented by the *Siamese* Priests, and other Inhabitants of the circumjacent Country; it being their Opinion, that the least drop of the Water gathered in this Print of the Foot, and dropp'd upon their Heads, cleanses them from their Sins: for which reason they never use it without a great deal of Reverence, no body daring to enter the Temple without 10, 12, or more Wax Candles lighted, according to their respective Abilities; and when they return, they take some of this Holy Water along with them in *Bamboe*-Canes, for the use of their Friends, that have not the Opportunity of coming thither in Person. The King himself goes once every Year on Pilgrimage with all his *Mandarins* (or great Courtiers) to this Temple, where they use this Water at the time of the Full Moon, and conclude the Night with dancing and drinking. Some of the *Siamese* Priests did by special leave from his Majesty, shew to certain *Hollanders*, 1654, in *March*, a Plate of Gold, of the same length and breadth as the before-mentioned *Adam's* Foot, with 68 Figures engraven upon it, which they said were formerly to be seen in the print of *Adam's* Foot in the Rock, but vanished as soon as they were engraven in this Plate, and were the following: *A Queen with a Ring on her Finger, divers Roses, a Chain, an Arm, a Bed of Gold, a Chair of the same Metal, an Elephant's Tooth, a Royal Palace, a Golden Sword-belt, an Umbrello, a Royal Hanger or Scimeter, a Fan made of the Leaves of the Terry-tree, a Fan made of a Peacocks Tail, a Royal Crown, a Priest with his mendicant Pot of Iron, a Chain of Precious Stones, a red Cowslip Flower, a double one of the same kind, a white one and a double white one of the same kind, a Cup full of Water, a Pot full of Water, the Sea, the World, a Forest beyond the World, the Purgatory of the* Siamese, *the highest Mountain of the World, the Sun, the Moon, the Evening-Star, the Great God of the Heavens, the God of the four Winds,* 2000 *Servants of the four Winds, a Sea-snail, two Fishes of Gold, the seven chief Rivers, seven Mountains with Precious Stones, seven Royal Ladies, the King of Beasts, the King of the* Caimans *or Crocodiles, an Ensign, another of Paper, a Chair or Litter, a Fan with a long Handle, a Mountain in an Island, the King of Serpents, the King of Tygres, a leaping Horse, a large Elephant, a white one of the same kind, a Water-Serpent, a* Cassuarius (a Bird like an Ostrich) *the King of the white Cows, an Elephant with three Heads and as many Tails, a Serpent, a Ship of Gold, an Angel, a Cow with a sucking Calf, a certain Bird half a Man and half a Bird, a Female of the same sort, a singing Bird, the King of the Peacocks, the King of the Cranes, a Bird called* Krapat, *a Bird called* Kuyshit, *six Heavens, sixteen sorts of Heavens.*

The Figures in Adam's-Foot.

Adam's Foot shewn by the Siameses.

The Holy Water.

Concerning all which the Priests give you their Interpretations. The before-mentioned *Adam*'s-Bridg extends to *Tellemanaar*, the furthermost point of the Isle of *Manaar*, of which more anon in the Description of *Ceylon*.

We will now take our turn in the Southern Parts of *Coromandel*, subject for the most part to the *Naik* of *Madure* and *Tanjouwer*. *Tondy* is the first place next to the Territories of *Jafnapatnam*, and I remember my self, that setting Sail one Morning about 11 a Clock from *Jafnapatnam*, we were within sight of the Shoar by 4 in the Afternoon, and the same Night at 9 a Clock cast Anchor before *Negapatan*. From *Tondy* they transport yearly many hundred Heads of Cattel to *Jafnapatnam*; near the first stands a certain *Pagode*, called *Kailiemeer*, a very high Structure, in the Road to *Negapatan* or *Negapatnam*, i. e. *The City of* Serpents, *Naga* signifying in the *Malabar*

Tondy upon the Coast of Coromandel.

Lan-

MALABAR
CANARA
CUNCAN
Cabo Comoryn
BISNAGAR
Coromandel
NARSINGA
DELI
REG
GOL
CONDA
Golconda
Masulipatam
CEYLON
Orixa
REG
NUM
THE BAY
of
BENGALE
REGIONUM
CHOROMANDEL
GOLCONDA
et
ORIXA
Nova et accurata descriptio
Oriens

Vol. 3. 22 p. 650.
MALABAR
CANARA
CUNCAN
Cabo Comoryn
BISNAGAR
Coromandel
NARSINGA
DELI
REG.
GOLCONDA
Golconda
Masulipatam
CEYLON
Orixa
REG:
NUM.
THE BAY
of
BENGALE
REGIONUM
CHOROMANDEL.
GOLCONDA.
et
ORIXA.
Nova et accurata descriptio.
Occidens
Oriens
Septentrio
Mer. Meridies

Language a Serpent, and *Patnam* a City; becauſe the Country hereabouts abounds with a certain ſort of venomous Serpents, called by the *Cobres Capellos*, which are in ſuch reverence among the *Pagans*, that if they ſhould happen to kill one of them, they will look upon it as an expiable Crime, and to forebode ſome great Misfortune.

The City of Negapatnam.

This City was taken by compoſition without ſtriking a Stroke, by *John van der Laan*, and *Lucas van der Duſſen*, Commanders of the *Dutch* Forces, 1658. the laſt of the two being ſince made Governor of *Cochin*, and the other Forts on the *Malabar* Coaſt, ſubject to the *Hollanders*. The *Portugueſes* were permitted to depart with their Goods, Families, Church-Ornaments, *&c.* in certain Ships appointed for that purpoſe by the *Dutch* Company. The City is ſeated near the Shoar, has no convenient Harbour, as indeed the whole Coaſt of *Coromandel* is deſtitute of them. Its Buildings are very ſtately, eſpecially the Church, which affords a very goodly Proſpect towards the Sea-ſide: The Land-Winds are exceſſive hot and ſtifling here, as on the other hand the Sea-Winds are refreſhing both to Men and Beaſts. It is obſervable that whilſt the Land-Wind blows, they gather Water in Stone Veſſels, which keeps very cool; the worſt is, that theſe Winds prevent People from ſweating, which makes the Heat the more inſupportable. The ſame is to be obſerved at *Maſulipatan*, where they are ſo ſtifling that many People are killed by them.

Maſtered by the Dutch.

In the Year 1660. 14 *July*, I ſet ſail from *Jafnapatnam* to *Negapatnam*, to introduce the Reformed Religion there, and accordingly preached the firſt time the 18*th*, both in *Dutch* and *Portugueſe*, and adminiſtred the Holy Sacrament to 20 Perſons, and Baptiſm to ſeveral Children. After Mr. *Frederick Frontenius* and my ſelf had ſpent ſometime there in ſetling the Proteſtant Religion, Mr. *John Kruyf*, formerly Miniſter in the Caſtle, called the *Seelandia* in the Iſle of *Tajowan*, was conſtituted Miniſter at *Negapatnam*, who after his Death was ſucceeded by Mr. *Nathaniel de Pape*, a Perſon of indefatigable care, who in a very ſmall time has made conſiderable Advancements in the *Portugueſe* and *Malabar* Languages, who by the encouragement, and under the Protection of Mr. *Cornelius Speelman* Governour of the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, and famous for his late Victories obtain'd againſt the *Macaſſars*, and the King of the Iſle of *Celebes*, has ſettled and ſpread the Doctrine of the Goſpel in the circumjacent Villages.

The Proteſtant Religion introduced in Negapatnam.

Baldæus.

At the time of our firſt Arrival, we found the Affairs of *Negapatnam* in no ſmall Confuſion; the City having been juſt before beſieged by the *Naik*, who after a vigorous Sally made by the Beſieged, had been forced to retreat with the Loſs of 300 or 400 Men. Beſides this, the King of *Viſiapour* had not long before the Siege made an Inroad into the Country, and by deſtroying all the Fruits of the Earth, and whatever elſe he met with, occaſion'd ſuch a Famine, that the poor Country Wretches being forc'd to fly to the City for want of Rice and other Eatables, you ſaw the Streets cover'd with emaciated and half-ſtarv'd Perſons, who offer'd themſelves to Slavery for a ſmall quantity of Bread, and you might have bought as many as you pleas'd at the rate of 10 Shillings a Head; above 5000 of them were there bought and carried to *Jafnapatnam*, as many to *Columbo*, beſides ſeveral thouſands that were tranſported to *Batavia*.

Miſery about Negapatnam.

In the Year 1669. the *Naik* was again embroil'd with the *Dutch* Company, but being bravely repuls'd was glad to be at quiet. Without the Gates on the North-ſide of the City ſtands a very lofty *Pagode*, called *China*, near which is a Summer-Seat, with very pleaſant Gardens and Orchards, formerly belonging to *Franciſco d' Almeyda*, an antient rich *Portugueſe*, now living at *Trangebar*.

Balaæus.

CHAP. XXIII.

A Description of Carcal, Trangebar, Trinilivaas, Colderon, Porto Novo, Tegnatapan, Tirepoplier, Chengier, Sadraſpatan, Madraſpatan, St. Thomas, Paliacatte, Carnatica, Penna, Caleture, Petapouli, *and* Maſulipatan.

Carcal. TWO Leagues from *Negapatan* lies *Carcal*, where, as well as in moſt other Southern Places, *Adrian van der Meyden* Head Factor of our Company, did erect a Factory ſome years ago; but ſince we have been Maſters of *Negapatan*, the Factory of *Carcal* is not regarded. The chief Commodities here are certain Stuffs, eſpecially thoſe call'd *Rambotyns*, much in requeſt among the *Japoneſes*.

From *Carcal* to the *Daniſh* Fort call'd *Trangebar* are about three Leagues: It has four Bulworks, and the Gariſon conſiſts for the moſt part of *Topaſſes* and *Negros*, under the Command of one *Eskel Andres*. The Inhabitants conſiſt of *Portugueſes*, *Pagans* and *Mahometans*: Their Traffick is very inconſiderable, their chiefeſt Advantage ariſing from the Excurſions they make upon the neighbouring *Mahometans*, with whom they are in conſtant Enmity, by reaſon of the ill uſage they have ever received from them. About two Years before our departure thence, one *Simon van Medenblick* had got a Commiſſion from the *Danes*, and took a rich *Mooriſh* Veſſel, and kill'd the whole Ships Crew. I have often wonder'd why the *Danes* ſhould not more encourage their Trade in the *Indies* than they do, ſince they have the ſame or rather a better opportunity for ſo doing than the *Engliſh*.

Colderon. From *Trangebar* you go by the way of *Trinilivaas* to *Colderon*, where there is a very dangerous Sand-Bank. From thence you come to the Place call'd the *Four Pagodes*, and ſo to *Porto Novo* or *Newhaven*, about 4 or 5 Leagues from *Trangebar*. At *Porto Novo* inhabit ſome *Portugueſes*; their Trade conſiſts chiefly in a certain hard Wood call'd *Hunters-wood*, *Coco-nuts*, *Arek*, *Cair*, &c.

Porto Novo.

Tegnapatan. About a League from *Porto Novo* ſtands *Tegnapatan*, where the *Hollanders* have likewiſe a Factory. Next to this lies *Tirepoplier*, upon a River which is navigable, within half a League of the *Dutch* Factory. The Road lies at 11 ½ Degrees of Northern Latitude, having 77 Fathom Water, with a grey ſandy Ground, very fit for Anchorage not above a Mile from the ſhore. There is ſafe riding at Anchor here (as all along the Coaſt of *Coromandel*) during the South *Mouſſon*, but very dangerous in the North *Mouſſon*. The Caſtle of *Tirepoplier* is tolerably ſtrong, according to the faſhion of the *Gentives*. The Factory formerly belonging to the *Dutch* was within the Caſtle, where is alſo a ſtately large *Pagode*, with a high Stone Tower flat at top, which ſerves the Mariners for a Guide. The Mines of the old Caſtle, belonging formerly to the *Portugueſes*, upon an Aſcent near the Sea-Shore on the North ſide of the River, are alſo ſeen a good way at Sea. The Country hereabouts is generally ſandy, and ſometimes rocky. *Tirepoplier* is under the Juriſdiction of the *Criſtappaneyk*, whoſe Reſidence is at *Chengier*, about two days Journy to the South of *Tirepoplier*.

Tirepoplier.

Chengier. The City of *Chengier* is very populous, and three times as big as *Rotterdam*, ſeated in a moſt pleaſant Valley, near a delightful River, to the South of it: It is fortify'd with double Stone Walls, and has four high Rocks without, upon three of which are built as many ſtrong Forts, and upon the fourth a *Pagode*. The firſt of theſe Rocks is enclos'd with a very ſtrong Wall, the ſecond with four Walls, and the third with no leſs than ſeven, with as many Gates all of Stone, and kept by a conſiderable Gariſon; the Aſcents to the Forts being cut out of the Rock, and ſcarce acceſſible by reaſon of their Steepneſs and Straitneſs. On the top of theſe Rocks are moſt delicious Springs, Freſh-water Ponds and Gardens. Beſides which there is another Fortreſs upon an unacceſſible Rock without the City, commanding the Avenues towards it on that ſide. The *Naik*'s Palace ſtands betwixt two of the before-mention'd Rocks, moſt pleaſantly ſituate, and well fortify'd. Great Cannon are a kind of rarity here, and thoſe few they have (like thoſe in the Siege of *Negapatan*, 1658.) are made of long and broad Bars of Iron, join'd together with Iron Hoops; their Bullets are of Stone, and cut round.

The *Naik* was at our firſt arrival in theſe Parts, very obliging to our Deputys, whom

whom he treated very ſplendidly for 14 Days together; and after he had given them a full view of his prodigious Wealth, conſiſting in moſt ſumptuous Apparel, Silver, Gold, and Jewels, as alſo of his Wives, Concubines, and Forces, both Horſe and Foot, he diſmiſs'd them very honourably, upon the news of *Iteragio* being on his march againſt us.

The *Naik* being almoſt arriv'd to the Age of Dotage, one *Trinvingelaya* (who had emaſculated himſelf) was Adminiſtrator of the Kingdom, a cruel and bloody-minded Perſon, very covetous and implacable in his Hatred, who by his Severity againſt Criminals had rendred the Country free from Robberies and Pillages. This *Aya* or Adminiſtrator General was very urgent with our Deputys to agree with him once for all for the yearly Sum of 1800 Rixdollars in lieu of the Cuſtoms, offering to us the Government of *Tegnapatan*, the free Exerciſe of the Chriſtian Religion, and full Power to rebuild the ruin'd Caſtle of the *Portugueſes*.

The Country hereabouts abounds in Rice, Salt, Fruits, and other Eatables; notwithſtanding which, by reaſon of the vaſt number of the Inhabitants, they muſt be ſupply'd with Proviſions from abroad. Their chief Commodities to be exported are Linen and Woollen Stuffs, much in requeſt among thoſe of the *Moluques*, *Amboyna*, *Banda*, and other *Malajan* Places. But great care muſt be taken theſe Stuffs agree with their Patterns, eſpecially in the goodneſs of the Colour, wherein they are very deceitful. The Commodities imported and exchanged here are *Nutmegs*, *Mace*, *Pepper*, *Sandal-wood*, *Chineſe Silks*, *Velvets*, *Sattins*, *embroider'd and wrought Carpets* of all ſorts of Colours, *raw Silks*, *Patana Girdles*, *Muſk*, *Cinnaber*, *Quick-ſilver*, (but no *Porcellain* or *Chineſe Campher*) *Brazain*, *Tin*, *Lead*, *Copper*, &c.

From *Tirepoplier* you go over *Poelezere*, *Poelemoer* & *Alembrue* to *Sadraſpatan*, where the *Dutch* have a Factory, and from thence to *Madraſpatan*, otherwiſe *Chinnepatan*, where the *Engliſh* have the Fort of *S. George*, gariſon'd with *Topatzes* and *Miſtices*, and from whence they ſend their Ships every Year, as well as from *Surat*. *S. Thomas* is a City belonging to the *Portugueſes*, ſituate in *Maliapour*, at 23 ½ Degrees Northern Latitude, about a days Journy from *Paliacatta*; but taken from them about 8 or 9 Years ago by the *Moors*. It is an antient trading City, their chief Traffick conſiſting in colour'd Stuffs, their Weavers here being famous throughout the *Indies*, as well as their Dyers: They are tranſported to *Malaga*, *Java*, the *Moluques*, *Siam*, *Pegu*, &c. The Excellency and Laſtingneſs of their Dying are attributed to a peculiar Quality in their Water, the Springs whereof ariſe out of very white ſandy Ground, without the leaſt mixture of Clay. *Baldæus.*

Sadraſpatan.

Madraſpatan.

S. Thomas.

Paliacatta, *i. e.* the *Old Fort* in the *Malabar* Language, is ſeated at 13 Degr. 22 Min. of Northern Latitude, 5 long Leagues from *St. Thomas*. About 6 Leagues into the Country, in a direct Line from the Harbour of *Paliacatta*, you ſee a ridg of high Mountains extending from South to North: On the Southern part you ſee an Interſtice or Valley, where in antient Times ſtood the Caſtle of *Rama Geridorgon*; in lieu whereof was afterwards built the Fort *Geldria*, where the *Dutch* Governour keeps his Reſidence. It is not very large, yet fortified with ſome Bulworks, ſufficient to reſiſt the Power of the neighbouring *Moors*. Mr. *Anthony Pavilion*, Counſellor of the *Indies*, had at that time his Reſidence there, as Governour, after Mr. *Cornelius Speelman*; and the Gariſon conſiſted of about 80 or 90 men. The Road is very good at half a League from the Shore, where you may ride ſafely at Anchor at 7 or 8 Fathom Depth during the Southern *Mouſſon*; but not in the Northern *Mouſſon*, when the Waves breaking forth with great violence out of the Bay of *Bengal* and the *Ganges* againſt this Shore, render Anchorage very dangerous. Paliacatta. *The Dutch Fort Geldria.* *The Road of Paliacatta.*

About 3 ½ Leagues from the Road is a certain Sand-bank, extending from the River into the Sea for a League together, where there is no Anchorage within 4 ½ 5 fathoms Wather. Two Leagues to the North is the Point of *Sicerecourdi*, from whence jets out into the Sea a Sand-Ridg for above two Leagues and half, near which there is no ſafe Anchorage within 6 ½ or 7 fathoms Water. Neat the Bar there is from 6 to 10 fathoms Water in the South *Mouſſon* at high Tide; but the Boats or Lighters that carry the Merchandizes muſt keep under the Southern Shoar, there being abundance of Shelves under the Northern Shoar. About a good Cannon-ſhot within the mouth of the River, within reach of the Caſtle, is a good Winter-Road for the *Indian* Ships. This River ries at leaſt 5 Leagues to the North-Weſt into the Country, by the City of *Armagon* and the Foreſt of *Sicerecourdi*, from whence *Paliacatta* is furniſhed with Wood for Building and Fuel, whereof there is great

great ſcarcity in the barren Grounds round that City. A ſmall Brook runs alſo by the Fort, where we uſed often to divert our ſelves in Boats. *Baldæus*

The Canal leading to *Paliacatta* is almoſt dry during the South *Mouſſon*, but overflows the Country for two Leagues round in the Northern *Mouſſon*. The Grounds about *Paliacatta* are very nitrous, ſandy, and unfit to produce any thing in great quantity; which is the reaſon that they muſt be ſupply'd with moſt ſorts of Proviſions (except Fiſh, whereof they have plenty) from other places. The Fortifications being built upon Fenny Grounds, which reach for four or five Leagues round, have been often in danger of being ſwallow'd up by the Waters in the rainy ſeaſon, and were therefore not maintain'd without vaſt Charges. Under the Cannon of the Fort of *Geldria* lie two Villages, one to the South call'd *Diramamy*, built upon a ſmall Iſle, the other on the North-ſide within reach of a Muſquet, call'd *Coupon*, and inhabited by Chriſtian Fiſhermen, being converted to the Chriſtian Faith in the time of the *Portugueſes*.

The Kingdom of Carnatica. We will now proceed to the Kingdom of *Carnatica*, extending 60 *Badagarian* Leagues (one whereof is equivalent to three *Dutch* Miles) from South to North, and 40 from *Paliacatta* to the Coaſt of *Malabar*. In this Country it was that the three *Naiks*, or chief Lords of the Crown of *Velour*, keep their Reſidence, who pay a certain yearly Tribute to that Crown, viz. the *Vitipanaik* of *Madure*, the King's Baſon-Bearer, 200 *Pagodes* (each of which is worth ſix *Holland* Guilders) *per annum*; the *Chriſtapanaik* of *Chengier* the King's *Betel* Box-bearer, as many; and the *Naik* of *Tanjouwer* his Umbrello-bearer (who is Lord of *Negapatan*) 400 *per annum*. *The three Naiks.* Theſe Dignities being hereditary time out of mind, the Countries of *Madure*, *Chengier* and *Tanjouwer* have been annexed to them, under condition of a yearly Tribute, and are beſides this oblig'd to give their perſonal Attendance at the Coronation of the lawful Succeſſor of the before-mentioned Kingdom.

Penna, Calecura. Further to the North (about a days Voyage) from *Paliacatta*, lie *Penna* and *Calecura*, betwixt which places is found the beſt *Eſſaye* Roots, which are alſo to be found in the Iſles near *Jafnapatan*: It is a ſmall Root no bigger than a little ſprig of about a ſpan in length, uſed by the Dyers. The way to try its goodneſs, is to break it to pieces, and to ſee whether it be very red within, or elſe to chaw a piece of it, and if you perceive a nitrous taſte in it, it is very good. To try the true Dye thereof upon Callico's, you may ſqueeze ſome Lemmon Juice upon it, and let it dry in the Sun; if it be not true it will change pale. There is alſo a five corner'd Fruit call'd *Carunbolle*, the Juice whereof being ſharper than that of *Lemmons*, is likewiſe made uſe of in trying the true Dye of the *Eſſaye* Colour. For this Nation being very cunning in their way of dealing, oftentimes make uſe of a Dye call'd *Sordaco* inſtead of the *Eſſaye*, and of the Bark of a certain Tree growing in *Orixa*, but may eaſily be diſtinguiſh'd by the colour, being ſomewhat darker than the true *Eſſaye*, and if rub'd with Water, will tinge it. They have a nice way of refining and trying the Gold here, and the *Dutch* Company coin abundance of Golden *Pagodes* here, with the King's Stamp upon them. Abundance of *Nely*, Rice, *Gingely*-ſeeds, Oil, Butter, coarſe Cloths, Iron, Honey and yellow Wax, is brought hither from *Orixa* and *Maſulipatan*, the whole Voyage thither and back again being commonly perform'd in four Months. From hence to *Arracan*, *Pegu* and *Tanaſſery* you pay 8 or 10 *per Cent.* for Freight of Pepper, Sandalwood, Stuffs, Steel and Iron, and make your returns in Gold, Rubies of *Ava*, *Gummi-Lacca*, long white Pepper, Lead, *&c.* Betwixt *Tanaſſery* and *Occeda* towards *Malacca* are the Harbours of *Tanangar*, *Sencaza*, and *Perach*, oppoſite to *Achem*, whither they trade with vaſt Profit, and bring back abundance of Tin, a Commodity much in requeſt with the *Moors*, wherewith they tin their Copper Veſſels.

Petapouli is ſituate at 16 deg. of North Latitude: As you ſail Eaſt and Eaſt to the North towards this Road, you ſee an Iſle at a League and a half diſtance made by the North Branch of the River cover'd with Coco-Trees, an infallible Guide to the Road, where at a League's diſtance from the Shoar, there is good Anchorage at 6 fathoms Water in a Sandy Bottom. This is the ſecureſt Harbour on all this Coaſt, during the North *Mouſſon*, by reaſon of a Point of Land jetting out for three Leagues in the Sea to the North of the Iſle, and encloſing as it were the Road by a Demi-Circle, whereas in the South *Mouſſon* the Sea is very boiſterous, and the Waves very turbulent here. The Bar of *Petapouli* has ſome Shallows ſcarce paſſable but by ſmall Veſſels. The City lies a League within *Petapouli.*

the

The City of
MASULIPATAM.

the River, which is pretty large, and runs up into the Country till it joins its Waters with the River *Meca*.

Petapouli is of no great extent, inhabited by some *Moors* and *Persians* of Note, but for the most part by *Gentives*, Subjects of the King of *Golconda*. As hereabouts grows a kind of *Essaye* Colour, exceeding all the rest, call'd *Tambrevelle*, so the painted and dy'd Stuffs of *Petapouli* exceed even those of *Masulipatan*. The Root grows like a small sprig of a foot long, the Colour whereof is so deep that they are oblig'd to mix it with the *Essaye* of *Arrical* and *Ortacour*, to make it the more lively. This *Essaye* Root grows in the Isle made by the River over against the City, whereof the Governour has the Monopoly, and pays a certain yearly Sum for it to the King, which as it is paid most commonly in dy'd Stuffs and Cloths, so he employs the Weavers himself, and for that reason will not easily permit them to be sold to the Merchants (at least not without his Consent) who transport them from thence into *Persia*. Here good Indigo is to be bought, but much dearer than at *Masulipatan*: From hence we also transport Cotton-Yarn, white Stuffs, and several other Commodities to *Holland*.

Masulipatan. *Masulipatan* is a City seated near a large River, where the *English* and *Dutch* have their Factories: It is very populous, and the Residence of a Governour, who pays a certain yearly Tribute to the King of *Golcondar*, which he squeezes out of the Inhabitants, especially the *Gentives*, who are sorely oppress'd by the *Persians* and *Moors* here, who farm all the Weaving Trade from the Great Persons; wherefore there is scarce any trafficking here without Profit, unless you have a Patent from the King, which is not easy to be obtain'd, because the Governours (who pay 140000 *Pagodes* of annual Tribute to the King) constantly oppose it: and it is no difficult matter to approach the King (who keeps his Court at a great distance thence) without purchasing their Favour, or some other Great Mens at Court. For the rest, this City is a Place of great Traffick, where most of our Commodities, as also those transported hither from the *Moluques*, *China*, &c. are sold at a very good rate. Here is also a great Concourse of Merchants from *Cambaja*, *Suratte*, and other Places under the Jurisdiction of the Great *Mogul*, as also from *Goa*, *Orixa*, *Bengale* and *Pegu*. Here is likewise a considerable Traffick in Diamonds and Rubies: The first are digged in the Kingdoms of *Golconda* and *Decam*, near the City of *Bysilaga* beyond *Suratte*: Each Stone weighing above 25 *Mangely's*, or *Carats*, belonging to the King of *Bysilaga*, the rest to those that have farm'd the Mines. There is a certain Mountain call'd *Cotsa Vuyrtbia*, in the Country of *Decam*, which affords the choicest Diamonds. *Borneo*, but especially the City of *Succadana*, are likewise very famous for Diamonds. Baldæus.

CHAP. XXIV.

An Account of most sorts of precious Stones, as Diamonds, Rubies, Smaragds, Saphirs, Amethists, Jaspirs, Sardonicks, Achats, Granates, &c.

The Diamond. THE most noble of all precious Stones is the Diamond, call'd Ἀδάμας by the *Greeks*, from ἀδάμας ῶ, *i. e.* impregnable. *Pliny*, and others of the antient Naturalists being of opinion, that it is neither to be broken by the force of the Hammer, nor penetrable by the violence of the Fire; which however has since been sufficiently contradicted by Experience; tho the same is several times used in the same sense in the Scripture *. It is likewise call'd *Adamas* by the *Latins*, *Deamânt* by the *Germans*, *Adamanto* by the *Spaniards*, *Almaes* by the *Arabians*, *Jutan* by the *Malajars*, and *Hiera* and *Jua* by the *Indosthans*. The Beauty of a Diamond consists in its Hardness, Transparency and Lustre; tho to speak the truth, there are but few Diamonds without some Defects, which however pass current among those who are no nice Judges of it. Lead is reckon'd to be exactly three times as heavy as a polish'd Diamond.

* Zech. 7. v. 12. Ezek. 3. 9. Isa. 32. 13. Jer. 17. 1.

There is a certain kind of Diamonds call'd *Boschiers*, which are not by a third part so valuable as the rest, tho sometimes they exceed for Brightness all the other sorts; but if they incline to a reddish or yellow Colour, they are not worth half so much, they being only valued according to the weight of the *Carats* without

Baldæus. out any Multiplication. To try the goodneſs of a Diamond you muſt cut one Diamond with another, and if the Powder thereof be of an Aſh-colour, it is right, but if white, otherwiſe; for all other precious Stones except the Diamond afford a white Powder, and the more the Powder of the Diamond approaches to a Grey, the more precious it is. They have another way of trying the Diamonds, by making them red hot, and afterwards quenching them in cold freſh Water, and if they don't crack they are true and good. The true Value of the beſt Diamonds (provided they are clean and of a juſt thickneſs) is computed thus: The juſt Value of a good Diamond weighing a *Carat* (each whereof is equivalent to four Grains) is 80 *Gilders*, or 32 *Rixdollars*. Now to know the juſt Value of one or two *Carats*, you muſt multiply two with two, the Product whereof being four, this muſt be multiplied with the value of a Diamond of one *Carat*, *viz.* 80 *Gilders*, the Product whereof amounts to 320 *Gilders*; ſo that according to this Computation, a Diamond of 20 *Carats* is worth 32000 *Gilders*, and according to the ſame proportion, one of 100 *Carats* no leſs than 800000 *Gilders*.

The Goodneſs and Value of the Diamonds.

The Ruby. The Ruby, call'd *Rubinus* or *Carbunculus* by the *Latins*, *Mamwikam* by the *Malayans*, *Battamora* by the *Siameſes*, and *Laal* by the *Indoſthans*; it will endure the Fire for a conſiderable time. There are three ſeveral ſorts of Rubies, ſome are of a high red and brillant colour; thoſe of a dark red colour, tho they carry a very fine Luſtre, yet are not ſo much valued as the former. The Oriental Rubies are call'd *Eſpinelles*, thoſe of *Germany* are very hard, but inclining to a dark brown, and therefore of leſs Value; notwithſtanding which they are true Rubies: they ſeldom exceed the bigneſs of a good Pea, and are very thin, and the Stone-Poliſhers make them thinner, ſtill to increaſe their Luſtre. The *Eſpinelles* are of much brighter Colour, but not ſo hard, and conſequently of leſs or more Value in proportion to their Hardneſs, ſome being as hard as a Saphir.

Their different kinds, goodneſs and value. The Carbuncles are adulterated with *Sandaracha*, but theſe falſe Colours are ſoon diſcovered in the Corners of the poliſhed Stones, which don't receive theſe Colours. The Oriental Carbuncles are likewiſe of two different kinds, ſome are of a dark brown Colour, the others are bright and carry Luſtre like Fire, and theſe are the moſt precious. The Rubies are apprais'd like the Diamonds by *Carats*, one, two, three, or more, with this difference, that the *Rubies* tho of the ſame Weight, are ſomewhat bigger in proportion than the Diamonds, and without the leaſt Clouds or other Defects.

The Emerault. The *Smaradg* or *Emerault*, called *Tamarul* by the *Arabians*, and *Jaſche* by the *Indians*, is one of the precious Stones called Σμαράγδος by the *Greeks*, and *Eſmaraude* by the *French*. They are of three different kinds. *Scythia* and *Egypt* produce theſe Stones, as well as the *Eaſt-Indies*. They endeavour to imitate them at *Paliacatta* and *Biſnagar* in Glaſs. Thoſe of *Scythia* are accounted the beſt, thoſe of *Peru* are the next in Goodneſs, of a dank green Colour, very hard, and more tranſparent than thoſe of the *Eaſt-Indies*. Theſe laſt are harder than thoſe of *Peru*, but much leſs regarded. Thoſe of *Peru* are of a pale Colour and brttle. The general Opinion is, that in caſe an Emerault ſhould be found excellent in all its Parts, *viz.* in Colour, Shape and Tranſparency, it would be comparable to a Diamond of the ſame bigneſs, nay would even ſurpaſs it in value, by reaſon of its rarity.

of three kinds.

Their value.

The Saphir The *Saphir* is called *Mila* by the *Arabians*, and *Millam* by the *Malayans*. They are of two ſorts, thoſe of a dark blue Colour are the beſt, thoſe of a pale Colour reſembling the Diamonds, the worſt. They are found in *Malabar*, *Calecut*, *Cananor*, in the Kingdom of *Biſnagar*, in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, but *Siam* and *Pegu* produce the beſt.

The Hyacinth. The Hyacinth called Ὑάκινθος by the *Greeks*, is a red Stone, not unlike the Carbuncle, but does not endure the Fire. It is found in *Spain*: the Jewellers ſell ſometimes the Stone called *Ethiopis*, for a Hyacinth: they are of two kinds, one red, the other inclining to a yellow.

The Amethiſt. The *Amethiſt*, called Ἀμέθυστος by the *Greeks*, is of a purple Colour; thoſe that are found in the *Eaſt-Indies* are preferr'd before the reſt.

The Jaſpir found in China. The *Jaſpir* ſo called by the *Latins*, and Ἴασπις by the *Greeks*, is of two different kinds, ſome being of a lovely green Colour, like the *Emeraults*, and of ſuch a bigneſs, as to ſerve for Materials for Drinking-cups; ſome have the green mix'd with white; ſome are of purple, others of a roſe Colour with variety of Flowers in them; others are dark brown and blew, with white Veins; ſome are Marble on one, and *Jaſper* on the other ſide.

*

The

The Sardis. The *Sardis* has got its Name from *Sardinia*, where it is frequently found, as well as in *Epirus*. There are three several kinds, and were by the Antients distinguish'd into the Male and Female. That the *Sardis* is different from the *Sardonic*, is evident out of the Holy Scripture *.

* Apoc. 22. 20. Exod. 28. 17, 20.

The Sardonick. The *Sardonick*, called Σαρδόνυξ by the *Greeks*, has got its Name from *Sarda* and *Onyx*, or its resemblance to a human Navel.

The Achat. The *Achat* is found about *Suratte*, but is of no great value, unless it be curiously chequered with Figures.

Amber. *Amber* called *Succinum* by the *Latins*, Ἤλεκτρον by the *Greeks*, and *Alambre* by the *Portugueses*, is a kind of Gum or rosinous Substance, found neat *Koningsberg*, and some other Places in *Prussia*; in great esteem among the *Japoneses* and the *Indians* in general. It is often chequered with various Figures, and has the virtue of attracting Straw, Paper, and such like light Matters.

Granate. The *Granate* resembles in Colour to the Coral. There are two sorts, the *Indian* and *Spanish*, the last are very red and bright; those found in *Ethiopia* are scarce to be distinguished from the Hyacinth, except that their Lustre is somewhat less than that of the Hyacinth.

Cats-eyes. The Stone called *Olhos de Gatos*, i. e. *Cats-eyes*, by the *Portugueses*, is in much greater esteem among the *Indians* than the *Portugueses*; who are of Opinion, that if you rub Linen-Cloth with them, it will be fire-proof: but this I have found contrary to Truth by my own experience.

Blood-stone. The *Hematites* or Bloodstone (Αἱματίτης by the *Greeks*) has got its Name from its dark red Colour, and its virtue in quenching of Blood. It is found in *New-Spain*, and reputed by them a kind of *Jasper*; the *Indians* make Beads of them, and wear them about their Necks: They also lay them in Water, and afterwards hold them close in their Hands, and look upon this as an excellent Remedy to stop the superfluous Monthly times of the Women, or any other Flux of Blood. This Stone is also found in *Ceylon* and *Cambaja*, where it is called *Silakenea*.

Kidney-stone. The *Nephritis* or *Kidneystone*, has got its Name from the word Νεφρὸς, *i. e.* a Kidney, because it is worn by the *Indians* against the Pain of the Kidneys, and therefore in great esteem among them. It is found in *New-Spain*, and the greener it is, the better it is.

Hartstone. The Naturalists tell us, that the Stag, when tormented in his Bowels by certain poisonous Worms, runs up to the Neck in Water, at which time the slimy Tears which adhere to the Corners of his Eyes are coagulated to the bigness of a Wall-nut, which thence have got the Name of *Hartstones*; which taken in Wine, are look'd upon as a Sovereign Antidote against all manner of Poisons and Infections. *Baldæus.*

The Serpentstone. The *Serpentstone* is found in the *Indies*, of a dark brown Colour, with a white Spot like an Eye in the middle. Some will have them to grow in the Heads of the Serpents; others are of opinion, that the Water-Serpent hung up by the Tail, with her Head hanging downwards, so near to a Vessel full of Water, that she may lick it, does spew out this Stone, which tied to the Belly, is accounted an excellent Remedy against the Dropsy. The *Spaniards* call this Stone *Piedro della Cobra*, and the *Portugueses Pedra de Cobra*, being commonly of the bigness of a Shilling, less or more. The true *Serpentstone* is found in that kind of Serpents, call'd *Cobra de Cabelo* by the *Portugueses*, and *Serpens Pilosus* by the *Latinists*, being the most virulent of all Serpents. They try the Goodness of this Stone, by putting it into fair Water, which if it bubbles, it is accounted true; another Trial is, when it sticks close to the Lips, or to the Wound, unto which it will adhere till it has drawn out all the Poison, when it falls off like a Leech, and is thrown into Milk: Of this I saw the effect my self with good Success in a Negro Slave stung by a Serpent, belonging to our Head Factor at *Jafnapatnam*, Sir *Jorephas Vosch*. The *Brahmans* make a certain Composition (which they keep very secret) in imitation of the natural *Serpentstone*, the chief Ingredients whereof are suppos'd to be the Head, Heart, Liver and Teeth mix'd with the *Terra sigillata*. Concerning the true Virtues of the Serpent-stones, you may consult *Michael Boimus* *, and *Athanasius Kircher* †.

A Composition of the Serpentstone.

* In Flora Chinensi.

† Lib. 9. Mundi subterran.

The Stone called *Pedra de Porco*, i. e. *Hogs-stone*, by the *Portugueses*, grows in the *Vesica Bilearea* of the Hogs about *Malacca*. It is of a ruddy Colour, and sometimes grey, greezy or oily at the touch like Venice-soap, and of a bitterish Taste. When they will use this Stone, they put it in Water, till it acquires a bitterish Taste, and so give the Water to the Patient, for the cure of Pestilential and other Fevers. They are highly esteemed in the *Indies*.

Hogs-stone.

Baldæus. Toad-ſtone.

The *Toad-ſtone* is found in the Head of a certain kind of *Toads* of the bigneſs of a good Bean, of various Colours, but moſt enclining to a green, ſmooth and ſhining on the outſide, which is bony, but the inſide of a ſtony Subſtance: They are reputed an excellent Remedy againſt the Stone in the Kidneys, Poiſon and Infirmity of the Stomach. To get this Stone, they take a very old Toad, put it in a Veſſel full of Holes, and ſo bury it in a Dunghil near a Piſmires Neſt, till the Piſmires have conſumed the whole Subſtance of the Toad, except the Stone. They try the Goodneſs of this Stone, by laying it before a Tortoiſe, which if it is ready to ſwallow it, it is accounted a true Stone.

Bezoar-ſtone.

Of the *Bezoar-ſtone* ſomething has been ſaid before in the Deſcription of *Cananor*, being accounted a great Antidote, but eſteemed much more in former times than of late Years. The Bezoar-Stone is found in the Stomach of certain Goats in *Perſia*, and the Iſle of *Borneo* called *Pazan*. It is of a very ſolid ruddy Subſtance, growing in different Partitions, like our Onions, which are eaſily diſcernable when the Stone is broken: They are of divers Colours, ſome inclining to an Olive-Colour, others to a dark green, ſome round, ſome of an oval Figure; the ſmoothest and largeſt are accounted the beſt. They are alſo found in the Iſle, called *Ilha de Vacas*, i. e. *Cow-Iſland*, about 6 Leagues from *Jafnapatnam*, but in no great Quantities; for I remember that Mr. *Anthony Pavilion* told me, that out of 70 or 80 Goats, which he ordered to be killed, he had but a few Stones, and theſe but indifferent ones and very brittle. The *Malayans* try this Stone thus; they rub it five or ſix times with Mortar, and if it changes the Mortar into a yellow Colour, it is accounted true. Thoſe of *Banda* tell us, that they find the Bezoar-ſtone in the Heads of certain Apes. The *Indians* and *Chineſes* mix it with Roſe-water, and uſe it againſt Poiſon, melancholy Humours, and Quartan Agues. They alſo make uſe of it as a Preſervative; for they purge twice a year, *viz.* in *March* and *September*, and for five days after take from 10 to 30 Grains of Bezoar in Roſe-water. They ſell this Stone by weight; one of 300, 250, 150, or 140 *Carats*, is accounted equivalent to three times the weight in Gold; each *Carat* reckon'd at 8 *Dutch* Stivers. One of 100, 90 or 80 *Carats*, to 1 ½ the quantity of Gold, or at 6 Stivers the *Carat*. One of 70, 60, 50, or 40 *Carats*, to 1 ½ of Gold, or at 4 Stivers the *Carat*. The leſſer ones in proportion of ½ of Gold, or 2 ½ Stivers the *Carat*.

Oriental and Occidental Bezoar.

There are Oriental and Occidental Bezoar-ſtones; thoſe of the Eaſt, eſpecially of *Perſia*, much exceed thoſe of the *Weſt-Indies*. *Arabia*, *Malabar*, *Japan*, and *China* produce theſe Stones, and the Mountains of *Peru* in the *Weſt-Indies*. The *Perſians* call this Stone *Belzoar*, i. e. *the Lord of Poiſon*; and the *Arabians*, *Hagiar Corrahone*. Formerly it us'd to be ſold in *Holland* at the rate of 8 Guilders *per* Ounce. If the outward Rind or Skin be taken off, the next appears ſmoother and brighter than the firſt. The Bezoar-ſtone has no Pit, but a Concavity containing a certain mealy Subſtance, the Virtue whereof is ſaid to excel the Stone it ſelf. Thoſe taken out of the Goats living in the Mountains, are accounted better than of thoſe feeding in the Valleys. Theſe Stones are found in certain Bags of a hairy Subſtance, growing within the Concavity of the Stomach, of a Span in length, wherein the Stones lie in a row like Buttons on a Waſtcoat, as a certain *Portugueſe* tells us. They have alſo another way of trying the goodneſs of this Stone: They take a Needle with a Thred, and having dip'd the ſame in the Juice of a venomous Herb call'd *Balleſtra*, they draw the Needle and Thred thro the Leg of a Dog or ſome other living Creature, leaving the Thred in the Wound till the Dog faints away. This done, they give him a certain quantity of *Bezoar* Pouder, which if it recovers him, the Bezoar is good; if not, it is look'd upon as adulterated. Of ſeveral other Trials we have ſpoken in the Deſcription of *Cananor*.

The Indigo.

Among thoſe Commodities which are tranſported from *Maſulipatan*, the *Indigo* being none of the leaſt, it will be requiſite we ſhould ſay ſomething alſo of this precious Merchandize. The Indigo is of different kinds, and grows in divers Places: The broad Indigo grows about two Leagues from *Amadabath* the Capital City of *Guſuratte*, eſpecially in the Village of *Circhees*, from whence that kind of Indigo has got its Name. The Indigo is a Shrub growing up to a Man's height, with ſmall hard Twigs like the Blackberry-Trees: Its Bloſſom reſembles that of the Briars, and the Seed that of the *Fœnum Græcum*, call'd *Duſenegre* by the *French*. They ſow it in *June* and *July*, and cut it in *November* and *December*.

Indigo of Chirchees.

The Indigo of *Chirchees* grows three years ſucceſſively after its firſt Sowing. The firſt Year they cut the Leaves about

a Foot above the Ground; which being dry'd in the Sun for 24 Hours, they are put into Barrels full of Salt-water, of a Man's height, and kept down to the bottom, by laying great Stones upon them, the better to ſqueeze out the Tincture. The Water being ſtir'd often for 4 or 5 days, it is let out into great Casks, where it is ſtir'd and trod continually by certain Perſons, till the Water thickens, and the Indigo ſettles to the bottom, in the ſame manner as they manage the Butter in *Holland*. The Sediment being ſeparated from the Water, and ſtrain'd thro thin Cloths, is ſpread upon the Ground (firſt cover'd with white Aſhes) to dry. The Country People adulterate the Indigo with a certain Earth of the ſame colour, or with Oil, to make it ſeem the better upon the Water. The ſecond Year the Indigo grows again on the Stalks that were left in the Fields, which is accounted better than the *Gingy* or wild Indigo. If you intend to preſerve the Seed, you muſt let the Stalks dry the ſecond time, and afterwards gather the Seed. The Indigo of the third Year's growth is of little value, and conſumed for the moſt part by the Inhabitants of *Guſuratte* in dying their Linen and Woollen Cloths.

Its Goodneſs. The chief Signs of the goodneſs of the Indigo are, its Lightneſs and feeling dry betwixt the Fingers, its ſwimming upon the Water, and, if thrown upon burning Coals, its emitting a Violet-colour'd Smoke, and leaving but little Aſhes behind. The Ground which has born the Indigo muſt lie fallow the fourth Year, unleſs you would ſow it with ſome Kitchen Herbs.

Hereabouts alſo grows the Indigo call'd *Aniel de Biant*, by thoſe of *Guſuratte*. They ſow it in *June* in light and ſandy Grounds, and it grows chiefly in *June*, *July*, *Auguſt* and *September*, the ordinary rainy Months here; which together with the Heat of the Sun-beams brings it to Maturity, it being certain, that too much Rain is pernicious to this Shrub. Great care is to be taken that the Grounds be well cleared from Thorns and Thiſtles. The Buyers of Indigo ought to be cautious how they buy it; for if it happen to be not very dry, they may loſe three Pound weight in ten in 8 days time.

The Indigo Laura. The *Indigo Laura*, or *Indigo de Bayana*, is of three different ſorts: The firſt Crop is call'd *Vouthy* by thoſe of *Guſuratte*, the ſecond *Gerry*, and the third *Catteel*. The firſt is cut in *October*, the ſecond about the middle of *November*, and the third in *January*. The firſt is of a light blue Colour, and held againſt the Sun, and ſqueez'd with the Nail of the Thumb, ſhews a Violet Colour. The ſecond, call'd *Gerry*, the nearer it approaches to a Violet Colour, the more valuable it is. The third, call'd *Catteel*, is the worſt of all, of a ruddy colour, and ſo hard, as ſcarce to be broken to pieces. *Baldæus.*

Trial of the Indigo. The goodneſs of the Indigo is try'd in the following manner: About 9 or 10 a Clock in a clear Sun-ſhiny Morning they take a Piece or two, and after they have broken it in pieces, hold it againſt the Sun, to ſee whether they can diſcover any Sand in it: They alſo ſqueeze with their Nails ſome of the Colour out, which the nearer it comes to a Violet, the better it is. They alſo try it with Water and Fire: They throw a Piece of Indigo 40 or 50 times ſucceſſively into a Cask fill'd with Water, and the longer it ſwims upon the Surface, the better it is deem'd. They alſo caſt a Piece of Indigo upon burning Coals, and if the Smoke or Flame appear of a high Violet Colour, the Indigo is good.

It is ſowed in ſeveral Places: The *Indigo Laura* about *Agra*; in *Fettapour*, 12 *Cos* from *Agra*; near the City of *Byana*, 30 *Cos* from *Agra* (where is the beſt;) near the City of *Baſſaune*, 38 *Cos* from *Agra*; near the City of *Kindowen*, 40 *Cos* from *Agra*. The Country People are obliged to carry their Indigo into the next adjacent City. *Good Indigo is alſo made in Coromandel.*

Next to *Maſulipatan* we muſt alſo ſay ſomething of *Bimilipatan*, where the *Dutch* have had a Factory a conſiderable time ago, and from thence, as well as moſt other Parts of *Orixa*, tranſport abundance of Rice, Peaſe, and other Proviſions, into other Parts. The whole Country hereabouts enjoys a wholeſom Air, tho in one Place more than in the other: For tho the Heats are exceſſive, nay almoſt intolerable, yet are the ſame in a great meaſure qualified by the cool Sea-Winds; ſo that the reaſon of the many Diſtempers and pale Countenances, which often attend the *Europeans* in thoſe Parts, is not ſo much to be attributed to the Unhappineſs of the Climate, as to their own Intemperance and Debaucheries.

Baldæus.

CHAP. XXV.

The Manner of Living of the Hollanders *in the* Eaſt-Indies. *Their uſe of* Tea *and* Chocolate: *Their ordinary Drink*; *Manner of Sleeping. A Deſcription of the two Rivers, the* Ganges *and the* Nile.

Manner of living of the Dutch.

AS the manner of Living of the vulgar ſort among the *Dutch* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, is none of the beſt, ſo we will be ſatisfy'd with giving an account of thoſe of the better ſort. They commonly riſe with the Sun, Sleep after Sun-riſing being accounted very unwholſom here in the Morning. Some have a Cuſtom of waſhing their Heads, nay the whole Body with cold Water, immediately after their coming out of bed; others do it with luke-warm Water three or four times a week; the laſt of which I have found the beſt by experience. They commonly ſhift their Linen every day. Brandy or any other ſtrong Liquors are not much uſed by the wiſer ſort in the Morning, unleſs it be a Spoonful juſt before Dinner, and a little at night before they go to bed.

The uſe of Tea.

The *Tea* (always uſed faſting by the *Chineſes*) has got a mighty Aſcendant over the *Hollanders* of late Years. The beſt grows in *China*, being a Shrub riſing not very high above-ground, eſpecially in the Province of *Kiangnan*, near the City of *Hocicbieu*. The Leaves are dry'd, roll'd up and preſerv'd for uſe. Father *Martinus Martini*, in his *Chineſe Atlas*, gives us the following account of the Tea. The Leaves are very like thoſe of the *Rhus Coriaria*, call'd *Sumach* by the *Arabians*, and ρ&ς by the *Greeks*, of which it ſeems to be a Species; tho it does not grow wild, but is planted, being a Shrub with ſmall Twigs. In the beginning of the Summer it buds out a light-colour'd Bloſſom of an agreeable Scent, after which come green Buds that turn black at laſt. They take a Leaf, and after they have warm'd it in an Iron Pot with a gentle Heat, they lay it upon a clean Mat, and having well roll'd it, put it again over the Fire, till it be thoroughly dry'd, and twiſted together; when they put it up in Tin or Leaden Veſſels, to preſerve it from the moiſt Air, which would ſoon corrupt it. The Tea being of different ſorts, conſequently bears a lower or higher Price, according to its goodneſs. Its chief Virtues are to diſperſe the groſs Vapours of the Head and Stomach, and conſequently to exhilarate our Spirits. The *Chineſes*, as they are never troubled with the Gout, ſo they attribute the ſame to the Tea; and *Kircher* aſcribes to it a Diuretick Quality. Its Taſte is ſomewhat bitteriſh, and not very agreeable at firſt, but well enough afterwards. The *Turks* tell us Wonders of their *Cauwa* or Coffee, and the *Spaniards* of their Chocolate; but it has been found by experience, that the firſt encreaſes the Gall, and the laſt enflames the Blood, and nouriſhes too faſt; whereas the Tea is much more moderate in its Nature, notwithſtanding which its immoderate uſe hinders the Concoction of the Stomach (eſpecially if taken after Dinner) and too much dries up the Moiſtures of the Body, which is the reaſon the *Chineſes* never take it after Meals. The *Chineſe* Tea is both in Goodneſs and Price much ſuperior to the *Japoneſe*. I have found by experience that four or five Cups of the Extraction of the freſh Leaves of the Tea makes one light-headed; and I remember, when the beſt Tea was ſold at the rate of 24 Gilders *per* Pound in *Holland*.

How prepared.

The ordinary Drink of the *Hollanders* is a Mixture of Water and Sugar boil'd together. Some fill certain Earthen Veſſels over night with Water, and add to it 3 or 4 Glaſſes of *Spaniſh* Wine, which expoſed together all night in the Dew, turns white, and affords a pleaſant Liquor; but is a little too cool, for which reaſon ſome put a certain quantity of Mum in the Veſſel. The *Brunſwick* Mum is both more pleaſant and wholſom here than in *Europe*; the worſt is, that it is exceſſive dear, a Cask being ſometimes ſold from 40 to 100 Rixdollars. Among the Wines, thoſe of *Spain* are moſt in requeſt: It's true they ſometimes inflame the Gall; but againſt that they make uſe of *Rhubarb* and *Cremor* of *Tartar*. The *French* and *Rheniſh* Wines are not ſtrong enough in theſe hot Countrys, where the Stomach requires more lively Cordials, as a little Brandy, or a moderate ſhare of Canary. Their ordinary Food is Goats, Sheep, Fowl, Hares, Peacocks, and ſuch like.

What ſort of Drink is moſt proper for the Indies.

The *Hollanders* moſt generally take their Afternoons Sleep here, as the *Italians* and ſome other *Europeans* do in hot Countries; a thing ſufficiently commendable in

in the *Indies*, where the Heat of the Sun Beams invites the Inhabitants to paſs away the middle of the Day (when they are unfit for Buſineſs) at their eaſe. They have alſo a conſtant Cuſtom of waſhing their Mouths after Dinner. About three or four a Clock in the Afternoon they take their Tea, and after that a Walk; the Evenings and Nights being pretty cool and very pleaſant here, eſpecially when the Moon ſhines. They ſup commonly about 7 or 8 a Clock, but very moderately, and go to ſleep about 10 or 11 upon Quilts, Feather-beds being not us'd in the *Indies*: But care muſt be taken to cover well your Belly, Hips and Legs, for fear of the Cramp, eſpecially if you lie expos'd to the open Air in Moon-ſhiny Nights, the neglect of which often proves fatal to the Soldiers and Seamen, after they have heated themſelves with *Arak*, or other ſtrong Liquors.

Feather-beds not uſed in the Indies.

Thus much of the manner of Living of the *Hollanders* in the *Eaſt-Indies*. Concerning the different Clans or Families of the *Indians*, the manner of Living, Auſterity and Prerogatives of the *Brahmans*, their *Vedam* Faſts, Marriages, Feaſts, Burials, Mr. *Abraham Rogerius* has given ſo exact an account, that it would be needleſs to repeat them here. The Foundation, Strength and Magnificence of their *Pagodes*, eſpecially of thoſe dedicated to *Wiſnou* and *Eſwara*, with their Revenues and Idols, are likewiſe moſt exactly deſcrib'd by the ſame Author; and among other things, that their *Pagodes* have no other Light but what they receive thro a Hole on the top; that they are divided into three ſeveral Vaults, ſupported by Stone Pillars: The firſt whereof ſtands open to all Goers and Comers: The ſecond has two ſtrong Doors, which are kept open in the day time, and guarded by a certain number of *Brahmans*: The third part is always kept cloſe, being the Reſidence of the Idol, before which hang Lamps, which never ceaſe to burn. But of the religious Worſhip of the Inhabitants of *Coromandel*, *Malabar* and *Ceylon*, we ſhall treat more at large in the third Part of this Treatiſe.

And ſince we have had occaſion to ſpeak ſo much of the Places between the Rivers *Indus* and *Ganges*, commonly known by the Name of *India* on this ſide the *Ganges*, we muſt alſo ſay ſomething concerning theſe two Rivers. The *Ganges* exonerates it ſelf into the Sea of *Bengale*, call'd otherwiſe *Sinus Gangeticus* and *Sinus Argaricus* by *Ptolomey*, dividing the moſt Eaſterly Part of the *Indies* from the

The River Ganges.

Weſtern Parts; the firſt whereof comprehend *Bengal*, *Aracan*, *Pegu*, *Malacca*, *Sumatra*, &c. According to the opinion of St. *Auſtin*, St. *Jerom*, *Ambroſe*, and many others of the antient Fathers, the *Ganges* is the ſame which is in the Holy Scripture call'd *Piſon*; but *Cornelius a Lapide* has ſufficiently demonſtrated that *Piſon* cannot be the River *Ganges*, no more than *Gihon* the *Nilus*. The general Opinion is that the Source of the *Ganges* is in the Mount *Caucaſus*, as thoſe of the *Euphrates* and *Tigris* are in the *Armenian* Mountains, and that of the *Nile* among the *Mountains of the Moon*, near the *Cape of Good Hope* on the *African* Coaſt; tho. Father *Kircher* puts the original Riſe of the *Nile* in the Country of *Agaos* near *Sagela* bordering upon the Kingdom of *Gojam*. The Source ariſes in a Plain on the very top of the Mountain, ſurrounded with delightful Trees; but does not gather into a Rivulet till at the Foot of the ſaid Mountain; and being augmented by the acceſſion of divers other Brooks, gathers into a Lake of 30 Leagues in length, and 14 in breadth. From hence it purſues its Courſe, and by various Turnings and Windings returns near the Place of its Source, whence paſſing thro the Rocks and Precipices, it continues its Courſe into the middle of *Ethiopia*. * *Iſaac Voſſius* derives the Riſe of the *Nile* out of *Goyome*, a Province of the *Abyſſines*, and ſays, that among other Titles that King makes uſe of this: *King of* Goyome, *where the* Nile *has its Riſe*. The antient *Egyptians* had ſo great a Veneration for the *Nile*, that they beſtow'd the Title of the Arm of *Oſiris* upon it: For as the Pagans numbred the reſt of the Elements among the Gods, ſo they had no leſs opinion of the Waters, eſpecially in the Great Rivers. Hence it is that the Inhabitants near the *Ganges* call it the Heavenly River, and are of opinion, that the Waters of that River cleanſe them from their Sins; nay thoſe of *Bengale* are ſo ſuperſtitious in this Point, as to carry their ſick and dying Friends to this River, where they lay them up to the middle in Water: And for ſuch as have no Opportunity or Strength to be carry'd thither, they are perſwaded, that if they waſh themſelves with any other Water, and at the ſame time think upon the ſaid River, ſaying, *Ganges, purify me*, they ſhall be cleanſed from their Sins. † *Servius* obſerves, that it was the general Opinion of the Heathens, that the Water would cleanſe them from their Sins: Which ſeems to agree with what is related of *Pilate*,

Baldæus.

The Source of the Nile.

*L. 2. c. 71. Ægypti habent Oſtia Nili, Æthiopes autem ejus Fontes.

† Annot. in lib. 6. Æneid.

Baldæus. *Pilate* *, and of the *Phariſees* and *Jews* in general. The *Mahometans* are to this day not free from that Superſtition, the Water of the *Ganges* being ſold among them in Bottles at a very good Price, as we do our Spaw-Waters; and they pay a conſiderable Cuſtom for it.

* Mat. 27. 24. ch. 25. 26. Mark 7.3.

Hence it is, that the *Perſians* look upon it as a Crime to do ones need into the River, or to throw Carrion into it, nay even to ſpit into it; and that they have attributed ſuch ſurprizing Qualities to the Waters of many Rivers. When the Water of the *Nile* is carried in order to be ſacrific'd upon the Altar, the People pay their Reverence to the Veſſel that contains it, by proſtrating themſelves upon the Ground in the ſame manner as the *Malabars* do to the Water of *Rameſwara*, near the *Pagode* call'd *Ramanakoil*, to which they attribute likewiſe a peculiar Virtue of purging them from their Sins.

Kircher puts the Source of the River *Ganges* in the Mount *Thebeth*, where he ſays is a large Sea, whence ariſe the four Capital Rivers of *India*, *viz.* the *Indus*, *Ganges*, *Ravi*, and *Athec*. The *Indian* Pagans deduce its Origin from *Dewendre*, or the Heavens, from whence it deſcends into the *Dewendre Locon*, or ſublunary World; and thence into the Earth, as may be ſeen in the beforeſaid *Abraham Rogerius*. They farther believe, that if they caſt the Bones of their deceas'd Friends into the *Ganges*, their Souls will enjoy the Bliſs of *Dewendre* for as many thouſand Years as the Bones remain ſingle Years in that River; it being their Opinion, that tho this Water has not the Power to introduce them to future Bliſs, yet it is a Guide to Heaven thro the ſeven ſublunary Worlds, which they believe every one muſt paſs thro before he can enter the Heavens. They have each its proper Name, but are comprehended under one general Name, viz. *Dewendre Locon*; and among them that of *Bramma Locon*, or the Place where *Bramma* governs, is next to Heaven; and none are ſuffer'd to enter there, except ſuch as are paſs'd from Heaven to the Earth, and thence again thro the beforemention'd ſublunary Worlds. It is beyond all doubt that many both among the *Jews* and *Gentiles* have aſſign'd certain Places for the Souls to dwell in, beſides Heaven and Hell; in which they are imitated by the Purgatory-mongers, and ſuch as believe a ſeparate Place for the Antient Fathers and Innocent Children.

Before the River *Ganges* puts a ſtop to our Voyage, and the Deſcription of the Places mention'd in this Treatiſe, we muſt add ſomething concerning the *Malabar* Language.

*

Baldæus.

A ſhort Introduction to the Malabar *Language.*

THE *Malabars* write upon the Leaves of the wild Palm-Trees with Iron Pencils; their Letters are very antient, and diſtinguiſh'd into (1.) *Short or running* Letters, (2.) *Long ones*, (3.) *Vowels*, (4.) *Conſonants*, (5.) *Diphthongs*, (6.) Letters us'd only in the beginning of a Word, (7.) Such as are us'd only in the Middle, and (8.) Such as are us'd only in the End, as will more clearly appear out of the annexed Cuts. And ſeeing that the *Malabar* Letters have hitherto not appeared in publick Print, either in *Holland* or *Germany*, it will not be amiſs to alledg the Reaſons thereof, and to ſhew that this Language is no leſs worth our care now-a-days, than the *Hebrew*, *Chaldean*, *Arabian*, *Perſian*, *Samaritan* and other Languages.

The main reaſon why the *Malabar* Language has remained ſo long unknown to us, is, becauſe that Country was not conquered by the *Dutch* Company till in the Years 1661, 1662, 1663. from the *Portugueſes*; and it is not their Cuſtom to ſend any Miniſters into thoſe Places, where they are not Sovereign Maſters. 'Tis true, I aſſiſted at the Sieges of *Coulang*, *Cranganor*, *Cochin*, &c. and 1658. at the Sieges of *Tutecoryn*, *Manaar*, *Jafnapatnam* and *Negapatan*; but was immediately after order'd to *Pſephina* in the Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam*, where I had the overſight over 24 Churches. During the ſpace of near four Years that I ſtaid here alone, I was ſenſible what Obſtacle the Ignorance of the Native Language was to my good Intentions: For tho many of the Chriſtians here were well enough verſed in the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe* Languages, yet ſome belonging to the more remote Churches, who had been but ſlenderly inſtructed in the Principles of the Chriſtian Religion by the *Roman* Miſſionaries, were ſtrangely at a loſs till I got a good Interpreter, who being well skill'd both in his Mother Tongue the *Malabar*, and the *Portugueſe* Languages, did me great Services for eight Years together. His Name was *Francis*, and it was chiefly with his Aſſiſtance, that the fundamental Points of our Religion, being comprehended in a ſmall Treatiſe, were tranſlated out of the *Portugueſe* into the *Malabar* Language, which has been ſince printed, 1671. at *Roterdam*, by *John Borſtius*. The multiplicity of Buſineſs in ſo weighty a concern as the Salvation of Souls, having been no ſmall hindrance in encompaſſing ſo difficult a Language as the *Malabar*; I was forced to be contented with what part thereof I could attain, and thoſe few Intervals of time I had left, whereof I have given ſome Specimen in the following Pages and Cuts. I can't upon this Occaſion paſs by in Silence the Conſiderations which might induce us to propagate the *Malabar* Language with more care, than has been done hitherto; it being certain, that if our Religious Worſhip could be firmly eſtabliſhed in thoſe Parts (whereof the Knowledg of the Language is one of the chief means) it would be very inſtrumental to reconcile not only many of the Inhabitants, but alſo even of the *Indian* Princes themſelves to our Intereſt; a piece of Policy well underſtood by *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, when he introduced the *Roman* Catholick Religion by the help of the *Jeſuits* in the *Indies*.

I reſt your Servant and Friend
in Jeſus Chriſt,

Geervliet, 21 *Jul.* 1671. *Philip Baldæus.*

Some

Some Rules for the attaining the knowledg of the Malabar *Language.*

THE firſt Declenſion among the *Malabars* comprehends the Nouns only of the *Maſculine Gender*, which terminate in the Singular Number in *n*, and in the Plural in *r*. They have their Singular and Plural Numbers like us, and name their Caſes as follows.

The Nominative	*Pradamei*,
Genitive	*Dutiei*,
Dative	*Tritei*,
Accuſative	*Chadurti*,
Vocative	*Panchami*,
Ablative	*Xaſti*.

An Example of the firſt Declenſion.

Sing. Nom. *Vanan* Fullo, the Fuller (of Cloth)
Gen. *Vananureja* the Fuller,
Dat. *Vananucu* to the Fuller,
Accuſ. *Vananer* the Fuller,
Vocat. *Vanano* O you Fuller,
Ablat. *Vananiratil* of the Fuller.

It is to be obſerv'd that they have four ſorts of Ablative Caſes.

(1.) The *Localis*, as the laſt mention'd.
(2.) *Cauſalis*, *Vananale*, becauſe of the Fuller.
(3.) *Socialis*, *Vananore*, with the Fuller.
(4.) *Comparationis*, *Vananil*, in compariſon with the Fuller.

Plur. Nom. *Vanar* Fullones, the Fullers,
Gen. *Vananareja*, the Fullers,
Dat. *Vanarcul*, *Vanaruccu*, to the F.
Accu. *Vanarei*, the Fullers,
Voc. *Vanare*, O you Fullers,
Abl. (1.) *Vanar iratil*, *vanar iratile*, of the Fullers,
(2.) *Vanaral*, *vanarale*, becauſe of the Fullers,
(3.) *Vanarore*, *vanarorum*, with the Fullers,
(4.) *Vanaril*, *Vanarilum*, in compariſon of the Fullers.

An Example of Conjugation in the Affirmative.

The Preſent Singular Tenſe.

I *nan* *Vichuvadigirren*, I believe,
you *ni* *Vichuvadiguirray*, you believe,
he / ſhe / it *avan* { *Vichuvadiguirran*, he believes, / *Vichuvadiguirral*, ſhe believes, / *Vichuvadiguirradu*, it believes. or *Vichuvadiguidu*.

The Plural.

We *nangal* *Vichuvadiguirron*, we believe,
you *ningal* *Vichuvadivirgal*, you believe,
they *adugal* { M.F. *Vichuvadicrargal*, you (Men or Women) believe, / N. *Vichuvadicradu*, or *Vichuvadiguidu*, the things believe.

In the Negative.

The Preſent Singular Tenſe.

I *nan*, &c, as before.
Vichuvadichren illei, I don't believe it,
Vichuvadicrei illei, you don't believe it,
Vichuvadiezan illei, he does not believe it,
Vichuvadiezal illei, they don't believe it,
Vichuvadicrad' illei, it don't believe it.

The Plural.

We *nangal*, *Vichuvadicrem illei*, we don't &c. believe it,
Vichuvadicrirgal illei, you don't believe it,
Vichuvadicrargal illei, they (*Maſc. & Fem.*) don't believe it.
Vichuvadicrad' illei, they (*Neut.*)
Vichuvadiguid illei, don't believe it.

The Preſent Tenſe of Honour, *i. e.* when you ſpeak to Perſons of Quality, in the Affirmative.

* *Vichu-*

A Short Orthography of the MALABAR LANGUAGE.

The Malabars Commonly write upon the Leaves of Palm trees with Iron Pencels. Their Letters are distinguished thus (1) some are accounted short (2) others long (3) some are Vowells which they call Letters of life, because they give life to the Consonants. (4) some Consonants which they call Bodily letters, because the vowels are their sound and life. (5) others they call Mixed letters, the same with our Dipthongs, composed of two Vowells. (6) some are called Initiall letters, used in the beginning of a word (7) some only in the middle, (8) and some in the end of a word.

The following are the Vowels

അ	ana	a short	a
ആ	anana	a long	á
ഇ	ina	i short	i
ഈ	yana	i long	í
ഉ	una	u short	u
ഊ	uvana	u long	ú
എ	ena	e short	e
ഏ	eana	e long	é
ഐ	ayana	ai Dipthong	ay
ഒ	ona	o short	o
ഓ	oana	o long	ó
ഔ	avana	au Dipthong	au
ൠ	aynana	ae	ae
ൡ	ei	ei, Said Dipthong	ei

These are Initiall Letters called by them Taleyelutu.

These are Consonants.

ക	cana	c.k.h	മ	mana	m
ങ	nagana	ng	യ	yana	y
ച	chana	ch	ര	rana	rr
ഞ	nhana	nh	ല	lana	l
ട	ïrana	ï	ഴ	rána	u
ണ	knana	kn	ള	lana	ll
ത	tana	t	റ	lana	l
ന	nana	n	ന	rana	r
പ	pana	p.f.b	ഺ	nana	n

Consonants, joined with the Vowels, make a Syllable short.

ക	cana	ca / k.short-	ca, ka
കാ	carana	cá, ka, long	cá, ka
കി	quina	qui short-	qui
കീ	quiyana	qui long	quí
കു	cuna	cu short-	cu
കൂ	carana	cu long	cú
കെ	quena	ke short-	que
കേ	queana	ke, long	que, ké
കൈ	cayana	cay Dipthong	cay
കൊ	cona	co short	co
കോ	corana	có, long	có
കൌ	caurana	cau Dipthong	cau
ക	iguana	g	
ങ	ngnana	ngna short	ngna
ങാ	ngnarana	ngná long	ngná
ങി	ngina	ngni short-	ngni
ങീ	ngniana	ngni long	ngni
ങു	ngnana	ngnu short	ngnu
ങൂ	ngnúrana	ngnu long	ngnú
ങെ	ngnena	ngne short-	ngne
ങേ	ngnéana	ngné long	ngné
ങൈ	ngnáyana	ngnay Dipthong	ngnay
ങൊ	ngnona	ngne short	ngno
ങോ	ngnorana	ngno long	ngnó
ങൌ	ngnaurana	ngnau Dipthong	ngnau
ച	ingnana	agn	

ച	chana	cha short-	cha
ചാ	charana	cha long	chá
ചി	chena	chi short-	chi
ചീ	chirana	chi long	chí
ചു	chana	chu short-	chu
ചൂ	churana	chu long	chú
ചെ	chena	che short	che
ചേ	cheana	che long	ché
ചൈ	chevana	chay Dipthong	chay
ചൊ	chona	cho short-	cho
ചോ	chorana	cho long	chó
ചൌ	chaurana	chau Dipthong	chau
ഛ	ichana	ch.	
ഞ	nhana	nha short-	nha
ഞാ	nharana	nhá long	nhá
ഞി	nhina	nhi short-	nhi
ഞീ	nhirana	nhi long	nhí
ഞു	nhana	nhu short-	nhu
ഞൂ	nhurana	nhú long	nhú
ഞെ	nhena	nhe short-	nhe
ഞേ	nhéana	nhé long	nhé
ഞൈ	nhevana	nhay Dipthong	nhay
ഞൊ	nhona	nho short-	nho
ഞോ	norana	nhó long	nhó
ഞൌ	nhaurana	nhau Dipthong	nhau
ഞ	indana	nh.	
ര	rana	ra short-	ra
രാ	rarana	rá long	rá
രി	rina	ri short-	ri
രീ	riyana	rí long	rí
രു	runa	ru short-	ru
രൂ	rorana	rú long	rú
രെ	rena	re short-	re
രേ	réana	ré long	ré

ൎ	ïrana	rav Dipthong	rav
ര്	rina	ri short	ri
ര്‍	rorana	ro long	ro
ര്‍ന	raurana	rau Dipthong	rau
ൎ	ïrana	r	
ഞ	knana	kna short-	kna
ഞാ	knarana	kná long	kná
ഞി	knina	kni short-	kni
ഞീ	kniana	kní long	kní
ഞു	knana	knu short-	knu
ഞൂ	knurana	knú long	knú
ഞെ	knena	kne short-	kne
ഞേ	knéana	kné long	kné
ഞൈ	knavana	knay Dipthong	knay
ഞൊ	knona	kno short-	kno
ഞോ	knorana	kno long	kno
ഞൌ	knaurana	knau Dipthong	knau
ഞ	knana	kn	
ത	tana	ta short	ta
താ	tarana	ta long	tá
തി	tina	ti short-	ti
തീ	tiyana	ti long	tí
തു	tuna	tu short-	tu
തൂ	turana	tu long	tú
തെ	tena	te short	te
തേ	téana	té long	té
തൈ	tayana	tay Dipthough	tay
തൊ	tona	to short-	to
തോ	torana	to long	tó
തൌ	taurana	tau Dipthough	tau
ത	itana	t.	

Our Father in yᵉ Malabar language & Characters

வாணநுகளிலேருக
Pater noster
கிரளநுகளபிதாவெ
qui es in cælis
உணணுடையநாமம
Sanctificetur nomen
ஏலலாரகுளுகததம
tuum Veniat
ாக௨ணணுடையே
tuum regnum tua
ாாசசியம்வா௨ணம
Fiat in terra
ணதிணபட வாணவ
voluntas ut
ாகளவாணததரசெ
in cælis
யயுமாபபோலெபு
hodie Panem
ம்யிவுமளலலாரு
da nostrum
ளுசெயய௨ணரண
nobis quotidianum
வளளஎநுகளப
et debita nostra
படைநுகளுகுகே
nobis remitte
ணவதாஎநுகளபி
ut et nos
ணைழகடணகாருக
remittimus nostris
குநாநுகளபோவ
debitoribus et non
கருமாபபோலெந
inducas nos
புமெநுகளபாவக
in tentationem

கடணகள்படெடா
verum tu
வளநுகள்தநதொ
libera nos
விதநுகளுளதுவாக
a malo
ஒடடாமெகளநுகளு
nam est
கருபபொலலாநுகு
tibi
வாராமலவிலகு
et tuum
-வதெணணுமழண
regnum
யயுோாசசழமவ
et quoque
லலழமமொகதிமழம
potentia et
யயபோதுழணை
gloria in sæcula
பாவதாச-ஆமெண
sæculorum Amen.

the Creed in the Malabar

வாணழமபுமயும
in Deum
படைததசவவதது
Patrem omnipotentem
கருமவலலபிதாவ
cæli et terræ
ணகமபிரா ணெய
creatorem Credo ego
விசகவதிககிரெணவ
et in Jesum
வணுடையமகண ஒ
Christum Filium
ருவண நமழணடைய
ejus unigenitum
நாயண மெசசுககிர
Dominum nostrum
சிதநைதமெயவிசசவி
qui est
தககிரெணு வொச
conceptus ex
ததமாணுசிபயிரி
Spiritu Sancto
ததவிணலசசணத
natus ex
துககணணிமரிபநள
Maria virgine
வயிரரிலநிணவயிரநத
Passus est
ாணபொளுசிபொப
sub Pontio
பிலாததிணகிளப
Pilato crucifixus
பாடுபடடுககுருசி
est et mortuus
லெவுளைரயணடுமெ
et sepultus est
சரவவுடககபபப
ad inferna
பாணபாதாளநுக
descendit Die
ளிலேரநுகிழணரு
tertia resurrexit
நாளசெசெரரவாகள
è mortuis ad cælos
ேணடையிலநிணவ௨
adscendit ad dextram
யிாததாணவாணநு
sedet Dei
களிலளரிசசவவதது
Patris omnipotentis
கருமவலலபிகாவா
unde ille
கியதமபிராணவலப
judicatum veniet

பாகததலலேருககிரு
et vivos et
ணவவிடததலநிணவ
mortuos in
ேருககிரவாகளுக
Spiritum Sanctum
குளுசெததவாகளு
Credo ego
கருமநடுததரகவரு
Sanctam et
வாணசுததமாணு
Catholicam
சிபபிரிததுணவெ
ego et Credo
யவிசசுவதிகரெணக
Ecclesiam et
ததொாலிககவாகிய
Sanctorum quique
சுததமாணுககொணை
ego Credo
சுயுளுசுததமாணவ
communionem
ாகளகூடடபபழம௨
peccatorum
ணடெணவவிசசுவதி
et remissionem
ககிரெணபிணைழகளெ
carnis hujus
பாவததவுளுசெத
et quoque
தவாகள௨யிரதத
resurrectionem
வுமளணரெணணைரக
et vitam
கும௨ளளாஆயிரவ
in secula
ம௨ணபெணவவிக
sæculorum
சுவதிககிரெண-ஆமெண
æternam Amen.

Vichuvadicrora, We (our Majeſty, Highneſs, *&c.*) don't believe it.
Vichuvadicrir, You (your Majeſty, *&c.*) don't believe it.
Vichuvadicrare, They (their Majeſtys) don't believe it.

In the Negative.

Vichuvidcron illei, We (our Majeſty) don't believe it.
Vichuvadicrir illei, We ——— don't believe it.
Vichuvadicrar illei, They ——— don't believe it.

Whence it is evident that the *Malabar* Language is very difficult to be learn'd; eſpecially by reaſon of the vaſt number of words whereof it conſiſts, one and the ſame thing being frequently expreſs'd by divers Words or Names. Thus not only every Day in the Week, but alſo throughout the Year, has its peculiar Name. It is further manifeſt from hence, that the *Indians* are not ſo unpoliſh'd as ſome *Europeans* repreſent them, and that they treat one another (eſpecially Perſons of Quality) with ſingular Civility and Reſpect.

The Imperfect Tenſe.

Vichuvadicrane apo Vichuvadieren, I believed.
Vichuvadicreye apo Vichuvadicrom, we did believe it.

The Perfect Tenſe.

Vichuvaditen, I have believed.
Vichuvaditom, we have believed.

The Preterperfect Tenſe.

A ducu mune vichuvaditdy, I had believed.
A ducu mune vichuvaditon, we had believed.

The Future Tenſe.

Vichuvadipen, I will believe.
Vichuvadipon, we will believe.

Our Father in the *Malabar* Language.

Baldæus.

VAnan galil yrucrà engal pidàve, In Heaven who art our Father, *unureya namam ellatcum cbutamga*; thy Name be ſanctified; *unuthy reya irakjam vara*; thy Kingdom come; *un manadin paryel à navargal vanatil*; thy Will be done in Earth as in Heaven; *cheyuma pelepumylum elarum cheya*; give our Bread *andandulla engàl pileyto* us daily; *caran, carracucu nângal pava caran-galey perru*; pardon us our Treſpaſſes, as our Treſpaſſers forgive we; *engaley tolxatricù è duvagù, ottàde engalucà polángn varámal. Vilagù.* lead not into Temptation us, but of the Evil deliver thou us. So it be.

The Creed.

VAnanum pumium pareytà charvatucum valà pidavagmia, tamby-raneye vichuvadicren: Avánureyà maguan oruvcn namureyà nayen Xeju Chriſteye vichuvadicren. Yven chetamana eſpirity màl, chanità kanni Marial: vàitil nindù pirranda Ponxio Pilatin kil parulattu cruxile arraiandù chetù aracapata padalaugalil erri charruvatucum valla pidaguia tambiram balagapatil irucran avaratil nindu irucra vagalacum chetavargalucum narutytba varnvan. Chutamana eſpiritù veye vichuvadicren. Chutamana vargal cuſtanum undanu vichuvadicren. Pileygal porrutalù chetavargàl huirtalum endendeycum ulla aytum vindánum vichuvadicren.
Of the Heavens and the Earth Creator, Omnipotent Father, I believe. And in his only Jeſus Chriſt I believe. Who was conceiv'd from the Holy Ghoſt, born from the Virgin *Mary*, &c.

Vol. 3. p. 667.

INSULA
CEYLAN,
olim
TAPROBANA,
LANKAWN.
Oriens
Occidens
BATACALO
REGNUM.
Batacalo
COTJARUM
REGNUM.
Cotiarum
VINTANA
Vintana
PROVINCIA
JAELE
Jaele
OUVA
Ouva
Candy
CANDY
REGNUM
PRINCIPATUS.
SAFFRA
Gerrewery
MATU
Eliphants
vangh-plaets
Colona
Dolles das
Corla.
TENEWARA
Tenewara
COMITAT
Punte
Gale
Matura
Walalwitte
Corla
Pasdum
Corla
Raygam
Corla
QUATRE
CORLA
Negombo
Madampe
Calpentyn
SETTE CORLA
Mangul Corla
DUCATUS
CHILAUW
CANEEL
Dumbra
Udupale
Kirrielle
Sette
corlang
Duytsche mylen
Spanish Leagues
Eng. and French Leagues

Baldæus.

A

DESCRIPTION

Of the Great and moſt Famous Iſle of

CEYLON.

CHAP. I.

The Situation, Extent and Diſcovery of Ceylon.

Ceylon. THE Iſle of *Ceylon* (the *Taprobana* of the Antients according to *John de Barros*) has got its Name among the *Portugueſes*, as well as the other *Europeans*, from its Capital City call'd *Ceylon*, known among the Natives by the Name of *Laukauwn*.

This Iſle extends from the 6*th* to the 10*th* degree of Northern Latitude. Formerly its Circumference was reckon'd to be about 400 Leagues, tho ſince that time the Sea has waſh'd away about 40 Leagues on the North-ſide of it. In antient times it was queſtionleſs (as we ſhall ſee anon in the Deſcription of *Manaar*) annexed to the Continent. The Figure of this Iſle repreſents (according to *Maffæus*) an Egg, but in my opinion reſembles rather a *Weſtphalia* Ham, whence without doubt the *Dutch* Fort near *Jafnapatnam* has got the Name of *Hams-heel*.

Its Extent. The beforementioned *Maffæus* affirms, that its Circumference is at this time not above 240 Leagues, its Length 78, and the Breadth 44. But the *Dutch*, ſince they have been Maſters of it, after the taking of *Columbo* 1656. and of *Manaar* and *Jafnapatnam* 1658. have more exactly computed its Compaſs to be 360 Leagues. It has many excellent Harbours, Cities and Fortreſſes, and is divided into ſeveral Provinces, as may be ſeen by the Title of the King of that Iſland, who ſtiles himſelf, *Raja Singa*, Emperor of *Ceylon*, King of *Candea*, *Cota*, *Ceytavaca*, *Dambadan*, *Amorayapore*, *Jafnapatnam*; Prince of *Ouva*, *Mature*, *Dinavaca*, and the four *Corles*; Great Duke of the ſeven *Corles*, *Matale*, Earl of *Cotiar*, *Trinquenemale*, *Batecalo*, *Velaſe*, *Vintana*, *Drembra*, *Panciapato*, *Veta*, *Putelaon*, *Vallare*, *Gale*, *Belligaon*; Marqueſs of *Duranura*, *Ratienura*, *Tripane*, *Acciapato*; Lord of the Sea-ports of *Alican*, *Columbo*, *Negombo*, *Chilau*, *Madampe*, *Calpentyn*, *Aripiture*, *Manaar*, and of the Fiſhery of precious Stones and Pearls; Lord of the Golden Sun. All which Places, Cities, and Fortreſſes we ſhall have occaſion to treat of hereafter.

Title of the King of Ceylon.

The Titles of Duke and Earl have been introduced by the Portugueſes.

The Iſle of *Ceylon* abounds alſo in excellent Rivers, ſuch as *Chilau*, *Matual*, *Alican*, *Mature*, *Batecalo*, *Trinquenemale*, and others. It produces various ſorts of precious Stones, and is extremely fertile, eſpecially in Cinnamon: Here are alſo found the beſt Elephants of the whole *Indies*.

Its Diſcovery. This Iſle was firſt diſcover'd by the *Chineſes* in the following manner: Certain *Chineſes* having ſuffer'd Shipwrack, were forc'd aſhore on that Iſland, where they profeſſed their King to be the *Son of the Sun*. The Inhabitants of *Ceylon* adoring at that time the *Sun*, as the *Malabars* do to this day their *Eſwara*, i. e. the *Sun*, they were ſo well pleaſed with their new Gueſts, that they elected the Captain of the *Chineſe Jonke*, or Veſſel, *By the Chineſes.* their King; whence the preſent Kings of *Ceylon* trace their Origin, and have taken upon them the Title of Lord of the *Golden Sun*, this firſt *Chineſe* King having

having ſtil'd himſelf, *The much beloved Son of the always moving Sun.* From this King *Lankauw Pati Mahadaſcyn* deduced his Origin, who took upon him the Name of *Well-beloved Lord of the whole Iſle.* His Son was *Lankauw Singe Madahaſcyn*, i. e. *The well-beloved Lion of the Iſle*, and after him his Son, *Maraſinge Mahadaſcyn*, i. e. *The well-beloved Conqueror of the Lion.* This King left behind him two Sons, the firſt named *Lankauw Patti Mahaſtane*, or, *The Eye-apple of the Country*; the ſecond *Radgora Adaſcyn*, or, *The well-beloved King.* Theſe two quarrelling about the Succeſſion, at laſt divided Kingdoms, that of *Candy* falling to the ſhare of *Radgora Adaſcyn*, and all the reſt to the eldeſt. The Poſterity of theſe two Kings rul'd for a conſiderable time after, the eldeſt Son always ſucceeding before the others. Among theſe *Lankauw Patti Mahaſtane* dying in the 70*th* year of his Age, left a Son named *Marandonna Madgora*, i. e. *The Conqueror of the Eye-apple*, who came no ſooner to the Crown, but he engag'd in a heavy War againſt his Uncle by the Father's ſide, which was ended at laſt by a Marriage betwixt *Marandonna Mahaſtane*, the Son of *Madgora*, and *Malabande Wandige.* They left a numerous Iſſue of Sons and Daughters, and among the reſt one named *Fimala Darma Soria Adaſcyn*, i. e. *The Conqueror of the whole Kingdom*, (born after his Father's Death) who no ſooner came to Age of maturity, but he attack'd all the Neighbouring Princes that refuſed to ſubmit to his Juriſdiction; and having by degrees ſubdu'd them all, and eſtabliſh'd himſelf in the Throne, by the Death of all ſuch as had oppoſed him, he married at laſt *Rokech Wandige*, i. e. The *Beautiful Queen*, his Siſter's Daughter, by whom he had a numerous Iſſue of Sons and Daughters, from whom the preſent Kings are deſcended.

Baldæus.

Pedegree of the Kings of Ceylon.

CHAP. II.

The firſt Arrival of the Portugueſes *in the Iſle of* Ceylon, *under the Command of* Laurence d' Almeyda.

Arrival of the Portugueſes in Ceylon.

WHilſt theſe Inteſtine Wars were carrying on in *Ceylon*, *Laurence d' Almeyda* by the Command of his Father was imploy'd in cruiſing upon the *Mahometans*, who were then tranſporting their Effects from *Malacca* and *Sumatra* over the *Maldive* Iſlands into *Arabia.* The *Portugueſes* being inform'd of the Condition of the Iſland, and knowing that it was beſt fiſhing in troubled Waters, did turn their Arms againſt it, and after many bloody Engagements, made themſelves Maſters of all the Places which produce the beſt Cinnamon, which they uſed to tranſport in vaſt quantities into *Europe.*

Raja Singa Adaſcyn *an Enemy of the* Portugueſes.

At that time *Raja Singa Adaſcyn* reign'd in *Ceylon.* The general opinion is, that he was a King's Son, and Nephew to the King of *Cora*, tho I have often heard the *Portugueſes* and ſome of the *Hollanders* ſay that he was no more than a Barber, who being well skill'd in divers Languages, and of a Warlike Inclination, aim'd at the Crown, and at laſt was ſo fortunate as to reduce the whole Iſland (after he had kill'd all the Great Men) to his Obedience. This King being a declar'd Enemy of the *Portugueſes*, he beſieg'd *Columbo* with a powerful Army, and reduc'd them in a ſhort time to ſuch extremity for want of Proviſions, that the Gariſon knowing the Governour to be averſe to come to a Capitulation, they at firſt broke out into injurious words, and at laſt reſolv'd (unleſs they receiv'd Relief from *Goa* in a week's time) to kill their Officers, and to ſurrender at Diſcetion. But the Governour being advertis'd of their Deſign by one of his Pages, did all that lay in his power to keep the Soldiers in Obedience with fair Promiſes, till the arrival of the ſo long wiſh'd for Succours from *Goa*, which having defeated the *Indian* Fleet, they forced them to raiſe the Siege.

Columbo reliev'd.

This *Raja Singa Adaſcyn* having made himſelf Maſter of the whole Kingdom, except *Gale* and *Columbo*, forced the Emperor *Mahadaſcyn* to fly the Country, who in his purſuit ſcattered his Treaſure of Gold and Jewels upon the Road, thereby to ſtop the purſuit of his Enemies. *Raja Singa* being thus become Maſter of the Empire, conſtituted *Vinne Lamantia* one of the late Emperor's Favourites, Governor over the Highland Countries, whoſe Son, named *Don Jon*, afterwards obtain'd the Sovereignty. This *Vinne Lamantia* finding himſelf in a condition to cope with his new pretended Maſter, took up Arms againſt him, and having

Vinne Lamantia *rebels againſt* Raja Singa.

*

having brought over the greateſt part of the Country (grown weary of the Tyrant) to his ſide, was proclaimed Emperor, under the Title of *Vinne Ladarma Soria*, i. e. *The Deliverer of the Empire.*

This War being carried on with various Succeſs for a conſiderable time, the *Portugueſes* got time to breath, and induced *Raja Singa* to come to a Compoſition with *Vinne Ladarma Soria*, offering him the whole Treaſure he had taken of *Mahadaſcyn* the late Emperor, provided he would reſign the whole Sovereignty into his Hands.

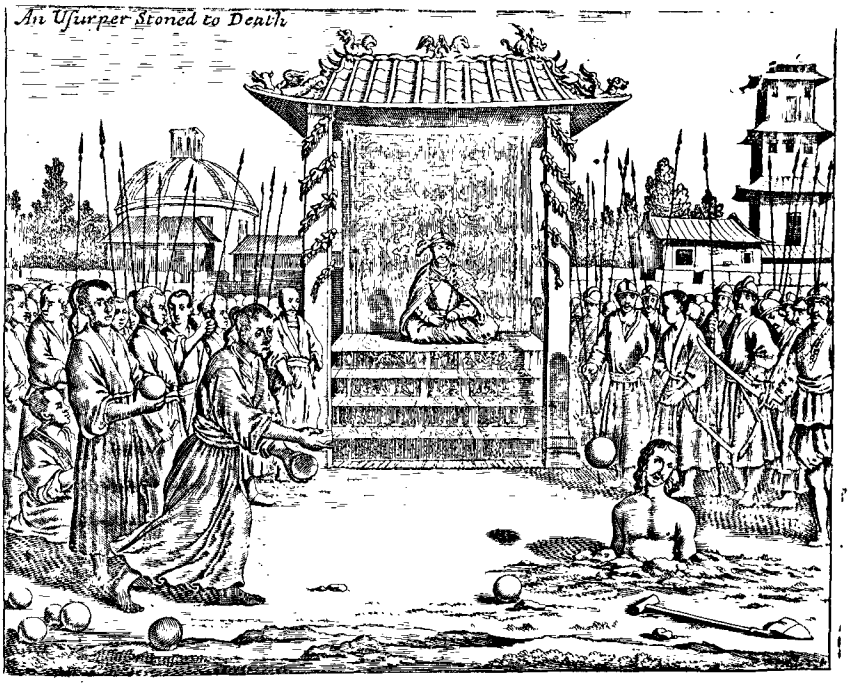
Comes to a Compoſition with Raja Singa.

Whilſt they were treating of the Peace, *Vinne Ladarma* had a Son born him (who bearing his Father's Name, ſucceeded him in the Empire) but he was ſcarce a Year old, when *Raja Singa*, not thinking himſelf ſecure in the late Treaty concluded with *Vinne Ladarma*, he at laſt found means to cajole him to his Court (notwithſtanding thoſe of *Candy* ſtrongly oppoſed it) where he was no ſooner arrived, but being ſeized upon with all his Attendance, *Raja Singa* order'd him to be buried in the Ground up to his Breaſt, and ſo to be kill'd by the means of certain Wooden Balls, which were thrown at his Head, till his Brains were daſh'd out, the chiefeſt of his Attendants being likewiſe put to death by the Tyrant's Orders.

Baldæus.

Is betray'd to Court.

And murder'd.



Candy conquer'd by Raja.

This done, he bent all his Force againſt *Candy*, and having made himſelf Maſter of the whole Country, ſold many of the Inhabitants for Slaves, and diſarm'd the reſt, making the Empreſs his Priſoner. The *Zingaleſes* being much oppreſs'd by the Tyrant, who forc'd them to carry Earth and other Materials upon their Heads for the building of Fortifications all the way betwixt *Candy* and *Settavaca*, ſought for Relief by the *Portugueſes*, who glad of ſo favourable an opportunity of ſtrengthning their Intereſt in that Iſland, ſent *Andrew Furtado* a great Warrior with a conſiderable Force to *Jafnapatnam*, which he ſurprized, and having got the King of that Place in his power, requir'd his Conſent and Aſſiſtance to paſs through his Country for the Relief of *Candy*. The Inhabitants of that Kingdom being not as yet enter'd into any ſettled Treaty with the *Portugueſes*, were not a

The Portugueſes ſide with the Zingaleſes.

a little ſurpriz'd at the ſudden arrival of the *Parangys* (ſo they call Foreigners) fearing (which prov'd true afterwards) that inſtead of their pretended Delivery they ſhould only change their Slavery; which the cunning *Portugueſe* Generals having well foreſeen, had brought *Don John* and *Don Philip*, the laſt Uncle of *Donna Catharina*, and both educated in the *Romiſh* Religion, to *Candy*, the laſt of which he conſtituted King, and *Don John* Generaliſſimo; leaving *Donna Catharina* the Daughter of the late Emperor *Mahadaſcyn*, and the ſole Heireſs of the Empire, at *Manaar*. He alſo took care to give notice of his coming to thoſe of *Candy*, with full Aſſurances that he was come for no other end than to deliver them from the Uſurper's Yoke, which had ſo good an effect upon them, that they enter'd with him into an Offenſive and Defenſive Alliance againſt *Raja Singa Adaſcyn*.

Baldæus.

Enter into an Alliance with them.

The Uſurper got ſoon ſcent of this Treaty, which made him advance with a Potent Army towards *Jafnapatnam*, to prevent the *Portugueſes* from marching to *Candy*; but theſe were too nimble for him, and coming to *Candy* before he was arriv'd in that Kingdom, immediately crown'd *Don Philip* King, and declar'd *Don John* Generaliſſimo, under condition that both ſhould marry *Portugueſe* Ladies, and the Inhabitants take an Oath of Allegiance to the King of *Portugal*.

Make Don Philip King.

Don John in the mean time ſeeing *Don Philip* prefer'd before him by the *Portugueſes*, conceiv'd a mortal hatred againſt them, but thought fit to diſſemble it, till he ſhould meet with a favourable opportunity of ſhewing his Reſentment. With this intention he took care to have *Candy* fortified ſo, as not to fear any thing from *Raja Singa*, and the Royal Palace (lately demoliſh'd by that Uſurper) to be rebuilt with more Splendor than before, for the Reception of the new King, tho at the ſame time he conſulted with a certain famous Sorcerer how to remove the ſaid King by Poiſon, which he effected afterwards.

Don John exaſperated at the Portugueſes.

CHAP. III.

Don Philip *poiſon'd.* Don John *ſucceeds him. He routs* Raja Singa, *who dies ſoon after. His Secretary* Janiere *takes up Arms againſt* Don John.

THE *Portugueſes* fearing not without reaſon the approach of *Raja Singa*, had fortified *Gonnoor*, and ſent *John de Melo* in Company of certain Religious Men to *Manaar*, to bring them freſh ſupplies of Men, Arms, and Ammunition to *Candy*, the Inhabitants whereof were all diſarm'd by the Uſurper, having firſt introduc'd *Don Philip* in great Pomp, and plac'd him in the Royal Palace with the general Applauſe of the Inhabitants.

Don Philip ſettled at Candy.

But he ſcarce taſted the firſt Fruits of his Greatneſs, when *Don John* (taking the opportunity of the abſence of the chief of the *Portugueſes*) got ſome Poiſon adminiſtred to him, which not having the deſir'd effect, he gave him another Doſe, which put an end to his Life; and by promiſes of great Rewards and other Enticements, brought moſt of the Inhabitants of *Candy* over to his ſide, who declar'd him their Emperor, and gave him the Title of *Vinne Ladarma Soria*, after his Father, mention'd before to have been murder'd by the Command of *Raja Singa*.

He poiſon'd by Don John.

Who is made Emperor.

The *Portugueſes* fore-boding themſelves no good from *Don John*, whom they knew to be their Enemy, ſent Meſſengers after Meſſengers to *John de Melo* at *Manaar*, to repreſent to him their dangerous State, wherein they found themſelves not miſtaken: For no ſooner was *Don John* ſeated in the Throne, but he ſent a Herald to the *Portugueſes* in Gariſon at *Gannoor*, who upbraiding them with Perjury and perfidious Deſigns, order'd them in the Emperor's Name to quit their Poſts within five or ſix days, which if they refuſed, they muſt expect no Quarter. The *Portugueſes* finding themſelves unable to reſiſt his Power, and deſpairing of the deſir'd Relief, thought it their ſafeſt way to come to a Capitulation with *Don John*, who granted them a free Paſſage with their Swords only, being forc'd not only to leave all their Booty, but alſo their Bag and Baggage behind them.

And forces the Portugueſes out of Gannoor.

The very next day *John de Melo* arriv'd with the Succours from *Manaar*, but too late, whilſt *Raja Singa* was advancing towards *Candy*, threatning a moſt ſevere Revenge to the Inhabitants of that Country. *Don John* finding himſelf now deſti-

tute

tute of the assistance of the *Portugueses*, and understanding that his Enemy had pitched his Tents near *Walane*, was sorely put to it how to cope with so great a Force; but being oblig'd either to fight or quit his Advantage, he resolv'd to engage the Enemy, cost what it would: for which reason having afresh taken the Oath of Allegiance from the Inhabitants, and furnish'd them with Arms (such as they could get in haste) he advanced towards them in order of Battel. *Raja Singa* being not a little surprized at his Boldness, sent him word, that *He had best take warning by his Father* Vinne Ladarma Soria's *Death, and that in case he refused to submit to his Mercy before it was too late, he must expect no other Treatment than to be cut in pieces.* Unto whom *Don John* smiling, sent for answer, *That he would take care to put it out of his Power, and if his Father had been as cautious of him as he was resolved to be, he need not have come to so lamentable an end, to revenge which he was come to this Place*; exhorting him at the same time to implore his Mercy before it was too late. *Raja Singa* was so exasperated at this Message, and the Aversion he found in the Inhabitants of the Country, that he declar'd, *He would punish with Death all that should oppose him*; and so order'd his whole Army to march to *Donlan*, with an Intention to surprize that Place, before *Don John* could come to its Relief. *Don John*, tho he knew himself much inferiour in number, yet resolv'd to follow him close at the Heels; and to put the better Countenance on the matter, marched in great Pomp, with most splendid Umbrellos born before him, and such other Royal Ensigns, as the Kings in those Countries use in their Wars. *Raja Singa* seeing *Don John* thus bravely advancing towards him, resolv'd either to vanquish or to die gloriously in the Enterprize, could not forbear to break out into these Words, *Verily* Don John *is a courageous Warrior, and I presage that one day or other he will ascend the Throne. O* Raja Singa! *Where is thy noble Boldness, where are all thy great and ambitious Designs, where thy Fortune which no body could resist! I am afraid of a sudden Change; O changeable Fortune, why hast thou turn'd thy Back towards* Raja Singa, *who was once thy Favourite!*

Message of Raja to D. John.

His resolute Answer.

Raja's Surprize.

Thus the Signal being given, the Battel begun, wherein *Don John* and his Forces gave way at first, the better to bear the first Assault of the Enemy; but afterwards *Don John* at the Head of his Guards, charg'd them so furiously, that

Is defeated.

(notwithstanding *Raja Singa* did all that could be expected from a Great Captain) they were forc'd to give way, and at last to seek for their Safety in their Heels: And so he return'd victorious to *Candy*, having lost no more than 700 Men in the whole Engagement; whereas the loss of *Raja Singa* amounted to above 3000, who was so dejected at this Defeat, that he struck voluntarily a Thorn into his Foot, and refusing to have his Wound dress'd, it gangren'd, and put an end to his days at *Settevaca*.

Baldæus.

Dies.

He shew'd not the least remorse upon his death-bed for his Cruelties, except those committed against the Priests of *Daldowanse*, whom he caused to be burnt alive; for being ask'd by the Tyrant, whether the Murder he had committed upon his Uncle, Mother-in-law and Brothers, could not be forgiven, they answered, No; *Well then* (said the Usurper) *I am now at Liberty to do what I please*, and so committed them all to the Fury of the Flames, exeept the High Priest, called *Tireanco*, i. e. *God's Vicegerent*, by the *Cingaleses*. The Priests of *Paraneydeyo*, being ask'd the same question, forewarn'd by the Disaster of the others, gave for Answer, *That a Person guilty of such a Sin could not enter into Heaven, but if truly repenting, he might by their Intercession be brought to remain betwixt Heaven and Earth, without being sensible of the Torments of Hell.* This Answer was so pleasing to *Raja*, that he dismissed them unmolested, telling them, *That he had ordered the Priests of* Daldowanse *to be burnt, because they would make God delight in Evil; but you who make him a merciful God, I will always look upon as my Friends.* Just before his Death, he sent for the beforementioned *Tireanco* or High Priest, desiring him to forgive the Death of his Brethren, offering him considerable Presents at the same time; he refused the last, but pardon'd the Crime, and so return'd to *Candy*, where he died in the 120th Year of his Age.

The Priests of Daldowanse burnt.

Raja's remorse for that Action.

Don John had no sooner received Intelligence of *Raja*'s Death, but he put himself at the Head of his Army, to take possession of the whole Kingdom. But the Chief Secretary of *Raja Singa* having got all his Master's Treasure into his Hands, and thinking himself in a capacity to cope with *Don John*, got himself proclaimed King, under the Name of *Janiere Wandaar*, and at the same time sollicited for Succours by the *Portugueses*. Neither was it long before *Pedro Lopes de Sousa* arriv'd from *Goa*, at the Head

Janiere usurps the Crown.

Baldæus.

Seeks for Assistance by the Portugueses.

Head of 12500 *Portugueses*, besides a good number of *Mistices* and *Indians*, which occasion'd no small Consternation in *Don John*'s Army, who had been lately Spectators of the Ravages committed by those of *Gale* and *Columbo* (with the assistance of the new King) in the *Low-Lands*, and therefore had all the reason to fear so strong a Force of the *Portugueses* ready to join with his Enemies. However *Pedro Lopes* finding the *Low-Lands* laid desolate (the best of the Country) and consequently promising himself but small Advantages by his Stay, was for returning to *Goa*, had he not been opposed by the rest of the Officers, who alledged, that the best part of the late King's Treasure remain'd as yet entire at *Candy*; and that in order to make themselves Masters of the whole Isle, they must take this Opportunity of conquering the Petty Princes one after another, which they put in execution accordingly. For having partly by Force, partly by Promises, brought the Kings of the *Low-Lands* over to their Party, it was agreed to assemble a strong Army against *Don John*. The *Quota*'s of the several Princes to be furnish'd for this Expedition was regulated in the following manner.

The King of *Cota* 6800 Men, four War-Elephants, 50 other Elephants, 1800 Oxen for Carriage, and 1000 *Colys* or Pioneers. King *Janiere Wandaar Ragora* 28980 Men, 24 War-Elephants, 200 others, 5000 Oxen for Carriage, 3000 Pioneers. The Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam* 19900 Men, 10 War-Elephants, 40 of the common sort, 3000 Oxen, and 2000 Pioneers. The King of *Cotiar* 7980 Men, 600 Pioneeres, 1000 Oxen, 30 War-Elephants, 25 others. The K. of *Palugan*, 5890 Men, 1000 Pioneers, 3 War-Elephants, and 25 others. The King of *Batecala* 9800 Men, 2000 Pioneers, 2500 Oxen, 4 War-Elephants, and 30 others. The King of *Panua* in conjunction with some other Princes, 59896 Men, 2140 Pioneers, 630 Elephants, and 16000 Oxen. So that the whole Number of these Forces amounted to 151086 Heads, among whom were 139246 fighting Men, and 11740 Pioneers, 75 War-Elephants, 1000 other Elephants, and 29500 Oxen for Carriage. The Quota of the *Portugueses* under *Pedro Lopes* amounted to 1474 *Portugueses*, 1200 *Mistices*, and 1224 *Indians*, 47 War-Elephants, 945 others, and 19900 Oxen.

A great Army raised against Don John.

The first thing they took care of was to secure their Retreat, by erecting 3 Forts, call'd *Manikerowery*, *Mapati* and *Gannatari*; which done, they directed their March with their joint Forces towards *Candy*.

CHAP. IV.

Don John *draws out his Forces against* Janiere *and the* Portugueses, *attacks them with Success, but is routed at last.* Donna Catherina *declared Empress,* Janiere *murdered.*

DON *John* having received Intelligence of their March, was put to a great Nonplus what course to take in this Exigency of his Affairs, his whole Army consisting of no more than betwixt 30 and 40000 Men: but knowing them to be resolute and entirely devoted to his Interest, he kept as close to the Enemy as possibly he could, and in several Engagements got the better of them, till at last being attack'd with incredible Fury by the *Portugueses*, they put him to the rout, and took the City of *Walane*, with the Loss of 40 Men only on their side, killing above 1500 of the Inhabitants, which struck such a Terror into the rest, that the whole Country submitted without the least Opposition, except *Dolleswagge*, which they were not able to take.

Don John routed.

Don John not being able to rally his scattered Forces, retired with his Empress into the Woods and Deserts, where they were forced to feed upon Herbage for some time; and the *Portugueses* being now Masters of the Country, required the *Cingaleses* to own the King of *Portugal* for their Sovereign Lord. These on the other hand desired that *Donna Catherina*, the Daughter of *Mahadaseyn* their Legal Emperor, might be brought from *Manaar*, and declar'd their Empress: *Don Pedro Lopes* being well enough pleas'd with this Proposition, yet willing to consult with *Janiere* about the matter, he found him not averse to it, his Intention being to marry her with the consent of the *Portugueses*, who had under[illegible] promised the same as a Reward of [illegible]ervices done to them.

Retreats into the Deserts.

Ac-

Donna Catharina *brought from* Manaar.

Accordingly a numerous Train and splendid Equipage was sent to bring the new Empress to *Candy*; but one of the Ships foundring at Sea in a Storm, 150 Soldiers, a great Number of Slaves, and two Chests with Money were lost with her: one *Portuguese* and two Negroes only had the good Fortune to escape of the whole Ships Crew, who heard the Captain of the Ship, whose Name was *Perere*, take his last Farewel in these Words, *O brave* Perere, *Is it thus thy Fate to be swallow'd up by the Sea! but since it is God's Will, Patience; Christ receive my Soul.*

Superstition of D. Catherina.

In the mean while all imaginable Preparations being made for the Reception of *Donna Catherina*, she was preparing for her Departure from *Manaar*: As she was carry'd along in her Litter or Chair, one of the Poles of Cane happen'd to break, which the new Empress looking upon as an ill Omen, she cry'd out aloud, *Stop, stop, don't carry me any further, for this portends some great Misfortune.* Unto which the Governor of *Manaar*, who attended her Person, reply'd, *May it please your Majesty, we ought to consider that we are no Heathens but Christians, and must therefore despise such Superstitions; God will be the Supporter of you and your Cause.* Then the Empress bid them take another Pole, and soon after embark'd with a fair Wind, which carry'd her in 8 days to *Candy*.

Baldæus.

Leaves Manaar.

Here she was met by *Pedro Lopes* the *Portuguese* General, and several of the *Cingalese* Kings and Princes, attended by a great Number of Nobles, who paid their Reverence (according to the Custom of the Country) by lying their Faces flat upon the Ground, this they call *Sambaja*. The Empress arising out of her Litter, return'd them hearty Thanks, and returning to her Litter was accompanied into the City by *Lopes* and the before-mentioned Princes with incredible Pomp, and under the general Acclamations of the People, who were infinitely pleas'd with the Gold and Silver that was thrown among them, as the Cavalcade marched along, which was so splendid, that the whole Charge thereof amounted to 1900000 Livres, the Remnants of the Treasure of the late deceased Usurper, *Raja Singa Adasyn*. *Donna Cathe-*

Her Reception at Candy.

Baldæus. rina after having reſted herſelf from the Fatigues of the Voyage for three days, was crown'd with the uſual Solemnities, *Is crowned there.* and put into poſſeſſion of the Empire.

Don John diſguiſed as a Beggar. About that time *Don John* came in the diſguiſe of a Beggar into *Candy*, where he ſet ſeveral Houſes on fire, in hopes of firing the whole City, but was fruſtrated in his Deſign, the Fire being always quenched in good time, tho it often broke out in divers Places at once.

The Portugueſes offer a good Sum for his Head. The *Portugueſes* ſuſpecting the Matter, offer'd a Reward of 10000 *Pagodes* (20000 Crowns) to any that could take him dead or alive, which made *Don John* deſiſt from his Enterprize, and to return to his Deſert.

The *Portugueſes* finding themſelves now in the quiet poſſeſſion of the Country, were no longer able to diſguiſe their natural Vices, their Pride, Avarice and Inſolence, which occaſion'd frequent Complaints to the Empreſs, but without Redreſs; which obliged the Inhabitants to enter into an Aſſociation to deprive them of all Subſiſtence, by cutting off their Supplies of Proviſions: This obliged the *Portugueſe* General to ſend in conjunction with King *Janiere Wandaar*, 2000 *Cingaleſes* and 1000 *Portugueſes*, to the Dukedom of *Ouve*, and 2000 *Indians*, and 200 *Portugueſes* to *Halalmia* beyond *Candy*, to fetch in Rice and other Proviſions.

They commit great Inſolences. The *Portugueſe* Soldiers, tho they were very well received by the Inhabitants, yet did they commit all manner of Inſolences in their Quarters, even to the raviſhing of their Wives, killing their Children, and ſetting their Houſes on fire; ſo that the *Cingaleſes* finding themſelves in a worſe condition now than they were under their tyrannical Emperors, entred into a Conjuration to kill the *Portugueſes* at a certain appointed time.

In the mean while *Janiere* ſollicited the *Portugueſe* General *Lopes*, for leave to marry the Empreſs *Catharina*; which he handſomely deny'd, alledging, that he could not conſent to it, without ſpecial Order from the King of *Portugal*, but that he would write to the King about it. *Janiere* looking upon this only as an Excuſe, deſir'd to let him marry his Siſter's Daughter; which being likewiſe refuſed by the General, *Janiere* conceived from that Moment a mortal Hatred againſt the *Portugueſes*, and could not forbear to tell the General, that *He did not expect to have met with ſuch a Reward for the Services he had done them, ſwearing that they ſhould have occaſion to repent it.* The *Portugueſe* being ſomewhat exaſperated at this unexpected Reply, told him that he ought not to take it amiſs, if he denied him what was not in his Power to give, *viz. Donna Catherina* the legal Heireſs of the Empire, to him who had uſurped the Title of a King, merely by being got into the poſſeſſion of the Treaſure of *Raja Singa Adaſcyn*, but that he ſhould be very ready to ſerve him upon any other occaſion. *Janiere* being put out of all Patience by theſe inſulting Words, replied ſmartly, *I am ſenſible of your Deſign; you that came here as Strangers, now you have got your Ends tho my means, are the firſt who would tyrannize over me.* Then recollecting himſelf, he began to turn the Diſcourſe, diſſembling his Reſentment; but the ſame Night diſpatched a Letter to *Don John* in the Deſert, wherein he advertis'd him of what had paſſed betwixt him and the *Portugueſe* General, offering him the Empire, provided he would receive him as King of the *Low-Lands*; which *Don John* approving of, they entred into a Confederacy to rid their Hands of the *Portugueſes*. *Janiere enters in a Leagu with* Don John.

Things being thus ſettled, *Don John* began to appear among the *Cingaleſes* (already much exaſperated againſt the *Portugueſes*) repreſenting to them the Danger they were in, and how he was reſolved in conjunction with *Janiere* to drive them out of the Iſland; which they readily accepted of, promiſing all the aſſiſtance they were able to give. But as *Janiere* ſent frequent Letters to *Don John*, it happened that ſome of them fell into the hands of the *Portugueſes*, who being thereby fully convinc'd of the Deſign carried on againſt them, begun, not without great reaſon, to fear, that unleſs they conſented to the Marriage of *Janiere* with *Donna Catherina*, they would ſcarce be able to maintain themſelves in the Iſle.

The Portugueſes conſult about Janiere. A Council being called for this purpoſe, they were much divided in their Opinions, ſome being for conſenting to the Marriage to prevent farther Miſchief, and to have *Don John* murdered; whilſt others were for hazarding all, rather than to conſent to the Match, and to have *Janiere* murdered, under pretence that he had laid a Deſign to murder the Empreſs and the General; for which purpoſe ſome forged Letters were to be produced, to juſtify their Conduct.

Reſolve his Death. To encompaſs this Deſign, they took the Opportunity, when *Janiere* was one day in conference with the *Portugueſe* General and ſome other Officers: The General ſeeing him have a Scymeter on his

Difference betwixt the Portugueſes and Janiere.

ſide

side beset with Precious Stones, he desired to let him see it, feigning that he liked it so well, that he would take it for a Pattern to have such another made after it. *Janiere* not suspecting their Design, unadvisedly parted with his Scymeter, which was no sooner done, but a certain *Portuguese* Captain (upon the Signal given by the General) did run him thro the Body with his Sword; his Attendants undergoing soon after the same Fate. His Guards being advertised thereof, cryed out, *Haddy, Haddy, Treason, Treason, Radja Janiere Maruque, King Jani-*

Is murdered.

Baldæus.

ere is murdered; which being a Signal to the rest, all the *Indians* left the *Portuguese* Camp, except the King of *Cota* with his Forces, who had not immediate notice of this most detestable Murder.

The *Portugueses* did all they could to justify their Proceedings upon this account to the Empress, who (tho but young) being highly displeased thereat, told them, *That supposing he was a Traytor, he ought not to have been thus barbarously murdered, but either kept a Prisoner, or at least had the Benefit of a Legal Tryal. Rest assured*, added she, *that this treacherous Fact will turn to your Ruin; for who is it that hears of it, but will curse you, and never trust you in whatever you pretend to? And alas*, said she, *how ill have you served your King and me, who am likely to be involved in your Ruin? Be therefore upon your Guard, for you will pay dearly for having rewarded thus a Man who had done you such Signal Services.* These Words, tho coming from a young Woman, and scarce well initiated in the fundamentals of Christianity, were actually fulfilled afterwards, when the *Portugueses* were driven by our Forces out of *Batecalo, Gale, Columbo, Negumbo*, and last of all out of *Jafnapatnam*.

Donna Catherina's *Reflections upon it.*

Baldæus.

CHAP. V.

The Portugueſes *leave* Candy, *are routed by the* Cingaleſes. *The Empreſs taken Priſoner.* Don John *becomes Maſter of the Empire*; *Marries* Donna Catherina. Jeronimo Oriedo *defeated.*

Don John improves the Hatred of his Subjects to his advantage.

DON *John* was not wanting to turn the Hatred of the People (which muſt needs enſue upon ſo barbarous a Fact) to his advantage, and to repreſent the perfidious Deſigns of the *Portugueſes* in the worſt colours, offering them his Aſſiſtance againſt theſe Foreigners, as he had done before againſt *Raja Singa*; which ſucceeded ſo well, that they reſolv'd unanimouſly to ſide with him, in order to drive them out of the Country.

The *Portugueſes* having receiv'd intelligence of the great Preparations made againſt them, and that *Don John* was advancing with his Army towards *Candy*, began now, but too late, to repent of the Murder of *Janiere*; and ſeeing their Ruin at hand, unleſs they took timely care of their Safety, they retreated from *Candy* to the Fort of *Gannoor*, whence they ſent to *Columbo* for Relief. The *Cingaleſes* having got notice of their Flight, purſu'd them ſo cloſely, that many of them fell into their hands, eſpecially of thoſe Detachments ſent to *Goa* and *Halalmia* for Proviſions, ſo whereof they ſent back with their Ears, Noſes and Privy Parts cut off, in revenge of the Raviſhments committed upon their Wives and Daughters.

The Portugueſes leave Candy.

Are miſerably treated by the Cingaleſes, 1590.

The *Portugueſes* were ſo terrify'd thereat, that finding themſelves deſtitute of all hopes of Relief, they reſolved likewiſe to leave *Gannoor*, and to retire to *Walane*, which they put in execution 1590. on a Sunday; and the better to cover their Flight, or at leaſt to divert the *Cingaleſes* from purſuing them, ſet the circumjacent Country on fire. But theſe preferring their Revenge before all other Conſiderations, follow'd them at the heels, and attack'd them moſt furiouſly in four ſeveral Parts at once. The *Portugueſes* defended themſelves moſt courageouſly; but being over-power'd in Number, were forc'd to give way with the loſs of many of their beſt Soldiers, either kill'd or taken Priſoners, among whom was the *Portugueſe* General *Lopes* and *Donna Catherina*. The General dy'd within three days after of his Wounds, after he had recommended his Son to *Don John*'s care, who was afterwards by him (purſuant to his Promiſe) ſent to *Columbo*.

And routed.

Pedro Lopes and D. Catherina taken Priſoners.

The *Indians* got a conſiderable Booty, beſides a vaſt Quantity of Arms, Cannon and Ammunition, in this Engagement; and *Don John* purſuing his Victory with the utmoſt vigour, made himſelf Maſter of all the Forts belonging to the *Portugueſes*; ſome by Aſſault, the Garriſons whereof he put to the Sword; ſome by Compoſition, which was punctually obſerv'd. All which ſtruck ſuch an Amazement into the circumjacent Kings and Princes, that they appear'd in Perſon before him, and asking Pardon for their having been engag'd with the *Portugueſes*, brought him conſiderable Preſents, and did him Homage with the uſual Solemnity of proſtrating themſelves with their Faces to the Ground.

Don John reſtor'd to the Kingdom.

Being thus ſettled a ſecond time in the Throne, he thought it the ſafeſt way to ſecure himſelf of the Fidelity of his Subjects by marrying *Donna Catherina* (ſhe being then but 12 years old) which was celebrated with great Solemnity for 110 days ſucceſſively; notwithſtanding which the Charges thereof did not amount to above 5000 *Pagodes*: But the Preſents beſtow'd upon many of the Nobility (to reconcile them to his Intereſt) to no leſs than 968754 *Pagodes*, or 4859538 *Dutch* Guilders, making the Sum of 1943815 Rixdollars. His next Care was to ſtrengthen his Frontiers by three ſtrong Forts; and he built himſelf a Palace, ſurrounded with ſeveral Bulworks, wherein he imploy'd the captive *Portugueſes*, who, to their great grief, were forc'd to ſee their Enſigns diſplay'd upon the Towers of their Enemies.

Marries D. Catherina.

Don John having for ſome time enjoy'd the quiet Poſſeſſion of the Throne, *Don Jeronimo d' Oriedo* was ſent in the quality of *Portugueſe* General to *Ceylon*, with a conſiderable number of Land Forces, compos'd of *Spaniards* and *Portugueſes*, brought thither from *Goa* and other Places on the *Indian* Coaſt. Having by great Preſents brought over to his ſide moſt of the Princes of the *Low-Lands*, he order'd ſeveral Forts to be erected to ſerve him for a Retreat upon occaſion. *Don John* was ſo far from annoying his men in perfecting theſe Fortifications, that he ſeem'd to deſpiſe it, ſaying, *Let them go on, I will*

Oriedo a Portugueſe General in Ceylon.

* find

find a way to pull down as faſt as they can build: But underſtanding that the *Portugueſes* were advancing towards *Walane*, in order to ſurprize *Candy* (where they intended to erect a ſtrong Fort betwixt *Triquenam* and *Palugan*, to bridle the Country) he attack'd them in their March; ſo that a moſt furious Battel enſu'd, which remain'd dubious for ſome time, the *Portugueſes* fighting like Lions; but at laſt were forc'd to yield to the number of their Enemies, who purſu'd them for five days as far as *Columbo*; they keeping their Ranks cloſe, and making good their Retreat with unſpeakable Bravery, tho not without conſiderable Loſs on their ſide. Among their Wounded was *Oriedo* the General, who was oblig'd to King *Cota* for his Liberty, he having conceal'd him in ſome retir'd Place, without which he had infallibly fallen into the hands of the *Indians*. Theſe, tho not a little tir'd with ſo long and troubleſom a Purſuit, yet in their return made themſelves Maſters of the new *Portugueſe* Forts, and cutting the Gariſons in pieces, laid them level with the Ground. This Victory prov'd ſo conſiderable to *Don John*, that during his life *Oriedo* either durſt or could not attempt any thing further againſt him.

Is routed by D. John.

Baldæus.

CHAP. VI.

Dominico Corré *goes over to* Don John: *Beſieges* Gale, *but is repuls'd.* Simon Corré *returns to* Columbo. *The* Portugueſes *miſerably maſſacred.* Joris van Spilbergen *comes to* Ceylon.

Dominico Corré *deſerts.*

ABout that time *Dominico Corré*, a renown'd Soldier (known by the name of *Goliah*) being diſoblig'd by the *Portugueſes*, came over to *Don John*, having firſt cut off the Noſes and Ears of ſeveral Monks who had offended him. He alſo entic'd *Corke Bandaar*, a revolted Prince, into *Don John*'s Camp, who caus'd him to be tormented to death, and beſtow'd his Principality upon *Dominico Corré*, to whom they gave the Name of *Idel Soria Bandaar*. Whilſt he was doing Homage to the Emperor, a very large Tree that ſtood hard by, ſplit in two pieces, without being touch'd; which the Inhabitants (a ſuperſtitious Generation) interpreted as an ill Omen.

Is made General.

Not long after the Emperor ſent a conſiderable Army under the Command of *Dominico Corré*, and his Brother *Simon Corré*, to beſiege *Gale:* But the *Portugueſes* defended themſelves ſo well, that the greateſt part of this Army was ruin'd, and *Dominico* himſelf taken Priſoner, whom the *Portugueſes* (contrary to their Promiſe) carry'd to *Columbo*, where he was privately murder'd. This barbarous Action ſo highly exaſperated *Don John*, that he order'd ſome *Portugueſes* to be kill'd by the Elephants, others he cut off their Noſes and Ears, and ſent them to *Columbo* to tell the General, that in caſe they did not ſet all the Priſoners at liberty, the *Portugueſes* in his hands ſhould receive the ſame Treatment.

Is murder'd.

His Death revenged by Don John.

The Soldiers in Gariſon at *Columbo* ſeeing this miſerable Spectacle in their Companions, broke out into a Mutiny againſt the General, who by murdering *Corré* againſt his Parole, had given occaſion to this Diſaſter. There was nothing to be heard among them but, *Kill the Dog, kill him*; whilſt *Jeronimo d' Oriedo* cry'd for Mercy. Notwithſtanding which, a whole Troop of them were advancing with their drawn Swords againſt him, and had certainly kill'd him upon the ſpot, had not ſome Monks thrown themſelves (to their no ſmall danger) betwixt him and them, and ſpeaking to the Soldiers, calling them Gentlemen, and begging them for the Love of Chriſt, not to act againſt the Crown of *Portugal* in the Perſon of their General, appeas'd their Wrath; tho even then the General was forc'd to hide himſelf in a Convent, till the Tumult could be entirely appeas'd, which was not till 16 days after.

Simon Corré *goes over to the* Portugueſes.

Notwithſtanding the barbarous Uſage *Dominico Corré* had met with from the *Portugueſes*, his Brother *Simon Corré* went over to them, pretending to the Emperor that he intended to advance towards *Columbo* to revenge his Brother's Death. He was very honourably receiv'd by the *Portugueſes*, who not only beſtow'd the Government of a Province upon him, but alſo marry'd him to a *Portugueſe* Lady, whom together with his Son (begotten in this Marriage) they kept as Pledges of his Fidelity, whilſt he was imploy'd in carrying on the War againſt *Don John*.

How-

Baldæus. However having got intelligence that the *Portugueſes* had form'd a Deſign againſt the Life of the ſaid *Don John*, he gave notice thereof to him, deſiring him to be upon his guard.

The Emperor being willing to be fully ſatisfy'd in a Matter of ſuch moment, apply'd himſelf to one *Emanuel Dias*, who being formerly a Foot-boy to the *Portugueſe* General *Lopes*, was advanc'd by the ſaid *Don John* to the Dignity of one of his Gentlemen of the firſt rank, and had received many other Favours at his hands. *Emanuel Dias* willing to contribute what lay in his power to his Maſter's ſatisfaction, propos'd to go to *Columbo*, under pretence of having deſerted his Service, but in truth to dive into the real Deſign of the *Portugueſes*. Accordingly he arriv'd at *Columbo* on Eaſter-day 1602. where he propos'd to *Don Jeronimo Oriedo* ſeveral ways of murdering *Don John*, and that with ſo much aſſurance and ſeeming probability, that he was highly careſs'd by that General, who agreed with him concerning the Method how the Deſign ſhould be put in execution. For this purpoſe five *Portugueſes* were pitch'd upon to ſhare the Danger and Glory of ſo brave an Action (as they ſtil'd it) among whom were three Captains, viz. *Chriſtian Jacobo*, *Alberto Primero*, and *Caſpar Perere*. *Emanuel Dias* being promis'd no leſs a Reward than the Crown of *Candy*, play'd the Hypocrite ſo artificially, that he took a ſolemn Oath upon the Crucifix to be true to his Truſt, and ſo he was diſmiſs'd to *Walane* with a good Sum of Money, from whence he return'd to *Candy*.

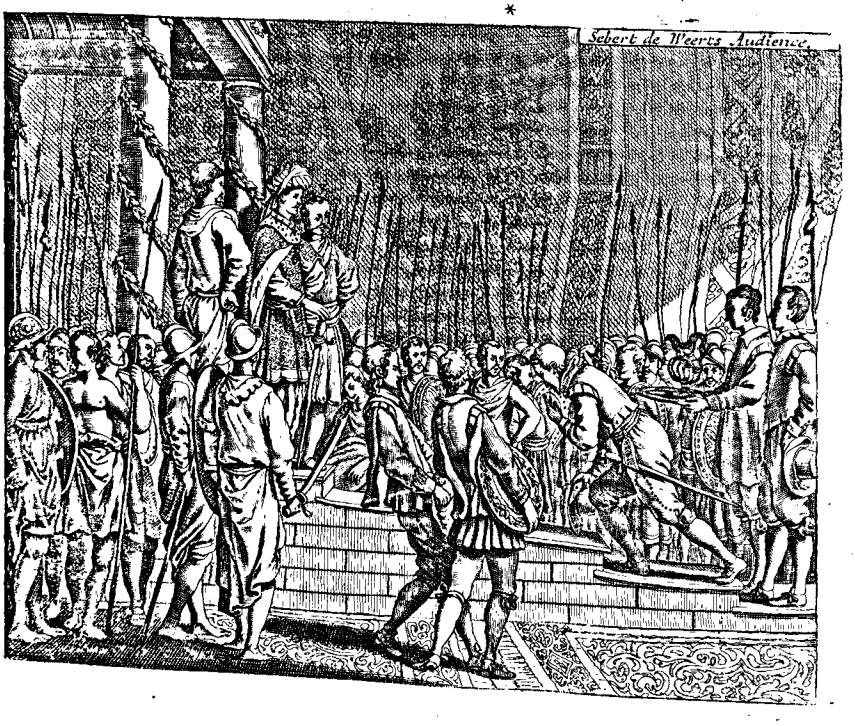
Emanuel Dias pretends to come to the Portugueſes.

602.

He deceives the Portugueſes.

There he gave an account to the Emperor how Meaſures had been concerted betwixt *Don Jeronimo* and him, that a certain Body of Troops ſhould be poſted near the Fort of *Walane*, to be ready at hand to ſurprize that Place as ſoon as they ſhould receive the Signal of the Murder of the Emperor being put in execution; for which purpoſe thoſe who had undertaken that Task were within a limited time to appear near *Candy*. Hereupon the Emperor advanc'd ſecretly in the night time at the head of a good Body of Troops to *Walane*, where the before-mention'd Accomplices appearing according

Betrays them.



ing to agreement, well arm'd with *Japoneſe* Scymeters, call'd *Traſſados*, they were kindly receiv'd by *Emanuel Dias*, and introduc'd into the Emperor's Preſence; but ſoon after were ſeiz'd by his Guard, and the Signal given at the ſame time from the Fort of *Walane*. So that the *Portugueſes* believing every thing to have ſucceeded according to expectation, advanced with all poſſible ſpeed towards the Fort, where they queſtionleſs would have met with ſo warm a reception, that few of them would have return'd home, had not a certain Servant, who had deſerted from the Enemy, diſcover'd the whole matter to them, which made them retreat with all ſpeed towards *Columbo*, leaving all their Baggage and ſome Arms a Prey to the Enemy. *Emanuel Dias* got a vaſt Reputation by this bold Enterprize, and was rewarded with vaſt Preſents by the Emperor; but the five *Portugueſes* were after a long Captivity put to a moſt painful Death. *Baldæus.*

About this time the *Dutch* General *Joris Spilbergen* coming with two Ships on the Coaſt of *Ceylon*, went to *Candy* on purpoſe to ſalute the Emperor in the Name of the States of the *United Provinces*, and his Excellency Prince *Maurice* of *Naſſau*; and was favourably receiv'd by *Don John*, and diſmiſs'd with conſiderable Preſents. Having left *Eraſmus Martens* and Mr. *Hans Pampel*, two very good Muſicians, there, he return'd highly ſatisfy'd, 3 *Sept.* 1603. by the way of *Metecola*, to *Achen*. But the *Portugueſes* were not a little diſſatisfy'd at his arrival there, as fearing that in caſe the *Dutch* ſhould enter into a Confederacy with the Emperor, their Stay would not be long in that Iſland, which proved true afterwards, they being quite chaſed thence in the Year 1658. Joris Spilbergen comes to Ceylon. 1603.

CHAP. VII.

Sebald de Weert *comes to* Ceylon. *Great Diſſatisfaction betwixt the Emperor and him. Is murdered.* Don John *falls ſick, and dies. His Qualifications.*

Sebald de Weert comes to Ceylon.

SEbald *de Weert* and *Vibraads van Warwick* came ſoon after into *Ceylon*, where they entred into agreement with the Emperor. Afterwards they ſail'd to *Achen* to aſſemble more Forces, and landing at *Matecola* with 7 Ships, 26 *April*, 1603. *De Weert* gave notice thereof to the Emperor, who deſired him to come and put an end to the Conferences begun before, for the conſummation of the Treaty. *De Weert* coming into the Emperor's Preſence, was ask'd by him why he had ſet the *Portugueſe* Priſoners at liberty; which, as it had been done unadviſedly, ſo he made the beſt Excuſe he could upon that ſcore, which being not ſatisfactory to the Emperor, caus'd in him no ſmall ſuſpicion; the ſame was much augmented by what his Ambaſſador (who had been with the Vice Admiral *De Weert* at *Achen*) related to him, that during his ſtay with the *Dutch* he could not obſerve but that they were Friends of the *Portugueſes*, whereof they had given ſufficient Proofs, when they ſet the *Portugueſe* Officers that were their Priſoners, above him at the Table. He further added, that he had received information from credible hands, that the Vice-Admiral intended to invite the Emperor and the chiefeſt men of his Court, aboard his Veſſel to a Banquet; but in effect, to detain them Priſoners, and make themſelves Maſters of the Country: That he had thought it his Duty to give this Caution to his Majeſty, that he might not truſt the *Dutch*, and thereby with the reſt of his Princes be drawn into the Snare, to the irreparable ruin of the whole Country.

Difference betwixt the Emperor and him.

Is augmented by the Emperor's Ambaſſador.

Don John finding the Ambaſſador's Reaſons not to be ill grounded, and having conceiv'd no ſmall jealouſy at the Vice-Admiral's diſcharging the *Portugueſe* Priſoners contrary to his Promiſe, it was debated in Council, whether they ought to treat with him any further, or break off the Treaty already begun. After various Deliberations, it was agreed to endeavour to perſwade the Vice-Admiral to ſail with his Fleet to *Gale*, in order (according to mutual Agreement) to beſiege that Place, whereby they would not want opportunity to judg of his Conduct in reference to the *Portugueſes*.

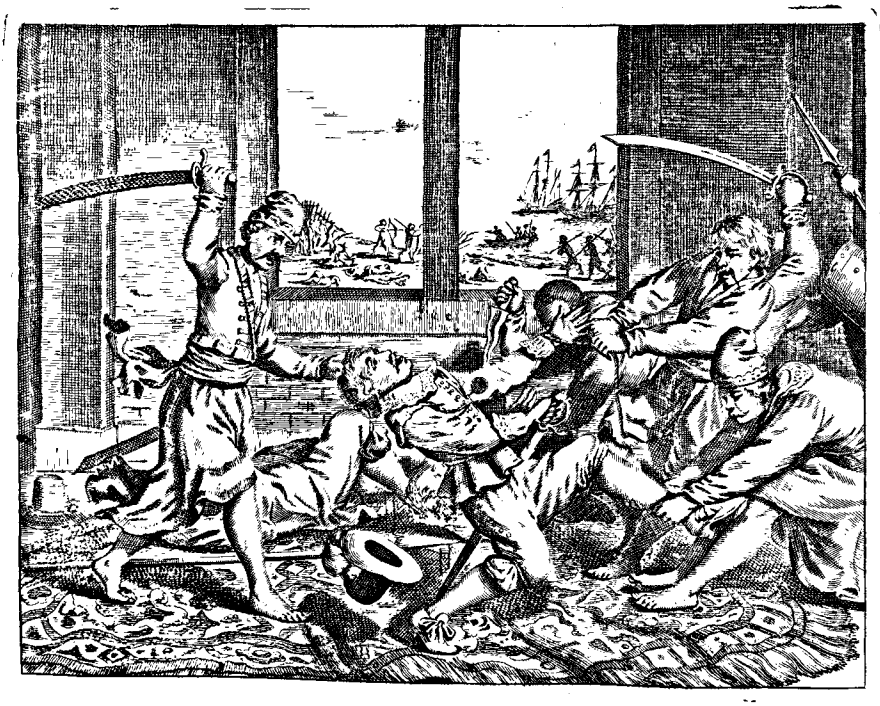
Sebald de Weert ſoon after invited the Emperor aboard his Veſſel, which he refuſed, alledging that the chief Men of the Empire did not approve of a thing never known before. *De Weert* ſeeing the Emperor reſolute in his refuſal, deſir'd

De Weert invites the Emperor on board.

ſir'd him to do him the honour of coming [illegible] only to the Sea-ſhore to view his Ships, and that he had order'd a Tent to be pitch'd there for his Reception. The Emperor not only refuſed alſo this Offer, but his Suſpicion was increaſed, the before-mentioned Ambaſſador whiſpering him in the Ear, *Are you now ſenſible, my moſt Great Lord, that I was in the right, and that they intend to catch you in the Snare?* And the *Dutch* Vice-Admiral *De Weert* being not a little diſturb'd at ſo flat a Denial, told him frankly, that ſince *His Majeſty did not think fit to come either aboard him, or at leaſt to the Shore, he was reſolv'd not to fight for him againſt the* Portugueſes. *Don John*, tho not a little exaſperated at ſo bold a Reply, yet diſſembl'd his Anger, telling him only, that he ſhould purſuant to his Promiſe, ſail to *Gale* with his Fleet, whilſt he would take a turn to *Candy* to viſit the Empreſs, who was alone there, his Brother-in-law having taken a journy to the Frontiers; and that from thence they would haſten with all their Forces to the Siege. *Sebald de Weert* being ſomewhat heated with ſtrong Liquor, reply'd undiſcreetly, *That certainly the Empreſs could not be in diſtreſs for a Man, and that he was reſolv'd not to ſail to* Gale, *or to fight againſt the* Portugueſes, *before the Emperor had done him the honour of viewing his Ships.* *Don John*, who was naturally a cholerick Perſon, was ſo incens'd at this Anſwer, that he left the Room, and in going out ſaid, *Bind the Dog*; whereupon four of his Gentlemen advanced to lay hold of him, but he endeavouring to draw his Sword, and making a noiſe to call his Attendants to his Aſſiſtance (who were left near the Sea-ſide by the Emperor's order) they laid hold of him from behind, and one of them ſplitting his Head with a Scymeter laid him dead upon the ground.

De Weert ſpeaks with too much boldneſs.

Which proves the occaſion of his Death.



The Prince of *Ouve* being the only Perſon who durſt give an account to the Emperor of what had happen'd, he appear'd ſomewhat diſturb'd thereat, asking him, *why they did not make him a Priſoner, according to his order:* whereupon the Prince telling him, that it was impoſſible to be done, becauſe he ſtood upon his Defence; *Don John* reply'd, *Nay, ſince he fought for his Death let him have it,* and of his Attendants.

and let his Attendants follow their Maſter; which was put in Execution immediately, ſcarce any one of thoſe that came aſhore with him eſcaping the fury of theſe Barbarians, except a Boy named *Iſaac Plevier*, a Native of *Fliſſingen*, who was ſtill alive, and in the then Emperor's Service, 22 *Nov.* 1614. Some few alſo had the good fortune of eſcaping by ſwimming to the Ships.

The Emperor ſoon after went to *Candy*, from whence he writ theſe few Lines in *Portugueſe* to the Commanders of the *Dutch* Veſſels; *Que bebem vinho, noa he bon. Deos fes juſtitia; ſe quiſieres pas, pas; ſequires guerra, guerra:* i. e. *Who drinks Wine is not good; God ſhews his Juſtice; If you deſire Peace, you ſhall have Peace; if War, War.*

Don John *falls ſick of a burning Fever.*

However *Don John* did not ſurvive long this barbarous Action, being ſeiz'd with ſo violent a burning Fever, that to cool himſelf he was kept in cold Water without any Relief: He alſo drunk frequently of the Water of the Brook call'd *Hal gradoje*, betwixt *Ouve* and *Matarette*; which being ſo cold, as not to be held in the Mouth without ſhivering, yet could not in the leaſt quench his Thirſt. He often bewail'd the barbarous Murder of the *Dutch*, but ſaid that *De Weert* had no more than what he deſerv'd. Thus languiſhing for ſome time in continual Agonies, he was in no condition to diſpoſe of his Affairs, but ended his Life in Miſery 1604. He left behind him one Son, named *Mahaſtanne Adaſcyn*, and two Daughters, one named *Soria Mahadaſcyn*, i. e. *Beloved Sunlight*, the other *Cathan Adaſcyn*, i. e. *Beloved Peace*; all three born from *Donna Catherina*, call'd by the *Cingaleſes Mahabandige Adaſcyn*, i. e. *Beloved Empreſs.*

Dies. *His Iſſue.*

Don John was a valiant and great Captain, as his whole Life ſufficiently teſtifies; he was tall of Stature, and well limb'd, black, and ruſtical in his Speech: He had gather'd a vaſt Treaſure of Gold and Jewels, and had founded many Forts, Palaces, and publick Inns, call'd by the *Cingaleſes Ambolan*, i. e. *Reſting Places.* He kept a ſtrict Hand in the Government; and as he never pardon'd Crimes, ſo he was very liberal to all ſuch as behav'd themſelves well in their Civil or Military Stations, on whom he confer'd Honours and Riches. He was a compleat Stateſman, and ſtood firm to his Engagements with all Foreign Princes except the *Portugueſes*, upon whom looking with a jealous Eye, he had conceiv'd a mortal hatred. As he deſpiſed all Religions, ſo he allow'd the free exerciſe thereof to all without diſtinction. *Baldæus.* *His Character.*

Diviſions among the Great Men.

The Corps of the deceaſed Emperor was no ſooner interr'd with extraordinary Magnificence, but the Great Men of the Kingdom began to divide into ſeveral Factions, every one aiming at the Crown: The moſt potent among them was the Prince of *Ouve*, who publickly ſet up for the Empire, but was oppoſed by *Cenuwieraat*, Brother-in-law to the late Emperor, who pretended to be Regent for his Nephew (his Brother's Son) till he ſhould come to Age of Maturity. *Donna Catherina* well foreſeeing the ill Conſequences that might enſue upon thoſe Pretenſions, declar'd her ſelf Regent of her young Son, and by taking off the Heads of ſome of the moſt ſuſpected Lords, remov'd the preſent Danger, and appeaſed the Troubles that threatned her Ruin for ſome time.

Appeaſed by D. Catherina.

CHAP. VIII.

Diviſions among the Great Men in Ceylon. *The Prince of* Ouve *murder'd by* Cenuwieraat, *who marries* Donna Catherina *the Empreſs.*

The Portugueſes offer a Confederacy, which is deny'd.

THE *Portugueſes* rejoic'd at the Death of *Don John*, ſent Meſſengers after Meſſengers to *Goa*, to advertiſe the Viceroy of this welcome News, and to deſire his Advice in this juncture. The ſaid Viceroy being of opinion, that they ought to engage in an Alliance with *Donna Catherina* (as a means to make themſelves maſters by degrees of the whole Iſle) the ſame was propoſed accordingly, but rejected by *Donna Catherina*, who told them, that ſhe would remain Sovereign Miſtriſs in her Territories. However the Princes of the *Lowlands* being ſorely oppreſs'd by the Incurſions and Ravages committed in their Territories both by the Prince of *Ouve* and the Emperor's Brother-in-law, hearkened to the Enticements of the *Portugueſes*, and enter'd into a Confederacy with them.

Baldæus. The Empreſs being not a little diſturb'd at theſe Inteſtine Commotions, fearing ſhe ſhould be ſacrificed to the prevailing Party, call'd a General Aſſembly of all the Lords of the Empire, who all appear'd accordingly in Perſon, except the Prince of *Ouve* and *Cenuwieraat Adaſcyn*, who thereupon were by Proclamation declar'd Rebels by the Empreſs, and their Eſtates confiſcated. However *Cenuwieraat* having given ſufficient Reaſons for his Abſence, and the Prince of *Ouve* having at the Interceſſion of his Friends obtain'd his Pardon, they afterwards appear'd at Court, but well guarded, neither Party truſting one another.

Ouve and Cenuwieraat don't appear at Court.

Prince Ouve reſolves to kill Cenuwieraat.

Things thus paſſing on for ſome time, the Prince of *Ouve* reſolv'd, after the Concluſion of the Aſſembly of the States, to rid his hands of *Cenuwieraat*, and afterwards to ſecure to himſelf the Crown by marrying *Donna Catherina:* but *Cenuwieraat* having got ſcent of this Deſign, reſolv'd to be before-hand with him; to accompliſh which, he diſturb'd his thoughts, ſhewing to the Prince of *Ouve* upon all occaſions moſt ſingular marks of his Reſpect and Friendſhip. But having in the mean while ſtrengthned his Intereſt by ingaging moſt of the Great Men to his ſide, he took his opportunity when they were both going to take their leave of the Empreſs: For coming at the outward Gate, the Prince of *Ouve* would have given the Precedency to Prince *Cenuwieraat*, as deſcended from the Imperial Blood; which he refuſing to accept of, told him that it was his due by reaſon of his Age: ſo that, after ſome time ſpent in Compliments, Prince *Ouve* went in firſt, and was inſtantly run through the Back, and laid dead upon the ground by *Cenuwieraat*, who ſaid no more than, *Traitor, thou haſt thy Reward*; and ſo retiring to his People, left the City immediately.

Is murdered by Cenuwieraat.

Thoſe belonging to the Prince of *Ouve* hearing of the Murder of their Maſter, run thro the Streets, crying out, *Treaſon, Treaſon*, which put the City into ſuch an Alarm, that the People (believing the Empreſs was kill'd) cut all to pieces they met with, ſo that the Streets were every where fill'd with Horror and Slaughter, which would have continued longer, had not *Donna Catherina* by ſhewing her ſelf to the People, ſomewhat appeas'd their Fury. However, they not ceaſing to exclaim, and uttering moſt horrid Threats againſt the Prince of *Cenuwieraat*, for the Murder of Prince *Ouve*, the Empreſs, to prevent further Miſchief, thought it her ſafeſt way to prohibit under pain of Death, that any Injury ſhould be done to Prince *Cenuwieraat*, declaring that what had been done was done by her own Orders; which ſomewhat ſettled the Minds of the People.

A Commotion in Candy.

Is appeaſed by the Empreſs.

But her thoughts were very different from what ſhe ſhewed to the People, having conceived ſuch a Horror at the Fact, that ſhe reſolved not to let it go unrevenged upon the Prince *Cenuwieraat*. He being advertiſed hereof by his Friends, kept conſtantly upon his guard, not neglecting in the mean while to have it repreſented to the Empreſs (not without good reaſons) that he had been forced to undertake this Fact for his Self-preſervation and the Welfare of the Kingdom, her Majeſty and his Brother's Children: which had ſo good an effect upon the Empreſs, that by the Mediation of certain Great Men a Match was concluded betwixt the Empreſs and him, as the moſt proper means to reſtore Tranquillity to the Empire. At his Coronation he took upon him the Name *Camapati Mahadaſcyn*.

Cenuwieraat clears himſelf.

Marries the Empreſs.

He no ſooner ſaw himſelf eſtabliſh'd in the Throne, but he apply'd himſelf to the *Hollanders*, in order to enter into an Alliance with them againſt the *Portugueſes*, as will appear out of the Sequel of this Hiſtory.

For their High and Mightineſſes the States-General of the *United Provinces* having 1609. made a Truce for twelve years with Arch-Duke *Albert* and *Iſabella Clara Eugenia* Infanta of *Spain*, by virtue whereof it was among other matters agreed, that the ſame ſhould take place alſo in the *Eaſt-Indies:* The then Directors of that Company being willing to improve this Interval for the better ſettling their Commerce in theſe parts, did petition their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince, to ſend their Letters to all the *Indian* Kings and Princes to enter into a Confederacy with them; which being granted accordingly, the ſaid Letters, with certain Articles and Inſtructions, were by the Directors of the ſaid *Dutch Eaſt-India* Company diſpatch'd immediately to the *Indies* aboard the *Greyhound* Yacht, Capt. *Wemmer van Berchem* Commander: which done, they equipp'd a Squadron of Ships, which ſet ſail out of *Holland* the 30th of *January* under the Command of *Peter Both*, Governor-General of the *Indies*, and arriv'd ſafely the 18th of *November* following at *Bantam*, with full powers from their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince, to enter into ſuch Alliances

Truce betwixt the Spaniards and Dutch.

Alliances with all the *Indian* Kings and Princes, as they thought moſt expedient for the ſettling of their Commerce, and ruining that of the *Portugueſes* in thoſe parts. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. IX.

Letters from the States-General of the United Provinces, *and Prince* Maurice, *ſent by* Marcellus de Boſchhouwer *to the Emperor of* Ceylon.

THE Letters from their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*, to the Emperor of *Ceylon*, were as followeth.

Moſt Potent King!

The Letter of the States-General to the Emperor of Ceylon.

" IT has pleaſed the Almighty God through his Mercy ſo to bleſs our Arms, taken up for the maintaining of the Rights and Privileges of our Native Country againſt the King of *Spain* and *Portugal*, that after a bloody War carried on 42 years ſucceſſively both by Sea and Land, the ſaid King being convinc'd of our Unanimity, Power and Conſtancy, ſupported by the Strength of our Friends and Neighbouring Allies, has thought fit to make us the ſame Offers, for which we had been oblig'd to commence a War, *viz.* to declare us a free People, independent from his Power; and that he was inclin'd to enter upon a Treaty of Peace or Truce with us for a conſiderable number of years. Which Offers (after mature deliberation) having been accepted by us, a Treaty was ſet on foot accordingly with the ſaid King of *Spain* and *Portugal*, which being brought to a Concluſion the *9th* of *April* laſt paſt, a Truce was agreed upon for 12 years next enſuing, by virtue whereof all the Subjects of this State are not only at liberty to carry on their Traffick, Commerce or Navigation in all the Kingdoms and Countries where they uſed to enjoy the ſame before the War, but alſo in all other Countries, Kingdoms or Princes, and with all other Nations or Provinces without exception; and with this Proviſo, that neither the King of *Spain* and *Portugal*, nor his Officers and Subjects, ſhall in reſpect of this Traffick hitherto carried on, or to be carried on for the future, moleſt or be troubleſome (either directly or indirectly) to our Subjects, or thoſe belonging to any King, Prince, or other Superior Power, with whom we have any Commerce; and that your Majeſty, as well as all other Kings, Princes, States and Nations, as well in the *Indies* as in other parts, ſhall be comprehended in the ſaid twelve years Truce, and not be moleſted or attack'd on account of their Friendſhip and Commerce with us. But if (contrary to our Expectation, and the ſolemn Promiſe made by the King of *Spain* and *Portugal*, confirm'd by his Hand and Seal) it ſhould happen that your Majeſty's Subjects and Countries ſhould be involved in any Troubles with the ſaid King, either by Sea or Land, by reaſon of their Friendſhip, Alliance or Commerce with us, your Majeſty may reſt aſſur'd, that we ſhall want neither Will nor Power, neither Ships, Ammunition nor Forces, as well of our own, as of ſuch other Kings and Princes our Allies, as are Guarantees of the ſaid Treaty, and have engag'd to ſee the ſame executed in all its particulars, and conſequently in reſpect of your Majeſty's Dominions, as well as of all other Countries and Dominions both in the *Indies*, and elſewhere, to protect and defend your Majeſty's Dominions and Subjects againſt all Aggreſſors, who upon that account ſhall moleſt them. We don't doubt but that ſome of the King of *Spain* and *Portugal* his Creatures and Officers will be apt to inſinuate into your Majeſty, his Subjects, and other Kings, Princes, Nations and Republicks, a quite different Sentiment of the ſaid Treaty. But we aſſure your Majeſty by theſe Preſents upon our Faith, without any tergiverſation, unto which your Majeſty and Subjects, and all other Kings, Princes, Nations and States may give entire Credit, and deſire that your Majeſty will be pleaſed to rely upon it accordingly, to the firm Settlement of a mutual and good Correſpondency, Navigation and Traffick betwixt our Subjects; we on our ſide

Baldæus. " ſide will not be wanting to entertain " the ſame with the utmoſt Sincerity, " confiding in the Omnipotent God, the " King of Kings, who knows the depth " of the Hearts of Men, that he will be " pleas'd to take both your and our Sub- " jects into his Protection, and increaſe " their well-being thro his Power and " Mercy. Dated in the *Hague*, *Sept.* 15. " 1609.

Subſcribed,

A. Coenders.

And ſomewhat lower,

Your Highneſſes moſt hearty Friends the States-General of the *United Provinces*, by their Order and Command,

C. Aertzen.

" *Maurice* Prince of *Orange*, Earl of " *Naſſau*, *Catzenellebogen*, *Dieſt*, *Vi-* " *anden*, *Meurs*, Marqueſs of *Vere* and " *Vliſſingen*, Governour, Captain and " Admiral General of *Guelders*, *Hol-* " *land*, *Zealand*, *Weſt-Frieſland*, *Zut-* " *phen*, *Utrecht*, *Over-Iſſell*, &c.

Moſt Potent King,

Pr. Maurice's *Letter to the Emperor.* " GOD protect your Majeſty, and " give you all the Bleſſings upon " Earth. We have for a conſiderable " time been engaged in a War againſt " the King of *Portugal*, in order to op- " poſe his ambitious Deſigns, the ſame " Motive having induced your Majeſty to " defend your Dominions againſt his At- " tempts; the Almighty God has been " pleas'd to bleſs our Arms with ſuch " Succeſs, as to oblige our Enemy to a " twelve Years Truce, which by the " Mediation of ſeveral neighbouring " Kings has been brought at laſt to a hap- " py Concluſion: But, finding that the " ſaid King did continue his Warlike " Preparations, and imagining that the " ſame was intended chiefly, in order to " attack your Majeſty and ſome other " Princes in the *Indies*, our Allies (after " being bereaved of our Aſſiſtance) we " thought it abſolutely requiſite, not to " agree to the ſaid Truce, unleſs your " Majeſty were included therein, toge- " ther with the reſt of our Friends and " Allies. Whereupon the ſame was con- " cluded at laſt, under condition, that " we and all our Friends and Allies " ſhould enjoy full Liberty, to ſend our " Ships into what Countries we pleas'd " without any Moleſtation from the *Por-* " *tugueſes*; and that in caſe your Ma- " jeſty, or any other of our Confede- " rates, ſhould be attack'd by him, we " ſhould deem the ſame as done to our " ſelves: to accompliſh which we ſhall " be ready upon all Occaſions to be " aſſiſtant in revenging any Damages done " upon that Score to your Majeſty, or a- " ny other of our Allies. We have " ſome reaſon to ſuppoſe, that the In- " tention of the ſaid King is, to ſepa- " rate by this Artifice your Majeſty from " our Intereſt, which ought to be a mu- " tual caution to us, to be upon our Guard " for the future; for ſince the occaſion " of dividing us by Force of Arms is re- " moved, they will not be ſparing to at- " tain to their end by Fraud and other " Siniſter Means. It is therefore, that " we have order'd our Governour-Gene- " ral, to treat with your Majeſty, and " to find out ſuch means, as may be moſt " proper to prevent their Intrigues, and " to unite us againſt thoſe, whoſe Word " and Faith we dare not altogether rely " upon. We did not think fit to ſtipu- " late in the ſaid Treaty, that his Sub- " jects ſhould be excluded from the " Traffick of *Ceylon*, but left the ſame " to your Majeſty's Diſcretion, not " queſtioning, but that according to " your Wiſdom and Underſtanding, you " will act in that reſpect, ſo as that no- " thing may be tranſacted that may tend " towards the Diſſolution of our Alli- " ance, which we hope the Almighty " will maintain by his Bleſſing, to the " Honour of his Holy Name; and the " Welfare of your Majeſty, and our Be- " loved Subjects.

Dated in the Hague Octob. 5. 1609. *Maurice de Naſſau.*

The Superſcription was as follows.

" To the moſt Illuſtrious and moſt Noble " Emperour of *Ceylon*, King of *Can-* " *dy*, *Trinquenemale*, *Jafnapatnam*, *Set-* " *te-Corles*, *Manaar*, *Chilaw*, *Cota*, " *Batecalo*, *Punte-Gale*, our Beloved " Brother in the Wars.

Theſe Letters were no ſooner brought in the *Greybound* Yacht to *Coromandel*, but the Director of our *Eaſt-India* Company there, named *John van Weſick*, ordered immediately *Marcellus de Boſchhouwer* our Under-Factor, aboard the Ship called the *Black Lyon*, to *Ceylon* along with *Peter Both*, a Native of *Amenfort*, Commodore, bound likewiſe for that Iſland. Marcellus Boſchhouwer *ſent to* Ceylon.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Baldæus.

Marcellus de Boſchhouwer *comes to* Candy. *His Treaty and Agreement with the Emperor of that Iſle.*

Marcellus de Boſchhouwer coming accordingly, *March* 8. 1612. to *Candy*, had Audience of his Imperial Majeſty *Cenuwieraat Adaſcyn*, unto whom having delivered the before-mentioned Letters, the Emperor received him with all imaginable Demonſtrations of Joy, placing him on his ſide on a Chair of Gold, clad in a White Garment: Whereupon the Treaty being begun, immediately the ſame was concluded *May* 11. following, upon the following Conditions.

I. This Confederacy ſhall be kept inviolably, and ſtand firm for the future.

II. All Hoſtilities ſhall ceaſe, and a general Amneſty be granted.

III. In caſe the *Portugueſes* ſhould attack his Majeſty, the States-General ſhall be obliged to aſſiſt his Majeſty with all their Forces.

IV. His Majeſty grants leave to the *Dutch*, to erect a Fortreſs at *Cotiarum*, provided the King of *Cotiarum* may enjoy his Cuſtoms and other Revenues.

V. The Emperor obliges himſelf to furniſh Bricks, Lime and other Materials for the building of the ſaid Fortreſs, as alſo Labourers to be paid by the Company.

VI. His Imperial Majeſty ſhall take care to have Ware-houſes of Stone or Brick erected at *Candy*, for the Security of our Company againſt Fire.

VII. His Majeſty ſhall take our Ships and Seamen under his Protection, and defend them to the utmoſt of his Power againſt the *Portugueſes*, as the *Hollanders* ſhall be obliged to do the ſame, in reſpect of his Majeſty's Subjects.

VIII. His Majeſty obliges himſelf to tranſact nothing in all Military Affairs, that have any relation to our Company, without the Knowledg of their Officers; for which purpoſe two *Hollanders* ſhall ſit conſtantly in his Council of War, to be preſent at all Debates, and other Matters to be tranſacted there.

IX. He engages himſelf to have all the Merchandizes of the *Dutch* carried upon Beaſts fit for Carriage to *Candy*, and ſuch Commodities as are bought there, to be carried back to the Sea-ſhoar at *Cotiarum*, at his own Charge.

X. In caſe any Veſſels, Sloops or Boats, ſhould happen to be caſt away on theſe Coaſts, his Majeſty's Subjects ſhall be obliged to ſave as much of the Goods as they can, without any Reward, for the uſe of our Company.

XI. The *Dutch* ſhall be permitted to export their Merchandizes, without exception, Cuſtom free.

XII. All and every one of his Majeſty's Subjects ſhall be at Liberty to traffick with our Company.

XIII. His Imperial Majeſty obliges himſelf to purchaſe any Rarities, or other uncommon Commodities at ſuch a rate, as may bear a proportion, in reſpect of other Commodities agreed upon with our Company in their Exchanges.

XIV. His Majeſty engages to deliver yearly all the Cinamon that is to be got to our Company, to be paid either in Money or in Merchandizes, according to the uſual Exchange.

XV. It is agreed, that not any ſorts of Merchandizes ſhall be delivered to ſuch Perſons, as are entred into Contracts of Commerce with the *Hollanders*, before the Natives of *Holland* are ſatisfyed in this Point; and in caſe the contrary be prov'd, their Perſons and Goods ſhall be detain'd, till they have made good the ſaid Contract.

XVI. His Majeſty ſhall not allow free Commerce to any of the *European* Nations, without peculiar Conſent from their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*.

XVII. His Majeſty obliges himſelf to furniſh Timber and other Materials, for the building of Veſſels, Yachts and Boats, to be delivered upon the Shoar.

XVIII. All Priſoners taken on both ſides ſhall be releaſed.

XIX. All the Officers of the *Dutch* Company ſhall be exempted from his Majeſty's Juriſdiction; and if any of them happen to commit any Treſpaſs, they are to be puniſhed by the Heads of the *Dutch* Company, as his Majeſty's Subjects ſhall enjoy the ſame Benefit.

XX. His Majeſty obliges himſelf to diſpoſe of all his Precious Stones and Pearls to the *Hollanders*, as they on their ſide engage to ſell all their extraordinary Jewels, Precious Things and other Rarities,

ties, at a reaſonable Rate; but in caſe any difference ſhould ariſe upon that account, the ſame ſhall not be alledged as a Reaſon for the diſſolving of this Confederacy. *Baldæus.*

XXI. For the ſame Reaſon his Majeſty and the States-General, ſhall maintain this Alliance inviolably, and aſſiſt one another upon all Occaſions.

XXII. All Acts of Hoſtility committed on both ſides, ſhall be buried by a general Oblivion.

XXIII. No body, except his Majeſty, ſhall have Power given him to coin Mony, or to enhaunce the Valre of the Coin, beyond what has been agreed betwixt his Majeſty and the *Hollanders*, in proportion to the Mony tranſported hither from *Holland*; and if any of his Majeſty's, or our Subjects are found to have coin'd falſe Money, they are to be puniſhed with Death.

XXIV. His Majeſty and the *Hollanders* ſhall agree upon the moſt proper Methods for ſettling both the larger and leſſer Coin, for the promoting of Traffick.

XXV. Such Coin as ſhall be adjudged current by both Parties, ſhall be changed every three Years by turns, once at *Candy*, and the next three Years in one of our Places.

XXVI. The Coin ſhall be either enhaunced or lowered, according to the preſent exigency of Affairs in time of War.

XXVII. All the *Indian* Nations ſhall be free to come and traffick in their own Veſſels, in his Majeſty's Dominions, without paying any Cuſtoms, for the ſpace of three Years next enſuing.

XXVIII. After the Expiration of the Term of theſe three Years, his Majeſty ſhall be at Liberty to enter into a Treaty with the Plenipotentiaries of their High and Mightineſſes, concerning the Rate of Cuſtoms of all Commodities.

XXIX. His Majeſty agrees, that their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Pr. of *Orange*, ſhall enjoy one Moiety of all the Cuſtoms, for which purpoſe certain Commiſſioners and Clerks ſhall be appointed by the Conſent of both Parties.

XXX. All the Prizes taken on the Coaſt of *Ceylon*, ſhall be divided ſhare and ſhare alike, betwixt your Majeſty on the one ſide, and their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange* on the other ſide; provided that what Priſoners are taken, ſhall be ranſom'd, but never put to Death.

XXXI. All Factors or other Officers belonging to their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*, ſhall give Paſſes to ſuch of your Majeſty's Subjects as intend to traffick in thoſe Parts; as his Majeſty ſhall do the ſame, without which they ſhall be liable to be ſeized, and their Goods confiſcated.

XXXII. His Majeſty, their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*, ſhall be obliged to take effectual Care, to have the Roads and Paſſages both by Sea and Land, in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, to be kept well and clear from Highwaymen and Pirates; for which purpoſe his Majeſty obliges himſelf to furniſh Timber, for the building of Galleys and other Veſſels, for the clearing of the Seas; and in caſe any Highwaymen or Pirates are taken, they ſhall be puniſhed with Death.

XXXIII. His Imperial Majeſty, their High and Mightineſſes, and his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*, do promiſe to keep this Confederacy inviolably, to the utmoſt of their Power, nor to ſuffer the ſame to be violated by their Subjects; to inflict ſevere Puniſhments upon ſuch as *ſhall* go about to violate it, and give full Satisfaction for all Damages ſuſtained upon that account.

CHAP. XI.

Marcellus de Boſchhouwer *deſires leave to depart, which the Emperor will not conſent to. Has conſiderable Dignities beſtowed upon him.* The Portugueſes *rob and murder the* Dutch *at* Cotiarum. *The Emperor convenes the Eſtates of the Empire. The* Portugueſes *routed near* Jafnapatnam.

Boſchhouwer *deſires to be diſmiſſed.*

THE Articles of this Confederacy being thus concluded, Mr. *Boſchhouwer* deſir'd leave from his Imperial Majeſty to depart, with the Elephants that were ready to carry certain Commodities to *Tegnapatan*, for the uſe of the *Dutch* Factory there; from whence he might go to *Paliacatta*, to give the *Dutch* Governor of that Place an account of his Negotiation. But the Emperor and his Coun-

Which is denied. Council were not willing to conſent to his Diſmiſſion, alledging, that ſince according to one of the before-mention'd Articles, they were obliged not to tranſact any thing in Warlike Affairs, without the Knowledg and Conſent of the *Dutch*, it was requiſite he ſhould ſtay with them for that purpoſe. Theſe Reaſons prevailed ſo far with Mr. *Boſchhouwer*, that he reſolv'd to ſtay; and the Emperor heaped Favours after Favours upon him, having created him Prince of *Migonne*, *Kockelecorle*, *Ananagepora*, and *Miwitigael*, Knight of the Order of the Golden Sun, Preſident of the Council of War, the ſecond Perſon in his Privy Council, and Lord High Admiral: and he knew ſo well how to improve the Emperor's good Opinion of his Perſon, that ſcarce any thing of Moment was undertaken without his Advice.

Has great Dignities beſtowed upon him.

Portugueſes *murder and plunder the* Dutch.

In the Year 1611. *Jun.* 20. the *Portugueſes* took the Field, with a Body of 1000 *Portugueſes*, and 3000 *Indians* their Allies, under the Command of *Simon Corre*; and having got a certain *Candineſe* for their Guide, they march'd thro unknown ways to *Cotiarum*, where they ſurpriz'd the *Dutch* belonging to Mr. *Boſchhouwer*, put them all to the Sword, and plunder'd the Place, and then retir'd with all Speed to *Sette Corle*, for fear of being overtaken by the Emperor's Forces.

For the Emperor had no ſooner notice of their March, but he ſent a Body of 5000 men, commanded by *Maraſinge Atſile*, an old experienc'd Captain, and under him *Mayndappo* and *Vire Segre*, two brave Noblemen, to *Cotiarum*; but coming too late, they purſu'd the *Portugueſes* Day and Night, till they overtook them near *Sette Corle*, kill'd 23 *Portugueſes*, 600 *Indians*, ſet ſeveral Villages on fire, and return'd with many Priſoners and a good Booty to *Candy*.

Difference betwixt 2 Brothers.

About the ſame time an Envoy of the King of *Palugam* came to Court, repreſenting that *John Sangati* his Maſter's Brother, and King of *Podere*, was entred into an Alliance with the *Portugueſes*, in order to deliver all his Harbours into their Hands, and afterwards to carry on a War againſt his Imperial Majeſty with their Aſſiſtance. Hereupon the King of *Podere* being ſummon'd to appear at Court at a prefix'd time, he ſent an Envoy to clear his Innocence with the Emperour, unto whom he repreſented the Perfidiouſneſs of the King of *Palugam*, who had kill'd his own Brother at Table, for no other reaſon, but that he might be ſole Maſter of the whole Kingdom, offering beſides to remain there as a Hoſtage for his Maſter's Fidelity. The Emperor, tho not very well ſatisfy'd with the King of *Podere*, by reaſon of his not appearing in Perſon; yet conſidering, that what had been alledged by his Envoy, concerning the Murder of his Elder Brother, was no more than Truth, and that certain Differences were ariſen lately betwixt them about the Cuſtoms of the River of *Palugam*, one half whereof was allotted by the Eſtates to the King of *Podere*, he diſmiſſed the Envoy well ſatisfied, reſolving to ſuſpend his Judgment, till time ſhould unfold the matter.

Baldæus.

The Emperor convenes the Eſtates.

The Emperor having bent his Thoughts upon a War, he convened the Eſtates of the Empire, *viz.* *Idele* King of *Cotiarum*, *Celle Wandaar* King of *Palugam*, *Comaro Wandaar* King of *Batecalo*, *Corre Witty Raelhamy* Prince of *Ouve*, *Marcellus de Boſchhouwer* Prince of *Migonne*, *Metur Raelhamy* Prince of *Vellene*, *Jallago de Rale* Prince of *Cotomale*, *Mewater Rale* Prince of *Mewater*, *Wik Veneſinge* Earl of *Quatre Corle*, *John Sangati* Prince and Lord of *Podere*, *Cole Rale* Duke of *Ode*, *Jattenore* Brother of the Prince *Jalagode*, *Gael Heberad* Governour of the County of *Harcipate*, *Corope* Governour of the County of *Odogo d'Askeri*, *Wanategere* Governour of the Province of *Matere*. In the ſame Aſſembly appear'd alſo the Governours and Commanders in chief of the leſſer Provinces, and the Ambaſſador of the King of *Jafnapatnam*, the King of *Patania* being the only one, who tho ſummoned by a peculiar Letter, dated *July* 16. 1611. made ſeveral frivolous Excuſes for his not appearing there.

What was concluded there.

Among other matters of the greateſt Moment, it was reſolved in this Aſſembly to raiſe an Army of 50000 Men, one half whereof was to be employed in the Siege of *Puntegale*, under the Conduct of the Prince of *Ouve*; the other againſt *Walane*, under the Command of the Prince of *Migonne*: And in caſe they met with good Succeſs, both Armies were to join and attack *Columbo*. For the carrying on of this Enterprize, 4 Millions and 500000 Livers were to be raiſed. Concerning the Differences betwixt the King of *Palugam*, and his Brother *John Sangati*, they were both enjoin'd under pain of Death, not to hurt one another, till the matter could be further enquired into.

A High Court of Judicature was alſo ſettled, to examine and decide all ſuch Matters, as before that time uſed to be de-

Baldæus. determined by the Emperor and his Privy Council. The Judges of this Court were, the Prince of *Migonne* President, the Prince of *Ouve*, the Prince of *Velaren*, and the Prince of *Cottomale*. None of the inferiour Courts were to take cognizance of criminal Matters, without the approbation of this High Court, from whence no Appeal was to be allowed. The Prince of *Ouve*, the Prince of *Migonne*, the Prince of *Velaren*, the Prince of *Cottomale*, and the Earl of *Quatre Corle*, were appointed Members of his Majesty's Privy Council.

It was also further decreed, that not only Liberty should be granted, but also Houses and Lands allotted to such Seamen as would settle in his Majesty's Dominions; by which means they proposed to get in time a sufficient number of able Seamen to man their Gallies, of which three were order'd to be built immediately, with some other Vessels, to cruize upon the *Portugueses* on the Coast of *Orixa* and *Bengale*, &c. It was also agreed, that no Quarter should be given to the *Portugueses* and their Confederates, unless they were Women or Children; and that a Pardon should be published for all Deserters that would return within 60 Days into his Majesty's Service, which was done accordingly at *Candy*, 23 *July*, 1612.

Portugueses march to Jafnapatnam. Whilst these things were transacting, Advice was brought that the *Portugueses* were on their march towards *Jafnapatnam*; whereupon the Emperor having sent part of his Forces design'd for the Expedition against *Walane* and *Gale*, to observe their Motions, they attack'd the Reer of the *Portugueses*, who imagining no otherwise than that the whole Force of the Emperor was on their back, were soon brought into confusion; but finding their Mistake, rallied again, and retreated towards *Columbo*, making themselves Masters in their March thither of the Dukedom of *Migonne*, where they committed all manner of Cruelties. *Are beaten.* The *Modeliar* or Governor being accus'd of having betray'd his Trust, sent a Letter to the Prince of *Migonne*, wherein he declared, that after having sustained three Assaults, he was forced to surrender; adding, that they were ready to shake off the *Portugueſe* Yoke with the first opportunity that offered, tho the *Portugueses* had taken most of their Wives and Children, (and among the rest the Governour's Wife) along with them, as Hostages and Pledges of their Fidelity, to *Columbo*. They sent also a Present to their Prince, as a Token of their Obedience. The Letter was dated 30 *Aug.* 1612. by the Command of the chief *Visego Modeliar*.

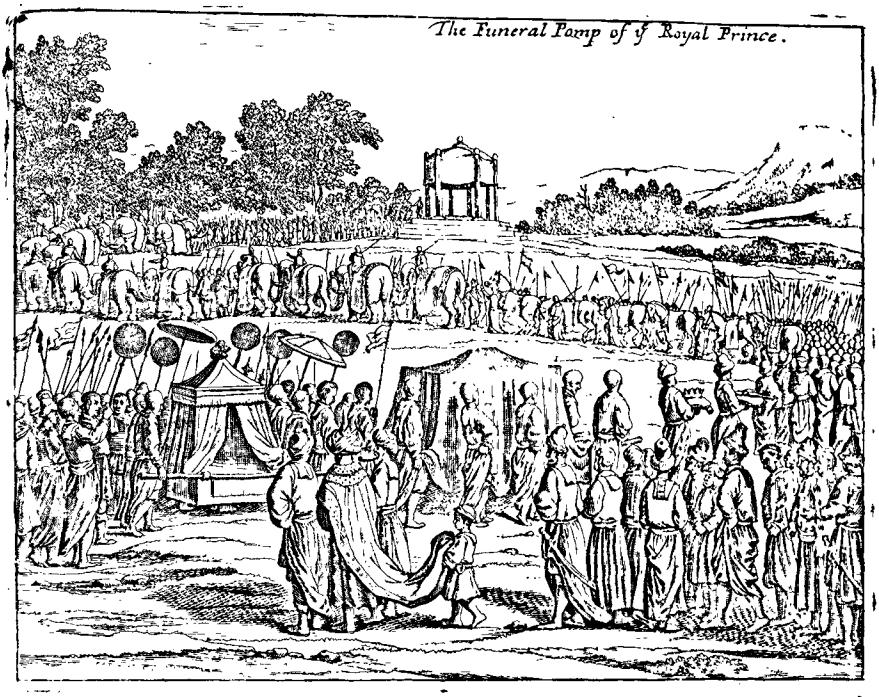
The Prince, after having consulted about this Letter with the Emperor, sent answer, that he was extremely concerned at the loss of his Country and Subjects, exhorting them to persist in their Fidelity, and that as soon as possible he would appear among them at the Head of the Imperial Army.

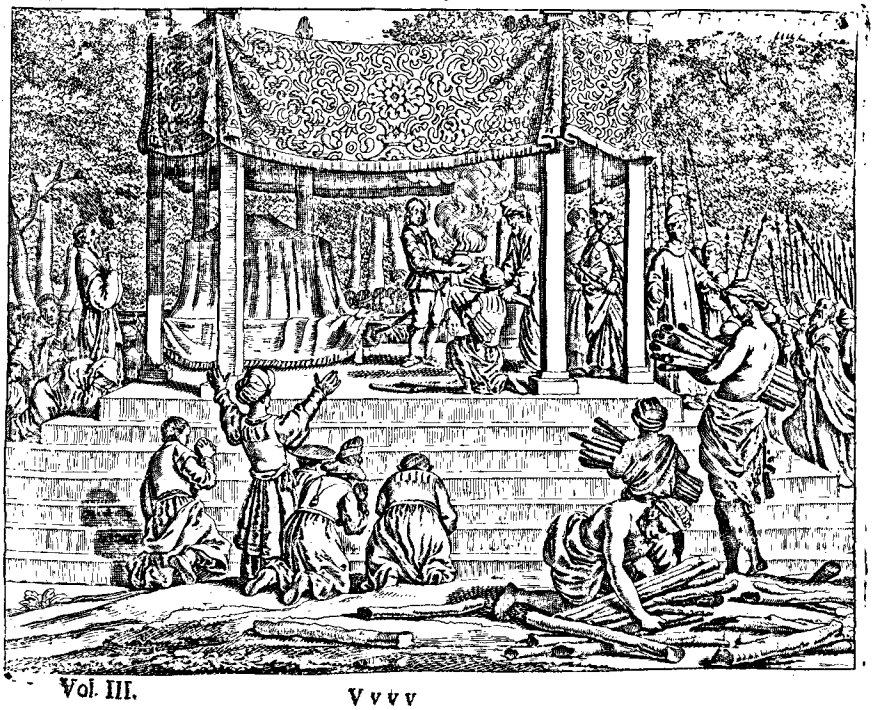
CHAP. XII.

The Death of the Hereditary Imperial Prince. His Funeral. The King of Panua *rebels, is taken Prisoner, and kill'd, with all his Adherents.*

Death of the Imperial Prince. ABout the same time the Hereditary Imperial Prince *Mahastanne*, Son of the late Emperor *Don John*, died after a Sickness of six days. The occasion of his Death was variously reported; but the general Opinion was that he had been poisoned by *Cenuwieraat* his Father-in-law, to make way for his eldest Son *Comara Singastanne* to succeed him in the Empire. Certain it is that his Death was generally lamented, the Guards were doubled all round the Imperial Palace, and great Preparations made for his Funeral, which was perform'd the 23d of *August* in the Afternoon. The Empress especially gave most evident Marks of her Grief, calling him at parting, *Her own precious Flesh and Blood, her only Hopes, Life and Satisfaction*, vowing to revenge his Death, and not to take any Nourishment, that she might follow her Son. She did afterwards fall into a Swoon, and was fain to be remov'd out of the Room by her two Daughters, who also were melted in Tears.

The Corps of the deceased Prince being expos'd to the view of the People, they broke out into most lamentable Exclamations, crying, *Where is the Traitor that murder'd our Prince? We will tear him to pieces.* So that the Emperor fearing a general Insurrection, got the Prince of *Migonne* and the Prince of *Ouve* to tell them,


The Funeral Pomp of ſ Royal Prince.



them, that the Prince was not poiſon'd, but died of a Fever, which ſomewhat appeas'd the Tumult. The Corps being put into a Mourning Herſe adorn'd with Gold and precious Stones, was carried to the place of Burial in the following manner:

Baldæus.

His Funeral.

First of all went the Prince's Muſicians, clad in black *Gingam* or Linen; then the Muſqueteers and Pikemen, three in a Rank: Theſe were follow'd by the Shield-bearers and Halberdiers with their Halberds downwards: After theſe came 40 War-Elephants guided by as many Gentlemen, and 8 *Perſian* Horſes led by eight Knights of the *Golden Sun*; and after theſe the Grooms of the Bed-chamber all richly attir'd. Then came the Scepter and Crown, carried each upon a black Velvet Cuſhion, and the Prince's Arms. Theſe were followed by the Corps attended by eight of the greateſt Lords of the Country; then the Empreſs's *Palankin* or Litter attended by 16 with Fans, four Umbrello's, and eight *Betel* Boxes, as alſo a Noſegay of Gold to be worn by the Emperor only. After theſe came the Emperor ſupported by the Princes of *Migonne* and *Mewater*, follow'd by the chief Lords of the Empire and the Governours of the Provinces. They paſs'd along the Streets under ſeveral Arches made of fine Stuffs and Plaiſter-work. The Corps being depoſited on the Place of Burial with a deal of Solemnity, the Prieſts mutter'd out certain Prayers, and the common People expreſs'd their Sorrow by frequent mournful Outcries.

The Place of Burial.

The Place of Burial (called *Hona* by the *Cingaleſes*) was a four-Square raiſed from the Ground ſeven Steps high; It was level on the top, and adorned with ſeveral Rows of Trees. In the midſt of it was the Grave, into which the Lords who had carried the Corps threw a great quantity of Sandal-wood, and ſweet-ſcented Spices; and having put the Corps upon it cover'd with the ſame Spices, as high as a Man could reach, they alſo poured in among it three large Veſſels full of Oil of Cinnamon, and another with Butter. Over the Grave was erected a large Canopy riſing up like a Pyramid of ſeven Foot high, under which ſtood the Lords whilſt the Ceremony laſted: which being over, the Prince of *Migonne* took a Bundle of Straw, which was given him by the Prince of *Amme*, and a golden Chafindiſh with Fire, and two lighted Torches, and being attended by the ſaid Prince of *Amme* and two Gentlemen of the Bedchamber, ſet fire to the Spices and Corps in the Grave, under the moſt dreadful Ejaculations and Outcries of the People, which laſted till the Corps was quite burnt to Aſhes; which done, the whole Train return'd to Court to condole the Empreſs and her Daughters.

His Corps burnt.

The King of Panua joins with the Portugueſes.

In *September* Advice being brought to Court that the King of *Panua* had join'd the *Portugueſes* againſt the Emperor, and that the King of *Cotiarum* intended to follow his Footſteps, the Emperor with the Advice of his Privy Council ſent his Letters dated the 23 *Sept.* to both theſe Kings, to make their perſonal Appearance at Court within 16 days, under the forfeiture of all their Eſtates, and Baniſhment. The King of *Cotiarum* happening to be ill at that time, he ſent his Uncle to know the reaſon of his being ſummoned to Court, and thereupon appeared in Perſon on the 9th *Oct.* following, giving ſuch Proofs of his Innocence, that he was ſoon clear'd by the Emperor. But the King of *Panua* knowing himſelf guilty, did not think fit to appear; ſo that it was reſolved to reduce him by Force, his Defection having put a ſtop to the Expedition againſt *Walane* and *Gale*. Accordingly the Princes of *Migonne* and *Ouve*, at the head of an Army of 35000 men, march'd 1 *Jan.* 1613. directly towards *Panua*, with a reſolution to deſtroy all with Fire and Sword: But the Inhabitants finding themſelves not in a condition to oppoſe ſo formidable a Force, ſent Deputys with Preſents to the Princes, deſiring they might be ſpared, as having no hand in this Defection; which being granted, they were amerced in 457000 *Larynen* (beſides their yearly Tribute) amounting juſt to two Months Pay of the whole Army, and to give Hoſtages for the King's Appearance at Court in 5 or 6 days after.

Appears at Court, and is accus'd of Treaſon.

Accordingly he was no ſooner come there, but being brought before the Privy Council, his Accuſation was read to him in Writing, *viz.* "That he had entred in- "to an Engagement with the *Portugueſes* "againſt the Emperor, and was to have "marry'd the young Princeſs *Hantan* "*Adaſcyn*, and with her as a Dowry the "Kingdoms of *Batecalo* and *Palugam*: "That he had deſpiſed the Emperor's "Order in not coming to Court; and "hired a certain Ruffian for 5000 *Larynes* "to murder the Emperor, with a Pro- "miſe of 20000 more, and certain Poſ- "ſeſſions, after the ſame was accom- "pliſhed, as appeared both by his own "Hand-writing, and the Confeſſion of "the Ruffian. Which being ſo evident

* againſt

againſt him, that he had ſcarce any thing to reply, he acknowledg'd himſelf guilty, craving the Emperor's Mercy, in regard of his being deſcended from the Imperial Blood, and of the many Services done to the Crown by his Anceſtors.

Is committed to Priſon. He was by Order from the Council ordered to be committed Priſoner in the Caſtle of *Meddema Honore*, from whence he ſent a moſt ſubmiſſive Letter to the Emperor, imploring his Mercy to ſave his Life, and to condemn him to a perpetual Impriſonment. About 62 Perſons found to have been his Accomplices in this Conſpiracy were ſent to other Priſons, and afterwards puniſh'd with Death.

His Trial. The 20*th* of *March* being the Day appointed for the Trial of the King and his Accomplices, 50 Lords of the Empire appointed for that purpoſe, after a full Hearing found them all guilty of High Treaſon, and accordingly pronounc'd the *Sentence.* following Sentence: That the King of *Panua* ſhould be beheaded, and the reſt be thrown before the Elephants, and all their Goods and Eſtates be confiſcated. This Sentence being ſigned by his Imperial Majeſty, was put in execution accordingly the 24*th* of *March* following in the Forenoon.

Execution. Accordingly a Scaffold cover'd with White (the Royal Colour here) being erected in the Caſtle of *Meddema Honore*, the King was brought thither, and ſeated *Behaviour.* himſelf upon a gilt Chair. He at firſt appear'd undaunted; but being depriv'd of all his Dignities, in the view of the People, and the Sentence read to him, he began to bewail his unfortunate Condition, asking frequently whether there were no hopes of a Pardon? Being told no, he ſuffer'd himſelf to be undreſs'd by ſome of his Gentlemen of the Bedchamber (who were all in Teats) unto whom he made rich Preſents of Jewels, and *Baldæus.* order'd his Chancellor (who had not had the leaſt Knowledg of this Deſign) to bind up his Eyes. In the mean while the the King took ſome *Betel* and *Arek*, and then ſaid, *Why do we ſtay? Unfortunate I,* *Specul.* *what am I reduc'd to!* Then taking three turns round the Scaffold, he ſat down, and taking a little *Betel* told the Spectators, *I am a King deſcended from the Imperial Blood; but ſince I muſt die, this is my only Requeſt, that my dead Corps may not be left to the management of vile Perſons, but be honoured with a Royal Sepulture.* Which being promis'd by ſome of the Lords there preſent, he ſeem'd to be well ſatisfy'd, and having ask'd their Pardon for what had paſs'd, he had his Eyes ty'd up, and laying his Head upon a Block, it was ſever'd from the Body, which (at the Interceſſion of the ſaid Lords) had a Royal Sepulture allowed it by the Emperor.

After his Death *Samatway* the King's *His Succeſſor.* Uncle being with a general approbation declared his Succeſſor, marched at the head of an Army of 50000 men, the 8*th* of *April*, to *Panua*, to take poſſeſſion of that Kingdom, which he found involved in no ſmall Troubles, there being a ſtrong Party who oppoſed his Succeſſion: But 125 of the Ringleaders being cut to pieces by the new King's Forces, the reſt reſt thought fit to ſubmit. So ſoon as he found himſelf in the quiet Poſſeſſion of the Kingdom, he ſent back the Forces, as alſo the Arrears of the annual Tribute, beſides conſiderable Preſents. The *Portugueſes* not long after ſent their Deputys to entice thoſe of *Panua* with vaſt Promiſes to engage with them afreſh; but theſe were ſent back without being heard.

CHAP. XIII.

The Emperor ſits down before Walane. *The Prince of* Migonne *equips a Squadron of Ships. The Empreſs falls ſick, diſpoſes of her Affairs, and dies.*

The Emperor beſieges Walane. IT was not long after that the Emperor with a good Army form'd the Siege of *Walane*, and took the Caſtle by Aſſault; but his Souldiers being too intent upon the Plunder, the *Portugueſes* recovered themſelves, and beat them from thence. The Emperor being highly exaſperated at this Miſcarriage, cauſed 105 *Cingalaſes* to be hang'd, which proved of the worſe conſequence, becauſe the *Portugueſes* receiving freſh Succours ſoon after, he was forc'd to raiſe the Siege. *Raiſes the Siege.*

In the mean time the Prince of *Migonne* had not been idle to equip ſome Gallies and *Fuſtes* (ſmall Veſſels) to cruize upon the *Portugueſes* between the Cape of *Comoryn* and the Iſle of *Ceylon*. The ſame ſet ſail the 16*th* of *May* out of the Harbour of *Cotiarum*, under the Command of a Nephew of the Prince of *Ouve*, as Admi- *A Squadron of Ships ſent a cruiſing.*

ral, and *Wandige Nay Hanni* Vice-Admi-
Baldæus. ral. The firſt Gally was called the *Candy*, one *Sanderappo* Captain. The 2d call'd the *Holland*, *Kiſiena* Captain. The 3d the *Migonne*, one *Dingappe* Captain. The 4th called the *Fortune*, one *Ordia* Captain. 5th the *Good Luck*, one *Marasinge* Captain. 6th, The *Faithful*, commanded by Captain *Sanderappo*. Theſe Ships returned the 6th of *March*, 1613. with a great Booty amounting to near 600000 Livers. For they had taken two *Portugueſe* Veſſels near *Chilau* to the North of *Negumbo* and *Manaar*, called *Pataſios*; and three *Fuſtes*, beſides 20 Barks which they ſet on fire. Not far from *Calecut* and the Cape of *Comoryn* they took another Ship, whereof they threw (according to Order) the *Portugueſes* over-board, forced another aſhoar, and took a *Mooriſh* Veſſel richly laden coming from *Ormus*, and bound for *Cochin*, and another *Portugueſe* Ship coming from *Bengal*. The *Portugueſes* and *Miſtices* of all which they threw into the Seas, keeping only the *Portugueſe* Women and *Negros*. In the Road of *Panaca* they met with another *Portugueſe* Ship riding at anchor, deſerted by the Ship's Crew, which they brought into the Harbour of *Cotiaram*. His Majeſty order'd the Booty to be diſtributed among the Officers and Seamen.

1613. *The Empreſs falls ſick.*

In July 1613. the Empreſs *Donna Catherina* being with child, fell dangerouſly ill of a Fever: She ſent for the Prince of *Migonne* and the Prince of *Ouve*, unto whom (after having taken an Oath of Secrecy from them) ſhe diſcovered the whole Sentiments of her Heart, and (with the Emperor's Conſent) conſtituted them Governours of her Children. She had conceived ſuch an immoderate Grief at the Death of her eldeſt Son, the Prince of *Mahaſtanne*, that ſhe would ſcarce take any Suſtenance. She declared, that nothing troubled her more, than that before her Death ſhe ſhould not ſee the Downfal of the *Portugueſes* in *Ceylon*; and would often, with a great deal of eagerneſs enquire, whether the expected Succours were not arrived out of *Holland*. Such was her Grief, as I told you before, about the loſs of her Son, that ſhe would ſcarce reſt day or night; which had queſtionleſs prov'd the occaſion of this Diſtemper: and ſhe was no leſs troubled how to diſpoſe of her Children after her Death; ſhe bequeathed to them all her Jewels and Treaſure ſhe had been gathering for a conſiderable time; as alſo certain Legacies to all her Servants, and reſtored all her Slaves of both Sexes to their Liberty.

Takes care of her Children and Servants.

Her Sickneſs increaſing daily, ſhe was carried from *Welmantotte* (her ordinary Reſidence) to *Modeni*, where in the Preſence of the Emperor, ſhe charged her eldeſt Son to revenge the late deceaſed Prince's Death upon the Phyſician, who ſhe ſaid was the Author thereof: But as ſhe was ſometimes not well in her Senſes, ſo this was not much regarded. In the mean while the Emperor took care to prevent all Diſorders which might be occaſioned by the Empreſs's Death, by reinforcing the Frontier Gariſons, and doubling the Guards in other Places. The Empreſs having pretty well recover'd her Senſes, ſent for her five Children, *Comara Singaſtanne* Hereditary Prince of the Crown, and his two Brothers *Janiere Aſtanne* and *Lamäit*, and the two Princeſſes *Mahadaſcyn* and *Hantan Adaſcyn*: She claſp'd them one after another with Tears in her Eyes, in her Arms, and kiſſing them, ſaid, *See here, you deareſt part of my own Fleſh and Blood, your Mother that has brought you into the World, but muſt leave you in a little time.* Then ſhe call'd to her the two before-mentioned Princes, unto whom ſhe deliver'd her Children in theſe Words: *I now deliver to you the deareſt Pledges I have; take care of them as of your own Eyes, and retaliate upon them the many Obligations you have received at our hands.* Then turning towards the Emperor, ſhe told him, *You are the occaſion of my Death.* Which ſo ſenſibly touch'd him (he loving the Empreſs extremely) that ſoon after it threw him into a violent Diſtemper. After that ſhe ſcarce ſpoke to any body, except to the Prince of *Ouve*, unto whom ſhe declared her Sorrow for having adored and ſacrificed to the Pagan Idols, contrary to her better Knowledg, having been educated a Chriſtian, telling him, that ſhe ſaw the Devils ready to ſtrangle her. The Prince of *Migonne* (upon whom ſhe fix'd her Eyes all the while) anſwered her, *That the infernal Spirits had no Power over a Chriſtian, provided they heartily repented of their Sins; that therefore ſhe ought to reſt ſatisfy'd, and to implore God's Mercy for her Soul, for Jeſus Chriſt's ſake.* She returned for anſwer, *I am a Chriſtian, and would willingly pray, I deſire you to pray with me.* The Prince of *Migonne* pray'd aloud, *Our Father*, and the 12 Articles of the Chriſtian Creed: Unto which the Empreſs reply'd in *Portugueſe*, *O Chriſti Ajuda mi! O Chriſt help me!* Soon after being carried back to *Welmantotte*, ſhe ſpoke her laſt Words: *O my dear Princes and Princeſſes*, ſaid ſhe, *where muſt I leave you? My Lords*, (pointing to the Prince of *Migonne*

gonne and Prince of *Ouve*) *perform your Promises, farewel, I am departing; O God, take care of my Soul:* and so she expir'd the 20*th* of *July* 1613. in the 35*th* year of her Age, and was buried the 21*st* with the same Pomp, and in the same place as the Prince her Son was before. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. XIV.

The Emperor falls very ill: Assembles the Estates. The Transactions of that Assembly.

The Emperor falls sick.

THE Emperor finding himself worse and worse, would needs be carried to a small City call'd *Dilege*, where he appointed the States of the Empire to meet *Aug.* 18. in order to settle the Succession of the Crown. The Members of this Great Assembly (according to the Schedule read to the King) were, *Idele*, King of *Cotiarum*; *Celle Wandaar*, King of *Palugam*; *Comaro Wandaar*, King of *Batecalo*; *Samarway*, King of *Panua*; *Namacar* the King of *Jafnapatnam's* Ambassador; *Coriwitte* Prince of *Ouve*; *Marcellus* Prince of *Migonne*; *Materael Hani*, Prince of *Velaren*; *Jalagode Rale*, Prince of *Catemale*; *Mewater Rale* Prince of *Mewater*; *Jane Sengati*, Prince and Lord of *Podere*; *Wiek Venessinge*, Earl of *Quawecorle*; *Gaal Heneraed*, Governour of the Earldom of *Harsipate*; *Corope*, Governour of the Earldom of *Odogodas*; *Kery Wanasegre*, Governour of the Province of *Matele*; *Attapatte* Governour of *Wluat Gamme*, and *Passgrame Halvenrale* Governour of *Atapeli* and *Wilwele*; besides a great number of other Noblemen, unto whom his Imperial Majesty made the following Speech.

Assembles the Estates.

His Speech.

"My Lords; This present Assembly "being occasion'd by my Sickness (per- "haps the fore-runner of my approach- "ing End) I first of all desire you to "forgive me all Miscarriages I may have "committed, the same having been done "without my knowledg; and feeling "my self very feeble, and decaying in "Strength, I thought fit to take effectual "care about the Succession, to avoid "all Contests that might likely arise "after my Decease. You can't be for- "getful what Disturbance arose in the "Empire after the Death of my Brother "*Vinne Ladarma Soria*, which ought to "serve us as a Caution to prevent the "same at this juncture, by committing the "Tuition of *Comara Singastame*, the el- "dest Hereditary Prince of the Crown, "to such as you shall judg best qualified "for so high a Trust, with a full Au- "thority to manage the Administra- "tion of all publick Affairs during the "Prince's Minority, the Choice whereof "I recommend to your present Care. The Lords being not a little surpriz'd at this Proposition, gave in their Opinions in writing, wherein they pitch'd upon the Prince of *Migonne* and the Prince of *Ouve*, who both excused themselves, pleading their Inability, and desiring his Majesty to chuse some more able Persons in their steads. The Emperor reply'd sighing, *And are you then so backward in doing me this piece of Service? Can't you be so forgetful of all the Obligations I have heap'd upon you?* They answer'd, that they were ready to sacrifice their Lives and Estates for his Majesty, but that they were afraid their Shoulders were too weak for so great a Burden. *Well then*, reply'd the Emperor, *we will leave the Choice to my Son the Prince*, wherewith the whole Assembly was satisfy'd. The Emperor then order'd the King of *Cotiarum* to bring in the Prince, which being done accordingly, he told him, *Son, make your Choice from among all these Kings and Princes of two Persons, such as you love best, who shall be Administrators of the Empire after my Death.* The Prince answer'd all in Tears, *Good Father! and will you die dear Father, pray don't leave me!* Which words drew Tears both from the Emperor and the whole Assembly. The Emperor answer'd, *I don't know how soon my time may come to leave you; wherefore I would have you pitch upon two Persons, such as you love best next to my self. Well then*, reply'd the Prince, *I love the Prince of* Migonne, *and likewise the Prince of* Ouve, *and next to him the Prince of* Velaren. *I am satisfied*, said the Emperor, *bring them to me, that I may surrender you to their Care.* Accordingly the Prince having led the two before-mentioned Princes to the Emperor, he told him, *These shall be my Governors now, and when come to Maturity my chief Counsellors.* The Emperor return'd for Answer, not

Without

without ſome Emotion, *My dear Son, ſee here your Father, whoſe Life perhaps will not be long; you are but young, therefore be always adviſ'd by theſe two Princes.* A Torrent of Tears which trickled down his Cheeks having ſtopt his Voice, he order'd himſelf to be carried out of the Aſſembly, enjoyning only in a few words all the Lords there preſent, to perſiſt in their Fidelity, which they unanimouſly promiſed to do, and in token of their entire Submiſſion, ſaluted the Emperor with the uſual *Sambaje*, or Reverence, according to the Cuſtom of that Country. *Baldæus.*

The next day the Royal Patent to inveſt the before-mentioned two Princes with the Adminiſtration of the Empire was read in the Aſſembly. *Cenuwieraat* by the Grace of God Emperor of *Ceylon*, King of *Candy*, *Settevaca*, *Trinquenemale*, *Jafnapatnam*, *Settecorles*, *Manaar*, *Chilaon*, *Panua*, *Batecalo*, *Palugam* and *Jaele*; Prince of *Ouva*, *Dennevaque*, *Paſſadon-Corle*, *Velaren*, *Coromale*, *Mewatre* and *Ventane*; Duke of *Willegamme*, *Cale*, *Ody* and *Jattenore*; Earl of *Quatre Corle*, *Harkepatte*, *Odogodaſcary*, *Craiwitty* and *Batagedre*. Peace to all thoſe that read theſe Preſents. *The Adminiſtrators of the Empire declar'd.*

" Being much indiſpoſed, and conſequently in no ſmall danger of Life, we " thought fit to convene all the Great " Men of the Empire to conſult the " Welfare of the Publick, and of our " dearly beloved Son *Comara Singaſtan* " (whom God preſerve) It is for this " reaſon that we have appointed two " Princes Adminiſtrators (after our deceaſe) not only of the Empire, but " alſo of our Hereditary Prince during " his Minority, with full Authority to " govern the Realm; the two Princes " choſen for ſo great a Truſt, being the " Prince of *Migonne* and the Prince of " *Ouve*, declar'd ſuch by the unanimous " Conſent of the Aſſembly. We do by " theſe Preſents ſurrender to the ſaid " Princes all our Kingdoms, Provinces " and Dominions, to be govern'd by " them, during the Minority of our " dearly beloved Sons; and as we are " very glad to have been able (in our " life-time) to prevent all Inteſtine " Commotions by this Settlement, ſo " we require and deſire the two before-" mentioned Princes to take upon them " the Government of all our Dominions till our Recovery, or, in caſe of " my Deceaſe, till the Hereditary Prince " comes to an Age of Maturity, or his " Brothers, in caſe he ſhould happen to " die before that time: We therefore " command by theſe Preſents expreſly, " that no body elſe ſhall preſume to take " upon him the Adminiſtration and Tuition of the before-mentioned Princes " and Princeſſes, but ſhall obey the ſaid " two Princes without the leaſt oppoſition, under forfeiture of their Lives. " Theſe two Princes ſhall take effectual " care of the Education of the young " Princes and Princeſſes under proper " Tutors, and to ſee the eldeſt Prince, " when come to Age, quietly ſettled in " the Throne; and in caſe of his Deceaſe *Janiere Aſtan* to ſucceed, as after " him *Lamoſtanne*, the third is to be the " next Heir to the Crown; but in caſe " all the ſaid Princes ſhould die without Iſſue, our dearly beloved Daughter, the Princeſs *Mahadaſcyn*, and " after her her Siſter, the Princeſs *Hanta* " *Madaſcyn*, ſhall ſucceed them in their " due turns. But in caſe theſe alſo ſhould " leave no Children behind them, the " Empire ſhall devolve into your hands, " and you ſhall be at full liberty to chuſe " with the unanimous Conſent of the " Great Men of the Empire, ſuch a Perſon of the Imperial Blood as you " think the beſt qualified for the Welfare of the Empire, which I leave to " the Wiſdom of this Aſſembly. In " the mean while, every one (after my " Deceaſe) ſhall be oblig'd to be accountable to the two Adminiſtrators for " all the Revenues of their reſpective " Lands without failure, upon pain of " Death and loſs of their Eſtates. The " two Adminiſtrators ſhall have a due " regard for all ſuch Counſellors as were " in our life-time, and not turn them " out, unleſs they ſhould not behave " themſelves as they ought to do, when " they ſhall have power to put others in " their places. *Settlement of the Empire.*

" All Mandats ſhall be iſſued by the " two Adminiſtrators in the Name of " the whole Empire, and the Hereditary Prince; according to which all the " Great Men and Nobility, without exception, ſhall appear at Court when " requir'd, and obey them in all other " reſpects: They ſhall alſo be oblig'd " to take the uſual Oath of Allegiance " to the Hereditary Prince, and his " two Adminiſtrators, and to promiſe " to perſiſt in their Fidelity, and not to " ſuffer any Alliance or Engagement to " be made with our Enemies the *Portugueſes*, or any Rebels, under what pretence ſoever. They ſhall be oblig'd " to aſſiſt in the reducing of all ſuch

" (tho of the next Kindred) as pre-
" tend to diſturb the publick Peace:
" And laſtly, all the Kings and Lords
" ſhall take an Oath, that after our
" Deceaſe they will raiſe no Diſturbance
" in the Empire, but will ſubmit quiet-
" ly to the preſent Diſpoſition, under
" forfeiture of their Lives. For which
" reaſon our Grant written in Golden
" Letters, is to be deliver'd to the Princes
" of *Migonne* and *Ouve*, purſuant to
" which they ſhall have full Authority to
" govern and protect in our and the
" Hereditary Prince's Name our Domi-
" nions, and to adminiſter Juſtice both
" in Civil and Criminal Cauſes. We
" therefore order and command all
" Kings, Princes, Dukes, Earls, Clergy-
" men, Nobles, Governours, and Heads
" of Provinces and Cities, Captains, Pre-
" ſidents, Counſellors, Admirals, Chan-
" cellors, and all other Perſons in our
" Service, as Deputies, Adminiſtrators,
" Farmers, Inhabitants, Souldiers, Citi-
" zens, and others inhabiting the Cities,
" Villages, or any places whatever, all
" and every one in particular, to receive
" and acknowledg the before-mentioned
" two Princes, Adminiſtrators and Go- *Baldæus.*
" vernours of the Realm, till the Here-
" ditary Prince came of Age, and to take
" the Oath of Fidelity to them, and ſhew
" them the ſame reſpect as to our own
" Perſon, and, as becomes faithful and
" true Subjects, to behave themſelves in
" all reſpects according to the true intent
" of this Patent. We alſo annul by
" theſe Preſents all Laws or Conſtitu-
" tions which may ſeem contrary to the
" true meaning thereof; and to give it
" all the Authority and Weight that
" can be, have in Conjunction with the
" Hereditary Prince, and the Princes,
" Dukes and Lords of this Aſſembly,
" ſign'd it with our own Hand, and or-
" der'd the Great Seal to be affix'd to
" it. For the ſame reaſon we have alſo
" commanded the ſame to be regiſter'd
" in all the Courts, Councils and Trea-
" ſuries of our Empire, that no body
" may plead Ignorance of this our laſt
" Will. Dated at the Imperial Court
" at *Digelege*, 19 Aug. 1613.

CHAP. XV.

The Hereditary Princes are carried to Cockelecorle. Gale Heneraed *is routed, and being ſummoned to Court, is made Priſoner, and executed.*

The Emperor ſurrenders his Children to the Adminiſtrators.

THE ſaid Patent being publiſh'd by his Imperial Majeſty's order, the Adminiſtrators as well as the reſt of the Eſtates took the Oath of Allegiance to the Hereditary Prince; which done, the Adminiſtrators upon their Knees return'd his Majeſty thanks for the Honour he had beſtow'd upon them, wiſhing him a long and happy Life. His Majeſty lifting them up, order'd them to ſit down by him, and diſcloſed to them ſome of his Treaſures which were buried under ground, beſides ſeveral other matters relating to the Adminiſtration of the State.

Then the three Princes and two Princeſſes being call'd in, he exhorted them to follow the Directions of their Governors; and taking the eldeſt Prince in his Arms, *My deareſt Son*, ſaid he, *I wiſh you and your Brothers and Siſters all imaginable Proſperity:* and then turning to the Princes of *Migonne* and *Ouve*; *Receive*, ſays he, *from my hands theſe my deareſt Treaſures, which I commit to your care*; and thus deliver'd them up to the two Adminiſtrators, who took care to have them convey'd in the night-time to the Dukedom of *Cockelecorle* for their better ſecurity, charging thoſe who conducted them, upon their Lives not to divulge whither they were carried: which done, the Aſſembly was diſſolv'd the 20*th.* *They are carried to* Cockelecorle.

The *Portugueſes* had no ſooner notice of the Death of the Empreſs, and the Sickneſs of the Emperor, but they left no Stone unturn'd (notwithſtanding the miſcarriage of their Deſign upon *Panua*) to raiſe new Troubles. For this purpoſe they had found means to bring over to their ſide the Son of *Gael Heneraed* Governor of *Harcipate*, Preſident in the Dukedom of *Cockelecorle*, who all along had ſupply'd them with Proviſions at *Walane*, and had engag'd ſeveral of the Nobility to raiſe Diviſions, thereby to give opportunity to the *Portugueſes* to make themſelves Maſters of the Kingdom. The two Princes Adminiſtrators having got ſome notice of the matter, they reſolv'd to find out the bottom of this Deſign. For this purpoſe the Prince of

of *Migonne* march'd the 15*th* of *September* at the head of a good Body, under pretence of changing the Gariſons on the Frontiers, but near *Ode* and *Jatteno* met *Heneraed*'s Forces, who being not a little ſurpriz'd at the ſight of the Prince, pretended they were order'd for *Cottamale* upon ſome particular buſineſs. The Prince being now more than ever confirm'd in the matter, order'd their chief Commander to be brought before him immediately, who being ſearch'd, a Letter of *Gael Heneraed* was found about him, *viz. That all things look'd with a good face towards the accompliſhment of the Deſign concerted betwixt them. That he had conſulted with his Son* Abecque, *Preſident of* Cockelecorle, *and that they had agreed with many of the Nobility to murder the Princes and Princeſſes, and likewiſe the Princes of* Migonne *and* Ouve, *the Iſſue whereof they ſhould know as ſoon as it was put in Execution. He ſent them in the mean time a certain quantity of Powder, Ball and Proviſions, adviſing them to be upon their Guard, becauſe the Gariſon of* Candy *had been reinforc'd conſiderably of late, which ſeem'd as if ſome Deſign were in hand againſt them.*

Baldæus.

A Letter intercepted of Heneraed's.

The Prince gave immediate Orders to ſeize the Commander, who ſtanding upon his Defence, was cut to pieces: his Soldiers and Pioneers attempted to ſave themſelves by flight, but being purſued were moſt ſlain, except a few that ſav'd themſelves in the Woods. The Prince diſpatch'd a Meſſenger immediately to the Governour with orders to come immediately to Court, having particular occaſion to concert ſome Matters of moment with him.

Heneraed's Forces routed.

He is ſummon'd to Court.

He who knew nothing of what was paſſed, appear'd accordingly the 17*th* of *September* at the Court in *Candy*, where being well receiv'd by the Prince, they talk'd of ſeveral matters relating to the Government; upon which occaſion he gave him repeated aſſurances of his Fidelity, telling him, that he was ready to venture his Life for the Welfare of the Empire. The Prince of *Migonne* had much ado to diſſemble his Anger, only told him, *We have nevertheleſs received certain Advice that you hatch Treaſon againſt the Crown, and are enter'd into a Confederacy with the* Portugueſes *our Enemies, contrary to the Oath you have ſo lately taken.* He declar'd his Innocence with many Aſſeverations, deſiring that he might be confronted with his Accuſers: Whereupon the Prince of *Ouve* told him, *We could wiſh you innocent, but are too well inform'd of your Treachery*, and ſo order'd him to withdraw (after ſome further Excuſe) to be diſarm'd, and his Perſon to be ſecur'd.

Is ſeiz'd.

The Captain of the Guard coming to ſeize him, he ſaid, *Friend, you are wrong*, and ſo made the beſt of his way towards the Gate, in hopes of making his eſcape; but the Captain asking him, *Are you not the Governour* Gael Heneraed? he anſwer'd, *Yes.* The Captain reply'd, *Then I am not wrong, I beg your Pardon, being oblig'd to execute his Majeſty's Orders:* So that ſeeing there was no hopes of eſcaping, he deſir'd to be brought before his Majeſty, or before the Princes Adminiſtrators. The Captain told him, that he had no ſuch Orders; whereupon ſome of the Governour's Soldiers put themſelves in a poſture of Defence, but were all made Priſoners, and put to death the next day, being 32 in number. Another Party attempted to eſcape by night, but 50 of them were taken and committed to Priſon, which made his caſe worſe.

His Soldiers taken.

In the mean time the two Adminiſtrators took care to have the Emperor's Children tranſported to another Caſtle, and ſent Orders to all the Governours to ſtop all the Soldiers of *Heneraed*, unleſs they were provided with a Paſport from his Majeſty.

The Emperor's Children carried to another place.

The 22*d Heneraed* was examin'd in the Council, where at firſt he boldly deny'd every thing alledg'd againſt him, but ſoon after confeſs'd the whole, and beg'd Mercy, alledging, that what he had done was out of Diſcontent, becauſe he had not been promoted to a higher Station. He did not deny that 26 Noblemen had been concern'd in this Conſpiracy, yet refus'd to name them; but ſeeing the *Brahman*, who had made the firſt diſcovery, appear, he ſaid, *No queſtion but you will ſoon know their Names now, however I will not diſcover them.* The *Brahmans* declar'd, that *Gael Heneraed* had cauſed two Gentlemen to be murder'd, becauſe they refuſed to have a hand in this Conſpiracy. The 26 Noblemen being apprehended confeſs'd the Fact, and the 25*th* being appointed for their Trial, they were all condemn'd to Death. The 27*th* they were executed in the following manner: The 50 Soldiers who had endeavour'd to make their eſcape, had their Heads cut off. The 26 Noblemen, who had ſign'd the Confederacy, had the Heads cut off firſt, and then their Bodies thrown before the Dogs. Four of his chief Counſellours were drawn with hot Pinchers, had afterwards their Hands cut off, and their Bodies

He is examined.

Tried and condemn'd, with 25 Gentlemen.

Their Execution.

*

Bodies quartered, which were hung up about the Caſtle. The unfortunate Governour, who had been a Spectator of the miſerable Exits of his Accomplices, being likewiſe burnt with red hot Pinchers at each Corner of the Streets, was broken alive upon the Wheel, and afterwards thrown before the Elephants, one of which threw him up to a conſiderable height, and afterwards catching him again, cruſh'd him to pieces with his Teeth. The reſt had the good Fortune to eſcape to *Columbo*. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. XVI.

A Battel betwixt the Emperor and the Rebels. The Portugueſes *propoſe a Treaty of Peace, which is refuſed. They march towards* Candy, *but are routed.*

SOON after the Princes of *Migonne* and *Ouve*, together with the Earl of *Quatrecorle*, took a Progreſs to *Cockelecorle*, being followed by 2000 Men, and honourably received by the Inhabitants; they ſettled Matters upon the old Foot, and made ſome Alteration in the Coin, giving ſtrict Orders not to raiſe the Mony above the prefix'd Value.

An Engagement betwixt the Emperor and Rebels.

In the Year 1614. there happened a bloody Engagement betwixt the Imperial Forces and the Rebels, wherein 4000 Men being kill'd on both ſides, and the laſt finding themſelves too weak, retreated in the Night time, and ſollicited the *Portugueſes* for Help. The Emperor remaining thus Maſter of the Field, order'd his Camp to be ſtrongly fortify'd; and keeping only 2000 Men, and 1000 Pioneers for his Guard, he ſent his General with the whole Army to cut off the Retreat of the Enemy. The *Portugueſes* having got notice thereof, gathered ſecretly a Body of 100 *Portugueſes*, and 5000 Natives; and marching thro unpaſſable ways, ſurpriz'd the Outguards, and entred the Camp without much Oppoſition, every one ſeeking how to ſave themſelves by a timely flight. In this Action the Prince of *Migonne* was wounded with a Lance in his Right Leg, and the Prince of *Ouve* in the Right Arm, and 500 were ſlain upon the Spot on the Emperor's ſide.

The Portugueſes *ſurprize the Emperor's Camp.*

Anno 1614. *March* 14. *Don Munno de Feriera*, Brother of the Earl of *Fere*, arriv'd at *Columbo*, in the Quality of Viceroy of *Goa*, to relieve *Don Jeronimo d' Oviedo*. He brought along with him about 132 *Portugueſes*, beſides a good number of *Miſtices*, to reinforce the Gariſons, with poſitive Orders to endeavour, if poſſible, to procure a Peace with the Emperor of *Ceylon*.

Purſuant to theſe Orders he ſent the 3*d* of *June*, *Don Franciſco de Menezes* his Envoy to *Candy*, with full Power to treat with the ſaid Emperor upon the beſt Terms he could. Accordingly the ſaid Envoy delivered to the Emperor a Letter from the General, and another from the Viceroy of *Goa*, written in the King of *Spain*'s Name, the chief Contents whereof (beſides ſome Compliments) were, "That his Catholick Majeſty be- "ing averſe to the Effuſion of human "Blood, was inclined to enter into a "Treaty with his Majeſty, in order to "ſettle a firm and laſting Peace; for "which purpoſe he had granted full "Power to certain Perſons of Note to "treat upon that Head, deſiring that "his Majeſty would be pleaſed to accept "of them as ſuch, and give them a fa- "vourable Reception. *Goa*, *Feb.* 22. 1614. The General's Letter was much to the ſame purpoſe. *Propoſes a Peace.* *The King of Spain's Letter.*

The Emperor having propoſed the matter the 13*th* following in Council, it was reſolved they ſhould bring in their Propoſitions in Writing, which being done the 18*th* of the ſame Month, were as follows.

1. The King of *Spain* is willing to enter into an amicable Treaty with the Emperor. *Articles propoſed by him.*

2. The Peace to be concluded either for ever, or for a certain ſpace of Years, to be kept inviolably, and all Hoſtilities to ceaſe both by Water and Land immediately.

3. Each Party to keep what they are in poſſeſſion of at preſent.

4. His Imperial Majeſty ſhall renounce his Alliance with the *Dutch*, and engage himſelf never to enter into any other with them for the future, or any other State at Enmity with *Spain* and *Portugal*, and to permit no other *European* Nation to traffick there.

Baldæus. 5. Both Parties to be at Liberty to traffick in what Commodities they pleaſe, without entring into any Articles upon that Head.

6. His Majeſty ſhall grant Liberty for the free Exerciſe of the *Roman* Catholick Religion in *Candy*, and the building a Church and Convent, with convenient Habitations for two or three hundred Perſons, both of the Clergy and Laity.

7. His Majeſty ſhall ſend one of his Hereditary Princes to keep his Court at *Columbo*, in lieu whereof they will ſend a Perſon of Quality to ſtay always near his Majeſty.

8. His Imperial Majeſty ſhall reſtore all the Jewels, Mony, Priſoners, Slaves of both Sexes, Cannon, *&c.* taken in the laſt War.

Are rejected. Theſe Propoſitions being read and debated in the Council, it was reſolved not to enter iuto any further Treaty with the *Portugueſes*, as fearing not without reaſon, that ſome treacherous Deſign (as often had happened before) lay concealed under this pretended Treaty. An Anſwer was therefore return'd to the *Portugueſe* Envoy, *Jun.* 20. That his Imperial Majeſty was not inclined to treat with the King of *Spain*, before all the Lands and Lordſhips taken from him were reſtor'd: That however the *Spaniards* ſhould remain in poſſeſſion of *Gale* and *Columbo*, with the Territories thereunto belonging; but that his Imperial Majeſty would by no means renounce his Alliance made with the *Dutch*, but keep the ſame inviolably. Furthermore his Majeſty requir'd a full Compenſation of all the Damages he had ſuſtain'd in this War, and was reſolved to have Cuſtom paid him of all Goods exported or imported.

The Portugueſes propoſe a Truce. The *Portugueſes* finding them ſo reſolute, would fain have made a conſiderable Abatement in their Pretenſions; for which purpoſe they propos'd a Ceſſation of Arms, which being likewiſe rejected, the Envoy return'd the 8*th* of *June* without effecting any thing, with a Letter from the Emperour, directed to the *Portugueſe* General, containing in Subſtance, *That he was reſolved not to violate his Oath with the* Dutch, *and that being ſenſible no Faith ought to be given to the* Portugueſes, *he intended to purſue them by Force of Arms, and that they might make their account accordingly.*

The Portugueſes march towards Candy. The *Portugueſes* not a little exaſperated at ſo reſolute an Anſwer, march'd with an Army of 25000 Men towards *Candy*. The Emperor's Army conſiſted of 29000 Men, and meeting juſt near *Walane*, *Aug.* 6. a ſmart Engagement enſu'd, in which *Are beaten.* the *Portugueſes* were worſted, 2100 *Indians* and 40 *Portugueſes* being ſlain on their ſide, with the Loſs of 700 Men on the Emperor's ſide. The *Portugueſes* ſaved themſelves from a total Defeat, by the favour of the adjacent Woods.

This Victory occaſion'd no ſmall Joy at *Candy*, where the Prince of *Migonne* and the Prince of *Ouve* who had led the Van, were receiv'd with more than ordinary reſpect. Soon after a Deſerter came to *Candy*, who gave them an account of the whole condition of the *Portugueſe* Camp, which might have been entirely ruin'd, had the *Cingaleſes* purſu'd their Victory: He told them that before the Battel, they had not left above 300 Men at *Columbo*, which had occaſion'd ſuch Fears and Tumults in that City, that the ſame might have been eaſily ſurpriz'd with a moderate Force; and that upon the return of the General from the Army, he had order'd ſeveral to be hang'd upon that account.

The Emperor would have married his Daughter-in-law. The *29th* of *Aug.* The Emperor declar'd, that he would marry the Daughter of the late Empreſs by her firſt Huſband, alledging, that he had debauch'd her before, which made moſt of the Great Men conſent to the Match; but the Prince of *Migonne* oppos'd the ſame, telling the Emperor with a great deal of Freedom, *That to commit Inceſt was directly contrary to the Word of God; and that for that reaſon he could never approve of it, but was obliged to put his Imperial Majeſty in mind of his Salvation.* Theſe Words having drawn Tears from the Emperor's Eyes, he promiſed to lay aſide all Thoughts of that nature for the future, and to converſe with her no otherwiſe than a Father might do with his Daughter.

The 5*th* of *Octob.* thoſe of *Candy* defeated a Convoy of 900 *Portugueſes*, that were marching with Proviſions and Ammunition to *Candy*, but had not the ſame Succeſs in another Enterprize; for having laid an Ambuſh of 500 Men, to intercept the *Portugueſe* General, as he was coming from *Columbo* to *Walane*, the *Portugueſes* having got Intelligence thereof, ſent a ſtronger Body, which ſurrounded them, and cut them all to pieces, except two *Cingaleſes*, who hid themſelves among the Dead, till the Night gave them an Opportunity to make their Eſcape. *The Portugueſes ſurprize 500 Candineſes.*

Towards the end of the Year 1614. the Inhabitants of *Batecalo* having mur-

* der'd

der'd the Ambaſſadors of the King of *Palugam* upon the Road, a furious War enſu'd betwixt them, in which the laſt worſted (with the aſſiſtance of the Prince of *Ouve*) the King of *Batecalo*, who was himſelf treacherouſly murdered, and his Kingdom beſtowed upon the King of *Palugam*. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. XVII.

Mr. Boſchhouwer *ſent as an Ambaſſador to the* United Provinces, *enters into an Engagement with the Crown of* Denmark, *dies in his Return to the* Indies. Gule Gedde *the* Daniſh *Commodore arrives in* Ceylon, *returns without effecting any thing. The* Portugueſes *erect divers Fortifications by Fraud. The Emperor's Enterprize upon* Columbo. *The* Portugueſes *beaten.*

Marcellus de Boſchhouwer, who had (as we have underſtood) attained to the higheſt Dignities in the Empire of *Ceylon*, being deſirous to make himſelf known by ſome great Enterprize, obtained leave from the Emperor 1615. to go to *Maſulipatam*, to ſollicite the ſo long promis'd Succours againſt the *Portugueſes*, with full Power to enter into Alliances with all ſuch Kings, Princes and States as he thought might contribute any thing towards clearing his Majeſty's Dominions from the *Portugueſes*.

Having for this purpoſe obtain'd divers Letters and Credentials, wherein his Majeſty promis'd to ratify every thing the ſaid Mr. *Boſchhouwer* ſhould treat of, with any Prince upon that Subject; he ſet out in Quality of Ambaſſador and Plenipotentiary from *Ceylon*, the 9th of *May* 1615. and arrived *Jun.* 2. at *Maſulipatam*, where at that time one *Hans van Haſe*, Director and Viſitor General of the *Indies*, commanded in chief, who went along with *Marcellus de Boſchhouwer* to *Bantam*, in order to concert meaſures with *Gerard Reynſt*, the *Dutch* General there, concerning the intended Succours againſt the *Portugueſes*.

Boſchhouwer ſent Ambaſſador.

But the ſaid General being dead ſometime before, and the War carried on at that time by the *Dutch* Company in the *Molucque* Iſlands and thoſe of *Banda*, as alſo againſt *Poulo Ay*, hindring the *Dutch* at that Juncture from ſending the promis'd Succours to the Emperor of *Ceylon* (it being abſolutely requiſite to ſecure the *Molucques*, before they cou'd think of any New Conqueſts) it was reſolved by the Council of *Bantam* to permit Mr. *Boſchhouwer* (at his earneſt requeſt) to go to *Holland*, in order to repreſent the true State of matters in the Empire of *Ceylon* to their High and Mightineſſes the States-General, his Highneſs the Prince of *Orange*, and the Directors of the *Eaſt-India* Company.

Comes to Bantam.

But upon his Arrival in *Holland*, he found things not in any wiſe to anſwer his Expectation: for in regard of his Quality and high Station in *Ceylon*, pretending to much more Reſpect and Honour than the Company was willing to grant him; this occaſion'd ſuch Conteſts among them, that he reſolved (notwithſtanding his Allegiance due to the States) to go into *Denmark*, where he arriv'd *June* 16. O. S. 1617. and not long after entr'd into an Engagement with the *Danes* at *Copenhagen*, which was ratify'd by their King *Chriſtian* IV. 1618. *March* 30. Accordingly he ſet ſail from *Denmark* with his Lady (who challenged the Title of Princeſs of *Migonne*) and a Retinue of ſome Servants and Soldiers, but died before he came to the end of his Voyage, after which moſt of the Soldiers deſerted on the Coaſt of *Coromandel* (where his Lady died alſo afterwards) whereby tho all his Deſigns vaniſhed into Smoke, yet will it perhaps not be beyond our purpoſe, to give a more circumſtantial account of this unfortunate Voyage.

And thence into Holland.

Engages with the Danes.

Sets Sail for Ceylon.

Dies.

Mr. *Boſchhouwer* having (as we told you) obtain'd a Man of War and a Yacht from the King of *Denmark*, on account of the Emperour of *Ceylon*, and the *Daniſh Eaſt-India* Company (lately erected) having join'd five Ships with them, under *Gule Gedde* a *Daniſh* Nobleman, they ſet Sail out of the Sound, and after many Tempeſts and other Difficulties, having paſs'd the *Engliſh* Channel, they did not arrive in *Ceylon* till twenty two Months after, *viz.* 1620. not without the Loſs of a conſiderable Number of their Men (among whom was Mr. *Boſchhouwer* himſelf) that periſhed for want of Proviſions, and the Fatigues of ſo tedious a Voyage.

A particular account of his Voyage.

Some of theſe Ships arriving in the Harbour of *Batecalo*, others at *Coutjare*, *Gule Gedde* gave notice of his Arrival,

The Danes arrive in Ceylon.

Baldæus. and of the Occaſion thereof, as alſo of the Death of *Boſchhouwer*, to the Emperor, who no ſooner underſtood his Death, and that the *Danes* pretended to put the Equipment of this Squadron to his account, but he appeared much ſurpriz'd thereat, declaring that he had given no Authority to *Boſchhouwer* to enter into ſuch an Engagement; ſo that the *Danes* had nothing but bare Words, in recompence of the vaſt Charge they had been at upon this account.

The Emperor rejects their Offer.

The *Daniſh* Commodore *Gule Gedde*, finding himſelf thus diſappointed in all his hopes, apply'd all his Thoughts, how to reimburſe the King his Maſter part of the Charge he had been at in the Equipment of this Squadron; for which reaſon he ſciz'd upon all *Boſchhouwer*'s Effects aboard his Veſſels, after having taken care of his Burial, which was perform'd with little Pomp; but that of his Son of three Years of Age (who being born at *Copenhagen*, was Godſon of K. *Chriſtian* IV. and died likewiſe in this Voyage) was done with more Solemnity. The ſeizing of *Boſchhouwer*'s Effects being perform'd in the Harbour of *Trinquenemale* by *Gule Gedde*, he ſent his Widow at her requeſt to *Candy*, ſtript of every thing, except what ſhe had ſaved privately by the aſſiſtance of ſome Friends, from whence after a ſtay of ſeven Years, ſhe was by the Emperor *Zenerat* (at the requeſt of General *Roland Crape*) ſent with ſome Servants to *Tranquebare*.

The Daniſh Commodore ſeizes Boſchhouwer's Effects.

After the Departure of *Boſchhouwer*'s Widow for *Candy*, the Commodore *Gule Gedde* ſet Sail with part of his Squadron from *Coutjare*, in order to join the reſt of his Ships at *Batecalo*, and to ſollicite once more Satisfaction from the Emperor; but in the mean while, one of his Ships that was left at *Trinquenemale* being ſeized upon by the Ships Crew, and afterwards ſplit upon the Rocks, the Seamen and Soldiers got with their Boats to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, where ſome of them took Service among the *Portugueſes* at St. *Thomas*, the reſt among the *Dutch* at *Paliacatte*. *Gule Gedde* having but ſmall hopes of Succeſs, and fearing that ſome of the other Ships might follow their Example, thought fit to weigh Anchor, and take his next courſe for *Denmark*.

Returns to Denmark.

The *Portugueſes* being infinitely glad at the Departure of theſe unwelcome Gueſts out of *Ceylon*, now bent all their Thoughts how to exclude all other Nations from the Traffick of that Country: To encompaſs which, they judged it the moſt proper means to erect a Fort near that Harbour, the Place whereof (after a narrow View taken of the Ground, and various Debates) was pitch'd upon at the North-Weſt Point of the Bay, upon a Neck of Land jetting out into the Sea, on the back-ſide of the *Pagode* of *Trinquenemale*, the Walls whereof would be of conſiderable Advantage to them.

Accordingly the ſaid Fort being begun 1622. was carried on with all imaginable Vigour, to bring it to perfection, before the Emperor of *Candy* (with whom they were at Peace then) could have any notice of it. For no ſooner was that Prince advertis'd of this treacherous Deſign, but he proteſted againſt it, and ſent a conſiderable Force to demoliſh it; but being repuls'd by the *Portugueſes*, theſe continu'd the Fortifications, being an irregular Triangular Fortreſs, which they furniſh'd with great Cannon taken out of the Sea, belonging formerly to the *Daniſh* Ship that was caſt away near that Place.

The Portugueſes erect a new Fort.

Whilſt the *Portugueſes* were embroil'd with the *Cingaleſes* upon that account, a certain *Radye* of the *Malabars* entred the Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam* with a conſiderable Force, in hopes to recover the ſame from the *Portugueſes*, who had lately conquer'd the ſame: But *Philippo d' Olivere* their General, an old experienc'd Captain, receiv'd them ſo bravely, that few of them return'd into their Native Country.

Rout the Malabars.

The *Portugueſes* having thus once more rid their Hands of their Enemies, yet not thinking themſelves ſecure, unleſs they ſtrengthen'd their Conqueſts by ſome additional Fortifications, order'd certain new Works to be made, which afterwards were chang'd into a Royal Fortreſs with four Baſtions. The Foundation whereof was laid 1624, but not brought to perfection till the Year 1632, being lin'd with white Stone.

Build two more Forts.

But to eſtabliſh themſelves the better in this Iſland, they concluded a Peace (by the Mediation of certain Clergymen) with the Emperor, who was willing to embrace it, till he could find a more convenient Opportunity of revenging himſelf for the many Affronts they had put upon him; one of the main Conditions of this Peace was, that the *Portugueſes* ſhould not build any other Forts or Fortifications in any Place of the Empire, but might remain in poſſeſſion of what they had at preſent.

Make Peace with the Emperor.

Notwithſtanding this Agreement, which was ſo advantageous to the *Portugueſes*,

gueſes, finding that the *European* Nations had ſtill a free acceſs into the Kingdom of *Candy* by the River *Palliagamme* (otherwiſe call'd *Batecalo*) they were contriving all poſſible means to ſecure that Paſſage to themſelves.

Contrivance of the Portugueſes.

To accompliſh their end with all imaginable Secrecy, they pitch'd upon a *Miſtice*, an experienc'd Engineer, who being of a dark Colour, was ſent in the diſguiſe of a *Guſuratte Jogy*, or *Mendicant Frier*, from *Columbo* to *Batecalo*, who ſettled himſelf in the Village of *Samanture*; from whence having taken a full view of all the circumjacent Country for two years together, he pitch'd upon a ſandy Place about 2 ½ Leagues from the Village, for the erecting of the deſigned Fort; but finding upon ſtrict enquiry, that the Channel leading that way from the Mouth of the River, was the greateſt part of the Year chok'd up with Sand, and that conſequently there would be no conveniency of getting freſh Water there, he was forc'd to go about 6 Leagues lower down the River, where meeting with a ſmall Iſle of a League in circuit, and not above a Mile diſtant from the main Channel, convey'd thither directly from the Mouth of the River, he returned to *Columbo*; and having given a full account to the Government there of the advantageous Situation of this Iſle for their intended Project, the *Portugueſes* ſent him back in 1627. with 13 Companies of Soldiers, in order to put it in execution. Theſe, at their arrival, having ſecured themſelves by throwing up ſome Intrenchments inclos'd with Paliſadoes, to work they went with all expedition to perfect the intended Fortreſs, which was of a Quinquangular Figure, with three Baſtions.

The Cingaleſes are repuls'd.

The King of *Candy* had no ſooner intelligence thereof, but he ſent a good Body of Troops thither to prevent their Deſign: They made ſhift to land in the Iſland, but were forc'd to retreat without effecting any thing, and leave the *Portugueſes* to perfect their Fortifications, which they did ſoon after, being well provided with all ſorts of Materials for ſuch a Purpoſe.

The Emperor engages with the Cingaleſes at Columbo.

The Emperor finding himſelf thus by no leſs than ſeven Capital Forts, built on all the beſt Avenues of the Iſle, reduc'd to ſuch Straits by the *Portugueſes*, that without their Conſent he was not in a condition to keep the leaſt Correſpondence with any foreign Nation, reſolved to try his utmoſt to draw theſe Thorns out of his Fleſh. For this purpoſe he thought fit to try the Inclinations of the *Cingaleſes* inhabiting at *Columbo*; and finding them ready to revolt by reaſon of the many Indignities received from the *Portugueſes*, he engaged them to his Party. Things being thus ſettled, the only thing remaining was how to entice their General *Conſtantine de Saa* to take the Field, by which means they might find an opportunity of going over to the Emperor. Knowing therefore that *Don Michael de Noronha*, *Conde de Linharos*, the then Viceroy of *Goa*, had lately wrote an affronting Letter to the ſaid General, wherein he told him, that he was more fit for a Merchant than a Soldier, and that he regarded more his own Profit than the King's Glory, and his Conqueſt; they inſinuated into him, that ſince both his Expeditions againſt *Candy* had prov'd unſucceſsful, it would not be amiſs (to retrieve his Honour) to try his Fortune againſt *Ouve*, promiſing to appear in the Field with all their Power, which they did accordingly. *Baldæus.*

Conſtantin de Saa the *Portugueſe* General was ſo highly pleas'd at this Propoſition, that he not only gladly embraced it, but alſo ſent a Challenge to *Comarre Singe Haſtanne*, Prince of *Ouve*, eldeſt Son of the Emperor *Zenerat Adaſcyn*, who ſent him word, that he would expect his coming like a Man of Honour. Accordingly the *Portugueſe* General took the Field the 30th of *Auguſt*, with 1300 of his own Countrymen, 1700 *Miſtices*, and 8000 *Cingaleſes*; and the Prince of *Ouve* being join'd by his two Brothers, *Vyſiapalla* and *Raja Singa*, made up an Army of 23000 men, who (according to the Advice of the Emperor their Father) kept at a diſtance, ſeeming to avoid an Engagement. The *Portugueſes* being much ſurprized at their being ſuffer'd to paſs the Mountains of *Ouve* without the leaſt Oppoſition, march'd directly to *Badule* the Capital City of that Dekedom, which they took and plunder'd with all the circumjacent Country, and ſo retired again towards the Mountains, the Princes being all the while Spectators of their Ravages, with a reſolution to watch their opportunity of taking a ſevere Revenge, ſo ſoon as the *Cingaleſes* (according to their Promiſe) ſhould deſert the *Portugueſes*.

The Portugueſes take the Field.

Plunder Badule.

Theſe things were not ſo ſecretly carried on, but that *Conſtantin de Saa* got ſome ſcent of the matter. This made him ſummon before him all their chief Officers, unto whom he repreſented the Reaſons of his Suſpicion, but in very obliging Terms, thinking it his beſt way to

42621

to diſſemble, yet to uſe all imaginable Precautions againſt them. They poſitively denying what was alledged againſt them, he continu'd his March till Night, when finding the Enemy to keep cloſer to him than they us'd to do, and being confirmed in his former Suſpicion by freſh Intelligence, he order'd the *Cingaleſes* (contrary to what they us'd to do) to pitch their Tents in the Center of the Camp, and the next morning with break of day for the whole Army to ſet fire to all their Baggage (except wearing Apparel) the better to further their March. They had ſcarce marched a few hours, when the Princes coming up pretty cloſe with the *Portugueſe* Army, the 8000 *Cingaleſes* joined with their Countrymen, and with their joint Forces attack'd them in the Flank at the Deſcent of a Mountain, firing upon them very furiouſly thro an adjacent Wood, whereabouts a great number of the *Portugueſes* were ſlain, the *Cingaleſes* falling in Pell mell among them with their Scymeters and Pikes, eſpecially after a ſudden Storm had rendred the *Portugueſes* Firelocks almoſt uſeleſs, without which they might probably have made a tolerable good Retreat. *Conſtantin de Saa* their General had his Head cut off by one of the rebellious *Cingaleſes*, which he preſented to *Raja Singa* upon a Drum, whilſt he was waſhing himſelf in a neighbouring Brook. To confeſs the Truth, *de Saa* deſerv'd a much better Treatment, both in reſpect of his Valour, and the many good Offices he had done to the ſame *Cingaleſes* at *Columbo*, who now ſo baſely betray'd him and his whole Army.

Baldæus.

Are attacked in their March.

And routed.

It is not eaſy to be imagin'd what a conſternation this general Defeat occaſion'd among the *Portugueſes* in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, and eſpecially at *Columbo*, for the defence whereof there were ſcarce any Troops left behind, except a few of the moſt antient among the Inhabitants. This encouraged the Emperor to ſend his youngeſt Son *Mahaſtanne* (afterwards named *Raja Singa*) to form the Siege of that Place, which he did accordingly; but was ſo bravely received by *Lancerotte de Seſies* their Governour, that after a whole Month's Siege, he was forced to retreat without effecting any thing. The Beſieged being afterwards reinforced from *Goa* with 400 men (among whom were 300 *Caffers*) with a conſiderable quantity of Proviſions, Ammunition, and other Neceſſaries, began to hold up their heads again, and bid defiance to the *Cingaleſes*.

Columbo beſieged by the Cingaleſes.

CHAP. XVIII.

The Emperor dies. Inteſtine Diviſions betwixt his two Sons. The Portugueſes *at War with the new Emperor; make Peace with him. The* Hollanders *invited by his Majeſty's Letter to the Governour of* Paliacatta, *to come into the Iſle of* Ceylon.

The old Emperor dies.

SOON after, *viz.* 1632. the old Emperor happening to die, left the Empire betwixt his three Sons, viz. *Ouve* to *Commarra Singa Haſtanne* his eldeſt Son, *Matele* to *Viſia Palla Haſtanne* his ſecond, and *Candy* to *Mahaſtanne* the youngeſt, who beſides this aſſum'd the Imperial Title under the Name of *Raja Singa Adaſcyn*, to the no ſmall diſſatisfaction of his eldeſt Brother *Commarra SingaHaſtanne*, whom he knew ſo well how to amuſe under different Pretenſions, that the matter remained undecided as long as he lived; and immediately after his Death ſeized upon the Province of *Ouve*, which *Viſia Palla* the ſecond Brother (who claimed one half for his Share) took ſo heinouſly, that Matters came betwixt them to an open Rupture.

The youngeſt Son ſeizes upon the Imperial Title.

The *Portugueſes* having by this time received divers Supplies from *Goa*, and pretty well recover'd of their late Diſgrace, reſolved to improve this Opportunity to their advantage. For which purpoſe entring the *Low-Lands*, they forced moſt of the Princes there to ſide with them, but durſt not venture to attempt the Paſſage of the Mountains. They pitch'd their Tents therefore near *Allago*, as the moſt proper Place to keep the adjacent Country in awe: But *Raja Singa* the new Emperor ſurpriz'd them in their Camp, and forc'd them to retreat with all haſte to *Columbo*.

The Portugueſes begin a War againſt the Emperor.

Are beaten.

The *Portugueſes* now finding themſelves unable to cope with the Emperor, thought it requiſite to come to an agreement; for which purpoſe having ſent their Envoys to *Candy*, a Peace was concluded accordingly, but ſoon broken again on the

Make Peace.

the *Portugueſe* ſide, who let ſlip no opportunity to improve their advantage, notwithſtanding the ſaid Peace.

Raja Singa being thus fully convinc'd, that no firm Peace was likely to be ſettl'd with the *Portugueſes* in *Ceylon*, diſſembled his Reſentment, but in the mean time reſolved to invite the *Hollanders* to force them out of the Iſle; and accordingly ſent the following Letter dated *Sept.* 9. 1636. to the Governour of *Paliacatta*.

The Dutch *invited into* Ceylon *by the Emperor's Letter.*

"I *Raja Singa*, Emperor of the Iſle of "*Ceylon*; King of *Candy*, *Settevaca*, "*Danbadany*, *Anorayapore*, *Jafnapatnam*; Prince of *Ouve*, *Mature*, *Dinavaca*, *Quatrecorle*; Great Duke of "*Settecorle*, *Matalte*; Earl of *Catajar*, *Trinquenemale*, *Batecalo*, *Valefebuſitena*, *Dumbra*, *Panoa*, *Patoveta*, "*Putelaon*, *Vaſſare*, *Gale*, *Billigaon*; "Marqueſs of *Duramira*, *Ratenura*, "*Tinipane*, *Axcepaon*; Lord of the "Ports of *Alicaon*, *Caleture*, *Columbo*, *Negombo*, *Chilao*, *Madampe*, "*Calpentyn*, *Ariputure*, *Manaar*, and "of the Pearl-Fiſhery.

"THO I don't queſtion but that "Fame has already made known to "you the good Succeſs of our Arms a-"gainſt the *Portugueſes*, yet did judg it "abſolutely requiſite to give a more par-"ticular account thereof to the Gover-"nour of the Fortreſs of *Paliacatta*. "Firſt of all the Emperor did regain "from the *Portugueſes* the two Fortreſſes "of *Walane* and *Forago*, as likewiſe the "City of *Marua Goma*, with 500 *Portu-"gueſe* Inhabitants, and a good number "of Monks of divers Orders. *Don Nuno "Alvares Perere* being then their Gene-"ral, thought thereupon fit to make "Peace in order to recover the Priſon-"ers taken by the Emperor's Forces. A-"bout eleven Years after the Concluſion "of the ſaid Peace *Conſtantine de Sa* "being made their General, did trea-"cherouſly ſurprize *Jafnapatnam*, and "built the Forts of *Batecalo* and *Trinque-"nemale*, giving no other reaſon for their "ſo doing to the Emperor, than that "having certain Intelligence, that ſome "of their *European* Enemies were com-"ing to ſettle there, they were forc'd "to erect theſe Fortifications for their "own defence. About a year after the "Frier they had left their Hoſtage at "*Candy*, being releas'd by the Emperor "(according to his Parole) they made a "powerful Irruption into the Empire: "and after their Retreat the Emperor "happening to die, I had ſcarce aſcended "the Throne, but within eleven Months "after they made another Incurſion; but "encountring them near *Ambatana*, we "forced them to retreat with conſide-"rable Loſs. Seven Months after they "invaded the Dukedom of *Ouve*, where "we routed them in a ſmart Engage-"ment; and the rebellious Natives hav-"ing deſerted them, and joined with us "(according to their Duty) compleated "our Victory; Their General, a Major "General, and the Governour of *Dina-"vaca*, being ſlain upon the ſpot, with "400 Soldiers; and their Colonel of the "Artillery, their Governour of the ſe-"ven *Corles*, and *Matura*, with 300 Sol-"diers, many Captains and Enſigns, taken "Priſoners. Since that time we took "the Fort of *Mantea Ravane* with 100 "*Portugueſe* Soldiers with their Captains, "and another Fort in *Sofragaen*, with "three Companies, beſides that two o-"ther Fortifications of theirs were de-"moliſhed. It was much about the ſame "time that I kept the City of *Columbo* "inveſted for 30 days; but finding my "ſelf ill, I returned to *Candy*, leaving the "Command of my Forces to *Mara Tana "Wandaar*, who within 15 days after "my departure retreating thence, there-"by gave an opportunity to the Enemy "to protract the War for a Year and "half, and afterwards deſerted in Per-"ſon to the Enemy. I did alſo fall into "the Enemies Dominions, and having "entrench'd my ſelf near *Ganetena* in the "four *Corles*, I did conſiderable Miſchief, "ſo that the new Governour of *Columbo* "*Diego de Melo de Caſtro* (formerly Go-"vernour of St. *Thomas*) ſent thither "from *Goa*, was forc'd to ſue for Peace, "which I granted to prevent the Miſe-"ries and Calamities of a long War; "the ſaid General having ſworn by the "Name of his God, and in his King's "ſtead, to deliver up the Forts of *Trin-"quenemale* and *Batecalo*, and to releaſe "all Priſoners on both ſides. Thirteen "Months after the concluſion of this "Peace, the Governour of *Batecalo* did "ſide with certain Rebels, in order to "aſſaſſinate one of my Governours, aid-"ing and aſſiſting them alſo in robbing a "Bark belonging to me, and commit-"ting divers treacherous Acts in many "Parts, as well of our own Kingdoms, "as thoſe of other *Indian* Princes; there-"fore I have taken a reſolution to rid my "hands of theſe Enemies, and to declare "my ſelf a Brother in War with the "King of the *Hollanders*, as long as the "Sun

Baldæus.

Bildæus. " Sun and Moon ſhall rejoice us with their " Light, and the Viceroy of *Jacatra*, " and the Governor of *Paliacatta* ſhall " be willing to aſſiſt me, in hopes that " this Confederacy with the *Dutch* Na- " tion will anſwer my good Intentions " and Sentiments of them. I the King " let the Governour of *Paliacatta* know, " that, during the ſeven years ſince my " Acceſſion to the Throne, I have made " the beſt enquiry I could, who was the " moſt Potent King in *Europe*, in order " to oppoſe the Deſigns of the *Portu-* " *gueſes*: And being at laſt inform'd that " the King of the *Hollanders* was not " only a Scourge to their King, but alſo " ſupported by the Strength and Power " of ſeveral other Kings his Confede- " rates, I took a firm Reſolution (re- " lying upon the Fidelity of the Gover- " nor of *Paliacatta*) to declare my ſelf " a Brother in War to the King of the " *Hollanders* as long as Sun and Moon " ſhall continue in the Firmament. 'Tis " true, ſome Treaties of this kind have " been made formerly betwixt my Pre- " deceſſors and the Viceroy of *Jacatra*, " and the Governor of *Paliacatta*; but " theſe having prov'd ineffectual, it " ſeems as if it had pleaſed God to bring " the ſame Perfection under my Reign, " in hopes that the Governor of *Palia-* " *catta* will with all poſſible care ſecond " our Endeavours, whereof we give " him Aſſurances upon our Royal Word, " that they ſhall be at liberty to erect a " Fortreſs either at *Cotiar* or *Batecalo*, " for which purpoſe they may employ a " Squadron of five Ships (a Force ſuf- " ficient to ballance the preſent Strength " of the Enemy) who may be ſecure of our " Aſſiſtance, either by my ſelf in Perſon, " or by my Brother. All the Cannon or " Booty taken by them ſhall be at their " own diſpoſal, and they ſhall be provi- " ded with all ſorts of Materials requi- " ſite for the building of a Fort either " at *Batecalo* or *Cotiar*. I further engage " my ſelf by my Royal Word, to repay " the Governor all the Charges he ſhall " be at in equipping the ſaid Squadron " to be ſent to my Aſſiſtance, to which " of the before-mentioned Harbors you " pleaſe. If the Governor approves of " theſe Propoſitions, let him ſend a Veſſel " to *Trinquenemale* or *Cotiar*, in order to " tranſport my Ambaſſadors with ſafety " to him, whom I would have reſt ſe- " cure, that in caſe he can bring this " buſineſs to Perfection, he ſhall be well " rewarded for his Service according to " his Dignity and Merits: But if it be " beyond his power, let him diſpatch " this Meſſenger with all ſpeed to the " Viceroy of *Jacatra*.

Dated the 9th of *Sept.* 1636. *Raja Singa*, Imperador.

A certain *Brahman* being diſpatch'd with this Letter, the ſame liv'd for ſix months undiſcover'd among the *Portugueſes* at *Jafnapatnam*, before he could meet with a conveniency to be tranſported to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, from whence he purſued his Journy by Land to *Paliacatta*, where he delivered *Raja Singa*'s Letter to the then Governor *Charles Reyniers*.

CHAP. XIX.

A Treaty, and Letter in return of that of the Emperor's. The Dutch *Deputies in* Ceylon *are honourably receiv'd. Their Tranſactions, and Return with the the Emperor's Ambaſſadors. The* Portugueſes *endeavour to render the* Dutch *ſuſpected. The Emperor's Anſwer to the* Dutch *Admiral.*

Reſolution of the Council of the Indies.

Charles Reyniers the Governor of *Paliacatta* (afterwards General of the *Indies*) had no ſooner receiv'd this Letter, but he ſent the ſame to *Batavia* to the General and Great Council of the *Indies*, who after mature deliberation reſolv'd to ſend a Perſon fitly qualified for ſuch a Truſt aboard the *Falcon* Yacht in order to enter into a ſtrict Amity and Commerce with the Emperor, and to procure a conſiderable Cargo of Cinnamon; whereof immediate notice was alſo to be given to the *Dutch* Fleet before *Goa*.

It is to be obſerv'd, that ſometime before this Letter was brought to *Batavia*, the General *Anthony van Diemen*, and the Council of the *Indies*, had already taken the Affairs of *Ceylon* into their Conſideration, having order'd the before-ſaid Mr. *Reyniers* to make all poſſible Enquiry, whether it were not feaſible to get ſome ſhare as well as the *Portugueſes* in

in the Cinnamon Trade. One *John Thijſſen* a Maſter of a Veſſel (afterwards Governour of *Malacca*, and now a Member of the Council of the *Indies*) who had bin a Priſoner in *Ceylon*, having alſo lately given the ſaid Council an exact account of the Condition of the Iſle, it was reſolv'd 1637. to ſend him forthwith with three Yachts, the *Falcon*, the *Voorburgh*, and the *Leſſer Hollandia*, and the *Ruttem* Frigot, to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*; where coming to an Anchor before *Paliacatta* the laſt day of *Auguſt*, and their Commiſſions being open'd, he was, in conjunction with the Factor *Andrew Helmont*, conſtituted Envoy to the Emperor of *Ceylon*.

Dutch *Envoys ſent to* Ceylon.

Accordingly the 21ſt of *October* they took their way towards *Tegnapatnam*, where having furniſh'd themſelves with two Negroes (acquainted with that Country) they ſet ſail for *Ceylon*, where they arriv'd within five or ſix days after, and caſt Anchor near the Village of *Calmony* or *Calarme*, about ſeven Leagues from the *Cabo de Fradſes*, i. e. the *Monks Cape*. They ſent immediately one of the two before-mentioned Negroes aſhore, to get intelligence what part of the Country they were in; which being done by a certain Signal (a Fire made upon an adjacent Hill) they ſent him after his return, in Company of the other Negro, with a Letter of Recommendation from the Factor *Chrimma* to the Emperor of *Ceylon*, under promiſe that they were to return in 16 days, which they did accordingly, bringing along with them not only certain Hoſtages, and among them a certain *Hollander*, who living at the Emperor's Court, was willing to accompany them, and gave them very good Intelligence, but alſo the Lord High-Treaſurer of his Majeſty, and *John Alberts* another *Dutch*-man, a Native of *Embden* (who having deſerted from Mr. *Anthony Caens* Ship, had ſince ſerv'd the Emperor in the quality of a Court-Martial) in order to conduct our Envoys to the Imperial Court.

Accordingly they ſet out on their Journy from the Village of *Samanture*, and in four days arriv'd at *Pangergame* in the Country of *Vintane*, where they were introduc'd the ſame night by the Light of Torches into the Emperor's Preſence, who then kept his Reſidence at one of his Pleaſure-houſes on the other ſide of the River *Mavilgange*. Their Reception was very magnificent, as will appear anon by the Entertainment given to Mr. *Gerard Hulſt*, whereof we ſhall have occaſion to

Have Audience of the Emperor.

give a move ample Deſcription. The Credential Letters written by the Governour of *Paliacatta*, and deliver'd by the Envoys to his Imperial Majeſty, were as follows.

Baldæus.

To the moſt Potent Emperor *Raja Singa*, &c.

Moſt Potent Emperor!

Letter from the Governour of Paliacatta to the Emperor of Ceylon.

" GOD protect your Imperial Ma-
" jeſty! Your Majeſty is not igno-
" rant of the long and tedious Wars we
" have for ſo many years laſt paſt carried
" on (by the Bleſſing of God) with good
" ſucceſs both in *Europe* and the *Indies*
" againſt the King of *Spain* and *Portugal*,
" and how at this time we keep *Goa*, their
" chief City in the *Indies*, block'd up
" with ſo numerous a Squadron of Men
" of War, that they are not in a Con-
" dition to relieve any of their Subjects
" from thence. We have underſtood by
" your Majeſty's Letter the many Out-
" rages, Inſolencies, Treaſons and Wars
" carried on by the *Portugueſes* againſt
" your Majeſty ſince their Settlement in
" your Territories, contrary to the En-
" gagements, Treaties and Confedera-
" cies made betwixt you and them; all
" which they have treacherouſly broken,
" in order to make themſelves Maſters of
" your Empire, and to impoſe the moſt
" miſerable Slavery upon your Sub-
" jects. Our General of *Jacatra* being
" inform'd of theſe Deſigns, and your
" Majeſty's moſt commendable Intenti-
" ons to free your Country from ſuch
" unwelcome Gueſts, and to ſecure your
" Subjects againſt all Violences, by ſweep-
" ing out the very Remnants of the
" *Portugueſes*: The General, I ſay, be-
" ing extremely rejoic'd at this Reſolu-
" tion, and more eſpecially that your
" Majeſty deſired our Aſſiſtance, did give
" immediate Orders for the diſpatching
" of theſe Envoys, to treat with your
" Majeſty, and to declare to you the
" ſincerity of our Intentions towards
" your Majeſty and your Subjects, in
" the ſame manner as the Effects thereof
" have been ſufficiently approv'd by ma-
" ny of your Neighbouring Princes and
" Nations. If your Majeſty will be
" pleaſed to allow us the Exportation of
" ſome Cinnamon, we oblige our ſelves
" to aſſiſt your Majeſty with Muſquets,
" Powder, Ammunition, and other Arms;
" ſo that in caſe you will order two or
" more Ships Cargo's of Cinnamon to be
" got ready for our uſe againſt *May*

Baldæus. " next, we either will pay ready Mony " for it, or exchange the ſame for Am- " munition or other Merchandizes, as " your Majeſty ſhall think fit. So ſoon " as our Envoys are aſſur'd of your Ma- " jeſty's Reſolutions upon this Head, and " of your Intentions to enter into a fur- " ther Treaty with us, they ſhall (ac- " cording to orders) ſet ſail immediate- " ly to our Fleet before *Goa*, to confer " with the Admiral how ſoon and how " many Ships may be detach'd out of his " Fleet, either for the Tranſportation " of the Cinnamon, or your Majeſty's " Aid, according to the preſent Exigency " of Affairs. We deſire therefore your " Majeſty to give theſe Envoys, ſent with " a moſt ſincere Intention to your Ma- " jeſty, a ſutable Reception, and a fa- " vourable Audience; and afterwards " to diſpatch them with all convenient " ſpeed, to further their arrival at our " Fleet before *Goa*, before the *Mouſſon* " be paſſed, which otherwiſe might " prove no ſmall Obſtacle to our Deſign. " We acknowledg we ought to have pre- " ſented your Majeſty with ſome Foreign " Rarities (according to Cuſtom) but " being ignorant of the Condition of " your Country, and in no ſmall fear " that theſe Envoys might perhaps be de- " tain'd by the *Portugueſes*, we hope your " Majeſty will excuſe the ſame for this " time. We pray, moſt Potent Empe- " ror, that God may grant your Majeſty " Health, Proſperity, and Victory over " your Enemies.

Dated in the Fort *Geldria*, the 20*th* of *Octob.* 1637.

Subſcribed,

Your Majeſty's moſt devoted Servant,

Charles Reyniers.

Tranſactions of the Envoys. The Emperor, whilſt the Envoys were making their Propoſitions, ſtood with the Crown on his Head, and a Scymeter in his Hand, his Head, Arms and Legs adorn'd with Jewels, Rings and Chains of Gold. He enquired after the State of Affairs in *Holland*, the Health of the Prince of *Orange*, and whether the Envoys had a full Power to treat with him; unto which they anſwer'd, No, but that the Admiral of the *Dutch* Squadron before *Goa* had: So they were conducted to the Apartments prepar'd for their Reception, to reſt themſelves after ſo fatiguing a Journy.

The next day being again admitted into the Emperor's Preſence, he ask'd them ſeveral Matters concerning the preſent ſtate of Affairs in *Europe*: The *Portugueſes* having made it their buſineſs to repreſent the *Dutch* as an inconſiderable *Mob*, and the Emperor nevertheleſs having by the great Naval Strength that appear'd of late years in the *Eaſt-Indies* conceived a quite different opinion of their Strength than what had been whiſper'd about by the *Portugueſes*, was very glad to find the Truth to prove agreeable to his former Sentiments concerning the Power of a Nation, with whom he was going to enter into a ſtrict Confederacy againſt the *Portugueſes*. The next following day they began to enter upon a Treaty about the Cinnamon, and the Fort of *Batecalo*. Whilſt his Majeſty held frequent Conferences (twice a day for a whole Week) with our Deputies, a Letter was ſent to the King or Prince of *Mateli* (the Emperor's Brother) by *Diego de Melo de Caſtro*, Governour of *Columbo*; wherein he complained *of the intended Breach of the Peace, ſtiling the* Hollanders *rebellious Subjects of the King of* Portugal, *who had incur'd the Hatred of all the other* Indian *Princes*. He added, *That the Emperor was guilty of this Rupture whereof he had given notice in a Letter to the Viceroy of* Goa. His Majeſty deſir'd that the ſaid Letter ſhould be tranſlated into the *Dutch*, and be deliver'd by the Envoys to the Admiral before *Goa*; and told them for the reſt, that he was too well acquainted with their ways, to give Ear to theſe Calumnies: That he would endeavour to amuſe them with Compliments, till he could find an opportunity of ſurprizing the Fort of *Mankeware* in the *Low-Countries* near the South Shore of the Iſle. He writ alſo a Letter to the Admiral *Weſterwold*, and order'd three Deputies to go along with our Envoys to take a view of the Fleet before *Goa*, and to give an account thereof to him.

The Portugueſes endeavour to render the Dutch *ſuſpected.*

The Emperor's Courteſy to the Dutch.

The 27*th* of the ſame Month his Majeſty thought fit to diſpatch the Envoys: *Palankyns* or Litters were order'd for their Journy, with ſome Elephants for their Baggage, and a Convoy of 20 *Laſcaryns*, under the Command of a Colonel to conduct them, with orders to defray their Charges in all places through which they paſſed. It was further remarkable, that whilſt the Governour of *Paliacatta*'s Letter was deliver'd to his Majeſty, and the Envoys made their Propoſitions, he aroſe from his Chair, and remain'd ſtanding all the while, an Honour never done to the *Portugueſes*. The *Dutch* Envoys ſet ſail the 4*th* of the next following

Their honourable Diſpatch.

* Month

Month of *December*, with the three before-mention'd Deputies aboard the *Falcon* Yacht, and coming up the 19*th* following with the *Dutch* Squadron before *Goa*, they deliver'd to *Adam Westerwold* their Admiral, the following Letter from his Imperial Majesty.

Letter of the Emperor to the Dutch Admiral.

" HAving sent a Letter in *September* to the Governour of *Paliacatta*, I " receiv'd an Answer thereupon the 19*th* " of *Novemb.* 1637. but the Envoys not " being instructed sufficiently to treat " with me, but the same being referr'd " by the General of *Jacatra* to the Admi-" ral of the Fleet, I thought fit to send " certain Deputies to treat with your " Excellency. The before-mentioned " Governour having made mention also " of the Transportation of a certain quan-" tity of Cinnamon, your Excellency if " you please may send five Men of War " to attack the Fort of *Batecalo*, and some " other Vessels to other Harbours, in or-" der to take in all the Cinnamon that " is to be had there. I am inform'd that " you intend to stay before *Goa* till *April* " next, and then are to return to *Jacatra*, " in order to return afterwards with all " possible speed to the Harbour of *Co-" lumbo*, and from thence to detach three " Ships to the Harbour of *Batecalo*, in " order to make themselves Masters of " that place. I will at the same time ad-" vance with my Forces to *Columbo*; and *Baldæus.* " in case God be pleased to bless our " Arms with Victory against our Ene-" mies, I dare assure you upon my Royal " Word, that the City shall be preserv'd " for our mutual use, and that we will " enter into a Contract with you con-" cerning all the Pepper and Cinnamon " in the Isle. It is therefore that I judg " it advisable to come with your whole " Strength, in order to accelerate our " Confederacy, which may be as dura-" ble as the Sun and Moon: But if this " should not be convenient, pray send " a trusty Person whom we may treat " with, there being little time to be lost, " since things being already come to a " Rupture with the *Portugueses*, we shall " stand in present need of your Assistance. " I expect the return of the three De-" puties with the arrival of your Fleet.

From *Vintane* 28 *Nov.* 1637.

Signed,

Imperador, *Raja Singa.*

Sealed with the Pummel of his Majesty's Scymeter, printed in Red Wax.

It was directed,

To the Lord Admiral of the *Dutch* Fleet before *Goa.*

CHAP. XX.

Sea Engagement before Goa, *betwixt the* Dutch *and* Portuguese *Fleets.*

Sea Engagement before Goa.

WHilst the Envoys were honourably entertain'd aboard the Fleet by *Adam van Westerwold* the *Dutch* Admiral, a Sea Engagement happen'd the 4*th* of *January* 1638. betwixt us and the *Portugueses*. The *Dutch* Squadron was compos'd of the following Ships.

A List of the Dutch *Squadron.*

The *Utrecht*, aboard whereof was the Admiral *Adam van Westerwold*, Capt. *Reynier Wybrandz.*, Head Factor *James Nolpe*, carrying 42 Brass and Iron Cannon mounted, and 150 Men, among whom were 35 Soldiers, commanded by Lieutenant *Hans Maagdelyn.*

The *Flissingen*, aboard of which was the Vice-Admiral, Head Factor, Fiscal, and Commissary *John van Twist*; *Hubert Hubertson* Captain, carrying 38 pieces of Cannon, and 140 Men, among whom were 20 Soldiers, commanded by a Serjeant named *Cornelius Bloem.*

The Arms of *Rotterdam* Reer-Admiral, commanded by *Herman Wolters*, *Baak*, and *John David Wolfswinkel* Clark, carrying 38 pieces of Cannon, and 130 Men, among whom were 20 Soldiers.

The *Hague*, aboard of which were *Floris van Castel* Head Factor, *Minne Williams Keert de Koe* Captain, and *James van Capel* under Factor, carrying 34 pieces of Cannon, and 110 Men, among them 20 Soldiers.

The *Harderwyk*, commanded by *Paul Clasen*, *Peter Bruchart* under Factor, carrying 36 pieces of Cannon, 115 Men, among them 20 Soldiers.

The *Vere*, commanded by *Isaac Dickson Kien*, *Laurence de Marshal* under Factor, carying 30 pieces of Cannon, and 105 Men, among them 20 Soldiers.

The *Texel*, commanded by Captain *Cornelius Leendard Valk*, *Jooſt van Wielyk* under Factor, carrying 24 pieces of Cannon, and 77 Men, among them 12 Soldiers.

Baldæus.

The *Breda*, commanded by *Francis Thyſe*, *John Fox* under Factor, carrying 24 Cannon, 77 Men, and among them 12 Soldiers.

The Yacht the Little *Amſterdam*, *Jacob Jacobſon Struck* Commander, carrying 8 Guns, and 25 Men.

The little *Enchuyſen* Yacht commanded by Captain *Reynier*, carrying 2 Braſs and 6 Iron Guns, and 20 Men.

The *Falcon* Yacht, *John Thyſen* Captain, *Adrian Helmont* Factor, carrying 16 Iron Guns, 40 Men, and among them ſix Soldiers.

The *Dolphin* Frigat, commanded by *Peter van der Kamer*, carrying 6 Iron Guns, and 20 Men.

A Liſt of the Portugueſe *Ships.*

The *Portugueſe* Squadron conſiſted of theſe following Ships.

The *Bon Jeſus*, *Don Anthonio Telles de Meneſes* Admiral, carrying 76 Braſs Guns, and 400 Men, among whom were 300 *Portugueſes*, the reſt Negroes.

The *S. Sebaſtian* Vice-Admiral, commanded by Capt. *Anthonio Menezes Bourette*, carrying 50 Braſs Guns, 150 *Portugueſes*, and 200 Negroes.

Madre de Deos Reer-Admiral, commanded by *Lewis Gonſalves*, carrying 35 Iron and Braſs Guns, 130 *Portugueſes* and 120 Negroes.

The S. *Bartholomew*, *Lewis de Caſtelbranco* Commander, carrying 26 Iron and Braſs Guns, 140 *Portugueſes*, and 160 Negroes.

The S. *Francis*, Captain *Domingo Fereira* Commander, carrying 26 Guns, 100 *Portugueſes*, and as many Negroes.

The S. *Philip*, commanded by *Don Diego de Vaes*, carrying 24 Guns, 100 *Portugueſes*, and 100 Negroes.

With theſe 6 Galeons, and 20 ſmall Frigats, the *Portugueſes* ſet ſail out of the Road of *Goa*, *Jan.* 4. 1638. in ſight of the *Dutch*, who no ſooner got ſight of them, but they weighed their Anchors, and in form of a Creſcent ſail'd with a Land-wind and low Water out into the Main. The *Portugueſes* divided into two Squadrons follow'd them with all the Sails they could make, their

Admiral

Admiral making up towards the *Dutch* Admiral, as their Vice-Admiral (tho not so good a Sailor as the rest) did to the Ships the *Rotterdam*, the *Vere*, and the *Falcon* Yacht. In the Morning about Nine a Clock both Fleets began to come within Cannon-shot, about three Leagues from the Road of *Goa*, where the Engagement began betwixt the two Admirals, who plentifully exchang'd their Broad-sides for three hours successively, as did three others of the *Portuguese* Ships with the *Dutch* Fleet, the rest of their Galleons not being able to come up immediately for want of a Wind. The *Portuguese* Vice-Admiral coming at last up with the rest, was briskly saluted by our Ships the *Rotterdam* and the *Vere*, whilst the rest of the *Dutch* Vessels did what they could to advance closer to the Enemy; and at last having got the advantage of the Sea-wind, they were for boarding the *Portuguese* Ships, having sent the *Texel* and *Dolphin* Frigats, two Fire-ships, to get in among them; but these setting it before the Wind, avoided that danger. The *Dutch* Admiral *Westerwold* did his utmost in his Ship the *Utrecht* to board the *Portuguese* Admiral; which he perceiving, retreated towards his Squadron, which made the *Dutch* Admiral set it with all the sail he could make upon their Vice-Admiral, which he did with such success, that the *Portuguese* was forced to cut his Sails and Cables to get rid of his Enemy, whilst the whole *Portuguese* Squadron ply'd the *Dutch* Admiral with their Cannon, who thereby receiv'd considerable damage, especially in his Rigging. Our Ship the *Vere* would have boarded the S. *Bartholomew*, but they got clear of one another, yet not without receiving a good Broad-side from the Ship the *Hague*; and the *Flissingen* finding the *Portuguese* Admiral engag'd with these two Ships, she laid the *Bartholomew* aboard, and with the assistance of the *Hague* ply'd her so warmly, that she was set on fire, the rest of the *Portuguese* Ships retreating in the mean while towards the Shore. Such was the violence of the Flames, that notwithstanding all the Endeavours that were used, the *Hague* was also set on fire, and soon after the *Flissingen*, and were all three consum'd by the Flames.

Sea Engagement betwixt the Portuguese and Dutch.

A Portuguese Ship with two Dutch Vessels set on fire.

The *Portugueses* in the mean while taking the advantage of the Confusion, made the best of their way towards the Road of *Goa*, being pursued for one League and a half by the *Rotterdam*, *Vere*, and *Texel*, close under their Forts; the rest of our Ships being busied in saving the Men from the danger of the Fire, and in repairing their Masts and Rigging, so that the Victory remain'd on our side, which would have been very considerable had the same been not allay'd by the burning of the two before-mentioned Ships.

Baldæus.

The Loss of the *Dutch* amounted to 35 Men, among whom were Capt. *Herman Wouters Baak*, besides 50 wounded, among whom was the Factor *James Nolpe*: The loss on the *Portuguese* side amounted to 78 *Portugueses*, and 150 *Mistices* and Negroes. *Don Lewis de Castelbranco*, and Father *Laurence de Merinda* a Jesuit, were taken Prisoners, with 90 *Portugueses*, and 49 *Mistices* and Negroes, being sav'd by the same Boats that came to save their own Men, and exchang'd afterwards for a Captain, a Factor, and eight other *Dutch*-men belonging to the *Wieringen* Yacht (burnt near *Malacca*) besides a Sum of 2000 Crowns paid to *Don Pedro de Silva* Viceroy of the *Indies*. The first of *March* a *Portuguese Caraque*, half loaden with Pepper and Cinnamon, and bound for *Portugal*, immediately after the departure of the *Dutch* Fleet was burnt by accident; and the Galeon the *Madre de Deos* underwent the same fate in *April* following, to the great detriment of the *Portugueses*, whose Naval Force in the *Indies* was not a little impair'd by the loss of these three great Ships.

Loss on both sides.

The Emperor of *Ceylon*'s Deputies who were present in the Engagement, were surpriz'd at the Bravery of the *Hollanders*, who with their small Ships durst board the *Portugueses* so much stronger both in Men and Cannon. After the Engagement the *Dutch* Fleet came to an Anchor near the Islands on the South-side of *Goa*, to refit their Ships, and to venture a second Engagement. Soon after the *Hertogenbosch* a brave Vessel commanded by *William Jacob Koster*, join'd our Fleet, coming lately from *Suratte* with a rich Cargo of the best *Indian* Stuffs, Indigo, Saltpeter, and other *Indian* Commodities, valued at 412000 Gilders at the first hand, which for meer safety sake were dispersed among the other Vessels. The 12th of *January* arriv'd likewise the Ship *Henrietta Louisa* from *Batavia*, having on board 76000 Crowns, besides other Merchandizes for our Factory of *Suratte*, and was sent thither in company of the *Breda* and *Enchuysen* Yachts.

The Dutch refit near the South Isles of Goa.

Are reinforc'd with two Ships.

CHAP.

Baldæus.

CHAP. XXI.

William Jacob Koſter *ſent to* Ceylon *by Admiral* Weſterwold. *The* Portugueſes *march to* Candy, *are totally routed by the Emperor. The* Dutch *beſiege* Batecalo.

A Dutch *Squadron ſent to* Ceylon.

THE 23*d* of *Jan.* 1638. the *Falcon* Yacht being likewiſe diſpatch'd to *Batavia*, with Advice of the late Engagement, and ſome Merchandizes, as alſo the Sick and Wounded to be diſpos'd in the Hoſpital there, our Squadron conſiſted only of 7 Capital Ships and 2 Yachts. But the *Dutch* Admiral perceiving the *Portugueſes* to make not the leaſt Preparations of attacking them a ſecond time, it was reſolv'd in a Council of War to ſend Mr. *William Jacob Koſter* Commodore, with the *Texel*, the *Amſterdam*, and *Dolphin*, mann'd with 180 Men and 70 Souldiers, to the Iſle of *Ceylon*, to give notice to the Emperor of the intended Succours againſt *May*, and in the mean while to offer his Aſſiſtance in the Siege of ſome Fort or other belonging to the *Portugueſes*; for which purpoſe the Admiral writ the following Letter to his Imperial Majeſty.

The Dutch *Admiral's Letter to the Emperor of* Ceylon.

" *Adam van Weſterwold*, Counſellor Extraordinary of the *Indies*, and Admiral of the *Dutch* Fleet, wiſhes the moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*, King of *Candy*, &c. all Happineſs and Proſperity, with the utmoſt Offer of his Service, for the throwing off the intolerable Yoke of the *Portugueſes*.

Moſt Potent Emperor,

" WHilſt the Illuſtrious General and Council of the *Indies*, under the Juriſdiction of the *United Provinces*, were employ'd in equipping a Squadron of 16 Ships, to be ſent from *Batavia* before *Goa*, in order to annoy our common Enemies the *Portugueſes*, and to prevent their ſending any *Caracques* or Galeons during the late Northern *Mouſſon* to *Portugal*, the Ship the *Huſduynen* arriv'd at *Batavia* from the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, with Letters from the Governour of that Coaſt, wherein was enclos'd your Majeſty's Letter, dated at *Candy*, *Sept.* 9. 1636. The ſaid General and Council of the *Indies*, having underſtood by theſe Letters, the many Treacheries and Outrages committed by the *Portugueſes* in your Majeſty's Dominions, and that you were pleas'd to crave their Aſſiſtance for the defence of your Country, and rooting out our common Enemies, offering for that purpoſe to have either *Batecalo* or *Cotiar* (which of the two we ſhould pitch upon) fortify'd at your own Charge for our uſe, as likewiſe to give Satisfaction for all the Charge we ſhould be at in the Equipment of ſuch Ships as ſhould be ſent to your aſſiſtance: Theſe Propoſitions having been well weigh'd by the General and Council of the *Indies*, it was reſolv'd by them, purſuant to the good Inclinations they have to your Majeſty, to comply with your Deſires. And it appearing by your Majeſty's Letter, dated *Novemb.* 21. 1637. and ſent to me by the *Faulcon* Yacht, that you ſtill perſiſt in the ſame laudable Sentiments, I took immediate care to ſend a Veſſel and two Yachts, to advertiſe your Majeſty of our Coming, under the Commodore *William Jacob Koſter*, the ſecond Member of my Council, who is to treat with your Majeſty concerning our intended Deſign, and to concert meaſures which of the *Portugueſe* Forts may be moſt conveniently attack'd at our Arrival, and where your Majeſty's Forces are to rendevouz, in order to aſſiſt in the taking of the ſaid Forts; for which purpoſe a certain quantity of Ladders of Bamboes, beſides ſome other Materials, muſt be got ready. Your Majeſty's Deputies who come with theſe Ships, will be able to give you a more compleat account by word of Mouth, concerning out Intentions. If the Blockade of *Goa* be rais'd by the end of *April*, I intend (purſuant to the Orders receiv'd from the General and Council of the *Indies*) to ſet ſail in Perſon with three of my biggeſt Ships, well provided with Men and Ammunition, for *Ceylon*, to confer and treat more amply with your Majeſty concerning our projected Deſign. I hope your Majeſty will according to your Promiſe, order two Ships Cargos of Cinnamon to be got ready againſt our Arrival. I wiſh your Majeſty a long

"Life, and Victory against your Ene-
"mies.

Commodore Koster arrives in Ceylon.

The before-mentioned Commodore *Koster*, having set Sail accordingly, *March* 17. from *Goa*, with the 3 Ships the *Texel*, little *Amsterdam* and *Dolphin*, came to an Anchor the 2*d* of *April* following near *Trinquenemale*, a Harbour on the Northside of the Isle of *Ceylon*; where the Emperor's Deputys being set ashore, in order to deliver the Admiral's Letter at *Candy*, and give notice of the Arrival of the *Dutch* Ships, they understood, that the Emperor immediately after the Departure of the *Falcon* Yacht, had caused a good Quantity of Cinnamon, Wax and Pepper, to be laid up for our use. The *Portugueses* had no sooner notice thereof, but they sent a Letter to his Majesty, asking *the Reason why he had ordered such a Quantity of Merchandizes to be laid up, which, pursuant to the Contract stipulated betwixt them, belonged only to them.* The Emperor return'd them no other Answer than that, *He having promised the same to his Friends the* Hollanders, *he would try who should dare to oppose it.*

This resolute Answer so nettled the *Portugueses* at *Columbo*, that being now fully convinc'd of the Confederacy betwixt the Emperor and the *Dutch*, and that they must soon expect to be attack'd at *Batecalo*, they were put to the greatest Nonplus, what Resolution to take in this present Exigency of Affairs. Some considering that having scarce been able to cope with the Emperor alone, they would not be able to resist his Efforts, when sustain'd by the *Dutch*, were of Opinion to embark all their Treasure, Men and Artillery, to demolish the Fort, and set Sail for *Goa*.

The Portugueses put to a great Nonplus.

But the braver sort rejecting this Proposition as base, and inconsistent with their King's Honour, resolv'd, rather than thus to quit an Isle, which they had fix'd themselves in with the Loss of so much Blood and Treasure, to venture the utmost and die in the Attempt. *Damijao Bottado*, who had laid the first Foundation of the Fortress of *Batecalo*, propos'd among the rest, that they ought to gather all their Forces, and march up to *Candy*, before *Raja Singa* could be join'd by the *Dutch*.

This Advice being approved of, they marched in *March* 1638. under the Command of their General *Diego de Melo*, the before-mention'd *Damijao Bottado*, and the Major-General *Sorde*, towards *Candy*.

They march towards Candy.

The Emperor having got notice of their March, retir'd from thence with all his People, leaving the City to their Mercy, which they took without any Opposition; and having plunder'd and burnt the same, directed their March to the Mountains of *Gannor* or *Gannero*, where they pitch'd their Tents, their whole Force consisting of 2300 *Portugueses* and *Mistices*, and 6000 Negroes.

Baldæus.

Take and burn it.

This it was that the Emperor had so long look'd for, who immediately order'd the Road to *Walane*, and all other Places thro which they were to pass, to be stopp'd, by laying great Trees cross the Roads. The Enemies finding themselves reduc'd to these Straits, the *Cingaleses* unanimously revolted to the Emperor; so that the *Portugueses* seeing not the least hopes of escaping by Force of Arms, had recourse to two Friers, one a *Franciscan*, and the other an *Austin* Monk, who were sent to endeavour to obtain them a free Passage from the Emperor to *Columbo*: But the Emperor gave them such an Answer, that the Friers thought it their safest way not to return to their Camp; so that the *Portugueses* finding themselves past all Reprieve, the General *de Melo* ask'd *Bottado* what was to be done, and which way they should escape the Danger into which they were drawn by his rash Advice, who gave him no other Answer, than that they must die together. The Emperor *Raja Singa* in the mean while kept close in his Camp, watching all the Opportunities of attacking them, with the utmost Advantage, which soon happen'd; for a violent Storm of Rain (which he knew would render the *Portuguese* Firelocks in some manner useless) made him draw out his Troops against the Enemy; and putting the Musqueteers in Front, he order'd them after the first Discharge to retire, and give way to 5000 Bowmen of *Mangelcorle*, who being sustain'd by as many Pikes, did break in with such Fury among the *Portugueses*, that they soon put them into Disorder, and immediately after to the Rout, with the Slaughter of all the *Portugueses*, except a very few who obtain'd Mercy at their Conqueror's Hands, amounting in all not to above 70 Persons.

Are defeated by the Cingaleses

And put to the Rout.

The Emperor was a Spectator of this Engagement from a Tree near the Bank of a River, which ran betwixt him and the Mountain of *Gannor*, whither they brought the Heads of the *Portugueses* slain in the Battel, which were heap'd up in form of a Pyramid before him. All the Great Officers of the *Portugueses* lost their

A Pyramid of Heads.

Baldæus. their Lives near the Mountain of *Gannor*, and among them their General *de Melo*, whoſe Sword was afterwards preſented by the Emperor to the Admiral *Weſterwold*.

Siege of Batecalo. In the mean while matters having been concerted with the *Modeliar*, or Governour of *Mattaclape*, concerning the *Portugueſe* Fortreſs of *Batecalo*, they ſet ſail thither; and having landed 100 Soldiers, and as many Seamen in two Troops, they ſoon rais'd two Batteries, with the aſſiſtance of the Natives, one on the Eaſt, the other on the South-ſide of the Fort, upon each of which were mounted four braſs Demi-Culverins; and the Emperor having left the Groſs of his Army under the Command of his Brother the Prince of *Mateli* to inveſt *Columbo*, join'd our Forces before *Batecalo*, *April* 14. in Perſon, with a Detachment of 2000 Men. Commodore *Koſter* being receiv'd by his Imperial Majeſty with all poſſible Marks of Honour, they immediately enter'd upon a Debate, how to attack the Fortreſs with the utmoſt Vigour upon the Arrival of the reſt of our Ships.

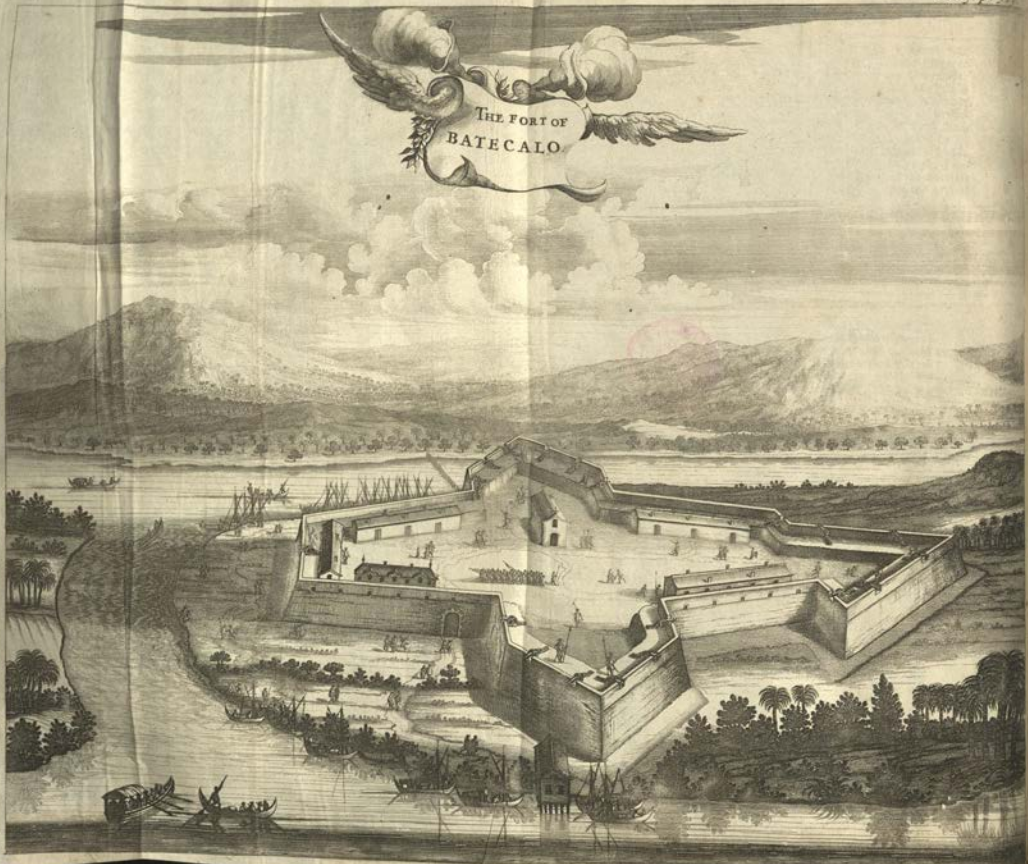
CHAP. XXII.

Adam Weſterwold's *Arrival in* Ceylon. Batecalo *taken.* *A Treaty betwixt the Emperor and Mr.* Weſterwold.

Weſterwold *comes before* Batecalo. THE Admiral *Weſterwold* having ſet Sail *April* 22. from before *Goa*, arriv'd at *Batecalo*, *May* 10. with the Ships the *Maeſtricht*, *Harderwick*, *Rotterdam*, *Vere*, and the *Enchuyſen* Yacht, having on board 840 Men, Officers, Soldiers and Mariners. The next following Day having landed his Men, with 6 great Pieces for Battery, the ſame were mounted immediately, in order to facilitate the Paſſage of their Forces into the Iſle upon which the Fort was built: This being executed

&c.

713.
Baldæus.


THE FORT OF
BATECALO

Batecalo surrendred upon Articles.

accordingly the 18*th*, and 500 Men brought over under favour of the Cannon, which play'd inceſſantly for four Hours upon the *Portugueſes*, they put out the white Flag immediately, and ſent two Deputies to capitulate with the *Dutch* Admiral, which was ſoon done upon the following Conditions: That they ſhould ſurrender the Fort immediately, and be permitted to march out without Arms or Baggage. The *Portugueſes* and *Miſtices* to the Number of 108, with their Wives and Children, to be tranſported in a *Dutch* Veſſel to *Negapatan*, but the Natives to be delivered up to the Emperor, which was executed accordingly, fifty of them (who had murder'd one of his Majeſty's Gentlemen) being empal'd alive, and the reſt ſold for Slaves with their Wives and Children.

Severe Punishment of the Cingaleſes.

A Deſcription of Batecalo.

The Fort of *Batecalo* is ſeated in an Iſle of about two *Dutch* Leagues in compaſs, three Leagues within the Mouth of the River of *Batecalo*, which has given it its Name. It was fortified with high Stone Walls and three paſſable Baſtions, upon which were mounted 11 Iron and Braſs Cannons, beſides ſome leſſer Ones, with a ſutable Proportion of Ammunition. We found in it Rice ſufficient for two Months, but their Freſh-Water being about a Muſquet-ſhot without the Fortreſs, the *Dutch* had made themſelves Maſters of that Spring. Commodore *Koſter* was made Governor of the Fort, with a Gariſon of one hundred *Dutch* Soldiers.

After the taking of this Fortreſs, the Admiral *Weſterwold* made an Alliance with the Emperor of *Ceylon*, in the Name of their High and Mightineſſes the States-General of the *United-Provinces*, his Highneſs *Frederick* Prince of *Orange*, and of the Honourable *Eaſt-India* Company, with the Approbation of the General and Council of the *Indies*, upon the following Conditions:

Alliance betwixt the Emperor of Ceylon and the Dutch.

I. A Firm and ſtedfaſt Amity ſhall be maintain'd betwixt his Majeſty and his Subjects, and the *Dutch* Nation, and their *Eaſt-India* Company, who ſhall aſſiſt his Majeſty upon all Occaſions againſt the *Portugueſes*.

II. As often as any Place or Fort is taken by the *Dutch*, with the Aſſiſtance of his Majeſty, from the common Enemy, the Booty to be divided ſhare and ſhare alike.

III. After the taking of any Forts, the *Dutch* ſhall provide the ſame with neceſſary Gariſons and Ammunition; and if any thing be wanting to compleat the Fortifications, the ſame ſhall be done at the Charge of his Majeſty, as it ſhall be thought requiſite by the *Dutch*.

Baldæus.

IV. His Majeſty obliges himſelf to pay punctually every Month their Soldiers and Officers.

V. As alſo to build in the conquered Places or Forts (where no Houſes are before) a Houſe of Stone (as the *Dutch* ſhall think fit) to be us'd for a Ware-houſe, as alſo a Magazine for their Arms and Naval Stores.

VI. In caſe his Majeſty deſigns any thing againſt the common Enemy, the ſame is to be conſulted with our Chief Officers.

VII. For the Security of the Rivers, his Majeſty is to furniſh a certain Number of Gallies and Gally-Slaves, which are to be provided with Soldiers and Ammunition by the *Dutch*.

VIII. His Majeſty and his Subjects oblige themſelves to make full Reparation of the Charges the *Dutch* have been at in equipping the preſent Fleet, Yachts, Veſſels, *&c.* and furniſhing them with Men, Soldiers, Officers, Ammunition, Proviſions, *&c.* or of ſuch other Ships as the General and Council ſhall for the future ſend to his Majeſty's Aſſiſtance into *Ceylon*, with their neceſſary Men, Ammunition, Proviſions, *&c.* the Charges whereof ſhall be reimburſed in Cinnamon, Pepper, Cardamom, Indigo, Wax, Rice, and ſuch other Commodities as are of the Product of his Majeſty's Dominions, except the *Mato* or *Wild Cinnamon*.

IX. His Majeſty in reſpect of his Friendſhip and good Inclinations to the *Dutch* Nation, allows them free Paſſage and Traffick in all his Dominions, in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, in all his Cities, Towns, Villages, Seaports, Roads, Bays, Rivers, *&c.* with their Veſſels, Yachts, Boats, *&c.* to buy, ſell or exchange, import or export without the leaſt Moleſtation, or paying any Cuſtoms under any pretence whatever. His Majeſty's Subjects ſhall not be permitted to ſell the *Dutch* any Cinnamon, Pepper, Wax and Elephants Teeth, except what is ſold by the Emperor's Order; who engages himſelf, that in caſe he ſhould have occaſion to ſell 4, 10, 20, or more Elephants, he will procure them the like Number at the ſame rate as they were ſold.

X. His Majeſty, and all the Great Men of the Empire promiſe, not to allow their Subjects to traffick, either with any *European* or *Eaſtern* Nation, either by Sale or Exchange, in ſuch Commodities as are of the Product of *Ceylon*; much

leſs to permit the Ships of theſe Nations to tarry in the Harbours of *Ceylon*, but to oblige them to depart forthwith. However the Neighbouring Nations of *Daucy* and *Tanjouwer* may paſs and repaſs freely with their Veſſels, to and from *Ceylon*. *Raldæus.*

XI. His Majeſty obliges himſelf to ſend yearly to *Batavia*, one or two Shiploads of Cinnamon, Pepper, Cardamom, Indigo, Wax, *&c.* as a Reimburſement of the Charge beſtowed in the Equipment of the Veſſels ſent to his Aſſiſtance; and in caſe the ſaid Cargo ſhould amount to more than the Charges, the Surplus to be paid to his Majeſty, either in ready Mony or ſuch Commodities, as his Majeſty ſhall think fit.

XII. His Majeſty having granted full Liberty for the *Dutch* Merchants, to travel, traffick, buy and ſell, the Inhabitants ſhall be obliged to furniſh them with Beaſts fit for Carriage, for the carrying of ſuch Goods as they have bought, either to their Warehouſes, or aboard their Veſſels. Furthermore, the ſaid Merchants or other *Hollanders* ſhall remain under the Juriſdiction of the reſpective Commanders or Heads of their own Nation, as the Natives of *Ceylon* ſtand under the Subjection of the Emperor.

XIII. No body, without exception, that trades with the *Dutch* here, ſhall have Freedom to ſell any ſuch Commodities bought from them to others, before the *Dutch* have fully received their Quota; and in caſe of Contravention, the *Dutch* ſhall have a Power to ſeize his Perſon, and to compel him to produce the ſaid Goods. Furthermore, in caſe any of the Natives ſtand indebted to the *Dutch* for a conſiderable Sum, they ſhall be ſubject to the ſame Treatment, with this Proviſo nevertheleſs, that in caſe any of his Majeſty's Subjects be taken into Cuſtody by the *Dutch*, notice ſhall be given thereof to the Emperor or his Governor.

XIV. No body of what Quality whatever ſhall pretend to raiſe or diminiſh the Coin, otherwiſe than has been agreed betwixt his Majeſty and the *Dutch*; and ſuch as contravene this Article on either ſide, ſhall without Mercy be puniſh'd with Death, and Confiſcation of their Eſtates to his Majeſty's uſe.

XV. In caſe a *Hollander* ſhould fly into his Majeſty's Dominions, the ſame ſhall be deliver'd up; as on the other hand the ſame ſhall be done on our ſide, in caſe any of his Majeſty's Subjects ſhelter themſelves in our Dominions.

XVI. After the Concluſion of this Treaty, neither his Majeſty nor any of his Subjects ſhall maintain any ſecret or publick Commerce or Correſpondence with the *Portugueſes*, our common Enemies, much leſs to traffick with them under any pretence whatever, but look upon them as their conſtant declar'd Enemies: And in caſe any of his Majeſty's Subjects ſhall be diſcover'd to have ſold them any Commodities, the Tranſgreſſors ſhall be puniſh'd with Death.

XVII. His Majeſty ſhall not ſuffer any Prieſts, Friers or Clergymen to dwell in his Dominions, but oblige them to depart as the Authors of all Rebellions, and the Ruin of Governments.

XVIII. In caſe any *Dutch* Ships employed in his Majeſty's Service, ſhall take any Prizes from the Enemies, the ſame ſhall belong to the *Eaſt-India* Company, with this Proviſo however, that the ſaid Company ſhall alone bear all the Damages ſuſtained by the ſaid Ships, in any of theſe Engagements.

XIX. In caſe the *Dutch* furniſh any great Cannon for the Fortreſſes, or otherwiſe for his Majeſty's Service, the ſame may freely be taken back, if Occaſion requires, without any Hindrance, and be brought aboard of Ship or otherwiſe, where it ſhall be thought moſt convenient.

XX. Tranſacted and concluded thus, in the Preſence of his Imperial Majeſty of *Ceylon*, and of *Adam Weſterwold* Member of the Council of the *Indies*, and Commodore of the Squadron of Ships on the Coaſt of *Ceylon*; as alſo of *William Jacob Koſter*, Vice-Commodore of the ſaid Squadron, at the Royal Palace, in the Country of *Bateccalo*, *May* 23. 1638.

Additional Article,

The *Dutch* oblige themſelves to ſhew all poſſible Favour and Aſſiſtance to ſuch Veſſels, as ſhall go from hence with his Majeſty's, or any of his Governors Paſſports to other Harbours.

Signed,

Raja Singa Imperador,
Adam Weſterwold,
William Jacob Koſter.

Sealed with his Majeſty's and Mr. *Weſterwold*'s Seals.

Purſuant to this Agreement, his Majeſty order'd 400 Balls of *Cinnamon*, 87 Quintals of Wax, and 3059 Pounds of Pepper to be deliver'd to Mr. *Weſterwold*

*

wold, in part of the Reimburſement of Charges they had been at, promiſing to deliver the reſt, as ſoon as it could be brought together at the Seaport of *Sammature*, and to haſten the Ratification of the ſaid Alliance; his Majeſty ſent two Ambaſſadors to *Batavia*, in Company of Mr. *Weſterwold*, with ſome Preſents to the General and Council of the *Indies*, who being honourably received and treated there, were afterwards ſent back with Letters and Preſents for his Majeſty, with the Yachts the *Grijpskerk*, *Faulcon* and *Venlo*, bound for the Coaſt of *Coromandel*.

Ratification of the ſaid Alliance.

Baldæus.

The Emperor's Army in the mean while being about 20000 ſtrong, continued before *Columbo*; and the *Portugueſes* having been very unſucceſsful in divers Sallies, it was more than probable that this Place (tho the Capital City of the *Portugueſes* in this Iſle) would be forc'd to ſurrender upon the Arrival of the expected *Dutch* Fleet, under the Admiral *Anthony de Caan*.

Columbo *beſieged.*

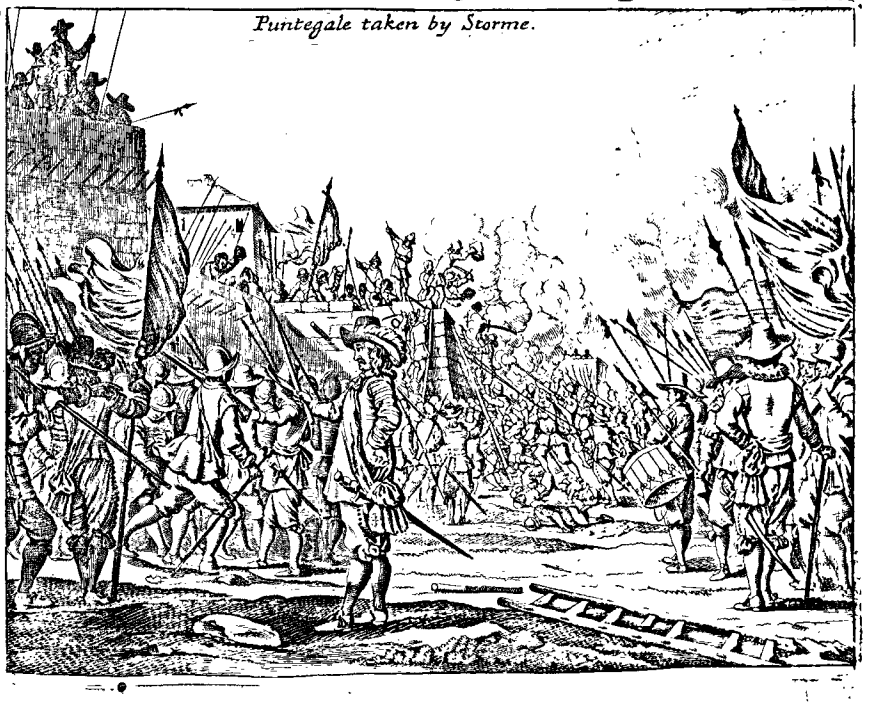
CHAP. XXIII.

Punt de Galle.

Puntegale *taken by Storm by* William Jacob Koſter. Caleture *beſieged.*

Puntegale *beſieged.*

THE 8*th* of *March*, Commodore *Koſter* being come to an Anchor about noon in the Bay of *Puntegale*, under the Enemies Cannon, he landed his Men before Night on the North-ſide without any Reſiſtance. Intelligence was brought by ſome Negroes, that they expected a Reinforcement in the City of 250 *Portugueſes* from *Columbo*; notwithſtanding which the *Dutch* divided their Forces into three Bodies, and advanced cloſe under the Fort: The 9*th* early in the Morning, they were attack'd by the ſaid *Portugueſes*, whom they repuls'd, tho not without ſome loſs. Nevertheleſs they kept our Forces in conſtant Alarm, thoſe of *Can-*



dy being by the 11*th* of *March* advanced no further than *Billigamme*, 6 Leagues from *Gale*; but (thro God's ſingular Mercy) three of our Ships, *viz.* the *Harlem*, *Middleburgh* and *Breda*, coming on the ſame day to anchor in the Bay, and landing 400 men, as well Soldiers as Seamen, we were ſoon exempted from all Fear.

Billærus.

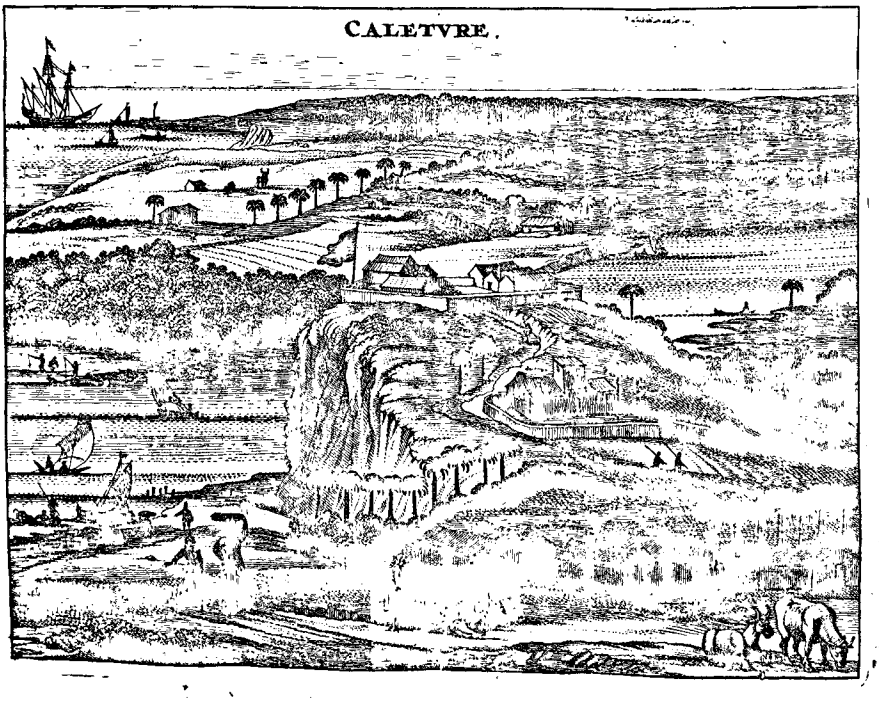
The 12*th* finding they had made a ſufficient Breach in the Baſtion of St. *Jago*, they began to make all neceſſary Preparations for the ſtorming of the Place, which was done accordingly the 13*th* with ſuch undaunted Bravery, that after an hour and half's ſtout reſiſtance it was taken by Aſſault. This City was afterwards, *viz.* 1663, and 64. render'd almoſt impregnable by the *Dutch* by ſeveral additional Fortifications; and this Day is ever ſince celebrated yearly by a ſolemn Thankſgiving.

Is taken by Storm.

Mr. *Koſter* (who was treacherouſly murder'd by the *Cingaleſes*, as *Sebald de Weert* was by his own Imprudence) was ſucceeded by *John Thyſſen*, who is yet living, and has render'd himſelf famous for his many Services done the Company in thoſe Parts. In his ſtead came *John Maatzuyker*, ſince Governour of the *Indies*, who has ſerved in that Station 15 Years. He was ſucceeded by *Jacob van Kittenſtein* in the Preſidentſhip of *Gale* (the Affairs of the Company hitherto not admitting of the Quality of a Governour here) who died afterwards at *Batavia*, and was ſucceeded by *Adrian van der Meyden*, in whoſe time *Caleture*, *Columbo*, *Manaar* and *Jafnapatnam* were taken. He was ſucceeded by *Ryklof van Goens* and *Jacob Huſtart*; by which time the Company having conſiderably enlarged their Limits in this Iſle, a Governour was conſtituted at *Columbo*, the City of *Gale* being left to the management of a Commander in chief, the firſt in that Station being one *Ysbrand Gotsken*, a Native of the *Hogue*, a brave Soldier, ſufficiently known for his ſignal Services done at the Sieges of *Columbo*, *Manaar*, *Jafnapatnam* and *Cochin*, whereof he was Governour afterwards, and ſince chief Director in *Perſia*. *Adrian Rootbaas* his Succeſſor is a Perſon who has render'd his Name famous by Sea, eſpecially in the *Levant* and before *Goa*, as the former had done by Land.

Gale

CALETVRE.



A Description of Gale. *Gale* has a commodious Bay, fit for Anchorage, except that with a South-West Wind the Sea runs very hollow there. At the very Entrance of the Harbour lies a dangerous Rock, near to which all Ships muſt paſs, and againſt which the *Hercules*, one of our Ships, was ſtav'd to pieces. There is no coming into the Bay, unleſs you paſs by the Water-Fort, which is well provided with Cannon for the Security of the Harbour. The Fortifications of the City it ſelf conſiſt only in three Baſtions, the reſt being ſo inclos'd with the Sea and Rocks, that there is no approaching to it even with the ſmalleſt Boats. On the top of a Rock which jets out into the Sea is a Lanthorn, and an Iron Cannon, wherewith they give warning to the Ships, and near it you ſee the Company's Flag diſplay'd. The City is well built of Stone, very high, with goodly Houſes, a ſtately Church, pleaſant Gardens, and moſt delicious Springs; the Mountains which ſurround it affording a pleaſant Proſpect, over which you paſs thro Roads cut out of the Rocks, call'd by them *Gravettes*.

Caleture. About a days Journy from *Gale* ſtands the Fort of *Caleture*, in a moſt delightful Country, near the Entrance of a large and broad River, on the Sea-ſhore, ſurrounded by a double ſtrong Wall of Earth. It was reduced by the Director General *Gerard Hulſt*, 15 *Oct.* 1655. in the following manner.

Is inveſted by the Dutch. Having rendevouzed his Forces, conſiſting of 593 men, near *Bentotte*, and being join'd the 28*th* of *September* by ſome more Troops under *Chriſtopher Egger*, *Leonard Wiltſchut*, and *Melchior van Schoonbeek*, they directed their March towards *Caleture*. But being informed that the Enemy were reſolved to make a vigorous Defence, and our Artillery being not yet come up, it was thought adviſable to detach Capt. *Abraham Cous* and *Jurian Gevels* with five Companys, to ſecure the Paſs of *Oucatte* over the River, thereby to prevent the Enemy from receiving any Supplies, till the arrival of our Ships, that were expected every day with more Forces.

The 29*th* we took a view of all the Avenues leading to the Place; and Guards being plac'd in all convenient Poſts, the Factor *Renier Serooskerken* and Mr. *Ysbrand Godsken* were diſpatch'd to our Ships, to ſend us the neceſſary Artillery and Ammunition.

The 5*th* of *October* Advice was brought by two of the Natives, that the Gariſon, conſiſting of 300 men, was but ſlenderly provided with Proviſions, their whole Store conſiſting only in 50 * *Parras*, and two ſmall Packs of dry'd Fiſh, and that they were forc'd to live upon *Canjies*, or Water and Rice. *Baldæus.* * *Each Parras is 40 Pound.*

The 6*th* of *October* after we had mounted ſome Great Guns upon our Batteries, a certain † *Topas*, who had been Secretary to Captain *Marcello Fialho*, came over to us, who diſcovered to the General *Hulſt* the whole Strength of the Enemy, and the Names of their Officers; adding, that 4 or 5 days before his departure there were about 200 *Parras* of Rice in the Store-houſe, whereof they diſtributed a certain quantity to each Soldier every day, and to the King's Negroes call'd ‖ *Caffers*, a Quart a piece: That they had no *Laſcaryns* in the Place, and as he believ'd could not hold it above 10 days, tho they ſeem'd reſolved to defend it to the laſt extremity, in hopes of being relieved the next week by *Caſpar Figeiro*. † *A Topas is the Son of a Portugueſe and an Indian Woman.* ‖ *Caffers are Negros like thoſe of Angola.*

The ſame day Major *John van der Laan* brought word that all was well ſecured on his Attack; and Captain *James Swart*, and the Factor *Abraham Hartman* brought up with 60 Seamen the two great Cannon that were left behind. Capt. *Dianteiro* was alſo detach'd with 40 *Dutch* Soldiers, and a good number of *Laſcaryns*, to the Paſs of *Wellikande*; and the General *Gerard Hulſt* with Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* having taken a view of our Batteries, did go to take a view of the Paſs near *Palletotte*, where, as well as on the other ſide, they found every thing to their ſatisfaction, 756 men being imployed on that ſide.

The 7*th* of *October* they went up the River as far as *Wellikande*, to ſee whether the Enemy could receive any Supplies of Proviſions by the Brook, or from above by the way of *Anguratotte* and *Tiboene*; but found it not feaſible by reaſon of the ſhallowneſs of the Water. However five Ferry-boats were ſhew'd them in the narroweſt Places of the River, where having placed ſome *Laſcaryns*, they committed the management thereof to Mr. *John van der Laan*. The 11*th* of *October* a Mortar of a large ſize and a 12 Pounder were mounted on the Battery, and Mr. *John van der Laan* came to tell the General that the ſecond Battery would be ready to play on his ſide the ſame night.

The 14*th* in the Morning we ſaw a *Portugueſe* Lieutenant and Drummer with a white Flag, coming out of the Fort, ſent by *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha* their Commander in chief, with the following Letter. " Having

Baldæus. *They offer to capitulate.*

" Having for ſeveral days paſt diſ-
" charged our Truſt as a Captain ought
" to do, and finding you not ſo furiouſly
" imployed to day, I thought fit to take
" this opportunity to try whether you
" would treat with me according to the
" Cuſtom of War; for which purpoſe I
" have ſent you a truſty Perſon. In the
" mean while all Hoſtilities ſhall ceaſe
" on our ſide, hoping the ſame from you.
" We recommend you to God's Protecti-
" on. *Caleture*, Oct. 14. 1655.

Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha.

A Ceſſation of Arms being agreed upon, *Martin Sholtes an* Enſign was ſent back with the *Portugueſe* Officer to treat about the Conditions, whilſt a Meſſenger was diſpatch'd with a Letter to the *Diſſave* (or Deputy-Governour) of *Saffra Gamme*, to deſire him to have it rumor'd abroad, that the *Portugueſes* in *Caleture* had lately been ſupply'd with Proviſions; in hopes thereby to amuſe *Caſpar Figeiro* (who ſtood with his Forces near *Moutapelle*) not to haſten to their Relief.

The Capitulation was ſoon after concluded upon the following Terms:

Articles of the Capitulation.

" The Soldiers to march out with their
" Matches not lighted, Balls in the
" Mouth, and Enſigns diſplay'd; the
" Officers with their Scarfs, which they
" ſhall lay down roll'd up before the Stan-
" dard of the Company. All the Great
" Officers, to the Captains incluſive, to
" be tranſported during this *Mouſſon* to
" *Goa*; the reſt of the Officers and Sol-
" diers to *Batavia*, and from thence to
" *Portugal* at the charge of the Company.
" All the Officers and Soldiers ſhall be
" allowed to carry their Baggage along
" with them; but their Servants ſhall
" be left to the Diſcretion of the *Dutch*
" General. All Church Ornaments ſhall
" be removed. All ſuch as have married
" *Portugueſe* Women, and the *Miſtices*,
" ſhall be conducted to *Columbo*, or where-
" ever elſe they think fit. But the *Laſ-
" caryns* and *Negros*, whether married or
" unmarried, ſhall remain Priſoners of
" War. The Fathers and Clergymen
" ſhall enjoy the ſame Liberty as the
" higheſt Officers, and ſhall be tranſport-
" ed from *Caleture* on the ſame day.
" Theſe Articles are to be ratify'd to
" morrow morning by Sun-riſing. All
" the Superior Officers, including the
" Captains, ſhall have liberty to take
" their Swords along with them. It
" was ſigned,

Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha.
John Alonzo.

" After the ratification it was thus
" ſubſcribed by both Parties.

Gerard Hulſt.
Adrian van der Meyden.
John van der Laan.
Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha.
John Alonzo.

They march out.

The 15*th* early in the Morning the *Portugueſe* Officer returned with the Articles; towards Noon the Gariſon, conſiſting in nine Companys making in all 255 men, marched out of the Fort, and having paid their Reverence with their Enſigns as uſual, the Soldiers were diſarmed. The Companys were the following: The Royal Company commanded by the Captain Major *Marcello Fialho*, conſiſted of 31. *Portugueſes*: That of *John Anthonio Felhaon* of 27. That of *Pedro de Barbos* of 28. That of *Manuel Rodrigos* of 28. That of *Diego Frois* of 36. That of *Jacomo Padraon* of 28. That of *Manuel Mendes* of 27. That of *Lewis Alvres Periero* of 24. And that of *Leonardo de Silva* of 26. In all 255.

Beſides the Perſons of Note living in the Place, with their Families, that were conducted to *Callamoende*, and 50 more that were with the Governour *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha* (afterwards our Priſoners at *Jafnapatnam*) that were carry'd to *Gale*, the other Superior Officers were ſent to *Macoene*, and the reſt kept under a good Gnard in the Fort.

Immediately notice of this Victory having been given to the Emperor *Raja Singa*, General *Hulſt* and Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* took a view of the Fortifications of the Place, whereat they were not a little ſurprized, and found therein 10 Enſigns, 5 great Guns, 4 Braſs ones, 10 8 and 5 Pounders, and one Iron 8 Pounder, 40 Barrels of Gun-powder, 204 Bamboe Canes fill'd, 710 Bullets, 180 Muſquets, 62 Pikes, 7 Cheſts with Muſquet Balls, another Barrel with larger Bullets fit for Muſquetoons, 116 Ammunition Pouches, 5 Muſquetoons, ſome firy Bullets, 60 Spades and 8 Hatchets.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Baldæus.

Engagements near Paneture *and near* Montual, *both to the disadvantage of the* Portugueses.

Ysbrand Godskens *made Governour of* Caleture.

YSbrand Godskens being constituted Governour of *Caleture*, with a Company to keep Garison there, Major *John Vander Laan* march'd the 16*th* from the other side of the River towards *Paneture*, being followed by the General and Mr. *van der Meyden* with the rest of the Forces. In the dusk of the Evening we came up with the *Portugueses*, whom we saluted so briskly with our Firelocks, that they thought fit to retreat, leaving 17 dead, and all their Ammunition, with their Standard, behind them. On our side we had 15 wounded, besides *Arent Jansz van Norden* an Ensign. According to the report of one of their Captains, who was taken Prisoner, they consisted of six Companys commanded by *Dominges Sermento* Captain Major of *Montual*, detached towards *Caleture* to secure this Pass till to morrow, for *Caspar Figeiro*, who was on his march at the head of 600 men, to attempt the Relief of that Place. Whereupon it was thought convenient to make a Halt betwixt *Paneture* and *Galkisse*, near a good Spring, and there to expect the coming up of the rest of their Forces.

The same night, the Moon shining very bright, a Prisoner was brought into our Camp, who being a Native of *Antorf*, and well vers'd in the *Dutch* Tongue, told the General, that he had served the King of *Portugal* 11 Years, and that *Figeiro* would doubtless be with them by day-light.

An Engagement betwixt the Dutch *and* Portugueses.

The 17*th*, being Sunday, word being brought that the *Portugueses* were at hand, Major *John van der Laan* and Capt. *Kous* were posted with five Companies and two Field-Pieces, on a convenient Place, to receive the first Shock of the Enemy; whom, after a general Discharge of their Fire-Arms and Cannon, they received so warmly with Sword in hand, that they were soon brought into confusion, and pursu'd as far as to the Church call'd *Nossa Senhora de Milagres*, i. e. *That of our Lady of Miracles*, with a Slaughter of 150 on the Enemies side. Among our Troops Major *van der Laan* was wounded in the Cheek, and a Gunner, two common Soldiers and a Serjeant, kill'd.

The 18*th* of *October* happen'd another Engagement betwixt us and the *Portugueses* near *Montual*. Our Forces attack'd them in their Entrenchments, from whence they fired furiously upon them; but no sooner had they broke thro their Works, but they threw down their Arms, and made the best of their way to *Columbo*, leaving all their Ammunition behind them, and 22 kill'd upon the Spot; whereas we had not so much as one wounded on our side. We left two Companys as a Guard of the Church of St. *Sebastian*; and advancing nearer towards *Columbo*, a Body of *Portugueses* retreated in Boats from *Montual* to *Columbo*, leaving the Pass open to us, where we found 3 Iron Guns and some Cinnamon, and put a Guard of 16 Soldiers in it under a Serjeant. *A second Engagement.*

Here we received intelligence, that of the whole Body commanded by *Caspar Figeiro*, consisting of 600 *Portugueses*, and sent from *Columbo* to the Relief of *Caleture*, not above 160 were returned to that City.

The 19*th* before Noon some *Portugueses* being got into a Coco-Garden, some of our Soldiers forced them to retire; but those of the City firing upon them, kill'd one of our Serjeants, and wounded *Hans Christophers* a Lieutenant, and two common Soldiers. The same day the General was certify'd by Letters from Capt. *Kous* and Lieut. *Wilschut*, that they had already told above 300 slain of the *Portugueses* upon the Roads, and that daily more Heads and Prisoners were brought in. They sent at the same time a Wastcoat of *Caspar Figeiro*, wherein was the following Letter.

Instructions to Caspar Figeiro.

" YOU are not ignorant of the Resolution taken the 12*th* of *October* " concerning your Endeavours to relieve " the Fort of *Caleture*. All the Forces " we have been able to gather for this " Expedition consist in 420 men, which " we hope will prove sufficient thro the " Blessing of God and your good For- " tune and Conduct, to make you return " victorious. We leave the Management " of that Affair to your approved Ex- " perience, it being impossible for us " to foresee all the Circumstances and " Accidents that may attend a Business " of this nature. It must be your care " to

Baldæus. " to get frequent intelligence of the Poſture of the Enemy, and how to bring " the Proviſions laid up for the Relief of " the Place at *Belantotte*, into the Fort; " the Succeſs whereof you ſhall notify to " us with the firſt opportunity, that we " may ſend freſh Supplies of Rice both " for your uſe, and of the Gariſon in the " Fort. If you can meet with any Proviſions in the Country, you will not " fail to ſeize them for your Convenien- " cy.

" In caſe you ſhould prove ſucceſsful " in the relief of *Caleture*, you muſt " join your Forces, and the Captain Major of the Place muſt ſubmit to your " Command. We don't queſtion but " you will not be wanting in your Duty " in a Buſineſs of ſuch vaſt moment, " whereon depends the Preſervation and " Welfare, not only of this City, but " alſo of the whole Iſle.

" If after the Relief of *Caleture* you " find, that for want of Proviſions, or " for other weighty reaſons, the Fort is " not to be maintain'd, you ſhall agree " among your ſelves what is fitteſt to be " done for his Majeſty's Intereſt, whether it be not the beſt way to bring " the Fortifications into a narrower Com- " paſs, and leaving only 150 Men for " the defence thereof, to join the reſt " with your Body.

" If you find it impracticable to bring " any Supplies into the Fort, you ſhall " entrench your ſelf at a convenient di- " ſtance, and from thence give notice to " *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha*, the Go- " vernour, that he ſhall nail up all the " Cannon, deſtroy all the Ammunition, " and make the beſt of his way to your " Camp, thereby to preſerve ſuch brave " Troops, on whom in ſome meaſure " depends the Defence of this City.

At Columbo, *Oct.* 13. 1655. Signed, *Antonio de Souza Coutinho.*

And lower,

" Juſt upon the Concluſion of theſe " Preſents we have received the expect- " ed Succours from the *Indian* Coaſt, " which conſiſting of 200 men, is to be " joined with your Troops. We re- " commend you to God's Protection.

Columbo, 15 *Oct.* 1655.

CHAP. XXV.

A famous Highway-man taken. The Beginning of the Siege of Columbo. *The Emperor offers the* Dutch *his Aſſiſtance. His Letter to the* Dutch *General.*

* Apahamie *is an Officer of Note.* † Haratie *is a Serjeant.* ‖ Laſcaryn *a common Soldier.* * Diſſave *a Governour.*

ABout the ſame time arrived three * *Apahamies*, and as many † *Haraties* with ſome ‖ *Laſcaryns*, from the Imperial Court; and the **Diſſave* of *Saffragamme* with Letters from Mr. *Joris Hervendonck* our Reſident at *Candy*, intimating that he had been commanded by his Majeſty to notify his being ill of an Ague, and that he hop'd before long to be with all his Nobility at *Columbo*. In return of which another Letter was ſent to his Majeſty, to notify our Victory over the Enemy.

A famous Robber taken.

The ſame day Advice was brought that the famous Highway-man *Franciſco Anthunes* was fallen into the hands of ſome of our *Laſcaryns*, wherefore a Detachment was order'd to bring him into the Camp; but either thro the Cold and Inconveniences of the Journy, or rather out of fear, he dy'd by the way, and was bury'd.

A Thankſgiving-day.

About the ſame day a Thankſgiving-day was alſo appointed to be held the 28*th* of *October*, to return thanks to God for having bleſſed our Arms with Succeſs, and begging his Mercy for the future.

The 21*ſt* the General with ſome other Officers of Note having taken a view of the Situation of the City of *Columbo* at *Quia de Lobo*, order'd all ſorts of Materials to be brought thither from *Montual*, for the raiſing of a Battery, and hired 50 Pioneers for that purpoſe.

The 22*d* the *Diſſave* of *Saffragamme* appear'd in Perſon in a Houſe formerly belonging to *Diego Melo de Caſtro* Governour of *Columbo*, offering certain Supplies of Men from his Majeſty, which was thankfully received by the General.

The 23*d* another Battery was erected near the Church of St. *Sebaſtian*.

Two days after came into the Camp the Emperor's *Diſſave* of the *Four Corles* at the head of 700 men; and the ſame Evening the General received a Letter writ with his Majeſty's own Hand, and brought by one of his own Poſt-men! It was curiouſly perfumed with all ſorts of Spices, and on each ſide you ſaw the

* Figure

Figure of a Woman, with her Hands folded, lifting her Eyes up to Heaven, being an Answer to Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden*'s Letter writ to his Majesty from *Batecalo*. The King seem'd not well satisfied, that the said Letter had not been wrapp'd in white Linen as usual, and that some of his Titles had not been inserted; yet he testify'd his Satisfaction about the arrival of the *Dutch* Fleet, alledging for the rest, that pursuant to the Promise made him by Mr. *Jacob Kittenstein*, and the Agreement with him and *Adrian van der Meyden*, the City was to be delivered into his Hands: But that as he made no great account thereof, he was satisfy'd, provided they would allow him the Honour of the Conquest, which he would acknowledg upon all Occasions. In the Conclusion of the Letter he told them, that he had ordered Lodgings to be prepar'd for them in all the Places thro which they were to pass.

The *26th* we were busy in mounting the Cannon upon a Battery, and had four Men wounded and one kill'd. The same Day we receiv'd a Supply of Ammunition and Provision, brought aboard the *Lyon* Yacht to *Puntegale*. Sunday the *28th* after Sermon, a Deserter with a Negro came into the Camp from the City, who having made his Escape thro the Fens, told the General, that *Caspar Figeiro* was by the Governor of *Columbo*, welcom'd with these Words, *You deserve to be hanged*, and that he had alledged many Falshoods in his Defence, and among the rest that he could not attack us, because we were so deeply entrench'd near the Sea-shoar.

Welcome of Figeiro at Columbo.

The same day the Emperor's *Dissave* of the seven *Corles* arriv'd in the Camp with 500 Men, who together with the other *Lascarins* were employed in carrying Ammunition. The *29th* a Deserter came over to us from the City, his Name was *Herman Lucas*, a Native of *Hertogenbush*; who having formerly deserted our Service at *Gale*, in company of one named *Walraven*, had obtain'd the Name of *John de Rosa* among the *Portugueses*; but having had the Misfortune of killing another at *Columbo*, was fled to *Candy*, where he pretended to have been sent by the Governor, to view the Outworks of the Place: He gave the General an account of divers remarkable Passages, and among the rest, that he had been present in the Engagement, which happen'd the *17th*, and that of that whole Body, not above 150 *Portugueses* return'd to *Columbo*, where there were as yet nine Companies, amounting in all with the Citizens able to bear Arms to 800 Men: That the Governor was highly concerned at the loss of these Troops, and the ensuing Siege, especially since some of the Citizens shew'd no great Inclination to fight. We play'd the same day very furiously upon the City, and the Battery rais'd against S. *Sebastian* was likewise brought to perfection.

A noted Deserter gives an account of the Condition at Columbo.

Baldæus.

Columbo furiously ply'd with great Cannon.

The next following Day a certain *Portugese* Prisoner was brought into the Camp; he was sent from *Milagre*, and had lived 14 days upon Grass and Herbs in the Woods. The *3d* of *Novemb.* a Carpenter and Cannoneer were kill'd by a Cannon-shot upon the Battery raised at *Quia de Lobo*, and the same Afternoon the Sloop call'd the *Delft* arriv'd from *Caleture* with Pouder. About the same time a Deserter came to us out of the City, but being lately come from *Goa*, he could tell no great matter. The same Evening the Ship call'd the *Brown-fish* arriv'd with Letters from *Laurence Pit*, Governor of the Coast of *Coromandel*, having on board 44544 Pounds of Gun-powder; she brought also Advice, that the Yacht the *Popkensburg* was safely arriv'd at *Gale*, but that they had no News of the Ship called the *Haddock*. The same Night we were busy in raising a Battery near the Sea-shoar.

The *4th* of *Novemb.* early in the Morning, News was brought to the General from *Negumbo*, that according to the Report of certain Inhabitants of *Annarolundane*, 12 Sail of Ships were discover'd off of *Chilaon*; whereupon immediate Orders were given to the Commodore *Edward Hauw*, to use all possible Endeavours to get Intelligence thereof: the same was also recommended to the Head Factor of *Gale*, *John Kroon*, and to be upon his Guard. The same Afternoon, a Cannon-Bullet from the Bastion of St. *Stephen*, passing thro a Gallery of the Church of *Quia de Lobo*, whilst the Surgeons were dressing some wounded Soldiers, a Soldier was kill'd, two others had their Arms shot off, and three more were dangerously wounded.

News of 12 Sail being discovered.

About the same time *Tenecon Apuhamy*, came in the Quality of the Emperor's Messenger, with a Breast-shield of Gold, beset with precious Stones, and fasten'd to a Gold Chain, and brought the following Letter from his Majesty to the General.

The Emperor's Letter to General Hulft.

" RAJA *Singa* the greatest Monarch
" and most Potent Emperor of the
" Empire of *Ceylon*, wishes Health to
" *Gerard*

Baldæus. " *Gerard Hulft* Admiral of the Fleet, " belonging to the moſt faithful Nation " of the *Dutch*.

" By the Letters ſent to me from the " Governor of our Fortreſs of *Gale*, I " have underſtood, that immediately af- " ter your Arrival with the *Dutch* Fleet " there, you have made your ſelf Maſter " of the Fort of *Caleture*; and that one " half of the *Portugueſe* Priſoners were " ſent aboard a Ship, the reſt being re- " ſerved for our Service. The News of " your Succeſs in the Engagement be- " twixt *Caleture* and *Columbo*, without " any conſiderable Loſs on the ſide of " our faithful *Hollanders*, being likewiſe " receiv'd by me with ſingular Satisfacti- " on, I ſent immediate Orders to all my " *Diſſaves* (Governors) and chief Com- " manders, to bring into the Field all " the Forces of our Empire. In the " mean while I receiv'd an *Ola* (Letter) " from the *Diſſave* of *Saffragam*, dated " *Octob.* 23. wherein he informs me, that " having been ſent for by your Excellen- " cy, you enquired after my Health, " telling him at the ſame time, that you " were come to no other end, than to " deliver the Cities of *Columbo*, *Manaar* " and *Jafnapatnam* into our Hands; " which done, you would in Perſon ap- " pear in our Imperial Majeſty's Pre- " ſence. I have been very ill for many " Days paſt, which however has not pre- " vented my taking the neceſſary mea- " ſures for the raiſing of the Forces of " the Empire. No ſooner had I recei- " ved the welcome News of your Excel- " lency, but I was in a manner immedi- " ately reſtor'd to my former Health, " being now twice as ſtrong as before, " and able (thro God's Mercy) to aſſiſt " in Perſon in the intended Expedition, " which I intend to begin the 2*d* of *Nov.* " I have ſent with this Letter one of the " Officers of our Court, to enquire after " your Excellency's Health, and to bring " you a Preſent from me, which I hope " your Excellency will value, not ſo " much in regard of its Value, as in re- " ſpect of the Love and good Inclination " of the Giver.

Dated at our Imperial Court in the City of *Candy*, *Oct.* 29. 1655. *Raja Singa Raju*, moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

CHAP. XXVI.

Reſolutions and Inſtructions concerning the intended General Aſſault upon the City of Columbo.

THE 9*th* of *Nov.* a new Battery with four great braſs Cannon, having began to play againſt St. *Stephen's* Baſtion; a General Council of War was call'd of all the Chief Officers, in order to conſult (after having implor'd the Divine Aſſiſtance) whether it were convenient to venture a General Aſſault upon *Columbo*: The General having openly declar'd, that every one there preſent ſhould be at his full Liberty to diſcover his real Sentiments concerning this great Undertaking; it was agreed by unanimous Conſent, that ſeeing the Alacrity of the Soldiers, it was convenient to attempt a General Aſſault.

A general Aſſault is agreed upon by general Conſent.

Soon after the General diſpatch'd a Trumpeter, bearing a Flag of Truce in his Hand, to the *Portugueſe* Governor, *Anthony de Souza Continho*, with the following Letter.

The Dutch General's Letter to the Governor of Columbo.

" The Succeſs that has attended our " Arms in the taking of *Caleture*, and the " Defeat of the Troops under *Caſpar* " *Figeiro*, near the Shoar of *Panature*, " together with the Advantages obtain- " ed already in the Siege of *Columbo*, " may as I ſuppoſe ſufficiently entitle " me to demand, without Vanity, the " delivering up of the City, in the Name " of his Imperial Majeſty *Raja Singa*, " and the moſt Noble *Dutch-Eaſt-India* " Company. I hope your Excellency " will not put a wrong Interpretation " upon this Demand, when you conſider " that, purſuant to the Tenor of your own " Letters ſent to *Don Anthonio Mendes* " *d' Aranha*, and *Caſpar Figeiro*, the firſt " dated *Septemb.* 30. and the ſecond the " 13*th* and 15*th* of *Octob.* (both which are " fallen into our Hands) you were then " ſufficiently ſenſible, that the Defence " of *Columbo* depended on the Preſerva- " tion of the Forces in *Caleture*, and " thoſe under the Command of *Caſpar* " *Figeiro*. It is upon this ſcore that I " am of Opinion, I don't put the leaſt

" Ble-

" Blemish upon your Courage, since be-
" ing bereav'd of these means, you have
" nevertheless given such ample Proofs
" of your Zeal and Bravery in the De-
" fence of this Place. My Request is
" only founded upon this, to avoid the
" Effusion of Innocent Blood, the almost
" necessary Consequence and unavoidable
" Fate of all Places taken by Assault, it
" being sufficiently known, that the Fu-
" ry of the conquering Soldiers is not
" easily stopp'd upon those Occasions.

Nov. 9. *Gerard Hulst.*

The Trumpeter returning a little while after, told, that coming near to S. *John*'s Bastion, the Letter was taken from him by a *Portugueſe* Officer, who assur'd him, that the Governor should return an Answer the next Day: Hereupon the Cannon being ordered to play as before, three Companies under the Lieutenants *William de Wit*, *Henry Gerritsz*, and *Christopher Egger*, were sent to *Montuál*, in order to be put on board the two Yachts, the *Ter Goes* and the *Erasmus*.

The 10*th* of *Novemb.* an Answer was sent to the General upon his Letter.

The Governor's Answer.

" As God Almighty disposes the
" Chances of War according to his
" Pleasure, so he may as well declare
" now for our side, as he has done for
" you before: The Place you require,
" belongs to the King of *Portugal* my
" Master, who having entrusted me with
" the same, I must be accountable to
" him for it. The Reasons alledged by
" your Excellency, are not sufficient to
" move me to lay aside the Defence of
" this City; not questioning, but that
" Time and Experience will convince
" you, that our Condition at present is
" much beyond what you imagine. I
" recommend you to God's Protection.

Nov. 9. *Antonio de Souza Coutinho.*

After the Receit of this resolute Answer, the General thought fit to give the following Instructions for the intended General Assault.

Instructions for the General Assault.

" The Yachts, *viz.* the *Maid of En-*
" *chuysen*, commanded by *Volkert Adrian*
" *Sbram* (who afterwards rendred him-
" self so famous in the North, during
" the *English* War) and the *Workum*, *A-*
" *rent Groenfield* Commander, shall ap-
" proach into the Bay, as near to the
" Water-Fort as possibly they can; for
" which purpose they shall be provided
" with 110 chosen Seamen, 5000 Pounds
" of Gunpowder, and with Shot in pro-
" portion. *Baldæus.*

" The Yachts shall anchor in any part
" of the Bay, where they can best an-
" noy the Water-Fort, and under fa-
" vour of their Cannon land their Men.
" For this purpose the Yachts the *Ter*
" *Goes* and *Erasmus*, shall keep within
" Cannon-shot of the other two Yachts,
" and have aboard, besides their Ships
" Crew, 100 Landmen each, *viz.* the
" Companies of *William de Wit*, *Henry*
" *Gerritsz*, and *Christopher Egger*, in or-
" der to land, in conjunction with the
" Men of the other Yachts. The Boats,
" Tenders and other small Vessels shall
" keep near the before-mention'd Ships,
" *viz.* the Tender the *Amsterdam* with
" her Sloop, near the *Ter Goes*, and the
" Sloop the *Wesel*, the Boat of the *Mary-*
" *goldflower*, with her Sloop the *Delft*,
" and the Tender the *Naarden* with the
" rest. The Tenders the *Hair* and
" *Brownfish* shall keep near the Shoar, to
" be ready upon all Occasions to carry
" Advice where it shall be thought ne-
" cessary. In short, all the Boats shall at-
" tend the Vessels that are engag'd against
" the Fort, in order to save their Men,
" in case any of them should be sunk or
" disabled. When the Companies Stan-
" dard is fix'd above the red Flag, this
" shall be the Signal of landing: If the
" said Standard is set up on the Main-
" mast yards Arm, it shall be the Signal
" for the Boats to come to succour the
" Ship, she being in danger of sinking.

" When the Prince's Standard is set
" up on the Ramparts, it is a Sign that
" we are Masters of that part of the
" Fortifications, when the Attack either
" upon the Castle or Fort may cease, till
" the said Standard be set up in Captain
" *Kuylenburg*'s Quarters, near the Sea-
" shoar; this being intended for a Signal,
" that we are also Masters of the Town
" on the Landside, when the Officers in
" their respective Attacks may either
" stop or go forward, according as it
" shall be thought convenient by the Ma-
" jority of Voices.

" Whilst the Ships the *Maid of En-*
" *chuysen* and *Workum*, are under Sail to
" enter the Bay, all the rest of the
" Ships shall weigh their Anchors, and
" put up the red Flag, as if they would
" enter the Bay, but keep without Can-
" non-shot. So soon as the Forces are
" landed, all the Officers, Soldiers and
" Seamen, shall obey Mr. *Adrian Roo-*
" *thaus*, as their supreme Commander.

" Whilst

Baldæus. " Whilſt the Ships and Men are engaged againſt the Water-Fort, the City " is to be aſſaulted at the ſame time, " near the Sea-ſhoar, at the Baſtion of " St. *John*, and on the Land-ſide near " the Gate of *Rajuba*: The Attack up- " on the Baſtion of S. *John* ſhall be com- " manded by Captain *Kous*, and the o- " ther by Captain *Kuylenburgh*, either of " them to be ſeconded, as Occaſion re- " quires, by Mr. *John van der Laan*, the " Companies of *Kuylenburgh*, *Govert* " *Quartel*, *Jurian Gevel*, *Andrew Stec-* " *kens*, *Lambert Steenbagen*, *Hans Chriſto-* " *pher*, *Joachim Block*, *Michior van Scho-* " *nenbeck* and *John Moll*, with 36 *Javane-* " *ſes*, and half a Company of *Bandane-* " *ſes*, to be employ'd in the Aſſault of " the firſt Baſtion: The ſcaling Ladders " ſhall be carried and fixed by the *Ban-* " *daneſes*, *Javaneſes* and *Mardykers*, mix'd " with ſome *Dutch* Seamen, arm'd with " Hand-Granadoes, Pikes and Hangers. " The Baſtions of *Clergos* and S. *Philippo*, " near that of Saint *Sebaſtian* (at the " Gate of *Rajuba*) ſhall be attack'd " by the Companies of Captain *Weſ-* " *trenen*, Lieutenant *Wildtſchut*, *John* " *Hartman*, *John Cooper*, *Hardenbergh*, " *Roggenkamp*, *James Alenbier*, *Diedelof* " *van der Beek*, *Henry Broekhuyſen*, *John* " *Coertſen*, with the *Javaneſes*, half a " Company of *Bandaneſes*, and the Com- " pany commanded by Captain *Ruyſch*.

" Captain *Weſtrenen* ſhall command " the Attack againſt the Baſtion of *Cler-* " *gos*, and Captain *Ruyſch* that of S. *Phi-* " *lippo*, to be ſeconded by freſh Forces as " Occaſion requires. The *Bandaneſes*, " *Javaneſes* and *Mardykers*, in conjuncti- " on with the *Dutch* Seamen, ſhall fix the " ſcaling Ladders, and the *Laſcaryns* of " *Ceylon* be employ'd in carrying off " the Slain.

About the ſame time we received Intelligence, that the *Portugueſe* Succours were arriv'd at *Goa*, and that they intended to come to the Relief of *Columbo*: Word whereof was ſent immediately to *Gale* to be upon their Guard, for fear of a Surprize. The 11*th* of *Novemb.* (the Day appointed for the General Aſſault) it being calm, ſo that the Ships could not enter the Bay, the ſame was defer'd till the next Day, tho we did not ceaſe in the mean time to play more furiouſly with our Cannon than ever before, and we obſerv'd that the Enemy had taken in their red Flag upon the Baſtion of S. *Crus*.

CHAP. XXVII.

A General Aſſault both by Sea and Land made upon Columbo, *but without Succeſs. Letters from* Raja Singa *to the General.* Dutch *Priſoners come out of* Columbo.

The Water-Fort battered by the Ships.

THE 12*th* by break of Day, the *Maid of Enchuyſen*, and ſoon after the *Workum*, being followed by the *Ter Goes* and the *Eraſmus*, thunder'd moſt furiouſly againſt the Water-Fort, from whence they anſwer'd them very briskly. Immediately after the Aſſault was begun on the Landſide in three ſeveral Places: The General in Perſon with ten Companies attack'd the Gate of *Rajuba*, and the Baſtions of S. *Philippo* and *Clergos*; and Major *John van der Laan* with nine Companies, thoſe of St. *John* and *Couras*; whilſt *James Lippens* with two Companies of Soldiers and ſome Seamen, paſs'd the Fens in ſeven *Chineſe Champans* or Boats, in order to attack the City where it was leaſt fortify'd.

Columbo aſſaulted by Sea and Land.

But the Beſieg'd fir'd ſo furiouſly upon our Men, eſpecially with their Firelocks, that the Seamen could not be brought forward to fix the ſcaling Ladders; which the General perceiving, he advanc'd in Perſon with ſome of the braveſt Officers, and fix'd the ſcaling Ladders to the Cortin: but having receiv'd a Wound in his Left Thigh, he was forc'd to be carried off. In the mean while News being brought that they had enter'd the Breach on Major *van der Laan*'s Attack, he return'd to his Station (before his Wound was dreſſed) but found things in ſuch a Confuſion, that he was forc'd to retreat, the Major and his Forces not being able to maintain themſelves in the Breach, retreating at the ſame time, after they had in vain attempted three times to recover it. Lieutenant *Melchior van Schoonbeck*, a *High-German* by Birth, and of a Noble Family, was the only Perſon who got upon the Baſtion of S. *John*, but for want of being ſeconded, loſt his Life there like a brave Soldier, his Head being afterwards ſtuck upon a Pike by the *Portugueſes*, upon the ſame Baſtion. *With ill Succeſs.*

The

The Forces under Captain *Lippens*, having not without ſome Reſiſtance from four *Manchous* or Boats, paſſed the Fens, got into the City; but the Captain being ſorely wounded, made ſhift to retreat with ſome few, the reſt for want of timely Succours being all made Priſoners of War. The Yacht the *Maid of Enchuyſen*, was ſo ſorely batter'd from the Fort, that being ready to ſink, her Crew was carried off by the Sloop the *Langerack*; but the *Workum* cut her Cables, and got out of the Bay without any conſiderable Loſs. The Number of the Slain on our ſide amounted to 200, and 350 wounded, not including the two Companies of *John van Hardenburg* and *Roggencamp*, and the Seamen commanded by *John Lippens*, that were made Priſoners in the City. The Ships the *Ter Goes* and *Eraſmus*, who had aboard the Soldiers that were to aſſault the Water-Fort, not being able to get near enough by reaſon of the Wind, ſoon got out of the Bay.

Number of the ſlain and wounded.

Letter from the Emperor to the General.

" ON this unfortunate Day the General received a Letter from his " Imperial Majeſty, teſtifying his good " Opinion of his Excellency, not queſ- " tioning but that after the taking of *Co- " lumbo* he would deliver the ſaid City " into his Hands, purſuant to the Agree- " ment made with Mr. *Weſterwold*. That " he deſir'd to have ſuch of his Rebelli- " ous Subjects, as ſhould fall into our " Hands, deliver'd up to his *Diſ- " ſaves*, either alive or dead, in order " to puniſh them with the ſame Severity, " as he had done thoſe at *Batecalo*; and " that he had order'd his Governors to " ravage and deſtroy all the Villages in the " *Low-Lands*. He ſent at the ſame time enclos'd a Letter from the *Portugueſe* Governor, *Antonio de Souza Continbo*, dated *Octob.* 27. at *Columbo*, to the Emperor, the chief Contents whereof were, " That " he could not forbear to put his Majeſty " in mind of the antient Friendſhip be- " twixt him and the *Portugueſes*, which " he was ſorry to have been interrupted, " by the *Dutch* making themſelves Maſ- " ters of *Caleture*, and having routed " their Forces near *Paneture*, by laying " ſo cloſe and vigorous a Siege to the Ci- " ty of *Columbo*, that they were in great " Danger of being forc'd to ſurrender. " Wherefore they craved his Majeſty's " Aſſiſtance againſt the *Hollanders*, who " after they were Maſters of the City, " would certainly not deliver up the " ſame to his Majeſty, but lord it over " his Subjects; which his Majeſty, accord- " ing to his Wiſdom, might eaſily ſee, " how much it would tend to his Diſho- " nour; whereas if he join'd with the " *Portugueſes* againſt them, he might " promiſe himſelf all the Advantages " due to ſo great a Monarch.

Baldæus.

The 13*th* of *Novemb.* was ſpent in carrying the wounded Soldiers to *Negumbo*, *Gale*, and *Montual*: The ſame Day the Enemy in a Bravado, put two of our Enſigns upon the Baſtions of S. *John* and S. *Philippo*. At the ſame time Advice was brought, that the Ships the *Avenhorn* and *Campen* richly laden from *Perſia*, were arrived at *Gale* in their Voyage to *Batavia*. For which Reaſon the Yacht the *Brownfiſh* was diſpatch'd to *Gale*, to carry ſome Letters thither, to be ſent further to *Batavia*, as likewiſe a Letter to be ſent by Land to the Emperor *Raja Singa*. The Yacht the *Popkensburg* arriv'd alſo with Gunpowder and other Neceſſaries for our Camp.

The wounded ſent away.

The 19*th*, a Letter from the Emperor *Raja Singa* was deliver'd by his *Diſſaves* to the General, wherein he condol'd him about his Wound, and the ill Succeſs of the late Aſſault, telling him, that he was employ'd Day and Night in making Preparations to join him with his Forces, and deſiring not to venture a ſecond Aſſault before his Arrival. A Letter of Thanks being order'd to be written to his Majeſty, the Yachts the *Workum* and *Popkensburg*, with a Frigate, were diſpatch'd to *Negumbo*, to cruiſe to the North of that Harbour, to get timely Intelligence of the Enemies Approach.

Some Ships ſent a cruiſing.

The 26*th* ſome Cannon-ſhot being heard at a good diſtance, it was generally believed to be the Signal from the Fortreſs of *Negumbo*, to advertiſe the Arrival of the *Portugueſe* Fleet. Whereupon Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* took two Companies of Soldiers and as many Seamen, out of the Church of *Quia de Lobo* (where they had their Poſt) and marched directly to *Montual*, in order to embark them there, to prevent the Enemies Landing. The General, notwithſtanding his Wound, follow'd thither in Perſon, and found them ready to embark, which was however defer'd for that time, till they ſhould receive more certain Intelligence. Only the Yachts the *Mars* and the *Fliſſingen*, with ſome Officers aboard them, were commanded to cruiſe off the Northern Point of *Montual*.

Much about the ſame time arriv'd the *Roman* Yacht from *Suratte* with 16 Loads of Wheat. The Officers reported that

Baldæus. *A whole Fleet of Portugueſes loſt.*

a *Portugueſe* Fleet conſiſting of 30 Frigates, was entirely deſtroy'd by a Tempeſt near *Wingurla*, but that no body knew from whence they came, or whither they were bound; and that the Cannon we heard ſome Days before, was diſcharg'd by them as a Signal of their Diſtreſs, to the *Workum* and *Popkensburg*.

The 29*th* Captain *Kuylenburgh*, who died of the Wounds he received in the late Aſſault, being honourably interr'd; the 1*ſt* of *Decemb.* two Serjeants came into our Camp, who being formerly taken Priſoners at *Anguratotte* by the *Portugueſes*, had taken the Opportunity, as theſe were flying from *Manaar* to *Tutecoryn*, to deſert and hide themſelves among the *Moors* of *Kilicare*, from whence they were brought in one of our Veſſels hither. On the other hand a certain Seaman, named *Claas Claaſz*, did ſwim croſs part of the Bay into the City.

The ſame Night a new Trench was open'd againſt the Baſtion of S. *John*, and carried on with all imaginable Diligence. The Yacht the *Roman* was ſent a cruiſing to get Intelligence, whether any of the Enemies Ships could be diſcover'd at Sea, as the *Fluſhing* Yacht was diſpatch'd to the Coaſt of *Malabar*, and the *Eraſmus* ſent out in her ſtead a cruiſing.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Want in Columbo. Anthony Amiral de Menezes *taken Priſoner. The Continuation of the Siege.*

Want in Columbo.

THE 7*th* of *Decemb.* we got Intelligence, that moſt of the Inhabitants of *Columbo*, for want of Rice and other Proviſions, had been forc'd to liſt themſelves among the regular Forces; that in the late Aſſault they had taken 70 or 80 of ours Priſoners, whereas their whole Loſs did not amount to above 20 or 25 *Portugueſes*, among whom were however two Perſons of Note, *viz. Anthonio Barboſo*, and *Felicio Leeſio*, Lord of *Macoene*. That they had mounted the Cannon taken out of the *Maid of Enchuyſen* upon their Baſtions, and were buſy in making divers Retrenchments, in hopes of being ſoon ſuccour'd from *Goa*, and that their whole Force conſiſted in 700 *Portugueſes*.

Anthonio Menezes taken with Letters.

The 10*th* of *Decemb. Antonio Amiral de Menezes* (then Governor of *Jafnapatnam*, and afterwards 1658. kill'd at the taking of *Manaar*) was taken Priſoner at *Montual*, as he was going from *Manaar* to *Columbo* with ſome Letters, one whereof being written in Characters, was unciphered by the General's Order, and was as follows.

To the General Antonio de Souza Coutinho.

" BEfore I had the leaſt Intelligence " of the Approach of the Enemies " Ships, I writ to your Excellency by " Land, tho I have not heard ſince what " is become of the Meſſenger. The " three *Pados* are well arriv'd at *Goa*, and " the five Meſſengers ſent thither; the " ſixth ſent by *Anthony d' Abreu*, did not " ſtay in the leaſt in this Fort, but tarried " two Days at *Negapatan*, and brings " along with him full Inſtructions con- " cerning the Relief of *Columbo*. I have " not been idle in my Station, both in " adviſing how to raiſe Men for our Ser- " vice in the *Indies*, and in contributing " all that lay in my Power of my own " accord, which by ſome others has not " been done without reluctancy, eſpeci- " ally in giving my Aſſiſtance in equipping " ſome Veſſels of Bulk, and Galleys " well mann'd for the Relief of the City. " I have hitherto heard no News from " the Fleet at Cape *Comoryn*, ſent for " that purpoſe. I wiſh they may reach " the Iſle of *Manaar*, when we ſhall have " Opportunity to debate the whole mat- " ter with the Commander in Chief, how " to contrive matters for the Defence of " the Place: You may reſt aſſur'd, that " nothing ſhall be wanting on my part, " that may tend towards the Accom- " pliſhment of its Relief, which I heartily " wiſh may take effect; it being my O- " pinion, that a good Fleet is the very " means now to preſerve that Place, till " we receive our Supplies from *Goa*. " Perhaps it may pleaſe God to deſtroy " the Hereticks in this Siege, and to a- " bate their Haughtineſs, occaſion'd by " their late Succeſs, caus'd by our " Neglect; it being certain, that the " ſame might have been foreſeen a con- " ſiderable time ago. Orders are given " to have a good quantity of Matches " made,

" nſade, which ſhall be brought by the " firſt *Pado* that goes from hence; the " other two ſhall follow ſoon after, one " of them being to be armed for the " Defence of the other: Their approach " you will know by the Signals agreed " upon. Perhaps the Governor of *Ma-* " *nâar* may have got Intelligence of our " Fleet, and has given you intelligence " thereof. God preſerve and deliver " your Excellency from all danger.

Jafnapatnam 11. *Nov.* 1655. *Anthonio Amiral de Menezes.*

The Contents of another Letter were as follows.

" I Writ to your Excellency under Co- " vert of *Sebaſtian Martino* with the " Galliots of *September*, when I little " dream'd of what we heard afterwards " at *Cochin*, and on the Cape *Comoryn*, " concerning the preſent danger of the " City, and of the loſs of ſo brave a " Captain as *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha*, " with a good number of our choiceſt " Men. I have ſince underſtood ſeveral " other things of this nature, which " have coſt me many Tears; we did all " we could to make the Cape *Comoryn*, " but the contrary Wind prevented us: " However, tho we have fail'd in this, " you may aſſure you ſelf, that the Vice- " roy will not fail to ſuccour the City of " *Columbo* with all his Forces in the *In-* " *dies*. It is rumour'd here, that *Don* " *Manoel Maſcarenhas* intends to leave " this place, there being very bad News " brought lately from *Jafnapatnam*; but " we hope and pray to God that he will " be pleaſed to preſerve the City till *Fe-* " *bruary*.

11 Novemb. 1655. *Nicolao d' Olivera.*

The reſt of the Letters were very near the ſame, with this addition only, that the *Portugueſes* ſet ſail in *October* with 15 Frigots, but were forc'd back near the Cape *Comoryn*, ſo near that they had landed ſome Soldiers, who were marched by Land to *Jafnapatnam*, with an intention to come to *Columbo*, to give notice there of the Equipment of ſix Galeons at *Goa* intended for the Succours of the City; and that in caſe the *Dutch* ſhould block up that Habour, they would fight their way through them. All theſe Letters were ſent to his Imperial Majeſty.

200 Negroes make a Sally.

The 12 *Decemb.* 200 Negroes being ſeen to ſally out of the Gate of *Mapane*, keeping along the Sea-ſhore, three Companies were order'd to attack them; but they no ſooner eſpied our People advancing towards them, than they retreated in haſte to the City: However three of them deſerted to us, and gave an account that the reaſon of their coming out was only to fetch and cut ſome Faggot-Wood for the repairing of the Baſtions of S. *John*, S. *Stephen* and S. *Philippo*; and that they had made betwixt the two former a Retrenchment, in caſe they ſhould be forced to quit the Baſtions. *Baldæus.*

The ſame day we finiſh'd our ſecond Redoubt, and the next two *Portugueſe* Deſerters confirm'd the Report of the Negroes, adding that they much dreaded our Mines, that the Baſtion of S. *John* was guarded by two Companies (of 25 or 30 Men each) under *Caſpar Figeiro*, the Gate of *Magapane* with three, and the reſt in proportion. At the ſame time we ſaw a whole Troop of half-ſtarv'd Wretches forc'd out of the Town, but were made to return from whence they came, except a few *Portugueſes*, who could give good intelligence about the Condition of the Place. *Report of ſome Deſerters.*

The 14*th* in the morning 10 or 12 Boats came out of the Town to fetch Faggot-wood; but finding us prepare to attack them, they retir'd with Precipitation, after they had wounded three of our Men.

The 15*th* the General agreed with 20 Pioneers to work continually (ſix at a time) in the Trenches, at the rate of 20 Pence *per diem*, beſides a good Reward after they had finiſh'd the Work. In the Afternoon a Battery of 6 Guns was order'd to be erected.

The 18*th* a Gunner having out of careleſneſs double charg'd a Gun upon a Battery, kill'd three of our own Pioneers, and wounded 7 Negroes; and in the Evening four great Cannon were not without ſome loſs planted upon the before-mentioned Battery. *An unfortunate Accident.*

The 19*th* we play'd thence moſt furiouſly upon the Baſtions of S. *John* and *Stephen*, and two more Cannons were mounted upon it the ſame Evening.

The 20*th* a new Redoubt was begun, the Trenches being then carried on within two Rods of the Counterſcarp. In the Evening we miſſed *Simon Lopes*, who was again gone over to the Enemy.

The 26*th* three Negro Carpenters coming over to us, reported that the *Portugueſes* had undermin'd the Baſtion of S. *John*, and laid 5 large Barrels with Gunpowder in five divers places underneath it,

Baldæus. it, having laid the Train by the means of certain Bambocanes, which were to be lighted on the top whilſt we were aſſaulting the ſaid Baſtion, which was the reaſon that they had not diſcharg'd their Cannon from thence theſe two days paſt. They added, that the Son of *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho* the Governor of *Columbo*, being buſy in incouraging the Workmen by his own Example, receiv'd a Wound by a Muſquet-ſhot in the Head, of which he died ſoon after. A Council of War was alſo call'd, in which it was reſolv'd to carry on the Trenches with all imaginable vigor, to prevent the Enemy in perfecting his Retrenchments before the Breach of the Baſtion of S. *John*, and to fix our Miners there.

Reſolution taken in a Council of War.

The 27*th* the General gave notice to the Diſſaves of *Saffragam* and the four *Corles*, that he intended to ſend an Envoy to his Majeſty, to know his Inclinations, whether he intended to appear in Perſon in our Camp or not: he deſir'd them to write to him upon the ſame Subject, the time for attempting a ſecond general Aſſault drawing near; and that in caſe his Majeſty had the leaſt doubt left of our ſincere Intentions, he would give him full Satisfaction upon that Head.

CHAP. XXIX.

The Portugueſes *throw Stones out of a Mortar. We make a third Redoubt: Endeavour to lay the Gallery over the Ditch. A Spy hang'd. Letters from* Coromandel.

THE 28*th* of *December* in the Evening the *Portugueſes* began to throw ſeveral Stones out of a Mortar into our Works, which ſomething ſurpriz'd us at firſt, but afterwards we gueſs'd that it was *Simon Lopes* who lately deſerted our Service that had put them in the way of it. The next day Capt. *John Hartman* was ſent with Letters to the Emperor at *Candy*, and we were hard at work to bring the third Redoubt near the Sea-ſhore to perfection, where we planted a Mortar, and continued our approaches to the Counterſcarp.

Another Redoubt erected.

A *Chineſe* Deſerter, a Native of *Macao*, reported that they were indifferently well provided with Proviſions in the City, and that it was true that the Governor's Son was dead. Letters were at the ſame diſpatch'd to Mr. *Laurence Pit*, Governor of *Coromandel*, to ſend us ſome Ammunition, and to order the Ships which upon the arrival of the Veſſels from *Tajouan* ſail from thence to *Batavia*, to touch at *Gale*, to be employ'd in thwarting the intended Succours of the *Portugueſes*, or to take aboard part of the *Portugueſe* Priſoners among us.

The 8*th* of *January*, finding the Enemy buſy in planting Paliſado's in the Ditch, ſome Seamen arm'd with Hand-granado's made them ſoon quit that Enterprize. But the next following day finding the Enemy to have made ſome Entrenchments there, a Hole was order'd to be made in the Wall; and Captain *Henry Gerard*, the head Gunner and Ingineer, and Carpenter, being order'd to view the Work, they reported that the Enemy had planted a row of Paliſado's cloſe to one another, extending to the Sea-ſhore, which made them imagine that they expected the moſt fierce Aſſault on that ſide.

Portugueſes fortify themſelves in the Ditch.

Six expert Carpenters having offer'd their Service for perfecting the Gallery, 100 Crowns were promiſed them as a Reward; and it being reſolv'd to fix the ſaid Gallery the next day under favour of our great Cannon and Fire-locks, a certain number of Muſqueteers were order'd to the extremities of the Trenches: but the Wall being thicker at the bottom than at the top, it was almoſt Evening before they could make a Breach in it, when attacking the Enemy with their Hand-granado's, they forced them from the Ditch, where they poſted 12 Fire-locks; but theſe receiv'd ſo warm a Salute from the Enemy's Cannon and Fire-locks both of the Baſtions of S. *John* and S. *Stephen*, and the Paliſado-work, that they were forced to retreat, and the fixing of the Gallery was thought fit to be delay'd till a more convenient time, having loſt only one Carpenter and two Negroes in this Enterprize. *John Rootha-us* the *Dutch* Reer-Admiral ſent 12 *Jan.* three Negro Priſoners from the Fleet into the Camp, who were taken coming with Letters from *Manaar*, in order to carry them into *Columbo*; but they were of little moment, except what w:s con-

The Dutch endeavour in vain to fix their Gallery.

tain'd

tain'd in the following Paſſage taken out of *Lorenſo Barboza*'s Letter directed to *Don Franciſco de Souza*.

Some Letters intercepted.

" Your Fleet could not make the Cape " *Comoryn*, becauſe they came too late, and " were overtaken by a violent Tempeſt; " the Soldiers aboard were ſent by Land " to *Tutecoryn*, and from thence by Sea " to *Manaar*. That they underſtood " that great Endeavours were uſed to " equip a Squadron of great Ships and " Frigots, to be joyn'd by 8 Galeons " for the relief of *Columbo*, and that they " had certain Advice that the Galeons " were getting ready for that purpoſe: " That the reſt they would be inform'd " of by the Captain-Major's Letter to the " Governor, *&c.*

The ſaid Priſoners reported that *Anthonio Amiral* had brought a Reinforcement of ſix Companies from *Jafnapatnam* to *Manaar*; and that it was reported there, that 5 Galeons and 28 Frigots were to come from *Goa*, and being joyn'd with ſome other Veſſels and Forces at *Manaar* were to ſail to the relief of *Columbo*: whereupon the General ſent his Inſtructions to our Squadron to watch the coming of the Enemy, but eſpecially to our Cruiſers, the *Workum*, *Popkensburgh*, *Mars* and *Erafmus* Yachts; 30 *Bandaneſe* Soldiers, and as many *Mardykers* were alſo order'd aboard theſe Veſſels, and a Negro Deſerter reported that thoſe come from *Manaar* to *Columbo* were half naked, and had brought no Letters, one of them being wounded, but knew nothing further.

New Inſtructions ſent to the Dutch Fleet.

The 15*th* of *January* ſome of our *Laſcaryns* brought in a Spy, whom they had taken under pretence of going into the City to ſell Tobacco; but upon the Evidence of two *Cingaleſe* Carpenters that he was a Spy, he was hang'd on a Gibbet near the place where he intended to have got into the place.

Letters from Coromandel.

The 19*th* Letters were brought to the Camp, ſent by *Laurence Pit*, then Governor of *Coromandel*, intimating that we might expect a Supply of 35000 Pounds weight of Gunpowder with the Yachts the *Codfiſh*, *Rabbit*, and *Patience*; that for the reſt the Company had loſt 50 loads of Rice, and 250 *Ammenams* * of *Areek* † by an accidental Fire. That ſeveral private Merchants having lately ſent certain Ships loaden with all ſorts of Proviſions, we need not fear any thing upon that account. The *Rabbit* alone had a Cargo of 26822 Pounds weight of Gunpowder, 50 Packs of *Guinea* Linen Cloth, and 10 Loads of Rice, valued altogether at 23860 Gilders.

* *A certain Meaſure.*

† Areek *is a certain* Indian *Fruit of which they make ſtrong Liquors.*

It was further adviſed, that in all probability the King of *Golconda* was likely to be embroil'd in a War with *Mirza Mula* his General, who had put ſtrong Gariſons in the Fortreſſes of *Gendecalte*, *Gronconde* and *Goeti*. That the General *Chan Chanme* was lately retir'd with the Forces of *Viſiapour*, conſiſting of 8000 Horſe, and 40000 Foot, from *Velour* to *Viſiapour*, but for what reaſon was not known. A Copy was alſo ſent of a Letter written by *Leonard Johnſon* Factor, *Decemb.* 8. from *Wingurla* to *Batavia*, whence it appear'd that they were making great Preparations at *Goa* for the relief of *Columbo*. " But, added he, the *Portugueſe* Viceroy having ſufficient Intelligence of our Strength before *Columbo*, it ſeems to me to be rather a " Bravado than a real Deſign, unleſs it " were (as ſome affirm) that the Relief of that City was ſo poſitively commanded by the King of *Portugal*, that " the Viceroy would be forced to attempt " it, unleſs he were prevented by the " *Dutch* blocking up the Harbour of *Goa* " before that time. That it was rumour'd there that the *Portugueſe* Soldiers ſhould be oblig'd by Oath, confirm'd by the Bleſſed Sacrament, that " in caſe they were not able to worſt the " *Dutch* Fleet, they ſhould ſet fire to " their own Ships; but he hoped that " the City would fall into our hands " before they could put their Deſign in " Execution. But, as it were not ſafe to " deſpiſe ones Enemy, ſo he would take " care to give from time to time Intelligence of what he could learn to the " Director-General *Gerard Hulſt* with all " imaginable ſpeed, for which purpoſe " he hoped to purchaſe the Diligence of " ſome of the Natives by Mony. The following Liſt was annex'd of ſuch Ships as were to be employ'd in the ſaid Expedition, 2 *Caraques*, 2 large Galeons, one leſſer one, 2 *Caravals*, 6 *Patacho's* or Yachts, 20 light Frigots, 24 more from the Coaſt of *Sipaveneick*, with ſome Galeons, and other Boats call'd *Singazeeles*. His further opinion was, that the ſaid Squadron might be ready towards the end of *January*, and that the ſame was to be reinforc'd by ſome Yachts from *Chaul*; that beſides the Gariſon to be left at *Goa*, 2000 *Europeans*, not reckoning the *Miſtices* and Negroes, were to be embark'd aboard the ſaid Fleet. He adviſed further, that two *Engliſh* Ships being ſome days before come to an Anchor before *Goa*, the Viceroy had offer'd the Captains a conſiderable Sum of Mony,

Baldæus.

Liſt of the Portugueſe Ships for the relief of Columbo.

Baldæus. provided they would ſail along with the Fleet to *Ceylon*; but that they refuſed to accept of the ſame, and were ſail'd to the Northward.

The 21*ſt* of *January*, two hours before break of day, the General being got aboard the *Ter Goes*, call'd a Council of War there, wherein it was reſolv'd to ſend forthwith the Ship the *Cod-fiſh* to *Negombo*, in order to unlade her Cargo (intended for *Gale*) there in company of the *Amſterdam* and *Marygold-flower*; and the *Hare* Yacht was order'd to keep as cloſe to the Bay as poſſibly ſhe could, to obſerve the ſmall Veſſels that might paſs and repaſs in and out of the City.

The 24*th* of *January* the *Fluſhing* Yacht coming from *Wingurla*, brought Letters from our Factor *Leonard Johnſon*, dated the 6*th* of *January*, intimating, that the Viceroy of *Goa*, inſtead of ſending the pretended Succours to *Ceylon*, had now reſolved to ſend two *Caracks* to *Portugal*, and three Yachts to *Moſambique*; and that the Deſign of the Relief of *Columbo* ſeem'd to be laid aſide: in confirmation whereof he ſent the following Tranſlation of a Letter written by one of our Spies there.

To the Commodore of the Dutch *Squadron near* Wingurla.

Letter of a Spy from Goa. " TWO Ships (both arrived this Year) viz. *Bon Jeſus* carrying 65 " Guns, and the *Noſſa Senhora da Grazia* " of 60 Guns, are intended to be ſent to " *Portugal*, being now buſy in unloading, " and expecting only the return of our " Fleet from *Cochin* and the Cape. 'It is " ſuppoſed they will be ready to ſail by " the end of the firſt Month of the Year. " Three Yachts more are order'd from " *Moſambique*, being now taking in their " Cargo, beſides another Yacht, deſign'd " for *Macaſſar*. The *Caravel* intended " for *China* is not ready to ſail, and it " remains uncertain whether ſhe will go " thither. But, if ſhe does, it will not " be till next Spring. Hitherto we ſee " no Preparations either of Men or Ships " for *Ceylon*; and they ſeem unreſolved, " whether they had beſt ſend any Relief " thither, for fear they ſhould fall into " the hands of the *Dutch*. But if any be " ſent, it will certainly not be till after " the departure of the Ships for *Portu-* " *gal*, for which the Viceroy ſhews a " great concern, being afraid they will " be intercepted by the *Dutch* before " they can reach *Portugal*.

Dated January 6. 1656. Your Excellency's conſtant Slave,

Uragami Sinay.

Hereupon it was agreed in a Council of War, to order the Ships the *Ter Goes*, *Mars*, the *Arms of Holland*, *Amſterdam*, *Fluſhing*, *Eraſmus*, *Naarden*, *Zierik-ſee*, *Marygold-flower*, and the *Hare*, forthwith towards *Goa*, there to expect the coming of the Ships from *Trajouan*, in company of thoſe from *Perſia* and *Suratte*. And that the Yachts the *Workum*, *Popkenſburgh*, *Codfiſh* and *Rabbit*, with ſome light Frigats and Sloops, ſhould be kept for the Blockade of the Harbour of *Columbo*. Dutch *Ships ſent to Goa.*

CHAP. XXX.

Mr. Hartman *preſented by the Emperor. Some Spies hang'd. The Arrival of ſeveral Ships. Letters from the Emperor and* Dutch *General.*

ABout that time the Emperor ſent his Letter to the *Dutch* General Mr. *Hulſt*, in anſwer to his ſent by Mr. *Hartman*, the chief Contents of which were, " That he intended to come into our " Camp in the night-time, having been " detained hitherto by the Advice of the " Great Men of his Court (theſe *Pagans* " being very ſuperſtitious in chuſing their " time) but that now he was reſolved to " ſpeak with the General in ſpite of all " the pretended Obſtacles. That he was " glad to underſtand, that notwithſtand- " ing our Loſs in the laſt general Aſſault " we kept our Poſts, and that he intend- " ed to diſpatch Mr. *Hartman* the next " Thurſday. It was dated at *Balane*, *January* 20, 1656. and ſubſcribed,

Raja Singa Rajou, moſt potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

Mr. *Hartman* returned, being preſented with a Golden Chain and a Ring, and reported, that ſome of the Emperor's *Diſſaves* having brought him the news, *Mr. Hartman's Return.*

that

that we had loſt a conſiderable number of men by the ſpringing of a Mine, he was very glad to hear the contrary afterwards. The 26*th* of *January* early in the Morning a Letter was delivered from our Head Factor at *Gale*, *John Kroon*, that the Ships the *Patience*, the *Bengale*, the *Black Bull* and the *Grey-bound* from *Tajouan* by the way of *Maſulipatan*, loaden with Merchandizes from *Perſia*, and the *Vlieland* belonging to thoſe of *Suratte*, were arrived there, and that he had ordered them to ſail for *Columbo*. Two Spies come lately out of the City, to view the Condition of our Attacks and Batteries, were hang'd two days after.

Some Dutch Ships arrived.

Two Spies hang'd.

At the ſame time Letters were brought into the Camp, dated the laſt of *Novemb.* at *Malacca*, intimating, that the 14*th*, 15*th* and 19*th* of *November* 1655. the Ships the *Vlieland*, *Black Bull*, *Arnemuyden* and the *Sweet-briar*, were arrived there from *Tajouan*, their Loading being valued at 1349436 Gilders at the firſt hand: and that the *Sweet-briar*, the *Domburg* and *Lion* were with a good quantity of Tin of *Malacca* ſent to *Bengale*. The Cargo of theſe Ships conſiſts commonly of *Japoneſe* Silver, Bars of Copper, Alum, Gold, *China* Tea, and Sugar of *Formoſa*, beſides a conſiderable quantity of Tin of *Malacca*. Upon the Coaſt of *Malabar*, and in *Ceylon* (where they commonly arrive at the ſame time) they load with Cinnamon, Pepper and Cardamom. They generally make a long Voyage: For they ſet ſail from *Batavia* to *Japan* and *Tajouan* in *May*, and come to *Malacca* in *December*: From thence they ſteer their Courſe by the *Nicebares* to *Ceylon*, or *Bengale*, or *Coromandel* (but never from theſe Places to *Ceylon*, but ſometimes return from *Bengale* or *Ceylon* to *Malacca* or *Batavia*) and from thence by *Malabar* to *Suratte* and *Perſia*, and return in *May* to *Ceylon* (and ſometimes ſtraitways to *Batavia*) and ſo further with their Cargo (they have taken in at *Suratte* or in *Perſia*) to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, where being loaden with Linen Cloth, painted Callicoes and other Merchandizes, they return to *Batavia* in *June* or *July*. By Letters from *John Thyſſen* Governour of *Malacca*, advice was given that the Tin Trade (the chiefeſt of that Country) had been but very indifferent that Year.

Advices from Malacca.

Two Deſerters give an account of the Condition of the City.

But it is time to return to the Siege of *Columbo*. The laſt day of *January* two *Portugueſe* Deſerters, who had made ſhift to let themſelves down by Ropes from St. *Stephens* Baſtion, reported, that many of their Comrades were willing to deſert for want of Pay, but that they were ſtrictly guarded; that the Gariſon conſiſted ſtill of 650 *Europeans*, and they had Rice for two Months longer; that they ſtill rely'd upon the promiſed Succours of 6 Galeons. Soon after we ſaw a whole Troop of half-ſtarv'd Wretches coming out of the Town; but 120 were forced to return without Relief. The 12*th* of *February* about 500 of them, Men, Women and Children, being forced by extremity of Hunger, came to the General's Quarter imploring his Mercy; but they were forced back into the Town along the Sea-ſhore near the Baſtion of St. *John*. In the mean while the Emperor ſent the following Letter to the General.

Baldæus.

Raja Singa Rajou.

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

" OUR Imperial Majeſty has formerly (thro God's Mercy) been victorious over our Enemies in *Malvane*, where I routed their whole Army commanded by *Don Conſtantino*; after which laying Siege to *Columbo*, I had my Head Quarters in the Garden of *Lewis Gomes Pinto*. It then pleaſed God to afflict me with a Diſtemper, which the Viceroy having got notice of, he deſired me to return to *Candy*; which I did accordingly, leaving my Brother *Carnana Singa* King of *Ouve*, with the Prince of *Viſiapalla*, to command the Siege, who put no ſmall Bleminſh upon our Imperial Family. Whilſt they were imployed in that Siege, the treacherous *Portugueſes* having at that time forced a Multitude of ſtarved Wretches out of the City, they had mix'd with them certain Villains, who ſet all our Works on fire. Wherefore I hope your Excellency will keep a ſtrict Guard; for I can't forbear, for the Love and good Inclinations I bear to your Excellency, to put you in mind, that the *Portugueſes* are a moſt perfidious Nation, and that even my Forces are compoſed of divers ſorts of People: So that your Excellency ought to have a particular regard for your own Perſon, which will be a ſingular Satisfaction to me. For you muſt know, that there being variety of People in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, who have ſerved divers Princes, and are us'd to Ravages and Rapines, theſe are generally treacherous, and not to be truſted by your Excellency, tho perhaps they will endeavour to obtain your Favour by Flat-

Baldæus. " Flatteries and Pretences of Friendſhip, " they being ſuch profligate Wretches, " as to be induced by the hopes of a ſmall " Gain to undertake any baſe and trea- " cherous Act. The Letters ſent from this " Court to your Excellency being generally " written in an unknown Tongue, I deſire " you, if you find any Defect or Inconve- " niency in them, to give notice thereof " immediately, to remove all Obſtacles " and Miſunderſtandings on our ſide; " it being our reſolution, that the Peace " made with you ſhall continue as long as " the Sun and Moon furniſh us with Light, " as you on your behalf have engaged it " ſhall laſt as long as the World ſtands. " I once intended to have ſent you an " Anſwer to your Letter dated *Jan.* 8. " but underſtanding that your Excellency " had diſpatched to this Court a Cap- " tain of the Guards, I thought fit to " defer it for ſome time. In former " times whilſt I was very young, I was " encamped with my Army in *Malvane*; " but that being many years ago, I did " ſend thither certain Perſons to view " the Place, who aſſur'd me, that the " Place pitch'd upon by the *Diſſave* of " the four *Corles*, was unfit for our Recep- " tion, which was the reaſon I order'd " my Head Quarters to be ſettled in the " Fortreſs of *Reygamwatte*. In conſidera- " tion of which and other Miſcarriages " of the ſaid *Diſſave*, I have put another " in his Place, with whom you may con- " ſult in relation to ſuch matters as tend " to our Service. I further iſſued my " Orders to the *Diſſaves*, and ſent cer- " tain Perſons to prepare my Quarters " with the utmoſt Expedition, which " done I intend to be there immediately " after.

Dated in the Camp and Court of Guiramibula, *Feb.* 14. 1656.

Subſcribed,

Raja Singa Rajou, moſt potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

The General being extremely pleaſed with the Emperor's Approbation concerning the ſending back of the poor ſtarv'd Wretches forc'd out of *Columbo*, thought fit to ſend the following Letter to the Governour of *Columbo*.

The Dutch General's Letter to the Governour of Columbo.

" FInding that you ſuffer the poor *Negro* Citizens, after that you have " received all the Services you poſſibly " could from them, to periſh for want of " Suſtenance; and whereas you prevent- " ed their Deſertion formerly by ſtrict " Watches, you now permit them to go " where they pleaſe in order to be rid of " them: I thought it my Duty (for the " diſcharge of my Conſcience) to deſire " you to let the ſaid *Negro* Citizens know, " that ſuch as for the future come out of " the City, ſhall be puniſh'd with Death. " This I thought fit to let your Excellen- " cy know, in hopes of moving you to " compaſſion. I remain for the reſt " your Excellency's Servant,

Dated in the Dutch *Camp before* Columbo, *Feb.* 15. 1656. *Gerard Hulſt.*

The 17*th* of *February* the Yacht the *Saphir* came into the Road from *Coromandel*, and brought a Letter from the Governor *Laurence Pit*, dated *January* 29. at *Paliacatta*: Her Cargo conſiſted in Rice and Gun-powder, tho not ſo much as was expected, the full quantity of Brimſtone not being brought from *Tajouvan*.

But notwithſtanding the beforeſaid Warning given to the *Negro* Citizens, many of them coming every day into our Camp, one of them was ordered to be hanged to deter others from doing the like; ſo that afterwards 15 and more died every day in the City of Famine, and a Scorbutick Dropſy began alſo to reign among the *Europeans* there. The 19*th* a *Miſtice* Deſerter brought advice, that they had equip'd a Boat, which lay ready to ſail againſt the next Night for *Manaar*; whereupon Orders were ſent to Commodore *Rootbaus* to intercept her, if poſſibly he could. The 20*th* Mr. *John Hartman* came with the following Letter from the Emperor to the General.

Famine in Columbo.

Raja Singa Rajou.

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

" YOUR Letter dated the 8*th* of *February*, I received the next fol- " lowing Day, wherein you teſtify your " deſire of being admitted into our Roy- " al Preſence, in order to aſſure me in " Perſon of the ſincere Intentions of the " *Dutch* Company to continue in their " Confederacy with our Imperial Ma- " jeſty, made from the time of your Ar- " rival with your Fleet in our Empire. " It has always been my hearty Wiſh to " ſee you in my Preſence, which I hope " will be fulfill'd with the arrival of your " Excellency in our Camp near *Raygam- " watte*. You further mention the Miſ- " behaviour of ſome of our *Laſcaryns* " under the *Diſſaves*; ſo ſoon as our Im- " perial Majeſty arrives in the above- " ſaid

" ſaid Camp, theſe Forces and Officers " ſhall be relieved by others, and ſuch " as have not done their duty to the " Crown be puniſhed, as is practiſed in " the Camps of other Great Kings and " Monarchs. Your Excellency did alſo " give notice that you had ſent away 9 " Ships the 5*th* of this Month. God Almighty I hope will bleſs your Excellency's Deſigns with Succeſs, according to " the utmoſt of my Wiſhes, there being " nothing that can more rejoice our Imperial Majeſty than the Welfare and " Proſperity of the *Hollanders:* And I " hope, that after my arrival in the " Camp, ſuch Meaſures may be taken " betwixt us, as may ſoon reduce the " City. The refractory Party among " my Troops you have mentioned, ſhall " be branded with Infamy, not only for " themſelves, but alſo their Generation; " ſo that their Names ſhall be deſpiſed " hereafter for ever. Whenever I ſhall " ſee your Perſon, I ſhall imagine to have " the whole State of *Holland* before me; " and ſince according to our Conſtitutions Matters of this nature are not to " tranſacted but on fortunate Days and " Hours, your Excellency ſhall be advertiſed thereof by ſome Perſon of note. " Juſt as I was leaving *Candy*, the Prince " my Son, given me by God for the " Welfare of my faithful *Hollanders*, " took leave of me, deſiring to be remembred to your Excellency. *Baldæus.*

In the Camp of Guitamibula, *Feb.* 18. 1656. *Raja Singa Rajou.*

Hartman *preſented with an Elephant.*

The ſaid Mr. *Hartman* was preſented by the Emperor with a tame Elephant, and told the General, that the Emperor had given him ſome private hints, that the Prince his Son would take it as a peculiar Obligation, if the General would honour him with a ſmall Preſent. The Emperor's *Diſſaves* coming the 21*ſt* of *February* to the General, in order to fetch the Anſwer to the Emperor's Letter, they were told, that the Letter was not finiſhed, by reaſon of many things of moment to be inſerted therein: But the General took this opportunity to adviſe with them what Preſent might be moſt acceptable to the Prince. They anſwered, they could not tell, but would conſider of the matter. In the Afternoon they received the deſired Letter ſealed up under the Diſcharge of the Cannon, as is uſual upon ſuch occaſions, when each of the Captains is preſented with a piece of Sattin, and two of the *Diſſaves* with a red *Roan* Cap, a thing highly valued by them (called *Toppy Honday* in their Language) with a *Japoneſe* Buckler for one of the Prince's Attendants.

CHAP. XXXI.

The Beſieged fire furiouſly upon the Beſiegers. The Emperor's Envoys. Negro *Deſerters forced back. Letters intercepted. The Emperor preſents the General with an* Elk. *A new Battery erected.*

The Beſieged fire briskly upon the Beſiegers.

THE 22*d* of *February* the Enemy play'd moſt furiouſly with their Cannon from the Baſtions of St. *Stephen* and St. *John*, and kill'd us ſeveral Men. His Majeſty being that day come to his Camp at *Reygamwatte*, to take a view of the Quarters prepared for his reception, perceiving a more than ordinary Smoke, ſent a Meſſenger to know the truth of the matter. In the Evening about Suppertime, word was brought that certain Deputys from his Majeſty were arrived at a Farm about two Miles from the Camp, and that they had ſent a Meſſenger to ſignify, that they were deſirous to ſpeak with the General that Evening; which being readily granted, an Enſign was ſent thither with ſome Soldiers to conduct them to the Camp, and to make an Excuſe, that the time of the Night had hindred their Reception to be ſutable to their Quality. They told the General, that his Majeſty had received his Letter with a great deal of Satisfaction, and that they were ſent to tell his Excellency, that his Majeſty was at preſent at *Walewitty*, and that as ſoon as his Quarters were fitted up, he ſhould be ſent for; for which reaſon they were commanded by his Majeſty to order the *Diſſave* of *Saffragamme* to have the Roads leading to *Reygamwatte* repaired. They would willingly have returned the ſame night; but it being exceſſive dark, their Quarters were aſſigned them in the Camp till next morning. *Deputys ſent into the Camp from the Emperor.*

The ſame day *Edmund Ruyſch* ſent word, that a great number of poor Wretches were coming out of the City: The Men, to the number of 50, were ſecured at *Milagre*;

Baldæus. *Milagre*; but the Women and Children being brought before the General, he order'd them (purſuant to their former Reſolution) to be whip'd back into the Town near the Baſtion of St. *John*, this being look'd upon as the moſt proper means to ſtraiten the Enemy, and to bring them to our Terms. Towards the Evening the Men, with 20 more, who ſince had join'd them, being alſo brought into the Camp, the General took two of them aſide, and told them, that they muſt look upon it as a particular Favour, to be ſent back once more; but if they return'd they muſt expect nothing but the Gallows, unleſs they would engage with ſome of the *Aratches* that had deſerted our Camp, to ſurprize ſome Baſtion or other for our Service. They were likewiſe forced back with a good Whipping, and the 24*th* 150 more had the ſame Entertainment.

Deſerters whip'd back into the City.

The 26*th* of *February* the *Diſſave* of the four *Corles* came to tell the General, that thoſe of *Saffragamme* were ſtill buſy in repairing the Roads and Bridges, and produced a Letter from certain Great Men of the Court, enjoining him to demand 10 certain Perſons, that had made ſhift to get out of the City with the Enemies Troops, and ſheltred themſelves in the adjacent Villages, having deſerted the King's Service before. The General was not unwilling to grant his Requeſt; but withal told him, that if theſe Perſons of Quality had been as forward in furthering their King's Service as we, there would not have been ſo many Deſerters. The ſame day a Letter was deliver'd to the General written by one of our *Aratches* to the *Vidane* of *Paſdun-Corle*, as follows:

An intercepted Letter.

"HAngedera Lionayde, Son-in-law to "Ranatonge Arachie, wiſhes Health "to *Vidane*, and the three Chieftains of "the three *Pattos* of *Paſdun-Corle*. Im"mediately upon the receipt of theſe, "you ſhall without fail or delay gather, "in the time of 8 days, out of all the "circumjacent Villages, 50 *Pingues* of "Pullets, Butter, Pepper, *Atchiar*, and "Earthen Veſſels; and with them, in "company of all the Heads or *Majo*"*rals* of the Villages of *Anguratotte*, "come towards *Horne*, and from thence "into the Imperial Camp, there to pay "your Obeyſance to his Majeſty. Such "as fail in their Duty muſt expect to "receive condign Puniſhment. You "muſt not publiſh my Name, what I do "in this reſpect not being by my own "Authority; but when you come to "Court, you may then declare, that it "was *Hangedera Lionayde*, *Ranatonge* "*Rale*'s Son-in-law, who gave you this "Invitation.

The *Aratche* who had been the Author of this Letter, being ſeized and examin'd the ſame Evening by Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* and Major *van der Laan*, did not diſown his Hand, but refuſed to diſcover (tho he was threaten'd with preſent Death) by whoſe Command he had writ it. The General being of opinion that there was ſome Myſtery hid under this pretence, eſpecially ſince this *Cingaleſe* liv'd under the Company's Juriſdiction, and had receiv'd ſignal Obligations from them, commanded his Head to be cut off, and deliver'd him up for that purpoſe to the Provoſt, in hopes of extorting a Confeſſion from him by this means; but under-hand order'd him to be ſecur'd only aboard the Ship the Arms of *Amſterdam*, for fear, that, in caſe he ſhould be executed on a ſudden, they might be bereaved of the Opportunity of diſcovering the Truth.

Letter ſent to the Emperor.

February 27*th* being Sunday, the General ſent a Letter to *Raja Singa*, to adverti'ſe his Majeſty what had paſs'd with the *Aratche*, and at the ſame time encloſed the Original of the intercepted Letter. The ſame day the *Diſſave* of *Saffragamme* coming to the General to tell him, that the Roads and Bridges were now repaired according to his Majeſty's Orders; he was commanded by him to imploy the ſame People in perfecting the Palliſadoes intended for the new Redoubt near the Gate of *Rajuba*, which he promiſed to do. The General alſo told him what had happen'd with the *Aratche*; which he approving of, the General further deſired him to provide ſome *Buffiers* for the uſe of the Seamen, who were ſorely afflicted with the Scurvy, which he likewiſe agreed to.

Word being brought that four Fiſhermen were coming over to us in a *Tony* or Fiſher-boat, they were forewarn'd not to come into the Camp, under the pain of being hang'd, unleſs they could engage all the Fiſhermen to come at once. About the ſame time a certain *Mooriſh* Veſſel came into the Road from *Puntegale* with a Paſsport from *John Kroon* our Head Factor there. They brought advice that the Lands and Villages under the Juriſdiction of *Gale* were farm'd out at 15849 Rixdollars, for the next Year, to be paid by four quarterly Payments, and that the *Areck*, which the Company had taken at

A Mooriſh Veſſel brings Advice concerning the Condition of Gale.

the

A Mooriſh Veſſel brings Advice concerning the Condition of Gale.

the rate of 24 *Laryns* the *Ammenam* the laſt year, was now to be deliver'd at the rate of 16 *Laryns*. Five more Ships arrived at the ſame time laden with Rice.

The laſt day of this month, finding that the Enemy work'd againſt us near the Gate of *Rajuba*, Lieutenant *Alenbier* was ſent with 6 Firelocks to ſecure their Workmen; but theſe ſaved themſelves by an early Flight, and our People return'd without receiving any Damage. About the ſame time Letters were brought by the Yacht the *Arnemuyden*, dated the 17*th* of *February*, on the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, others being alſo expected, dated the 11*th*, with the Yacht the *Codfiſh*, not arriv'd as yet, having aboard 100 Loads of Rice of *Bengale*, a good Quantity of Gunpowder and 60 Soldiers: The other Veſſels Cargo conſiſted in 18877 Pound-weight of Gunpowder, 2781 Bullets of divers Sizes, *viz.* 231 of 24 Pounds, 750 of 18, 1800 of 12, 1500 Stone-Bullets, and 10000 Pound Weight of Lead, beſides ſome other Merchandizes, and 16 Loads of Rice, amounting to the Value of 6098 Guilders, on account of thoſe of *Ceylon* only. At the ſame time the *Rabbit* ſail'd out of the Road, being order'd to cruiſe on the South Point of *Negumbo*, and to be relieved every eight Days by another Ship.

Ships from Coromandel.

The General preſented with an Elk by the Emperor.

Pretty late in the Evening, three Deputies from the Emperor preſented the General with an Elk, which his Majeſty himſelf had hunted the ſame Morning in an adjacent Wood, which was received with great Reverence by his Excellency.

The General and Mr. *van der Meyden*, hearing the Beat of Drum in the new Redoubt, near the Gate of *Rajuba*, they went thither in Perſon; and in their way met with 17 *Laſcaryns*, and 2 *Aratches*, who being poſted in an Outwork near the ſaid Gate, had quitted the ſame; they being order'd to be ſecured in the Head Quarter, they went forward, and found that the Alarm had been occaſion'd by the coming over of the *Laſcaryns*, whom they miſtook for Enemies. They reported that the City was provided with Proviſions till *May*, their Allowance, *viz.* 25 *Mididos* a Head, being given them for the Month of *April*: They added, that it was whiſper'd about, that the Governor had embark'd all his Moveables, Mony and Jewels in a Boat, and ſent them in the Night-time to *Manaar*; which News was very unpleaſing to us, becauſe they had eſcaped the Sight of our Ships.

Baldæus.

Deſerters give an account of the Condition of Columbo.

The 6*th*, 7*th*, 8*th* and 9*th* of *March*, we advanced bravely towards the Gate of *Rajuba*: two *Portugueſe* Deſerters, with ſome *Laſcaryns* well armed, being examined apart, depoſed, that the City could not hold out longer than towards the end of *May*, the Remnants of the Rice being very ſtony and unclean, nay wet and corrupted. Hereupon the General ordered that a Battery of two Guns ſhould be erected oppoſite to the utmoſt Point of the Baſtion of St. *John*, the better to batter and lay level the Flank of that of St. *Stephens*, and under favour thereof to open again the Trench leading to our Mine, and ſo working along the Wall, to take Poſt upon the Counterſcarp.

CHAP. XXXII.

Many Deſerters give account of the Condition of Columbo. Ysbrand Gotskens *ſent Envoy to the Emperor. His Letter to the General, and that of the Beſieged to the Emperor.*

ABout that time divers *Laſcaryn* Deſerters, and among them a *Portugueſe*, made heavy Complaints that they were forced to feed upon corrupted Rice: The laſt told us, that there were no more than 40 left of our Priſoners, and that ſuch of our Officers as were not ſlain in the Aſſault, died afterwards of their Wounds, except a Serjeant. He alſo diſcover'd to us, that the Beſieged had carried all their Guns from the Baſtions of S. *Stephen*, S. *Philip* and *Clergos* into their Outwork, before the Gate of *Rajuba*, in order to diſcharge the ſame the next following Night upon our Pioneers. *Paul Meno*, who was then upon the Guard there, was thereupon order'd to let the Labourers ceaſe, till they had ſpent their Powder and Ball in vain, and then to let them return to their Work. In effect, they ſhot very furiouſly the next Night both with their Cannon and Firelocks upon our Works; and by break of Day the General went on Horſeback to *Milagre*, to view the Works of the *Diſſaves* on that ſide, which he found to

Baldæus. to be well ſecured by a ſtrong Set of Paliſadoes, reaching from the Sea-ſhoar to the Fens; and being guarded by four Companies, theſe were thought ſufficient to oppoſe any Sally of the Enemy on that ſide.

One of our Soldiers being ſome days before miſſing, we underſtood that he had ſought for ſhelter with his Majeſty for a Crime he had committed, which at his Majeſty's Requeſt was remitted him, yet not without being diſcharg'd from our Service. The *Diſſave* who made this Requeſt, told the General, that the Grapes ſent to the Emperor had been very well accepted.

A Boy Deſerter brings certain Advice. The 13*th* of *March* a Boy, who had deſerted the *Portugueſes*, came to the General, and told him in private, that having been let down from the Baſtion *Clergos* with a Rope, by ſome *Laſcaryns* who kept Guard there, they intended the next Night with the riſing of the Moon, to come all over to us, or elſe to deliver up the Baſtion. The Boy according to his own Deſire being ſoundly whipp'd, was ſent back into the City, to take away all ſuſpicion of a private Correſpondence with us.

To ſecond his Endeavours a Company of the Guards was poſted in a convenient Place; but the Beſieged fir'd ſo briskly from the Baſtions of St. *Stephen* and St. *Philip* that Night, that there was no Opportunity of putting it in execution at that time. A *Toupas* Deſerter reported the next Day, that the Baſtion of St. *Stephen* was guarded only by 16 Men, having queſtionleſs diſpoſed the reſt in other Places, as being ſenſible that the gaining of that Baſtion would ſtand us in no great ſtead. Six *Laſcaryn* Deſerters confirmed the ſame ſoon after, and two among them aſſured the General, that the Governor of *Columbo* had ſent a Letter to the Emperor *Raja Singa*.

2 Dutch Soldiers go over to the Enemy. The 14*th* *Edmund Ruyſch*, whoſe Quarters were at *Milagre*, ſent word, that *Henry William Boogare* a Corporal, and *Peter van Bruyſingen* a common Soldier, were gone over to the Enemy. The ſame day ten *Laſcaryns* well arm'd came over to us, and the ſame Evening with the riſing of the Moon, two Cannon for Battery were planted upon the Battery againſt St. *John*'s Baſtion. His Majeſty having deſir'd, that ſome Perſon of Note might be ſent to him, to confer with him in private, our Factor *Ysbrand Gotskens*, a Native of the *Hague*, a Perſon equally dextrous with his Pen as the Sword, was ſent with all Expedition thither. About the ſame time ſome *Laſcaryns* with their Wives and Children coming out of the City, were turn'd back again; a Letter being at the ſame time deliver'd to a certain Boy for *Simon Lopes*, lately gone over to the Enemy, intimating, that, *If he would endeavour to make the Negroes in the City riſe, he ſhould not only deſerve his Pardon, but alſo a good Reward.* *A Letter to the Deſerter* Simon Lopes.

At Midnight we made a falſe Attack, which put the whole City into ſuch an Alarum, that there was nothing to be heard but ringing of Bells, and the noiſe of Drums, but in half an Hour all was quiet again. The next Day his Majeſty ſent three Deputies, to know the reaſon of ſuch fierce firing; which being told them, they inform'd the General that *Ysbrand Gotskens* had not as yet had Audience of the Emperor, but would queſtionleſs be admitted the next Day. A Letter was alſo ſent to the General from the Emperor *Raja Singa*, wherein were enclos'd 20 others, one from *Antonio de Souza Coutinho* Governour of *Columbo*, the other from the chief Citizens of that City, both dated the 10*th* of *March*, in which they implore his Majeſty's Aſſiſtance. *A falſe Attack upon* Columbo.

RAJA SINGA RAJOU.

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

" THE preſent Opportunity has invited our Imperial Majeſty, to diſpatch theſe few Lines to your Excellency: Two Days ago, being Wedneſday the 15*th* of *March*, I broke up from *Guiramibula*, and marching along the other ſide of the River by the way of *Walewitty*, have fix'd my Tents in this Place, from whence I have diſpatch'd immediately ſome of my Great Courtiers, to notify my Arrival in the Camp at *Reygamwatte*, and to enquire after your Excellency's Health. I commanded them at the ſame time (having not as yet an Anſwer to ſome of your Excellency's Letters directed to me) to deſire you to ſend a Perſon of Note, unto whom I might by word of mouth give an Anſwer to the ſaid Letters. It being Night when I arriv'd in the Camp at *Reygamwatte*, I could not order the Diſpoſition of my Forces till next Morning, when the two encloſed Letters were delivered to me, one from the Governor, the other from the Citizens of *Columbo*, the Contents whereof

" of you will underſtand from the Originals.

Subſcribed,

At our Court and Camp of *Reygamwatte*, *Mar.* 17. 1656.

Raja Singa Rajou, moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

Moſt Potent Emperor Raja Singa, *&c.*

The Governor's Letter to the Emperor.

" IMmediately after our Enemies did engage into this unjuſt War, which continues to this Day, I let your Majeſty know the Reaſons which induced me to ſollicite ſome Supplys from your Majeſty; not queſtioning, but that you would not leave me in ſuch an Extremity, it being always the Ambition of great Monarchs, to take the leſs powerful under their Protection; tho thro God's Mercy, we have hitherto not only defended this City, but alſo at ſeveral times given the Enemy ſufficient Proofs of our Bravery, in deſtroying and diſperſing his Forces, of which we have ſent an account to your Majeſty. But perhaps theſe Letters never came to your Majeſty's Hands, being intercepted by the Enemy; which ſeems the leſs ſurprizing to me, ſince they have treated the Natives of this Iſland (without any juſt Cauſe) that went out of this City like Slaves, forcing many of them to retire back without the leaſt Mercy. The City of *Columbo* is an antient Inheritance of the *Portugueſes*, beſtowed upon 'em by the Kings and Emperors, your Predeceſſors, who always were ready to honour them with their Protection; neither do we want Opportunity to make your Majeſty (if you pleaſe) ſenſible of the manifold Services done by the *Portugueſes* in this Iſle, in caſe we did not believe the ſame to be ſtill in the Memory of your Majeſty, and many of your Great Ones. We don't know to have given the leaſt reaſon of Diſpleaſure to your Majeſty, which makes us imagine, that you will be pleaſed not to leave us in this Extremity, in regard it ſeems much more reaſonable, to aſſiſt the *Portugueſes* your antient Friends, than the *Hollanders* your new Gueſts. Time has already diſcovered the Intentions of the *Dutch*, and Experience will ſoon convince you, that all their Aim is founded upon Lucre and Intereſt, which they diſſemble for the preſent; but ſo ſoon as they are Maſters of this Place, your Majeſty will too late be convinc'd of the Truth of what I ſay. I will not pretend to urge that matter any further for the preſent, leaving the Determination of the whole to your Majeſty's Wiſdom, and the Conduct of your Counſellors. God preſerve your Imperial Majeſty.

Baldæus.

Columbo, *Mar.* 10. 1656. *Antonio de Souza Coutinho.*

Moſt High and moſt Potent Emperor and Lord, Raja Singa, *&c.*

The Citizens Letter to the Emperor.

" IMmediately after the *Hollanders* had laid Siege to this Place, our Magiſtrates and Governors did give notice thereof to your Majeſty, as likewiſe of the enſuing General Aſſault made by the Enemy both by Sea and Land; which being done in the Day-time, we let them advance into the City, but afterwards made them glad to ask for Quarter, which was granted them. According to the Confeſſion of the *Dutch* themſelves, they were 240 ſtrong when they paſſed the Fens, the greateſt part whereof with their Boats fell into our Hands, beſides a Ship of 30 Guns taken by us, and another much damaged, which they had enough to do to carry off, not to mention thoſe that were ſlain in the Ships, and in the Aſſault. Being afterwards advanc'd to the Ditch, they fix'd their Miners, and were buſy in bringing over their Gallery; but we forc'd them to retire with conſiderable Loſs, and took the Gallery with the Loſs of one Man only. There remains nothing now but for your Majeſty to vouchſafe us your Favour, which we heartily wiſh for and deſire. From what has been ſaid, we hope your Majeſty is ſufficiently convinc'd of our good Will and Zeal, in defending a Place, beſtow'd upon us by your Imperial Majeſty's Anceſtors, and that, if ſupported by your Favour, we ſhall never ceaſe to perſiſt in the ſame Reſolution, in hopes that your Majeſty will rather aſſiſt the *Portugueſes* your antient Friends, than the *Hollanders*. God protect your Majeſty, and your Dominions.

Columbo, *Mar.* 11. 1656.

By Order from

Diego Leitaon de Souza, Chief Secretary.
Manoel de Fonſeca.
Diego de Souza de Cunha.
Ruy Lopes Coutinho.
John Coelho de Caſtro.
Bento Fereiro d' Alvreu.

Baldæus. The 20th of *March* a Negro Pioneer came over to us, who having worked in the Ditch, diſcover'd the Place to us, and that four *Portugueſes* being taken as they were coming to our Camp, had been hanged. That our new Battery had kill'd two *Canaryns* and a Gunner, and wounded ſeveral others upon the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*. Concerning their Proviſions, they confirmed what had been told us before. The General went with the ſaid Negro in Perſon to the Ditch, to ſee the Place where the Negro had been at work, and perceiving three *Portugueſes* cloſe together in the Ditch, he got upon the Wall, and diſcharged his Fuſee twice at them; but ſoon got down again, without which he had been in great Danger, three Bullets paſſing immediately after that way. *The General in danger of being killed.*

CHAP. XXXIII.

Ysbrand Gotskens *returns from the Emperor's Court, gives an account of his Tranſactions. Letters ſent to* Columbo. *A Battery raiſed. A circumſtantial account from* Goa, *and its Condition.*

A Boy taken as a Spy. ABout noon a Boy was taken in our Works, where *Paul Meno* then kept guard, inquiring after our Strength; and being ask'd why, he anſwer'd that the Governor of *Columbo* had ſent him to enquire after it: In conſidration of his Youth and Simplicity, he came off with a good whipping, and ſo was ſent back into the City. Major *van der Laan* ſent word, that the Enemy having made a Hole thro the Wall, played from thence directly upon his Works, and had kill'd a Negro; and the ſame Night they play'd with a Cannon upon the ſame Works, but without hurting any Body.

The 23d of *March* towards Evening, the Factor *Ysbrand Gotskens* having taken his Leave the ſame day of the Emperor, return'd to our Camp, where he gave the following account in Writing of his Negotiation: "That in anſwer to "five ſeveral Letters written by General "*Hulſt* to his Majeſty, he had command- "ed him to tell the General, that hav- "ing received a Letter dated the 16th "at *Columbo*, he would let him know "the Contents thereof. That his Ma- "jeſty was well ſatisfied with the Pro- "ceedings againſt ſuch as were fled out "of the City; which tho it might ſeem "ſomewhat cruel, yet was he contented "to have the Blame thereof himſelf, "as tending to his Service, and the ſpee- "dy reducing of the City. That be- "cauſe his Majeſty was ſenſible that what- "ever Preſents he could make to the Ge- "neral of rich Apparel, and ſuch like "Ornaments, he was ſufficiently provi- "ded with before, he had thought fit "to beſtow upon him the Title and Dig- "nity of his *Director-General*, and that "for the future he ſhould be acknow- "ledged as ſuch throughout his Dominі- "ons. That he further deſired the Ge- "neral not to take it amiſs, that after "the *Diſſaves* had notified his Arrival "in the Camp of *Reygamwatte*, a Guide "had been denied to the Captain of the "Guard, it being contrary to the Cuſtom "of his Country for any one to be in- "troduced at Court, without notice "being given of his Arrival to the Em- "peror.

Ysbrand Gotskens gives an account of his Negotiation.

"What the General had alledged "concerning the *Mouſſon*, and the Sol- "diers being fatigued by ſo tedious a "Siege, his Majeſty was very ſenſible "thereof, and that when the General "ſhould come into his Preſence (which "he hoped would be within three or "four days) they would confer upon "that Point, and ſettle the matter to "his Satisfaction: But his Majeſty being "inform'd that his Excellency frequent- "ly expos'd his Perſon, and regarding "him with the ſame tenderneſs as his "own Eyes, had deſir'd his Excellency "for the future to take more care of "his Perſon, commanding all his Officers "of what Quality ſoever, to be careful "of him to the laſt degree.

"What his Excellency had alledged, "concerning his Majeſty's being conſtant- "ly employed in Weighty Affairs, and "that therefore he was unwilling to diſ- "turb him with frequent Letters, his "Majeſty replied, that the Subject of his "Excellency's Letters being ſuch, as "moſt nearly concerned his Service, no- "thing could be more acceptable to him, "than to beſtow his time in peruſing the "Letters of the moſt truſty Servant

"that

" that ever he had in his Life, deſiring " therefore, that his Excellency might " ſuperſede theſe Excuſes. That what " his Excellency had alledged in his be- " half, concerning the miſtake in com- " manding his Forces at *Reigamcorle*, as it " was intended for his Majeſty's Service, " ſo it was very acceptable to him, and " needed no farther Excuſe; as was like- " wiſe the Puniſhment inflicted upon the " Author of the Letter writ from *Paſ-* " *dun-Corle*, to deter others from the like " Undertakings. Concerning the Trea- " ty made with Mr. *Weſterwold*, his Ma- " jeſty declar'd, he would keep the ſame " inviolably, notwithſtanding that ſeve- " ral Generals of the *Indies*, and *Dutch* " Governours of the Iſle in *Ceylon*, had " done many things which had given oc- " caſion to no ſmall Diſturbances: but " that as he call'd God to witneſs of his " Innocence, ſo he was extremely glad " to have met with a Perſon of Honour " in his Excellency's Perſon, who having " done already conſiderable Services to " his Crown, he intended to enter with " him into a ſtrict Confederacy, which " ſhould ſtand firm as long as the Sun " and Moon ſhould furniſh the World " with Light.

" It was therefore that his Majeſty was " very deſirous to know his Excellency's " Intentions, whether, after the taking " of *Columbo*, they ſhould attack the King- " dom of *Jafnapatnam* or the Iſle of " *Manaar*, and whether it were not con- " venient to ſend ſome of his Forces " under certain *Diſſaves* thither imme- " diately: That he had received two " Letters from the before-mentioned " Places, which ſhould be communicated " to his Excellency. His Majeſty alſo de- " clared, that either next Sunday or " Thurſday (which of theſe two his " Excellency ſhould pitch upon) he would " expect him at Court, and that he would " ſend ſome of his Courtiers to conduct " him thither.

At the ſame time certain Deputies from his Majeſty brought along with them two Letters pen'd by Mr. *Hulſt* our General, in anſwer to thoſe ſent from *Columbo* to the Emperor, and diſpatch'd to his Majeſty; which being well approv'd of by him, and ſigned by his Excellency in his Majeſty's Name, were carried the next day into the City.

Two Letters ſent into Columbo.

Soon after news was brought from *Montual*, that 400 *Portugueſes*, commanded by four Officers, had been ſeen near the Sea-ſhore on the other ſide of the River, but hitherto had not made the leaſt attempt of paſſing the ſame. Abundance of the Inhabitants of the Inland Countries, who perhaps had never had a ſight of a Man of War, or any well diſciplin'd Forces, flock'd thither (with his Majeſty's Permiſſion) to ſee them. About the ſame time we received a Reinforcement of 50 men from *Puntegale*, being all they could ſpare.

Baldæus.

A Supply of 50 men comes to the Dutch *Camp.*

The before-mentioned Letters ſent in his Majeſty's Name, and carried by ſome of his *Aratches* and *Laſcaryns* into *Columbo*, were at firſt received with a general Salute of the Cannon and Small Arms; but being open'd, the Inhabitants ſufficiently teſtify'd their Reſentment, telling the Meſſengers, that in caſe their Condition was not ſo deſperate, they would play them another Game before they return'd; of which uſage the Meſſengers deſired the General to make his Complaint to the Emperor.

How theſe Letters were receiv'd there.

The ſame day aroſe a violent Tempeſt, with Rain, Thunder and Lightning, which kill'd one of our Sentinels, and ſtruck three Muſquets, in the Church of *Quia de Lobo*, all to pieces. The Emperor was ſo complaiſant, as to enquire the next day by one of his Meſſengers, whether we had ſuffer'd any damage in our Tents or Works, and was anſwer'd, that God had preſerv'd us from all the Danger. The ſame day, being the 25*th* of *March*, two *Europeans* came over to us; one of them, a Native of *Marſeilles*, was over-taken by the way, and received 9 Wounds, ſo that he narrowly eſcap'd to our Works, but died the next Morning.

A violent Tempeſt.

The 26*th* a Serjeant, a *Miſtice*, came over to us, and reported, that two more of the ſame Company watched only an Opportunity to deſert: That they had already diſtributed to each Soldier his Quota of Proviſions, *viz.* a *Parra* of Rice *per diem*, for the Month of *April*: That they were much afflicted with the Dropſy and the *Beribery*, a Swelling in the Knees, which takes away the uſe of their Legs.

Soon after Commodore *Roothaus* ſent in three Fiſhermen taken by our Boats within Muſquet-ſhot of the Water-Fort. The Seamen had 50 Crowns given them (the uſual Reward for every *Tony* or Fiſher-boat) and 25 more as an Encouragement, theſe Fiſhermen being the chief Perſons who ſupply'd the City with Proviſions. Orders were alſo ſent to the Commodore, not to expoſe his Seamen without an abſolute neceſſity.

Some Fiſhermen taken.

Some of our beſt Workmen were alſo conſulted about the erecting another Bat-

Baldæus. tery againſt the Baſtion of St. *John*, in order to deſtroy their Palliſado Work in the Ditch, and to facilitate the bringing over of the Gallery. The General told the Emperor's *Diſſave*, that he ſtood in need of 4 or 500 Pioneers and Workmen; but he declined the matter, telling him, that when he came to the Emperor, he would doubtleſs not deny his Requeſt.

A Portugueſe Merchant comes into the Camp.

About the ſame time a *Portugueſe* Merchant came in a Boat croſs the Bay into our Camp, in company of a *Negro* Trumpeter: They reported, that they were reduced to great extremity in the Place; that no leſs than 130 had been buried yeſterday; and that if moſt of the *Portugueſes* had not their Legs ſwell'd by the Dropſy, they had deſerted long before this.

The 29th of *March* the Enemy were preparing to attack the Redoubt of *Paul Meno* two hours before day; but the *Negro* Pioneers with the Sentinel retreating in time, and giving the Alarm, they retired, after having exchanged ſome Muſquet-balls without doing any harm. Four Deputys arriving ſoon after to enquire the occaſion of ſuch ſmart Firing, they were ſhewn the Works, and told, that we wanted 4 or 500 *Colys* or Labourers. Three other Fiſhermen were alſo brought up by the Seamen, who had the uſual Reward given them.

News from Goa adviſed by Leonard Williams.

At the ſame time the *Popkensburgh* Yacht arriving from *Wingurla*, brought the following Advice:

That *Don Rodrigo de Lobo*, *Conde de Seredo*, Viceroy of *Goa*, and his Secretary, with three of his Domeſticks, having been poiſoned, died within 4 or 5 days after. His Death being concealed for ſome time, *Manuel Maſcarenhas Homem*, formerly Governour of *Ceylon*, was (purſuant to the King's Orders) conſtituted two days after Viceroy in his ſtead: But the *Fidalgos* or Gentlemen not being ſatisfy'd with his Perſon, they expected daily a Revolt (juſt as it happen'd againſt him at *Columbo*, 1652.) However, not long after the Viceroy's Death, the Merchants of *Goa* began to load all the Yachts that were there, as alſo one Galeon and a *Carack*; whilſt the Governour was buſy in equipping of Men of War and other Veſſels, intended for *Ceylon*, offering 20 *Seraphyns* (or *Dutch* Guilders) to every Soldier that would liſt himſelf. Our Reſident of *Wingurla* further advis'd, that they had ſent from *Goa* 160 Ships, and among them 16 Men of War, the 8th of *February*, to the North, to fetch Proviſions and ſome other neceſſary Commodities; and that the ſaid Fleet had tarried four or five days in ſight of *Wingurla* by reaſon of the contrary Winds. That three *Patachos* or Yachts were ſailed for *Moſambique*; but one being leaky, was forc'd to return to *Bombaſſa*: Two more to *Macaſſar*, two more to *China*; and one *Carack* and a Galeon, *viz.* the *Bon Jeſus* and *Noſſa Senhora de Gratia*, ſet ſail the 19th of *February* for *Portugal*; aboard of which were carried the following Gentlemen, being accuſed of certain Crimes againſt the Government, *viz.* *Don Bras de Caſtro*, late Governour General; *Don Lewis de Souza*; *Don Pedro de Caſtro*; *Manuel de Souzo Cabraer*, Maſter of the Artillery; *Diego de Salvaar*, Captain Major; *Eſtevaon de Melo*, late Governour of *Baſſyn*; *Charles Hudſart*, a rich Merchant; Dr. *Caldero*; and *Jeronimo Lobo de Falhetta*. In the *Baſſyn* (under the Juriſdiction of *Goa*) remained Priſoners, on account of being concern'd in the declaring *Don Bras de Caſtro* Viceroy, *Don Rodrigo Monſanto*, a Captain in the *Baſſyn*; the *Veador de Fazendas*, or Sur-Intendant of the Merchants; and *Leon Corre*.

He adviſed, that the before-mention'd *Carack* and Galeon had aboard a very large Cargo of Stuffs and Callico's, of Cinnamon, Indigo, Pepper, Bezoar-ſtones, Cloves, *&c.* And that ſeveral of the richeſt Merchants of *Goa* having embark'd all their Effects aboard the ſaid two Veſſels, were gone privately along with them to *Portugal*.

Two days before the Yachts the *Zierick-ſee* and *Naerden* arrived before *Goa*, 4 *Patamars* *, with a *Portugueſe*, came to that Place to bring advice of the deſperate Condition of *Columbo*, and that they ſtood in great need of the ſo long expected Succours. But the Government of *Goa* finding a great averſion in the *Portugueſe* Soldiers, as well as the *Negro* Seamen, to go to *Ceylon*, eſpecially in this dangerous Seaſon; they pretended to have receiv'd Letters from *Don Anthonio de Souza Coutinho*, Governour of *Columbo*, with advice, that the *Dutch* had bin forc'd, with the aſſiſtance of *Raja Singa*, to raiſe the Siege; and to make this News paſs for current, the new Viceroy *Manuel Maſcarenhas Homem* got the Governour of *Columbo* his Hand counterfeited, and order'd for three days ſucceſſively Ringing of Bells, Illuminations, Bonfires, and

* Patamars *are* Indian *Advice-boats cover'd all over for the Carriage of Letters, which they tie round in Wax Cloths to the Maſts.* Patamars *are alſo flying Foot-Poſts.*

other

other Demonſtrations of Joy to be made for its Relief.

By the ſame Letters from *Wingurla* Advice was brought, that our Ships deſign'd for *Perſia* and *Suratte*, were ſailed from thence; and that according to the Intelligence received from *Ditſely* (a *Mahometan* City not far from *Goa*) the ſo long expected Squadron, conſiſting of between 20 and 30 Ships, was to ſail within three days with Men and Proviſions for *Ceylon*; tho this proved afterwards only a Rhodomontade.

He further added, that after the departure of the before-mentioned Veſſels bound to *Perſia* and *Suratte*, frequently Yachts had been ſent to the River of *Goa*, to get intelligence of the motion of the ſaid Squadron. That as far as they could learn, they ſtay'd only for the return of the before-mentioned Fleet ſent out to fetch Proviſions from the North; when they intended to force all the Sea men, before they could ſet foot aſhore, aboard the Men of War, in order to carry them, together with 7 or 800 *European* Soldiers, and good ſtore of Proviſions, to the Iſle of *Ceylon*, for the Relief of *Columbo*. According to the Governour of *Wingurla*'s Opinion, the ſaid Succours could not be ready before *April*; and that, if by that time they had no certain news at *Goa* of the Surrender of *Columbo*, they would beſides the before-mentioned Squadron gather all their Naval and Land-Forces, and endeavour to penetrate, with the ſtrong North Wind, which commonly blows in that Seaſon, into the Harbour of *Columbo*, for its relief. *Baldæus.*

He further added, that there lay two Galeons and a *Carack* at anchor in the River of *Goa*, one whereof, which lay near *Marmagon*, would ſcarce be fit to go out this Seaſon. Laſtly, that the Yacht the *Roman* lay ready to ſail upon the firſt News he ſhould receive of the going out of the ſaid Squadron for the relief of *Columbo*, to give us timely notice of their Coming.

CHAP. XXXIV.

Letters betwixt the Emperor and General. Several Deſerters come over to us. The General invited to the Emperor's Camp.

THE 30th of *March* a good number of *Portugueſes* paſſing the Fens in two Boats, call'd *Manchous*, attack'd our Forces in their Works near the Gate of *Mapane*, but after ſome firing on both ſides, were forced to retire in confuſion. Soon after a certain Captain of a Village was taken by our People, who was ſent out to fetch in ſome Faſcines, intended to be made uſe of in ſtrengthening the Cortyn betwixt the Baſtions of St. *John* and St. *Stephen*. Two *Tonys* or Fiſher-boats were likewiſe brought in with 5 Fiſhermen, and the Seamen rewarded according to Cuſtom. *Fifteen Fiſhermen ſold for Slaves.*

Letter from the General to the Emperor.

At the ſame time the General writ a Letter to the Emperor, wherein he imparted to his Majeſty the News he had received concerning the intended Relief of *Columbo*. In the Evening two *Portugueſe* Deſerters that came from the Baſtion of St. *Stephen* (having ſent the Sentinel upon an Errand) gave us a tolerable account of the Condition of the City; and the next day another *Portugueſe* Deſerter bore the Marks of their Extremity in his Countenance, which was very meager. The Seamen alſo brought in 4 Fiſhermen more, who making up the number of 15 in all, they were ſold for Slaves by the Sound of Trumpet, to reimburſe us the Mony that was given to the Seamen for the taking of them.

The 1ſt of *April* the *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and the four *Corles* came at the head of a Troop of 100 *Laſcaryns*, divided into certain Companies, into the Camp; and bringing along with them a Letter from his Majeſty to the General, neatly laid together, they were received with all poſſible Marks of Honour. The Letter ran thus:

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

"YOUR Excellency's Letter, dated the 24th of *March*, I received the "ſame day, wherein you declare your "readineſs to ſerve our Imperial Majeſty "upon all occaſions; which, together "with the Proofs we have received there- "of ever ſince your Landing in this Iſland, "could not but be highly acceptable to "our Imperial Majeſty. Your Excellen- "cy declares, that you will reſerve what "you have further to propoſe till the "time you ſhall be admitted into our "Preſence. Our dearly beloved *Director* "*General* being ſo near our Camp, has "never-

Baldæus. " nevertheleſs not as yet appear'd in our " Preſence, which we eaſily paſs by in " regard of the Affection our Imperial " Majeſty bears to your Perſon. We " have ſent the *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and of " the *Four Corles* to conduct you hither. " When they are arrived, your Excellen- " cy may order the *Diſſaves* of the *Four* " *Corles*, and of the *Seven Corles*, and of " *Saffragamme*, to take care in the mean " while of the Forces, and what elſe " you ſhall find moſt requiſite for our " Service, and to chuſe one of them " (whom you pleaſe) for your Con- " ductor, not queſtioning, but that (ac- " cording to your Wiſdom and Expe- " rience) you will provide for the Secu- " rity of our Forces, and our dear *Hol-* " *landers*. God conduct your Excellen- " cy with his Bleſſing, that our Imperial " Eyes may ſee your Perſon, which hap- " py Hour and Day I expect with joyful " Eyes; aſſuring your Excellency, that " whatever you ſhall propoſe to us will " be as acceptable to our Ears as the moſt " harmonious Muſick in the World.

At Reygamwatte, *April* 1. 1656.

Conſultations about the Ceremonies in Rajaſinga.

It was then conſulted what Method was moſt convenient to be taken, and what Preparations were neceſſary in order to attend the Emperor with the utmoſt Splendour; his *Diſſave* having (by his Majeſty's Orders) appointed the next following Wedneſday for the General's reception. But before his Departure he order'd two twelve Pounders to be planted upon the Battery againſt St. *John*'s Baſtion, where the next day a Seaman was kill'd, and a Souldier ſhot by the ſame Ball thro the Hat, without touching his Head, or any other part. The ſame day 16 Laſcaryns well arm'd coming over to us from the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, were overtaken by ſome *Portugueſe* Forces, with whom there happen'd a ſmart Skirmiſh before they could get clear, two of them being wounded. They were employed in our Works near the Gate of *Rajuba*.

Two more Cannon planted on the Battery.

Sixteen Deſerters.

In the Afternoon the *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and the *Four Corles* came with a numerous Retinue to attend the General, leaving it to his choice whom of the two he would pitch upon to conduct him to his Majeſty. After ſome Diſcourſe the *Diſſave* of *Saffragamme* was named by his Excellency for that purpoſe, and order'd to get every thing in readineſs for their departure againſt the next Morning. News was brought at the ſame time that ſeven *Canaryns* were taken by ſome of the Emperor's Forces above *Negombo*, coming in a Fiſher-boat from *Columbo*.

The 4*th* of *April* in the Afternoon, Advice being given that his Majeſty was come on Horſeback to the Paſs of *Welecande*, the General was preparing to meet him there; but as they were juſt ready to take Horſe, certain *Diſſaves* came Poſt with a Meſſage from the Emperor, deſiring the General not to come till to morrow, becauſe his Majeſty was return'd immediately.

The General ſets out on his Journy to the Emperor.

Accordingly the 5*th* of *April* the General ſet out on his Journy, in order to wait on his Majeſty, attended by the two Factors *Edward Ooms* and *Ysbrand Gotskens*; the Fiſcal *Lucas van der Duſſen*, *Cornelius Valkenburgh* Secretary, *James van der Rhee*, the Interpreter *George Bloom*, and *Don John de Coſta*; accompany'd by the Imperial *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and *Saffragamme*, and a Company of Firelocks under Capt. *John Hartman*; Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden*, Major *van der Laan*, the *Diſſave* of the *Four Corles*, beſides ſeveral Officers of Note; conducting them as far as to the Paſs of *Nacolegamme*, his Majeſty being then encamp'd upon the River of *Reygamwatte*.

Honourable Reception of the General.

The firſt Teſtimony of Reſpect ſhew'd to the Director General of his Majeſty, was the offer of three fine and well-accoutred Horſes, for the Courtiers to make uſe of them at pleaſure. Theſe were follow'd by five tame Elephants, with their Guides, who were order'd to keep in the Van. Then came a conſiderable number of Noblemen and Officers, at the head of their reſpective Troops, paying their Reſpects to his Excellency, and asking after his Health. As they approached the Imperial Head Quarters, they were met by ſome of the chief Men of his Majeſty's Court, accompany'd by a vaſt number of Soldiers, Umbrello-Carriers, Trumpets, Muſicians, 11 Elephants, and two fine Horſes, with Saddles, Bridles, and other Ornaments beſet with Gold and precious Stones, to complement his Excellency in his Majeſty's behalf. Thus they marched on thro a Guard of Fuſileers and Bowmen ranged on both ſides, for a quarter of an hour together, till they came to a Houſe prepared for the General's Reception, neatly furniſh'd, the outward Rooms being hung with Hanging of a white Linen Cloth, and the Bed-Chambers with Gold Stuffs. Here the General entred with his Retinue under a Salvo of Fire-locks, placed on the other ſide of the River near the Imperial Palace. They had ſcarce arrived here

two hours, but his Majeſty's *Diſſaves* came to enquire after the General's Health, being inform'd that his Excellency was ſeiz'd with an Ague, which had made him reſolve to come to him in Perſon, had he not received nearer Advice, that his dearly beloved Director was on the mending hand, of which he expected the confirmation with the utmoſt impatience. Theſe Compliments were return'd by the General with the utmoſt demonſtrations of Reſpect and Duty, telling the *Diſſaves*, that he was highly deſirous to appear in the Preſence of ſo famous and potent a Monarch ſo ſoon as poſſible could be, his Preſence being abſolutely neceſſary in the Camp.

Next day being the *6th*, great ſtore of Proviſions of the beſt kind were brought in Boats for the General and his whole Retinue. In the Afterpoon ſome Courtiers brought word to the General in private, that his Majeſty being ſeiz'd that Morning with a ſudden Illneſs, could (to his great Affliction) not ſpeak with his Excellency that day. His Excellency reply'd, that he was heartily ſorry, his Preſence was ſo abſolutely neceſſary in the Camp, that he could not without great hazard ſtay, ſince it was uncertain how ſoon his Majeſty mighty recover; for which reaſon he deſired leave to depart for this time, till a better opportunity, deſiring, that four Horſes might be laid by the way, which, as ſoon as his Majeſty thought convenient, might carry him with all ſpeed to Court. Whereupon Orders were given to *John Hartman* to prepare for the March, which was done accordingly the ſame Night.

The General prepares for his Return.

Soon after we underſtood, that his Majeſty had been forc'd to have been let blood in the Arm, and that he had ſhow'd a great deal of Sorrow for the intended departure of the General; telling his Courtiers, that being ſenſible how neceſſary his Preſence was in the Camp, he would either the next morning, or at furtheſt in the Evening, admit him into his Preſence, in caſe he found the leaſt abatement of his Illneſs. In the mean while the General ſent the following Letter to his Majeſty:

Moſt Serene Emperor,

General's Letter to the Emperor.

" THREE days being already paſs'd " ſince I came hither by your Majeſty's Command and Deſire; but " not being able hitherto to appear " in your Majeſty's Preſence, I moſt humbly beg leave to return to the " Camp, the whole Burden whereof " reſts upon my Shoulders; promiſing to be ready to attend your Majeſty whenever you ſhall think fit to " ſend for me, and living in conſtant " hopes, that in caſe ſome Miſcarriage " or other ſhould happen in my Abſence, " the ſame will not be alledged againſt " me, and put upon me as a Blemiſh to " blot out the remembrance of my former Service. God protect the Emperor.

Bridæus.

April 7. 1656. Your Majeſty's moſt humble Servant,

Gerard Hulſt.

This done, the General order'd *Yſbrand Gotskent* and *Don John de Coſta*, with ſome of his truſty *Laſcaryns*, to take a view of the King's Guards upon the Road, with an intention, that in caſe he ſaw no certain Proſpect of going to Court to day (as indeed there was but little appearance he ſhould, conſidering the Emperor's Indiſpoſition) he would privately go Poſt to the Camp. The *8th* of *April* the following Letter was delivered to the General from the Emperor.

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

" THE Perſons ſent to enquire after " your Excellency's Health, deliver'd to me with a great deal of " ſatisfaction your Excellency's Letter " wrote on Friday laſt at 4 a Clock. " I was extremely pleas'd to hear you " were in health, and retain'd the ſame " Inclinations for our Service. It was " on the other hand no ſmall Affliction " to me that you had ſtay'd ſo long " in my Court, without being able to " ſee you. I aſſure you, that the ſame " has happen'd far beyond my Wiſhes " or Intention; but it ſeems to have been " ſo ordain'd by God, that your Excellency ſhould be a Witneſs of my Illneſs, " and at the ſame time have an opportunity of receiving the Preſent " ſent to you by the Prince (born by " God's Providence for the Welfare of " my Subjects) and deliver'd into my " hands before my Departure from *Candy*. Your Excellency may prepare your " ſelf againſt to morrow, when I will " ſend word for your Appearance in my " Preſence; which done, you ſhall have " liberty to return into the Camp, when I " will alſo iſſue my Orders for the furniſhing

Baldæus.

" niſhing you with all things requiſite
" for the accompliſhment of ſuch Mea-
" ſures as ſhall be taken betwixt us. Af-
" ter my Recovery I intend to come in
" Perſon into your Camp, for which
" reaſon I have commanded the *Diſſave*
" of *Ouve* to prepare my Quarters there.
" No more, but that our Imperial Ma-
" jeſty does not ceaſe to pray to God for
" your Excellency's Welfare.

April 7. *before break of Day.* *Raja Singa*, moſt potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

CHAP. XXXV.

The General's moſt magnificent Entry. He is admitted into his Majeſty's Preſence. What paſs'd at their Interview. The General's Return. His unfortunate End.

The General's Entry.

ABout Noon, juſt as the General was at dinner, we heard a Noiſe of Drums, Trumpets and other Muſick on the other ſide of the River, and ſoon after ſaw ſome of the chief Courtiers of the Emperor, with three of the choiceſt Horſes of his Stable, adorn'd with moſt magnificent Saddles, Bridles and other Accoutrements, to advance in very good order towards us; ſome Perſons of the firſt Quality marching before to invite his Excellency to Court. The General order'd immediately his Guards to paſs the River with the Preſents, with an intention to follow them in Perſon with his whole Train, where his Excellency was complimented by the *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and *Matale*, the Captain of his Majeſty's *Guard du Corps*, and a great number of other Courtiers. The whole Cavalcade was order'd in the following manner: His Excellency's Guards led the Van, 15 Enſigns and Standards being by the firſt Ranks carried trailing upon the Ground,

to ſhew the Spoils of their Enemies. Theſe were follow'd by his Majeſty's Horſes and Muſicians, and then by five tame Elephants; without the Gate of the Palace were ranged a vaſt number of Muſqueteers, and paſſing over the Bridg they found the Guard in the outward Court ranged on both ſides, through which they marched into the Imperial Palace.

His Audience. The Doors being ſhut after them, all the *Hollanders* there preſent were conducted through a large Square into a ſpacious Hall (call'd by them *Mandonoe*) on the Weſt-ſide whereof they found his Majeſty ſeated in great Pomp upon a Chair of State, mounted ſome ſteps from the ground. No ſooner had they enter'd the Hall, but all the great Courtiers paid their Reverence by falling flat with their Faces upon the ground, and the *Dutch* upon their Knees, till his Majeſty was pleaſed to order them to riſe by a Nod. Then they began to approach the Imperial Throne, adorn'd with moſt precious Tapeſtrys of Gold (call'd by them *Alcatives*;) coming to the middle of the Hall, they fell upon their Knees a ſecond time, according to the Cuſtom of the Eaſtern Nations, till his Majeſty was pleaſed to ariſe from his Seat, and commanded the General to come nearer, who made the following Speech to his Majeſty.

His Speech to the Emperor.

" Moſt Potent Monarch! Your moſt
" humble Servant approaches your Impe-
" rial Throne with a moſt violent Paſſion,
" in confidence of your generous Incli-
" nations, and wonted Clemency, which
" has encourag'd me to addreſs my ſelf
" to your Majeſty (whoſe Name is Re-
" nown'd throughout the World) with
" a moſt ſincere wiſh that God Almighty
" will be pleaſed to bleſs your moſt Il-
" luſtrious Imperial Majeſty, and the
" Prince, with a long and happy Life for
" the Welfare and Protection of your
" Subjects.

" I am come hither to renew and con-
" firm the moſt ſincere Confederacy eſta-
" bliſh'd betwixt your moſt Potent Ma-
" jeſty and the *Dutch* Nation; and to
" deſire that whatever Differences or
" Diſturbances may have happen'd hi-
" therto betwixt your Imperial Majeſty
" and our Nation, may be buried in
" eternal Oblivion, in order to eſta-
" bliſh an eternal Peace and Confede-
" racy, which may be as durable as the
" Bodies of the Sun and Moon. It can't
" be deny'd but that ſeveral Miſunder-
" ſtandings have happen'd betwixt your
" Majeſty's Officers and thoſe of our
" Company; but theſe ought now to be
" remov'd even out of our Memory,
" at a time when we are ſo profuſe of
" the Blood of our Countrymen, to force
" our common Enemies out of this Iſle,
" and ready to give your Majeſty every
" day new Proofs of our Sincerity and
" hearty Inclinations towards you.

Baldæus.

His Majeſty appear'd highly ſatisfied with what his Excellency had ſaid, ordering him at the ſame time to riſe, which he ſeem'd not to underſtand, and at the ſame time offer'd certain Preſents, being, as he ſaid, of little Value in themſelves, but nevertherleſs much regarded by the moſt Potent Emperors and Monarchs, to wit, ſome Standards taken from thoſe very Enemies who had for many years together ſo cruelly and barbarouſly oppreſs'd his Majeſty's Subjects, eſpecially in the *Low-Lands*. His Majeſty then, ſpeaking of the Preſents ſent to his Excellency by the Prince his Son, his Excellency acknowledg'd the ſame with extraordinary Reverence, pointing at the ſame time at a Jewel he wore upon his Breaſt, preſented him before by his Majeſty; and ſo approaching the Throne, he kneel'd upon a Cuſhion laid upon the Step of the Throne, and touching his Majeſty's Hand, told him, that he thought it the greateſt Honour he ever was capable of receiving, to be admitted to kiſs his Majeſty's Hands.

What paſſed betwixt him and the Emperor.

The Emperor took a *Gargantinho*, or Collar of Gold, which he threw about his Excellency's Neck, and drawing his own Ring from the firſt Finger of his Left-hand, he deſir'd he ſhould extend his Finger, and wear it in remembrance of his Majeſty, who put it upon his Finger. His Excellency was ſo ſurpriz'd at this extraordinary favour, that he had ſcarce power to put out his middle Finger of his left-hand, telling his Majeſty, that this Finger having had the misfortune to be diſfigur'd by his Enemies, was now abundantly recompenſed for his pains by the Honour his Majeſty had been pleaſed to beſtow upon him. Then retiring ſomewhat backwards, and ſtanding upon a Tapeſtry, he declar'd to his Majeſty,

Extraordinary Honour done to the General.

" That he was ſent into this Iſle with full
" Power by the General and Council of
" the *Indies* to propoſe to his *Majeſty*,
" whether he would be pleaſed to con-
" tinue the antient Alliance (made with
" Mr. *Weſterwold*) or have the ſame re-
" new'd, and ſome other Articles added,
" aſſuring his Majeſty, that whatever
" ſhould be agreed upon ſhould be kept
" inviolably on their ſide. Unto which

Certain Propoſitions made by the General.

his Majesty reply'd, that he was highly satisfied with his Proposal.

Baldæus.

Then the General giving a short account of their Success against the Enemy, his Majesty said, that he had heard of the same to his signal Satisfaction, and that he had a Present from the Prince his Son for his Excellency: Whereupon approaching the Throne a second time, his Majesty presented him with a Garter of Gold, which he said had been worn by the Prince himself.

Is presented with a Garter.

This done, our Presents being order'd to be brought in, Capt. *Hartman* enter'd with 15 of his stoutest Soldiers, each of them trailing one of the Enemies Colours upon the ground; which being thrown carelessly down in the Hall of Audience, a white Buckler formerly belonging to the *Portugueſe* Governor *Anthonio Menhes d'Arenha*, was laid upon them, as also an *Indian* Scymeter, the Hilt whereof was of Achet and Gold curiously wrought, which his Excellency declar'd to be intended for the Prince, wherewith to defend his Subjects (when come to riper years) against all the Enemies of the Crown, not excepting the *Hollanders* themselves, if they deserv'd it. Wherewith his Majesty seem'd so highly satisfied, that he put the Scymeter next to his Throne.

The Presents sent by the Company to his Majesty were as follows.

Two very fine *Persian* Horses, one *Turky* Gun, two *Persian* Bows, with their Arrows and Quivers richly embroider'd; one *Japoneſe* Gown, very rich; two Greyhounds, two *Persian* Sheep, two Rock-goats of *Visiapour*, one piece of Sandelwood.

Those for the young Prince were:

One very fine *Persian* Horse, two Fusees with very curious Barrels, one Silver Bason, wherein were laid two pieces of *Persian* Stuffs wrought with Gold, two Silver Boxes of *China*, one Hog Stone call'd *Pedra de Porco*, one piece of Sandelwood, *&c.*

Whilst the Presents were deliver'd, his Excellency begg'd his Majesty's Pardon for having detain'd him so long; and as the time of his stay could be but short, he told him that he had three things more to propose to his Majesty (whereof the want of the Pioneers was one) desiring that he would be pleased to hear the same from the mouth of *Ysbrand Gotskens* in private, he being the only Person whom he had entrusted with the Secret. The Emperor then commanded all his Courtiers to withdraw, desiring that our Officers might be order'd to do the same; which being done accordingly, his Excellency again approach'd the Throne, and having by his Interpreters *George Bloem* and *Cottemaley*, discours'd with his Majesty a quarter of an hour, he desir'd leave to depart to the Camp, which being granted, he was reconducted with the same Pomp to his Lodgings.

The General takes leave of the Emperor.

The same Evening the General sent to the Emperor by *George Bloem* two noted Partisans, who had done a great deal of mischief in the Country under *Gaspar Figeiro*, to dispose of them at pleasure. Mr. *Bloem* was receiv'd by the Emperor in a private Room, and presented with a Golden Chain and Ring.

The 9*th* of *April* early in the Morning the General took Horse, and came pretty early with his whole Retinue to *Naccle-gamme*, from whence he was conducted by Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* and Mr. *John van der Laan* with two Companies to the Camp. At his arrival there he found the Gallery fix'd in the Ditch (without any considerable loss) and every thing else in a good Condition.

The General returns to the Camp.

The 10*th* in the Afternoon the General took a view of all the Works, and among the rest commanded Capt. *Henry Gerard* to set up a Ladder, and take a view of the Condition of the Enemy on the other side of the Ditch; he found the Enemy had made an Entrenchment extending towards the Sea-shore, with a Ditch before it, 8 foot deep, upon which having planted two pieces of Cannon, they were likely to prevent our fixing the Miners on that side, our Trenches being carried on directly against that place; whereupon it was agreed to make a Breach in the Wall on this side of the Ditch, and to plant a Cannon there in order to ruin the said Entrenchment.

Takes a view of the Works.

About Sun-set his Excellency returning to the same place to encourage the Workmen both by his Words and Example, the *Portugueſes* began to use their utmost endeavours to set fire to the Gallery, throwing all sorts of combustible Matter upon it, which the General perceiving, he advanc'd with the rest to assist in extinguishing the Fire; but whilst he was busy in the midst of the Gallery in performing his Duty with his Breast open, he was heard on a sudden to cry out, *Good God help me! O help me!* which Capt. *Joachim Block* who stood hard by hearing, and finding him all over bloody, he carried him with the assistance of Major *Van der Laan* from thence to a Bed, where without speaking one word more he expir'd.

The Portugueſes set fire to our Gallery.

He is wounded.

His Excellency GERARD HULST, first Counseller, and Director Generall of ye INDIES, Comander in Chief of all the Sea & Land Forces sent to CEYLON, and the Coast of the INDIES.

Baldæus. Dies. pir'd. His Wound being ſearched, they found it to be done by a Muſquet-Bullet, which paſſed in under the right Shoulder, quite through under the right Arm.

His Character. This was the unfortunate End of this moſt excellent Perſon, in the Vigor of his Age, deſcended of a good Family, and of great Experience both in Civil and Military Affairs; being for the reſt of a very affable Converſation, eloquent and well-vers'd in divers Languages: He was beſides this of a very good Aſpect, tall, and well-made, brisk and indefatigable in what he undertook; and to be ſhort, *Nature and Induſtry had fram'd ſo exact an Harmony betwixt his Soul and Body, that few Men can pretend to the ſame degree of Perfection.*

CHAP. XXXVI.

The General's Death notified to the Emperor, who ſends his Envoys into the Camp. Mr. Adrian van der Meyden *ſucceeds him. A* Portugueſe *Captain comes over to us.*

The General's Death notified to the Emperor. THE ſame night *George Bloem* Interpreter being diſpatch'd with a Letter to the Emperor, to carry the doleful News of the General's Death, his Majeſty ſent the 11*th* of *April* the *Diſſaves* of the *five* and *ſeven Corles* to take a view of his Corps. It being alſo agreed in a Council of War, that the ſame ſhould be conducted by the Factor *Tsbrand Gotskens* and Capt. *John Hartman*, under

His Corps carried to Gale. a Guard of 20 Fire-locks, to *Puntegale* (9 *German* Leagues thence) the ſame was done accordingly with a great deal of Splendor. The ſame night his Majeſty ſent the *Diſſaves of Matule* and *Adigar*, attended by divers other Courtiers, to

Envys ſent from the Emperor. condole the Death of his dearly beloved Director-General. They were very inquiſitive, whether he was ſlain by ſome of his own People, or by the Enemy, or by ſome unexpected Accident: Being

Take a view of the place where he was wounded. ſhewn the place where he receiv'd his Wound, they crawl'd thither trembling for fear upon the ground, from whence they took a handful of Earth, and deſir'd that no body ſhould ſet a foot in that place.

His Corps was depoſited in a Vault under ground at *Gale* till 1657. when by order from Mr. *Van der Meyden* it was inter'd with great Solemnity in the Church there near the Pulpit; his Arms, Buckler, Sword and Spurs being hung againſt the Wall. In the year 1658. the ſaid Corps being tranſported from thence to *Columbo*, was put into a ſtately Monument there, with an Inſcription upon it, containing in ſubſtance, *That he had purchaſed the Conqueſt of* Columbo *by his Death, for the honour of his Native Country.*

After the Deceaſe of the General, the Burden of the ſupreme Command of the Siege was laid by unanimous Conſent upon the Shoulders of Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* Governor of *Gale*, who had the good fortune to ſee the City reduc'd in the next following Month of *May*.

Mr. Van der Meyden ſucceeds the General in that Dignity.

The 13*th* of *April* a Letter was brought to the Camp from *Leonard Johnſon*, dated the 2*d* at *Wingurla*, intimating that 22 Frigats under the Command of *Franciſco de Seixa Cabreira*, with all ſorts of Proviſions, and 800 *Portugueſe* Landmen aboard, were ſail'd from *Goa*. Whereupon the Commodore *Roothaus* and *Peter de Bitter* being ſent for, to conſult what was beſt to be done, it was reſolved (in order to prevent their bringing into the City the intended Succours) to attempt a vigorous Aſſault upon the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, for which purpoſe four brave Officers were choſen, who with 80 Volunteers (who had offer'd themſelves for a Reward of 50 Crowns a piece) were to make the Attack.

A Letter from Wingurla concerning the Portugueſe Succours.

The ſame Evening the *Fluſſing* Yacht coming to an Anchor in the Road, ſoon after *Adrian van der Maart* her Captain came aſhore, and told the General, that about three days before meeting with the *Portugueſe* Squadron near *Coulang* and the Cape *Comoryn*, he had attack'd one of their Frigots ſo ſucceſsfully, that he ſaw her ſink before his Eyes, 16 *Portugueſes* only with Capt. *Simon Souza* being ſav'd of all that were aboard her. That ſoon after he had loſt ſight of them all, ſuppoſing they were return'd to the Cape *Comoryn*, it being his opinion that as the Wind ſtood, they muſt before this have been near *Columbo*. In the night time a certain *Portugueſe* Captain, one of the *Fidalgos*, or Gentlemen, who had been concern'd in declaring *Don Bras de Caſtro* Viceroy of *Goa*, came over to us, having been

The Fluſſing Yacht meets the Portugueſe Fleet.

A Portugueſe Gentleman comes over to us.

been detain'd Priſoner in the Baſtion of S. *Stephen*, and made his eſcape with four of his Servants through *Don Franciſco de Rolyn*'s Houſe by means of a Boat. He entertain'd the new General for a conſiderable time. It was in the mean time reſolv'd to delay the Aſſault upon the Baſtion of S. *Stephen*'s for two or three days. Our Interpreter *George Bloem* return'd alſo with the following Letter of Condoleance from his Majeſty.

Raja Singa Rajou, moſt potent Emperor of *Ceylon*, wiſhes Health to Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden*, Governor of the Imperial Fortreſs of *Gale*.

Letter of Condoleance from the Emperor.

" YOUR Letter dated in the Evening " at ſeven a Clock on Monday the " 10*th* of *April*, did arrive in the Imperial Camp about Midnight, and was " deliver'd to our Imperial Majeſty on " Tueſday about Noon. The Death of " our Director-General has cauſed an exceſſive Affliction in our Imperial Heart. " Whilſt our beloved Director was at " our Court, I was unwilling (according to the ſingular Love I bore to his " Perſon) to let him know my Illneſs; " but being now on the mending hand, " I am forced to hear of his Death, " which now we muſt commit to Providence, and ſubmit to his Will. Our " Imperial Majeſty has likewiſe underſtood by your Excellency's Letter that " you are inveſted with the ſame Power " as our beloved Director-General was. " It is a general receiv'd Cuſtom in the " Courts of all the great Monarchs, that " in caſe a Perſon of note, and in good " eſteem with them dies, his Succeſſor " appears before the ſaid Monarch, and " receives his Confirmation and Bleſſing " at his hands. As you have always " been ſerviceable to us, it is our Pleaſure that you come to Court (in the " ſame manner as the Director-General " did) in order to receive the Honours " due to your Merits; being ſenſible that " you have render'd us conſiderable Services, without having receiv'd any Reward hitherto; wherefore it is my " Pleaſure, that when you reſolve to " come, you give notice thereof beforehand what day you have pitch'd upon, " in order to receive you with the ſame " Reſpect as the Director-General your " Predeceſſor. I doubt not in the mean " while but you will be very careful in " your high Station. At the cloſing of " this Letter Advice is brought that " the *Portugueſes* expect every day " Succours, which has made me give " ſtrict Orders to keep a ſtrict Guard " both by Sea and Land.

Baldæus.

In the Camp and Court of *Reygamwatte*, 15 *April* 1656.

Raja Singa Rajou, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

In the night 2 *Portugueſes*, 3 *Topaſſes*, and 11 *Laſcaryns* Deſerters gave a doleful account of the miſerable condition of the City, and of the Sickneſs and Mortality that reign'd there. The 16*th* we play'd moſt furiouſly againſt the Gate of *Rajaha*, and the General having ſent Advice of the expected Succours in the City to the Emperor, gave Orders to Commodore *Roothaus* to keep the *Fluſſing*, *Popkensburgh* and *Lion* Yachts in readineſs to purſue the Enemy's Squadron. About the ſame time a *Portugueſe* Captain came over to us with 18 *Laſcaryns* and three *Topaſſes*; his pretence was, that having receiv'd an Affront from the Governor, he had taken this method to revenge himſelf. *Diedelof van der Beck* writ from *Mapane*, that the poor ſtarv'd Wretches in the Plain betwixt our Works and the City butchered one another, two Women having lately devour'd their new-born Babes. The 19*th* of *April* a Letter was deliver'd to the General from the Emperor.

11 Laſcaryns, 3 Topaſſes, 2 Portugueſe Deſerters.

More Deſerters.

The Emperor's Letter to the new General.

" YOUR Excellency was deliver'd " to me after Midnight, by which " you declaring your readineſs to ſerve " me, the ſame was receiv'd with ſingular ſatisfaction, knowing that your " Excellency ever ſince your landing in " this Iſle has ſhewn a more than ordinary Inclination for our Service. Your " Excellency being now through God's " Mercy put into this high Station, it is " expected you ſhould give more ſignal " Proofs thereof than before. You alſo " mention the expected *Portugueſe* Succours, and the Succeſs of our faithful " *Hollanders* againſt them. I hope in " God that this Victory will prove the " forerunner of others. What I writ " in my laſt concerning your care in " the Camp, was not intended *as if* I " queſtion'd your Conduct, but becauſe " it belong'd to me to mention it. You " further adviſe, that the Enemy's Squadron has orders to ſail directly for " *Columbo*, but conſidering the ill Treatment *Manoel Maſcarenhas Homem* the " preſent Viceroy of *Goa* met with at " *Columbo* (whilſt Governor there) it " ſeems to me moſt probable, that he " has ſent this Fleet rather to be worſted " by

Baldæus.

" by the *Hollanders*, than with a real in-
" tention to relieve *Columbo*.
" Your Excellency ſays that one *Ni-*
" *colao de Moura* Captain-Major of the
" City is come over to us: I deſire you
" would give a good Entertainment to
" all ſuch as come to us with a ſincere
" Intention. The other News has been
" very acceptable to me, God I hope
" will crown our Endeavours with Suc-
He orders the late General's Jewels to be ſent into Holland. " ceſs. Your mentioning the late de-
" ceaſed Director-General's Name has
" renew'd my Grief; and as I lov'd him
" entirely, ſo I muſt recommend to
" you the Jewels which were pre-
" ſented to him (whilſt living) from
" our Imperial Majeſty, that the ſame
" may be ſent into *Holland* to his next
" Kindred; it being our Will and Plea-
" ſure to give upon this occaſion a con-
" vincing Proof to our *Hollanders* of the
" moſt ſincere Affection we bear them.
" For, tho the unfortunate Death of
" the ſaid Director has rob'd him of the
" opportunity to execute thoſe Deſigns
" he had projected for our Services, yet
" his Counſels, Care and Watchfulneſs
" will remain for ever in our Memories.
" I am very ſollicitous to know what
" method you intend to take in reducing
" the City, whether by Force or Famine:
" If you intend to take it by Aſſault, let
" me know of it two or three days
" before-hand ſecretly. My Illneſs has
" hitherto prevented me from proſecu-
" ting my Reſolution of coming into the
" Camp, to take a view of all the Works
" of the *Hollanders*; however I am re-
" ſolv'd to come nearer to the Camp,
" which as ſoon as it is done I will give
" you notice thereof, and deſire your
" Preſence there, in order to concert
" Meaſures with you before you return
" to the Camp. No more, *&c.*

Reygamwatte 28 *April* 1656.

Raja Singa Rajou, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

P. S. " It is deſir'd that the Captain
" who ſunk one of the Enemy's Frigats,
" and forced the reſt to return back,
" may come along with the General to
" the Emperor, in order to make himſelf
" known to his Majeſty.

The Superſcription was,

Raja Singa Rajou, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*, wiſhes Health to *Adrian van der Meyden*, Governor of our Imperial Fortreſs of *Gale*.

*

In the Afternoon a Ceſſation of Arms being order'd for ſome time, the following Summons were ſent into the City

Summons ſent into Columbo.

" HAving by the preſent Siege reduc'd
" the Citizens of *Columbo* to the laſt
" Extremity, and bereaved them of all
" hopes of the ſo long expected Succours
" from *Goa*, we thought fit to ſummon
" the City a ſecond time in the Name of
" his Imperial Majeſty *Raja Singa*, and
" of the Honourable the *Dutch Eaſt-*
" *India*. For the Squadron ſent the 11*th*
" of this Month from *Goa* by the new
" Viceroy *Manoel Maſcarenhas Homem*
" (*Conde de Secredo* his Predeceſſor dy-
" ing the 13*th* of *January*) to the relief
" of *Columbo*, being pretty well provi-
" ded with Proviſions, but very indiffe-
" rently man'd, was engag'd ſo briskly
" by our People, that ſome of their
" Frigots were loſt, others much da-
" mag'd, and the reſt forc'd to retire in
" Confuſion to *Tutecoryn* and *Manaar*.
" According to the Opinion of your
" own Captain *Simon de Souza*, and ſome
" others, that are our Priſoners, moſt
" of the Men aboard them are likely to
" deſert, for fear of falling into the hands
" of our Ships that are cruiſing there-
" abouts; and the reſt will ſcarce be
" able by reaſon of the *Mouſſon* to reach
" this place. Perhaps you may flatter
" your ſelf, that the ſame *Mouſſon* will
" oblige our Ships to leave before long,
" as well thoſe Parts as this Bay; but if
" you rely upon this Point, we declare
" our ſelves innocent of all the Grievan-
" ces and Sufferings put upon the poor
" Citizens, who will beſides this be there-
" by put in danger of loſing all they
" have, whereas at preſent they may ex-
" pect honourable Conditions, which
" they can't hope for hereafter. We
" recommend this to your Excellency's
" Conſideration, and your Perſon to
" God's Protection.

In the Imperial Camp before *Columbo*, 18 *April* 1656.

Adrian van der Meyden.

The following Letter was ſent in Anſwer to the former.

The Anſwer.

" THE Letter ſent to me by the moſt
" noble General *Gerard Hulſt*, dated
" the 9*th* of *Novemb.* laſt, I anſwer'd at
" that time; which, as it can't be un-
" known to your Excellency, ſo the ſame
" Anſwer may ſerve to your Letter;
" neither the Change of War, nor want

" of

" of Proviſions having given me ſufficient " Occaſion hitherto to alter my Reſoluti- " on, which is, to take care of and de- " fend the City to the utmoſt of my Pow- " er, for the Service of the King my " Maſter. God protect your Excellency.

Columbo, Apr. 19. 1656. *Antonio de Souza Coutinho.*

Being convinced by this Letter, that nothing but Force could reduce them to reaſon, the Cannon were order'd to play again as before. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. XXXVII.

Many Deſerters. Letters from the Emperor. Ysbrand Gotskens *ſent to his Majeſty. Reſolution taken to aſſault the City. Succours arrived from* Batavia.

THE 21*ſt* of *April*, 7 *Laſcaryn* Deſerters reported, that the Citizens and Soldiers beginning to murmur for want of Rice, it was reſolv'd to give to each Citizen and Soldier ¼, and to each *Topas* and *Laſcaryn* ½ *Medide per diem*, beſides their former Allowance. Soon after a *Portugueſe* Deſerter related, that they had barricadoed up moſt of the Streets, and planted Cannon in them. About the ſame time the new General received the following Letter from the Emperor.

RAJA SINGA RAJOU, &c.

The Emperor's Letter to the General.

" OUT of your Letter dated the " 19*th* of *April*, I have (with a " great deal of Satisfaction) underſtood " your good Health, and good Inclinati- " ons for my Service, as well as of Ma- " jor *John van der Laan*, and the reſt of " the Chief Officers. Before the Arri- " val of the late Director-General (of " Bleſſed Memory) I had taken a Reſo- " lution within my ſelf, to come and take " a View of your Camp; but being then " prevented by my Illneſs, I ſtill continue " in the ſame Reſolution, not only to " view the Works there, but alſo to be " a Spectator of the brave Actions per- " form'd there for my Service. My faith- " ful *Hollanders*, who are come hither " from far diſtant Countries, have for " ſeveral Months laſt paſt endured many " Miſeries, not without much effuſion of " Blood; and as I am ſtedfaſtly perſua- " ded that both I and our Imperial Fa- " mily may promiſe our ſelves the ſame " and more for the future, ſo ſhall I think " it no Trouble to come ſo far into the " Camp, to be an Eye-witneſs (to my " great Satisfaction) of the brave Acti- " ons performed there for our Imperial " Majeſty's Service. That no notice has " been taken hitherto by this Court of " the Captain-Major, is to be attributed " to his being employed Day and Night " in the Company's Service. Some foo- " liſh Peope are much deceived, if they " judg that there can be the leaſt Sepa- " ration of Intereſt betwixt our Majeſty " and the Company, the wiſer ſort be- " ing convinced that our Intereſt is the " ſame. The ſaid Major *John van der* " *Laan* has done me conſiderable Service " ever ſince his coming into this Iſle; " and therefore I declare, that ſince the " late Director-General appear'd at this " Court, I did lay aſide all Animoſity, " in conſideration of his great Qualities " and Services; ſo that now the ſaid " Major who has ſpill'd his Blood more " than once, and been wounded with Bul- " lets in my Service, ſhall be made ſen- " ſible of the Love and Affection I bear " him, whenever he comes into my Pre- " ſence. What you mention about *Maſ-* " *carenhas*, is no leſs than the Truth, " and an undeniable one, to convince the " World, that God will take Revenge " of ſuch as offend their Sovereigns, " which induces me to believe, that this " War we jointly carry on againſt our " Enemy, will be bleſſed by God with " Succeſs. I was very glad to underſtand " by your Excellencies Letter, that the " Jewels preſented by me to the Direc- " tor-General have been ſent to *Batavia*, " in order to be tranſported from thence " by truſty Perſons into *Holland*. The " ſaid Director-General having done me " ſuch Signal Services, ever ſince his " Coming into this Country, I intend ſo " ſoon as the War is brought to a Con- " cluſion, to ſend a Letter with the firſt " Ship to the States-General of *Holland*, " to give them an ample Teſtimony " thereof. The Reſolution taken in " the

Baldæus. " the Council of War is very acceptable to me: But as your Excellency in " his High Station has the chief Management of ſuch Matters, as tend to " our Majeſty's Service, in your Hands, ſo " I am moſt inclined to follow your Advice. The Method propoſed for the " reducing of the City has been debated " in our Imperial Council; but as the " ſame muſt be expreſſed in a different " Language (which carries along with " it a conſiderable Alteration) I will paſs " it by in ſilence, earneſtly requiring " you, that whenever the ſaid Reſolution " is to be put in execution, to ſend me " Advice of it, that I may aſſiſt you " there in Perſon. You are of Opinion " that it would be more convenient for " me not to come into the Camp, till after the taking of the City; but what " Buſineſs have I in the Camp then, unleſs it be to ſee the Conditions perform'd? whereas the late Director-General had given me his Word, that " the City ſhould be delivered into my " Hands. In the Letter I ſent to your " Excellency, I deſir'd that the Captain " who had ſunk the *Portugueſe* Ship ſhould " come along with you to our Court; " and you having made no mention of " him in your Anſwer, I am at a ſtand " to gueſs the Reaſon thereof. The aukward Anſwer of the *Portugueſes* in " *Columbo* to your Summons, ſhews them " to be void of Senſe; and I, who am " well acquainted with their Bravadoes, " look upon it as an infallible Sign of " their Diſtreſs; being convinc'd by my " own Experience in divers Engagements, that when they were moſt at a " pinch, they would brag moſt. I have " for a conſiderable time conſider'd with " my ſelf, whether I ſhould write a Letter to thoſe in the City, but for fear " of a haughty Anſwer, I reſolve to let " it alone. No more, *&c.*

The 22*d of* April, 1656. *Raja Singa Rajou*, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

The following Letter was encloſed, and directed to the *Sabandaar* of *Gale*, *Don John de Coſta*.

" HAving been inform'd by ſeveral of " our Meſſengers ſent from hence " with Letters, that ſince the Arrival of " the late Director-General of Bleſſed " Memory, you have given all imaginable Satisfaction in reference to his Perſon, I intended to have ſent you a Preſent at that time, but that the ſaid " Director's Departure (which was ſo " ſudden, that my Servants did not overtake him before he came to *Kubenhof*) prevented it. But when the new " General ſhall appear at Court, you as " well as the reſt of the Officers ſhall not " be forgot. You have been an Eye-Witneſs of the Reſpect paid by me " here to the Director-General; and " whenever the new General makes his " Appearance before us, the ſame ſhall " (not without great Reaſon) be increaſed, our Imperial Majeſty having receiv'd more Signal Services from his " Excellency, whereof I would have you " give notice to him at the firſt Opportunity. If you ſhould happen to diſcover any Error in ſuch Letters as are " ſent from this Court, you ſhall excuſe " them to the General. You ſhall alſo " put him in mind, that we ſtand in need " here of an Anvil, and a pair of Smiths " Bellows; and as there is frequent Occaſion for Writing, don't forget to " let us be furniſh'd with ſome white Paper; you may ſend alſo ſome *China* " Ware. Farewel.

At the Court of Reygamwatte, *April* 23. 1656.

A Topas Deſerter brings a Letter from a Merchant in Columbo.

The 24*th* of the ſame Month, a *Topas* Deſerter, named *Lazaro Henrico*, who came over to us during the Siege of *Caleture*, but afterwards run over again to the Enemy (notwithſtanding he was well entertained by the late Director-General) brought a Letter from *Manoel Fonſeque de Moniis*, a Merchant of *Columbo*, directed to Major *van der Laan*.

Mr. *van der Laan*.

" I Beg of you to believe what I am going to tell you, concerning the preſent Condition of the City. Be careful not to venture a Storm, they having " provided Retrenchments in all Poſts, " well provided with Cannon, beſides " four Mines, to be diſcovered to you by " my Servant. The Rice is ſold ſtill at " three *Seraphyns*, and is very ſcarce. If " you intend to haſten the Surrender of " this City, ſend ſome body from *Caleture* hither, to convince them that they " are ſtill living there; this being the " Reaſon why they would not hitherto " hearken to any Conditions. I ſend my " Servant with this Letter to you, to " ſhew the ſame to the General, tho it " is rumoured abroad here that General " *Hulſt* is dead, but I don't believe it.

* " The

" The next thing I have to requeſt for " God's ſake, and as you tender our " Friendſhip, is to preſerve and ſecure " the Bearer hereof, being reſolv'd like- " wiſe to come over to you, which I " can't do at preſent, being ſo narrowly " watch'd, but hope to be with you in a " few Days. God grant you a long " Life.

Your Servant and Slave,

Manoel Fonſeque de Moniis.

Whereupon it was reſolv'd to ſecure the ſaid *Topas* aboard a Ship till further Order.

Gotskens ſent to the Emperor.

Soon after *Tsbrand Gotskens* was diſpatch'd to his Majeſty, to repreſent to him ſome matters of the greateſt Conſequence, and to know his Sentiments. It was not long before he return'd in Company of the *Diſſaves* of *Saffragam*, and the *Four Corles*, and the *Curupele Apohami*, and gave an account of his Negotiation to the General *van der Meyden*; and among other things, that his Majeſty was well ſatisfied with the Reſolution taken *April* 21. but ſeem'd to be inclin'd to have the Aſſault delay'd till Sunday the laſt Day of the Month, when he intended to be an Eye-Witneſs of it.

An account of his Negotiation.

The 23*d* of *April*, it being reſolved to give the General Aſſault the next following Night, eſpecially upon the Baſtions of S. *Stephen* and *Clergos*, and (in caſe they ſucceeded) afterwards upon that of S. *Philippo*, every thing was preparing for the execution thereof, and every one order'd to his Poſt. The following Inſtructions in Writing were given to each commanding Officer in Chief, which they were ſtrictly to obey.

Inſtructions for the intended Aſſault.

" Thoſe that are order'd to give the " Aſſault upon the Baſtions, ſhall be obliged to fix the ſcaling Ladders themſelves, and uſe their utmoſt Endeavours to make themſelves Maſters thereof, and to maintain themſelves there: In caſe the Baſtion of S. *Stephen* be taken, the commanding Officer ſhall let the Trumpeter ſound the Tune *William of Naſſau* as a Signal, that God has bleſſed us with Victory on that ſide. So ſoon as the Aſſault begins from the Redoubt, betwixt St. *Stephen* and St. *John*'s Baſtion, the Companies of *John Hartman*, *George Gebel*, *Henry Gerard*, and *James Baker* ſhall be in a readineſs to ſecond them, as Occaſion requires.

" During the Aſſault, the *Javaneſes*, *Bandaneſes*, *Laſcaryns*, *Topaſſes*, with ſome *Europeans*, ſhall endeavour to paſs the Ditch, in order to force the Enemy from their Works at the Foot of the Baſtion of St. *John*, and ſhall be commanded by Captain *N. Scherf*, *Arent Johnſon*, *N. de Wit*, *N. Chample*, and *James van Driel*. Whilſt the Aſſault continues upon the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, Major *van der Laan* ſhall with his Forces attack the Gate of *Rajuha*; and in caſe God bleſs us with Succeſs, no Officer of what degree ſoever ſhall preſume to grant leave or ſuffer any of his Soldiers to leave their Colours or enter the City, being forewarn'd that the Enemy have planted their Cannon there, charged with ſmall Shot. *Baldæus.*

Dated Apr. 27. Subſcribed by Command from the General,

Adrian van der Meyden,
James van Rhee Secretary.

Immediate notice of this Reſolution was given to the Emperor, but there happening no ſmall Differencrs and Heats in the Council of War that was held that Evening about the Execution of this Deſign, the ſame was thought fit to be defer'd to another time. Scarce was the Council broken up, but a *Laſcaryn* Deſerter coming from St. *John*'s Baſtion, reported, that this Evening they had reinforced the ordinary Guard of the Baſtion of St. *Stephen* with 30 of their choiceſt Men, called *Valiantons* or Bravoes by them, beſides 10 other Soldiers, which made us imagine that a *Javaneſe* Deſerter, who had got perhaps ſome ſcent of the matter, had diſcover'd our Deſign to them. *Is delayed till another time.*

At the ſame time News was brought of the Arrival of the Yachts the *Red Lion*, *Avenhorn* and *Pelican*, who left *Batavia* in *March*. The 28*th* of *April*, the Lieutenant *Chriſtopher Egger*, *James Viry*, *Martin Sholtes*, and Enſign *Brewer* were ſent in the Night-time to view the Aſcent to the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*; they gave an account that they had found them well upon their Guard there, and the Ground being ſandy would afford no firm footing. The 29*th* of *April* a Letter was brought into the Camp from *Abraham van der Mart*, ſent by the *Lion* Yacht from the Iſles of *Tutecoryn*, with the joyful News that the *Portugueſe* Squadron being met by the *Dutch* the 19*th*, off of *Tritchianadour* and *Caylpatnam*, they were forced to retreat betwixt the Iſles of *Tutecoryn*, where

3 *Ships arrive from Batavia.*

The Condition of St. Stephen's Baſtion viewed.

Baldæus. Great News from the Dutch Fleet.

where they were block'd up by our Ships, and *van der Mart* gave no small hopes of preventing their coming out again, provided he were reinforced in time with two or three nimble Yachts. Letters were at the same time deliver'd from the Head Factor *Reynier Serooskerke*, concerning the Preparations of the *Portugueses*, and that they intended to pass the *Mousson* on the Coast of *Malabar*. That the Traffick of the Company at *Calicoulang* was in a good Condition, and that he intended to buy up a good Quantity of Pepper and other Commodities against the Year 1657. News was also brought from *Batavia*, that a Succour of 225 Men was sent from thence to *Ceylon*, who within a few Days were to come by Land hither from *Gale*. At the same time we received a Letter written in *Latin* by the Serjeant *Severin Dolander*, which being thrown over the Ditch, required a speedy Answer.

A Succour of 225 Men from Batavia.

A Letter of a Dutch Serjeant from Columbo.

" *Severin* wishes his Ensign Health: The Message brought me by the Father was very acceptable to me. I and my Comrades are above half dead, of 74 there being no more than 10 left, and these in a most miserable Condition, for want of Bread, Wine and Meat, being not used to feed upon Rice, therefore we desire to be supply'd with the same (if possible) for the Preservation of our Lives, and the Recovery of our Strength; in return whereof I will acknowledg you the Preserver of my Life, as long as I live. Mr. *Cornicularius* is also very near Death's Door, but perhaps a little Bread and Wine might recover him. I beg you once more for God's sake not to forget us, and to deliver it to the before-mention'd Father, who is our trusty Friend. God protect you.

Severin Dolander.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

Ships sent to Tutecoryn. Raja Singa *dissatisfied. Prisoners exchanged. Letters from* Raja Singa. *The Bastions of St.* John *and St.* Stephen *taken by Storm, not without a considerable Loss.*

A Reinforcement sent to the Dutch Fleet near Tutecoryn

THE Council having taken into Deliberation, the Condition of the Enemies Fleet near *Tutecoryn*, it was resolv'd to dispatch thither forthwith the Yachts the *Mars*, *Rabbit*, the *Roman* and *Lyon*, besides two other Vessels under Commodore *Roothaus*. At the same time an Answer was order'd to be sent to the *Dutch* Prisoners in *Columbo*.

" YOURS we have receiv'd by the Father, and understood your miserable Condition; these are the chances of War, the best Comfort you can have in this Extremity with your Fellow-Prisoners. At your earnest Request we send you a Bottle of *Spanish* Wine, ten new-bak'd Loaves, and a piece of Meat and Bacon; the Effects and Mony design'd for Captain *Simon de Souza*, who is kept among the Prisoners at *Caleture*, are put aboard the Ship: and because one of the *Portugese* Soldiers did this Forenoon call from the Bastion of St. *John* to one of our Sentinels, that the Governor was willing to exchange 10 of his Men, that are our Prisoners, for your ten; we have sent Word to the Governor *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho*, that as soon as he will discharge you, we will send back 10 *Portugese* Prisoners from *Caleture*.

May 1. 1656. *Adrian van der Meyden.*

An Offer for the Exchange of Prisoners.

Accordingly the 2d of *May* in the Forenoon, a *Portugese* Captain, named *Domingo Coelho*, deliver'd a Letter to Ensign *Peregrin* in our Service, offering, that in case we would exchange eight *Portugese* Prisoners at *Caleture* for the Serjeant and seven Soldiers, they would send them to us, which was denied, and in lieu thereof offer'd seven common Soldiers and one Officer in exchange for them. About the same time his Majesty sent back a Letter, which he seem'd highly displeas'd at, with another as follows.

" YOUR Letter writ to some of my Courtiers last Monday, was deliver'd to them before Sunset; what you relate of Major *van der Laan*'s going to *Mapane*, to observe what past there, and that finding those that were

" come

" come out of *Columbo*, to be ſupplied un-
" der hand with Proviſions, he commanded
" to fire among them, and to ſecure the
" *Modeliar Jazondere*, who had been ac-
" ceſſory to the matter; has been very ac-
" ceptable to me, as tending to my Service.
" The Letter deliver'd to me by *Curupule*
" *Meynde*, written upon half a Sheet, I
" did not think fit to read, much leſs to
An angry Letter from the Emperor. " anſwer, being fill'd with nothing but in-
" ſipid Stuff: If perhaps a ſudden Muti-
" ny or Accident, or any other Misfor-
" tune had happen'd in the Camp, I
" could have excuſed ſuch a Letter, in
" reſpect of the Love and Inclination I
" bear to the *Hollanders*, my moſt truſty
" Servants; but every thing being in a
" very good Condition, I can't ſufficient-
" ly admire what could induce *George* to
" write ſuch a Letter. Truly the Gene-
" ral (who has the ſupreme Command
" there) ought not to have been ſo care-
" leſs in this matter, ſuch a Neglect be-
" ing not very ſuitable to the Conduct
" that may be expected from a Perſon
" entertain'd in the Service of a Great
" Monarch; wherefore I ſend you this
" Letter, together with the *Ola* (Letter)
" in order to have it read in the Preſence
" of the General, and to let him know
" word by word the true Contents there-
" of.

Thurſday, May 2. 1656.

Conſidering the nicety of the *Cingaleſes* and *Malabars* in this Point, it muſt be confeſſed, that more caution ought to have been uſed in this reſpect.

8 Dutch Priſoners ſent out of Columbo. Towards Evening the *Portugueſes* ſent our eight Priſoners out of the City, half dead for want of Food, three of them being ſo weak, that they could neither go nor ſtand; they unanimouſly depoſed, that there had been a great Diſorder among the Officers, which had prevented their marching to the Baſtion of *Clergos*, after they had enter'd the City, as they ought to have done, the ſame being guarded only by 15 Men. But whilſt they ſtaid in expectation for Orders from the Sea-Captain *Lippens* (of whom they ſpoke very indifferently) they were attack'd both in Front and Rear by a great Number of *Portugueſes*, and charg'd ſo furiouſly, that ſcarce 26 of them eſcaped, without being either kill'd or wounded, after they had ſpent all their Powder and Ball. They added, that what had been related of their having fell to plundering was not true, that they were ſecur'd in a Warehouſe belonging to *Lewis Tavera*, where they had the ſame daily Allowance of Rice with the King's Soldiers, and that they had fed as well as the reſt of the Inhabitants upon the Fleſh of Elephants, Bufflers Hides, nay upon Dogs, Cats and Rats. That moſt of the 74 Priſoners died for Want of good Food, and according to all Appearance theſe 8 would not live long. They further ſaid, that as they were going out of the City, they ſaw a Body of 400 or 500 Men, ſome *Europeans*, ſome Negroes, near St. *John*'s Gate.

Their Account.

Baldæus.

The 4*th* of *May* the Emperor *Raja Singa* ſent the following Letter.

A Letter from the Emperor.

" ABout three Years ago Captain *Joris Hervendonk*, with ſome other
" Officers and Soldiers entring into our
" Service; and their time being expir'd
" ſince, for which they had agreed with
" the Company, I reſolv'd with my ſelf
" (ſince I had no great Occaſion for them
" here) to ſend them to the Camp. An
" Account of what Services the ſaid
" Captain had done me, may be ſeen in
" a Letter written by him (according to
" my Command) to the late Director-
" General, immediately after his Land-
" ing near *Columbo*. He had neither be-
" fore nor ſince the ſame Senſe he had
" when he writ that Letter, which then
" induc'd me to a Reſolution to beſtow
" certain Favours upon him before his
" Departure. But his inſolent Behavi-
" our having drawn upon him ſeveral
" Chaſtiſements, without any hopes of
" Amendment, I thought fit to remove
" him from his Station, and to put *Fran-*
" *cis Has* (who happen'd then to come
" as a Meſſenger with Letters to our
" Court) in his Place. This Man having
" lived for ſome time among the *Portu-*
" *gueſes* our Enemies, ſeem'd to have
" laid aſide all the Modeſty of the *Portu-*
" *gueſes*, and addicted himſelf to all
" ſorts of Villanies, which made me diſ-
" charge him from my Service, and to
" reſtore the before-mention'd *Joris Her-*
" *vendonk* to his former Place. I would
" not have my *Hollanders* entertain ſuch
" an Opinion of me, that I would let a-
" ny one who has ſerv'd ſo long in our
" Imperial Court, be diſmiſs'd without
" a Reward; for whoever gains our Im-
" perial Favour, ſhall never depart un-
" rewarded: But ſuch as are not willing,
" or can't apply themſelves to that Study,
" may be ſure that they will be ſent a-
" way like this Perſon. The reaſon why
" the ſaid *Francis Has* ſtayed in *Candy*,
" is not unknown to your Excellency;
" but

Baldæus. " but as he is a *Hollander*, it is but juſt " he ſhould be diſmiſſed at his due time. " I won't ſay all concerning him, what I " could; my *Diſſaves* will give your Ex- " cellency a more ample account of him, " or when your Excellency appears at " this Court, you will be further ſatisfi- " ed in this matter. No more; God pro- " tect your Excellency.

At Reygamwatte, May 4. 1656. *Raja Singa Rajou*, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

It is beyond all queſtion, that the Differences ariſen betwixt this *Joris Hervendonk* and *Francis Has* gave occaſion to many Diſturbances; *Hervendonk* being accus'd, of having by his Inſinuations been the Occaſion of *Francis Has* his detention in *Candy*, even to the Year 1656, from whence perhaps he may not be diſcharged whilſt he lives. Theſe and ſome other Accidents had put the Emperor's Mind into ſuch a ferment, that for three Days together he ſhow'd all the Marks of a ſevere Diſpleaſure, even to the beſt of his Courtiers, ſo as to turn even his Face from them. But his Majeſty's Letter deliver'd to the new General, *May* 6. ſeemed to leave him in a much better Humour.

RAJA SINGA RAJOU, &c.

Another Letter from the Emperor.

" YOUR Excellency's Letter dated " the 3*d*, was deliver'd to me on " Thurſday the 4*th*, wherein you expreſs " your Sorrow for the Miſtake in the Let- " ter I ſent back with my laſt Letter: " As among all other Foreign Nations, " our Imperial Majeſty has choſen the " *Hollanders*, as the fitteſt to be employ- " ed for the increaſe of our Glory, Fame " and Empire, by reaſon of their Fide- " lity (which renders them very dear to " me, beyond my own Subjects) ſo when " they commit any Miſtake, it touches " me ſo ſenſibly, in regard of the other " Nations that frequent our Court, that " I can't forbear to make them ſenſible " of their Error, even upon the leaſt " Occaſion, in order to their Amend- " ment for the future. If therefore " your Excellency will apply yourſelf to " ſuch things as tend to our Imperial " Service, the ſame will be highly ac- " ceptable to us. Our Beloved Direc- " tor-General of Happy Memory did, " during that ſmall time he continued in " our Empire, follow this Rule with the " greateſt exactneſs imaginable: But " being ſnatch'd away on a ſudden by " Death, we were depriv'd of the Op- " portunity of rewarding his Services, " according to our Wiſh. And as the " ſaid Director-General has not been " wanting, in leaving certain Marks of " the Methods and Cuſtoms to be made " uſe of in our Service, ſo it will be no " difficult Task for your Excellency to " follow his Footſteps. Your Excellen- " cy mentions the Reſolution you have " taken of attempting a ſecond Aſſault " upon the City, by reaſon of the ap- " proaching Seaſon, which does not per- " mit our Ships to tarry longer with " Safety in that Road; and that the Ene- " my is much leſſened in his Strength " ſince the laſt Aſſault: all which as it is " altogether reaſonable, ſo I approve of " it with much Satisfaction. On the o- " ther hand, our preſent Illneſs is no ſmall " Affliction to us, which bereaves us of " the Opportunity of appearing there in " Perſon, and being an Eye-Witneſs of " this Engagement, and to be nearer at " hand to ſecond you with our Troops, " in caſe there ſhould be Occaſion; but " let come of it what will, we are reſol- " ved to be in the Camp by next Sunday. " If your Excellency thinks fit to ſtay " for our Coming, it is well; but if " not, and that an Opportunity preſents " of gaining the Place, without impai- " ring our Honour and Reputation, I " am ſatisfy'd, living in hopes, that God " Almighty will crown our Endeavours " with Victory. Your Excellency men- " tions at the end of your Letter, that " you have exchanged eight of your Peo- " ple that were Priſoners in the City " (the Remnants of 74) for as many " *Portugueſes* your Priſoners. I am very " glad you ſent word of it, that it may " not be alledged againſt the *Hollanders*, " that they treat with the Enemy with- " out our Knowledg. In the mean time " I am deſirous to know how the reſt " died, whether for want of Food, or " being well look'd to in their Sickneſs; " and further, what Inſtructions you " have ſent to the *Portugueſes* by thoſe " that were ſent into the City; if it " be a Secret worth knowing, your " Excellency will be pleaſed to re- " veal it to us. Ever ſince the Death " of our Director-General, no ſound " of the Drum has been heard in our " Camp; but in our March nearer to " the Enemy and your Camp, it will " be requiſite to make uſe of our Drums " and other Warlike Muſick; where- " of we thought fit to give notice to " your

" your Excellency. No more for the " preſent; God protect your Excellen- " cy's Perſon.

Raja Singa Rajou, moſt potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

This Letter being read in Council, it was reſolv'd to give the Aſſault the *7th* of *May* about 7 or 8 a Clock in the Morning, and to make the fierceſt Attack upon the Baſtion of St. *John*; which was put in execution accordingly, *Martin Sholtes* Lieutenant of the Fuſileers of *Gale* (now Captain in *Gale*) being the firſt who with undaunted Courage mounted the Breach, and being bravely ſeconded by his Men, they entred even into the City; but being ſurrounded on all ſides by a great number of *Portugueſes*, were forc'd to retreat to the Baſtion of St. *John*, where at laſt they maintain'd their Poſt, after having three ſeveral times repuls'd the Enemy, who endeavoured with all the Force they could bring together to diſlodg them from thence, (our Men being conſtantly reliev'd with freſh Troops) till the Evening, when the Firing ſomewhat ceaſing, they took that opportunity of entrenching themſelves with Faſcines and Earth towards the ſide of the City, being nevertheleſs ſtill expoſed to the Enemies Shot from the Water-Fort and the Baſtions of St. *Stephen* and *Couras*, which coſt us many a brave Soldier.

The Dutch enter the City.

Are forc'd to retreat to the Baſtion of St. John.

In the beginning of the Aſſault the *Diſſaves* of *Saffragamme* and of the *Four Corles* came into the Trenches with the *Cingaleſe* Forces; and ſoon after his Majeſty ſent likewiſe the *Diſſaves* of *Ouve* and *Matule*, the *Adigar Amracon*, and *Curupele Apohamy*, at the head of a great number of *Laſcaryns*: but theſe brought along with them more Confuſion than real Aſſiſtance, the *Cingaleſes* being always better at making a noiſe and plundering, than fighting.

Baldæus.

We had no ſooner fix'd our Guards upon the Baſtion, but a *Negro* Slave (call'd *Caffers*) brought us advice, that in the laſt Aſſault the Enemy had the Captain Major, the City Major, and a good number of their beſt Men wounded, and betwixt 40 and 50 kill'd. We imployed the greateſt part of the Night in fortifying our ſelves with Palliſadoes and Earth-works on the Baſtion, in diſcovering the Mines, and planting ſome Cannon; to facilitate which, it was order'd that a falſe Attack be made at two a Clock in the Morning, and with break of day we ſaw the Prince's Standard diſplay'd there in token of our Victory; which however we had purchaſed at a dear rate, being even then much expos'd to the Enemies Shot from three Baſtions. Upon a general Muſter we found 290 Wounded, 80 Sick, and 86 Kill'd; ſo that we had in all not above 1287 *Europeans* left fit for Service. However *John Maatzuyker* a Lieutenant brought a Supply of 75 Men into our Camp, and 30 more from *Candy*; beſides theſe Lieutenant *Didelof* was poſted with 66 men at *Milagre*, and at *Montual* 68.

Among the Slain were the following Officers, whoſe Names well deſerve to be tranſmitted to Poſterity: *Chriſtopher Egger*, *Jurian Gebel*, *James Viry*, *James Scherf*, *Jurian Smith*, *Paul Meno*, *Warnaer vander Heyde*. Among the Wounded, Major *van der Laan* wounded by a Splinter on his Shoulder, and near the Ear; Capt. *Henry Gerard Gluwingh* mortally wounded in four Places; *James de With* wounded with a ten Pounder in the Thigh, of which he died afterwards; *Martin Sholtes* in the Arm; *John Cowper* in both hands; *James Alenbier* in the Leg; *Paul Ketelaer* in the Hand; *John Bartels* in the Belly; *Herman Wynantz*, &c.

Slain and wounded in the Aſſault.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Our Cannon upon the Baſtion of St. John *turn'd againſt the City. The* Portugueſes *offer to capitulate. Articles for the Surrender of the Place. The Ratification. The* Portugueſes *march out of the City.*

Our Cannon ready to play from the baſtion of St. John.

THE 10*th* of *May* having planted our Cannon upon the Baſtion of St. *John* againſt the City, the General and Major *van der Laan* came in the Afternoon to take a view of them. Soon after we ſaw the Enemy put out a white Flag, and Capt. *Manuel Cabreira de Pontes* deliver'd the following Lines to Major *van der Laan*:

" CApt. *Manuel Cabreira de Pontes*, the " Bearer hereof, comes to deſire a " Paſsport for three Perſons of Note to " come

Baldæus. " come into your Camp to treat with you
" concerning ſome Matters of moment.
" God protect your Excellency.

Columbo, May 10. 1656. *Anthonio de Souza Coutinbo.*

Major *van der Laan* having told him, that he would deliver it to the General, ask'd him, whether he deſired a formal Paſsport in Writing, or would be ſatiſfy'd with his Parole. The *Portugueſe* Officer reply'd, that his Parole was ſufficient; ſo they parted, and all Hoſtilities ceaſed.

Within two hours after our People were order'd to call to thoſe in the City, and to ask them why they did not ſend their Deputys; but they anſwering, that they would not come without a Paſsport, the ſame was ſent with all poſſible ſpeed; but it being then pretty late, they excuſed themſelves, that it was not cuſtomary to ſtay a Night out of a Fortreſs at ſuch a Conjuncture. Whereupon we began to fire again till next Morning about 8 a Clock, being the 11*th*, when the Deputys came into the Camp, *viz. Laurenzo Feviera de Britto* late Captain Major of *Puntegale*, *Hieronimo de Luzena Tavares*, late *Viador das Fazendas*, *i. e.* Sur-intendant of the Merchants in *Columbo*, and *Diego Leitaon de Souza* Secretary of the City, who delivered to the Council the following Articles:

Articles propos'd by thoſe of Columbo.

I. THat a Ceſſation of Arms ſhall be agreed on till the 20*th* of *May* next, in order to ſee the Iſſue of the expected Succours, which if it arrives before that time, and is ſtrong enough to raiſe the Siege, this Treaty ſhall be of no effect. In the mean time no Correſpondence or Commerce is to be allowed on either ſide, except what is done by Meſſengers, for the Performance whereof Hoſtages are to be given on both ſides.

II. In caſe of a Surrender of the City, the Churches and Images ſhall not be defiled, and the Prieſts and Friers ſhall have full liberty to take along with them, without any moleſtation, all the Images, Relicks, ſacred Veſſels, Silver Lamps, and other Church Ornaments belonging to the Performance of Divine Service, not excepting the Moveables belonging to each Clergy-man in particular.

III. The Governour and Deputy-Governour, *Anthonio de Souza Coutinbo* and *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro*, as likewiſe the Son of *Anthonio de Souza Coutinbo*, ſhall be treated with all due Reſpect and Civility, and have full liberty to leave the City with all their Moveables, Gold, Silver, Rings, Jewels, Servants, *Portugueſe* Pages, and Slaves of both Sexes; and to remain in their Houſes till they embark, under the ſpecial Protection of the General, who ſhall be obliged to provide them (for their Mony) with Proviſions during their ſtay here, and with Neceſſaries for their Voyage, as likewiſe with convenient Shipping for themſelves and their Families, with able Seamen, Arms, Ammunition, and what elſe may be requiſite for that purpoſe, whenever the ſame ſhall be required.

IV. The Major of the City, Captain Major of the Gariſon, and Serjeant Major, and the late deceaſed Captain's Family, ſhall receive the ſame Treatment.

V. The Captains of Foot, Reformado's, and other Officers of what degree ſoever, ſhall march out with all the Marks of Honour, Enſigns diſplay'd, Matches lighted, Balls in the Mouth, and with their Baggage, and ſhall be provided with Shipping to tranſport them beyond Sea to the *Indian* Shore. They are in the mean while to be maintain'd by the *Dutch* General, out of the Superplus of the Mony belonging to the King of *Portugal*, or for want of ſuch, at his own Charge, or of the Company, till the time of their Tranſportation, and they ſhall not be moleſted either by Sea or Land.

VI. The *Ovidor*, Judg, and other Officers of the Exchequer, the Head Factor, *Alcade* Major or Chief Magiſtrate, and the Farmers of the King's Demeſns, ſhall enjoy the ſame Favour granted to the Major of the City.

VII. All Gentlemen, Cavaliers, and the chiefeſt Citizens and Inhabitants, ſhall have liberty to challenge the ſame Conditions granted to the City *Major*; and, if any of them are inclin'd to remain under the Juriſdiction of the *Hollanders*, they ſhall be left undiſturb'd in the full Poſſeſſion of their Houſes, Eſtates, Villages, and every thing belonging to them, and be treated in all other reſpects like the Natives of *Holland*. For the free exerciſe of their Religion they ſhall have a Church, with a convenient number of Clergymen allow'd them; and if hereafter any of them ſhall think fit to go to ſome other part of the *Indies*, they ſhall be at liberty to ſell both their real and perſonal Eſtates, or otherwiſe diſpoſe of them without moleſtation. They ſhall alſo be provided with Shipping at the publick Charge, except ſuch as have Ships of their own, who ſhall be free to traffick where they pleaſe, paying the uſual Cuſtoms.

All

VIII. All Foreign Merchants, both *Europeans* and Negroes, that were come to *Columbo* to traffick, ſhall be free to depart with their Veſſels, Goods, Gold, Silver, and other Merchandizes bought up here, eſpecially the Cinnamon bought for the King or the City's uſe, whether aboard a Ship or not: Proviſions ſhall be likewiſe provided them for their Mony, and a ſafe retreat; and in caſe they ſtand in need of Seamen, they ſhall be ſupply'd with them.

IX. The Negro Inhabitants both married and unmarried, and even the Foreigners of what Condition ſoever, ſhall enjoy the ſame freedom granted to the *Portugueſe* Citizens.

X. All the *Modeliars*, *Aratches* and *Laſcaryns* that have hitherto been in the King of *Portugal*'s Service (notwithſtanding they have left the Service of the Company, or of his Majeſty) ſhall be at liberty to depart with their Moveables whither they pleaſe.

XI, XII. *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, a *Portugueſe* by Birth, but ſince in the Service of the *Dutch*, ſhall be pardon'd for his Offence in coming over to us, and be free to depart in Company of the Governor: Likewiſe all *Dutch* Deſerters that have taken Service in the City ſhall not be moleſted, but have liberty to march out along with our Forces.

XIII. All ſick and wounded Soldiers or Inhabitants, ſhall be entertain'd there at the Charge of the Company (if the Superplus of the King's Mony proves inſufficient) till they recover their Health, and afterwards provided with Conveniences for their Tranſportion.

XIV. Upon the Surrender of the City after the *Dutch* are put in Poſſeſſion thereof, their General ſhall take effectual care that no Affront or Miſchief be done to the Governors, other Perſons of Note, Soldiers, and Inhabitants, and their Families, but the ſame ſhall be protected by the ſaid General, as well within as without the City, againſt all Violences from the King of *Candy*'s Forces. Sign'd,

Anthonio de Souza Coutinho.

After mature deliberation in the Council, the following Articles were in Anſwer to the former, deliver'd the *12th* to the three Deputies in the Name of his Imperial Majeſty of *Ceylon*, their High and Mightineſſes the States-General of the *United Provinces*, the Governors of the *Eaſt-India* Company, and of *John Maatzuyker* Governor-General, and the Council of the *Indies*.

Baldæus.

Articles granted to the Portugueſes.

THE City ſhall be ſurrender'd this day before Noon, without any further delay, upon the following Conditions.

What was deſir'd in the ſecond Article in relation to the Clergy is granted, and two Places ſhall be appointed for them to be in till their departure.

To the third Article it is anſwer'd, That it is not in the Power of the General to have the Governors, *&c.* tranſported at this time to *Tutecoryn* or *Manaar*; but that it ſhall be done with the firſt conveniency; or elſe to *Cochin* or *Wingula*: But in caſe they have a mind to be tranſported to the other Shore, the ſame ſhall be perform'd by ſome of the Company's Ships within 15 days after the date hereof. They are allow'd to carry along with them all their Slaves of both Sexes, and thoſe belonging to the Governor's Son *Chriſtovaon de Souza*, in hopes that they will not take any but their own, as likewiſe all their Moveables, Gold, Silver, Rings and Jewels; and they ſhall be protected in their Houſes till the time of their departure.

The Officers mention'd in the *4th* Article ſhall be treated according to their reſpective Dignities, and be protected againſt all harm. They may take along with them their Gold, Silver, Clothing, and what elſe they carry about them: But as to their Slaves of both Sexes, they ſhall be conſider'd according to their reſpective Qualities. In *what they carry about them* ſhall be comprehended Beds and Bed-clothes, Hangings, Tapeſtry, Bolſters, Quilts, *&c.* The Officers and Reformades ſhall march out with the uſual marks of Honour, and be tranſported to the Coaſt of *Coromandel* with as much of their Moveables as their Slaves or other Servants (allotted them by the General's favour) ſhall be able to carry.

The Soldiers ſhall march out with their Baggage, Colours diſplay'd, Matches lighted, Ball in their Mouth, and Drums beating to the General's Quarters, where they ſhall ſurrender their Arms under the great Standard, and from thence with the firſt conveniency be tranſported into *Europe*. Such as are married or born in the *Indies* ſhall be tranſported to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, and be maintain'd till the time of their departure at the Charge of the Company.

The Officers mention'd in the *6th* Article ſhall partake of the ſame Favour granted to other Perſons of Note; the City Major and Head Factor to be comprehended in the ſame.

* All

Baldæus. All ſuch as intend to ſubmit to the Juriſdiction of the *Dutch* ſhall be civilly and favourably treated, and remain in the quiet Poſſeſſion of their Eſtates; but in caſe they have a mind to depart, their Goods are left to the Diſcretion of the General.

The chiefeſt of the Citizens and married *Portugueſes*, with their Children, who are not inclinable to ſtay in this Iſle, ſhall at the time of their departure receive the ſame Treatment as the Officers; but the Natives of the Iſle ſhall be left to the Diſpoſition of the General.

The *Modeliars*, *Aratches* and *Laſcaryns*, ſhall receive the ſame Treatment as the *Dutch* Deſerters.

All ſick and wounded Perſons, whether Inhabitants or Soldiers, now in the Hoſpital, or any other place of the City, ſhall ſtay there till the recovery of their Healths, and be furniſh'd with what they deſire.

All the Officers, Inhabitants, Soldiers and unmarried Women, ſhall be protected by the General againſt all Violences and Oppreſſions.

The General does alſo agree, that if any Ships approach the City for its relief betwixt this and the 30*th* of *May*, notice ſhall be given them of its Surrender, with orders to depart, and ſhall be protected at leaſt till they are out of ſight of *Columbo*. The 11*th* of *May* 1656.

Signed,

Adrian van der Meyden, *John van der Laan*,
Peter de Bitter, *Edward Ooms*,
Tsbrand Gotskens.

I *Adrian van der Meyden*, Governor-General for the *Dutch Eaſt-India* Company in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, with the reſt of the Members of the Council, promiſe and engage by theſe Preſents, That, in caſe the Deputies bring back this Capitulation, approv'd as ſuch by the Governor *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho*, and his Council, we will punctually obſerve all the Articles contain'd therein without the leaſt limitation or exception; and further grant ſuch Favours as are in our power to allow of. In Confirmation whereof we have in Conjunction with the ſaid Deputys ſigned the ſame, in the *Dutch* Camp before *Columbo*, the 12*th* of *May* 1656.

Sign'd on our ſide by

Adrian van der Meyden, *John van der Laan*,
Peter de Bitter, *Edward Ooms*,
Tsbrand Gotskens, *John Hartman*.

On the Enemy's ſide by

Anthonio de Souza Coutinho,
Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro,
Anthonio de Silva,
Gaſpar de Ronga Pereira,
Laurenzo Pereira de Britto,
Hieronymo de Luzena Tavares,
Diego Leitaon de Souza.

Ratification of the Capitulation.

In the Morning about Nine a Clock the Deputies return'd with the Capitulation approv'd and ſign'd as before, with a Letter of Interceſſion from the Governor and Deputy-Governor for *Simon Lopes*, who had deſerted our Service. The Capitulation being ſign'd once more, and the Council diſmiſs'd, *Tsbrand Gotſkens* and *James van der Rhee* our Secretary of War, were immediately after Dinner ſent into the City, to demand the Keys from the two *Portugueſe* Governors, and to take account of all the Arms, Ammunition and Proviſions, as alſo to ſettle certain matters concerning the marching out of the Troops purſuant to the Capitulation.

The Portugueſes march out of Columbo.

Accordingly there marched out of the place *Anthonio de Melo de Caſtro* Captain-Major at the head of the King's Troops, conſiſting in 14 Companies, and 36 Captains (call'd *Reformados* by the *Portugueſes*) with their Enſigns diſplay'd, Drums beating, Matches lighted, and Ball in the mouth, marching through our Forces rang'd on both ſides, to the General's Quarters, where having ſurrender'd their Arms, they were conducted to the place prepar'd for their Lodging that night. Theſe were follow'd by the Citizens, Sick, Wounded, and Criples. In the mean while their chief Engineer diſcover'd to two of our Deputies four Mines on the ſide of the Baſtion of *Rajuha*, betwixt the Baſtions S. *Stephen* and *Clergos*, each whereof being fill'd with four Barrels of Gunpowder, the Trains were remov'd, and Sentinels plac'd near them.

The Dutch march into the City.

This done, our Forces march'd into the City, follow'd by the General, Major *Van der Laan*, and the reſt of the Head Officers. Near the Sea-ſhore not far from the Baſtion of *Couras*, the Governor and Deputy-Governor (both venerable aged *Portugueſes*) came with their Retinue to ſalute the General. After ſome Complements on both ſides, Orders were given to our Forces where to take their Poſts, and to diſarm all the *Laſcaryns* in the City. Towards Evening the Prince's Standard was planted in the Water-

COLUMBO

Water-Fort, and the great Cannon diſcharg'd round the place as a Signal of our Victory. Thus the City of *Columbo*, not inferior in Strength to moſt of *Europe*, fell into the hands of our Nation, after ſhe had been 150 years in the Poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſes*. In acknowledgment of which a Thankſgiving Day was appointed the Sunday following, being the 14*th* of *May*, which was celebrated accordingly, and the Thankſgiving-Sermon was preach'd by the Reverend *Franciſcus Wyngarten* in the Church of S. *Francis*, ſince call'd the *Town Church*. *Baldæus.* *A Thankſgiving Sermon.*

An Account of the Siege of *Columbo* taken from their own Journals, and (for the publick Good) communicated to the Author by *Matthæus van den Broek*, formerly a Member of the Council of the *Indies*, now Governor of the *Eaſt-India* Company. Faithfully tranſlated from the *Portugueſe*.

A true Account of the Siege of Columbo *carried on by* Raja Singa *King of* Candy *and the* Hollanders, *till the Surrender of that Fortreſs under* Anthonio de Souza Coutinho, *Captain General in the Iſle of* Ceylon.

IN the Month of *September* 1655. 10 *Dutch* Ships came to an Anchor near *Negumbo*, two more being out at ſome diſtance at Sea, having landed 11 Companies of *Europeans* of 80 Men each; and being join'd by a good number of Negroes, they march'd to the Paſs of *Betal*, but by reaſon of the violent Rains were forced to return to *Negumbo*. Mr. *Gerard Hulſt* the *Dutch* General having reimbark'd his Forces with ſome others taken out of *Negumbo*, ſail'd with the before-mentioned 12 Ships to *Columbo*, where much about the ſame time we had receiv'd a ſupply of Proviſions in three Galliots ſent from *Cochin* by the brave and faithful *Simon Gomes de Silva*, Governor of that place. Our Governor *Coutinho* took part of the Rice, in order to carry it to *Caleture*, where they ſtood in great need of it, but was prevented in his Deſign by the ſhallowneſs of the River. The 22*d* of *Septemb.* we receiv'd another Supply from *Tutecoryn*, conſiſting in 28 Sail; under the Command of *Nicolas de Moura*, the Fleet being chiefly laden on the account of private Merchants.

The Enemy having left ſix of their beſt Ships before *Columbo*, ſail'd with the reſt to *Caleture*; whereupon our Governor gave Orders to Capt. *Caſpar Figueira de Serpe*, then encamp'd upon the Frontiers of the King of *Candy*, to come to *Columbo*, which he did accordingly *October* 7.

Without the City were at that time encamp'd the famous *Diſſave Franciſco Antunes* towards *Mature*, and *Alvares Rodrigo Boralbo* ſent out with three Companies to get Intelligence of the Enemy, who from the 23*d* of *September* to the 15*th* of *October* laid before *Caleture*, and had raiſed three Batteries againſt it.

Our Governor being ſenſible of the Condition of the Place, ſent thither a Convoy of Proviſions commanded by *Nicolas de Moura*, under a good Guard of *Europeans* and *Negroes*, landed by *Manoel de Gil*, Diſſave of *Negumbo*, who has ſo often ſignalized himſelf in our King's Service in the Iſle of *Ceylon*. This brave Man attempting to paſs the River with 12 of his choiceſt Men (the Boat holding no more) was ſo warmly receiv'd by ſome of the Enemies Forces, that, after they had kill'd ſeveral of his Men with their Fire-Arms, he was forc'd to retire; the Commander in chief follow'd his Footſteps contrary to the Opinion of Capt. *Domingo Coelho de Alla*, who would fain have perſwaded him to advance as near as he could to *Caleture*, to incommode the Enemy in the Siege. Upon this occaſion *Alvares Rodrigo Boralbo* did conſiderable Service, in ſending Intelligence from time to time of what paſs'd, till at laſt this whole Body came back to the City.

It being then reſolv'd to ſuccour *Caleture* to the utmoſt of our Power, and four Galliots being at the ſame time arriv'd from the Viceroy of *Goa*, we made up a Body of 600 *Portugueſes*, the Command whereof was committed to *Caſpar Figueira* to attempt the Relief of the Place in conjunction with ſome *Cingaleſes*, notwith-

notwithſtanding the Enemy's Force conſiſted of 3000 *Europeans*, beſides a good number of *Bandaneſes* and *Cingaleſes* ſent to their Aſſiſtance by the King of *Candy*.

Baldæus.

Accordingly *Caſpar Figueira* encamp'd with his Troops the 16*th* of *October* two Leagues from *Caleture*, having receiv'd Advice before, that the Enemy were already poſſeſs'd of the Paſs on this ſide, and had poſted three Companies there. Purſuant to this Intelligence he order'd ſix Companies under the Command of *Domingo Sarmento* and *Franciſco Antunes* to attack the Enemy in the Night, which they did accordingly with incredible Bravery for a conſiderable time, but very indifferent Succeſs; for inſtead of being engag'd with three Companies of 80 Men each (as they ſuppoſed) they found the Enemy much ſuperior in Number, to charge them ſo furiouſly both in Front and Flank, that they were put into Confuſion with great Slaughter, before they could recollect themſelves. *Figueira* being by this time come up with the reſt of his Forces, unadviſedly attack'd the Enemy a ſecond time; but theſe opening their Ranks on both ſides, diſcharg'd two Cannon among our Forces, which occaſion'd ſuch a Confuſion, that the Enemy improving their advantage, once more put us to flight. *Figueira* and his Lieut. *Manoel Cabreira* were for trying their Fortune once more; but finding the Flower of their Forces either ſlain or diſperſed, and no means left to make them return to the Charge, they thought fit to retreat and bring off their wounded Men, among whom were *Sebaſtian Pereira* and *Joſeph Antunes*, the only two that eſcaped alive of eleven Captains. Of the Reformades, *John Cordeiro*, *Manoel Fernandes de Miranda*, *Manoel de Santjago Garcia*, with 200 common Soldiers, came off alive.

Figueira routed.

Conſternation occaſion'd by this Defeat at Columbo.

This ill Succeſs caus'd an unſpeakable Conſternation in the City of *Columbo*, where there was nothing to be heard but Outcries and Lamentations in the Streets; the Shops were ſhut up, and the Gates kept cloſe, with ſtrict Orders that nobody ſhould appear arm'd without doors. The next thing to be done, was to give an account of their preſent ill Condition to the Viceroy of *Goa*; and the ſame being (at their earneſt requeſt) committed to the care of *Damian Vieira* a Jeſuit, and *Manoel Saraiva*, an Inhabitant of *Manaar*, the laſt of theſe two went no further than from *Columbo* to *Manaar*, from whence he diſpatch'd the Letters to *Antonio Amiral de Meneſes* at *Jafnapatnam*, a Neglect that deſerv'd a very ſevere Puniſhment.

By this time the Hoſpital was fill'd with the ſick and wounded Soldiers, where Brother *Golſal* an *Auſtin* Frier did both the Duty of a devout, religious, and charitable Lay-man: The number of thoſe that died here for want of good looking after, being ſcarce inferior to what was loſt in the Engagement.

On the other hand, the *Dutch* had purchas'd this Victory with very little loſs on their ſide; notwithſtanding which Major *Van der Laan* (a mortal Enemy of the *Portugueſes*, and a zealous Heretick) having receiv'd a Wound in the Cheek, took a moſt barbarous Revenge from all the *Portugueſes* he met with, who were all maſſacred in the Woods (ſometimes 20 and 30 together) by his Orders in cool Blood, he having often been heard to ſay, *That if the* Portugueſes *were at his diſpoſal, he would cut them all off at one ſtroke.* Their General Mr. *Hulſt* being of a more compaſſionate Temper, order'd Quarter to be given to the new liſted Forces, but this Heretick told him that they ought to be cut to pieces, in retaliation of what they did to the *Dutch*, whom they never gave any Quarter: However through the General's Mercy about 60 of the new liſted Men had their Lives given them. In this Engagement the brave *Franciſco Antunes*, who had render'd his Name ſo famous in *Ceylon* by his many Victories, alſo loſt his Life in a Wood, who deſerv'd to have had a *Mauſolæum* erected to his Memory.

This muſt be look'd upon as a Calumny.

Thus the Enemy by this Victory becoming Maſter of the Field, afterwards ſoon made himſelf Maſter of the whole Iſland of *Ceylon*, the City of *Columbo* (after the loſs of *Caleture*) expecting no leſs than to be reduc'd to the utmoſt extremity. For after they had endur'd for ſome days all the Inconveniences of Hunger in *Caleture*, *Anthonio Mendes d'Aranha* repreſented to his Soldiers, that they had rather try the utmoſt, than to periſh for want of Food, exhorting them to fight their way with Sword in hand through the Enemy. He prevail'd at laſt ſo far with them, as to agree with them in his Reſolutions; but the appointed time approaching, they found themſelves ſo enfeebled for want of good Food, that not being able to put their Deſign in Execution, they were forced to ſurrender, upon Condition that they ſhould march out with their Arms, *&c.* of Caleture. Thus the King of *Portugal* loſt at once a ſtrong Fortreſs, one of his moſt experienc'd

Surrender of Caleture.

The Garison was kept in Prison at Gale.

rienc'd Officers in the whole Isle, and 250 choice Men, through the mismanagement of some who prefer'd their own Interest before that of his Majesty.

The 17*th* of *October* the Enemy marching directly to *Columbo*, posted themselves in sight of the City near S. *Sebastian*, where *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho* the then Governor, together with *Francisco de Melo de Castro*, order'd immediately some Works to be cast up to hinder their approach: But the 18*th* they were so vigorously attack'd in these Intrenchments, that they had enough to do to escape to the City, and to cut down the Bridges behind them.

The Dutch come before Columbo.

We then apply'd our selves to the strengthening of our Batteries, whilst the Enemy kill'd all they met with without the City, and immediately fell to the raising of their Batteries, which was no difficult task for them to do, being back'd by an Army of 20 or 30000 Men under *Raja Singa* King of *Candy*, and furnish'd by him with Pioneers and other Necessaries in abundance.

Our Governor and *Francisco de Melo de Castro* did leave no Stone unturn'd for the defence of the City; they visited the Magazines and Armories, and furnish'd with Arms all such as were capable of bearing them, not excepting even the old Men and School-boys. The Posts on the Bastions were assign'd to the following Commanders; on the Bastion of S. *John*, *Manoel Correa de Barros*; on that of S. *Sebastian*, *Francisco Gorian de Fialho*; on that of *Madre de Deos*, *John de Pavia de Quintal*; on that of S. *Conception*, *Domingos Peixoto*; on that of S. *Hieronymo*, *Alphonso Carvalho de Souza*; on that of S. *Anthonio*, *Manoel Carvalho da Maya*; on that of S. *Jacob*, *Manoel Nunes*; on that of S. *Austin*, *Luys de Paiva Quintal*; on that of S. *Laurence*, *Anthonio de Silva*; on that of S. *Crus*, *Caspar d'Aranja Pereira*; on that of S. *Francisco Xaverio*, *Manoel Caldeira de Brito*; and on that of *Galvoca*, *Dominges Pires*; who all gave sufficient Proofs of their Bravery in their respective Posts during the Siege, as did likewise Father *Damian Vieira* a Jesuit, especially in the Attack upon the Garden of *Antonio de Mota*, and some Houses standing upon an Eminency at S. *Thomas*, in which tho they were repulsed the first time, yet the next day our Forces commanded by *Alvaro Rodrigo* and *Manoel Caldeira*, being seconded by some Companies posted on the other side of the Ditch, made themselves Masters of it, being of no small Conveniency to us, to hinder the approach of the Enemy.

The several Posts assign'd upon the Bastions.

Notwithstanding this the Enemy advanced apace under favour of their Artillery, of which they brought great store daily from their Ships. And on our side we found the Bastion of S. *John* most expos'd, we strengthned the same with Masts, Earth and Fascines; we made also a cover'd way from the Wall to the brink of the Ditch, the same was done near the Bastions of S. *Sebastian* and *Rajuba*; both Clergy-men and Lay-men without distinction of Persons imploying themselves in this Work, and furnishing Materials for so useful a Work, especially *Caspar Figueira de Serpe*, who having great store of Baskets, Spades, and other such like Instruments, sacrificed them all for the publick Service.

Baldæus.

The 20*th* of *October* the Enemy began to salute us with 12 great pieces of Cannon from three Batteries, *viz.* 3 from that of S. *Thomas*, 5 from that at *Agua de Luphe*, and 4 from that of S. *Sebastian*, from whence they sent 800 Bullets, 18, 20, 24 and 28 Pounders, in one day into the City. But tho the Enemies Bullets did considerable Execution, some of the King's unfaithful Servants did more mischief by introducing adulterated Coin, and engrossing the Provisions under pretence of the King's Service for their own lucres sake.

The Enemy play from their Batteries.

There were at that time not above 1300 Souls, young and old, *Europeans* and *Indians*; *viz.* 500 that receiv'd Pay, and among them, some married, some unmarried, some Children and *Topasses*; 300 married People who serv'd without Pay, 400 *Lascaryns*, and about 60 Labourers; the whole number of the *Europeans* not amounting to above 500 Men. The Governor with the Consent of the whole City, pitch'd upon *Anthonio d'Abreu* an Inhabitant of *Negapatnam*, to be sent to *Goa*, to give an account to the Viceroy of the City. He was favourably receiv'd by the Viceroy, who told him that he had already sent a Squadron under *Manoel de Magalhais Coutinho*, to carry a Supply of Provisions and Men thither, brought together for that purpose by *Anthonio Amiral de Menezes* at *Manaar*. But this Convoy came no further than the Cape *Comoryn*, and could not make the Cape, tho some were of opinion it was rather for want of Will; so he return'd to *Columbo*, where the Viceroy being dead in the mean while, the whole face of Affairs was changed, and *Columbo* lost for want of timely Supply.

Number of People in the City.

Anth. d'Abreu sent to Goa, to give an account of the Condition of Columbo.

Baldæus. The before-mention'd three Batteries being raiſed above 200 Paces from our Walls, they erected another againſt the Baſtion of St. *John*, within 400 Paces of it, from whence they batter'd us moſt furiouſly with three Demi-Cannon. Immediately after, one of our Engineers, a *Hollander* by Birth, named *John de Roſa*, deſerted to the Enemy; 'tis true, he was no great Conjurer in his Art, yet did us conſiderable Miſchief. For the Enemies Batteries play'd ſo furiouſly upon our Outworks, that in two days time they were all laid level with the Ground, and our Baſtions and Walls were ſo ſorely battered, that with much ado we could ſtop the Breaches, which was done by continual and indefatigable Labour; each Soldier and Officer employing the Intervals they had, when they were not upon Duty, in working like the meaneſt Labourer.

One of our Engineers deſerts.

Care and Conduct of the Governor.

The Governor *Anthonio Coutinho* ſpent Day and Night in viſiting the Works, animating his Soldiers both in Words and his Example, leaving his Habitation, and contenting himſelf with a ſmall Tent near the Baſtion of St. *John*, where the Enemies made their greateſt Effort. Afterwards he took up his Quarters in a Warehouſe, ſcarce undreſſing himſelf all the time the Siege laſted, and employ'd much of his time in keeping an exact account of the Stores, and diſtributing Proviſions with his own Hands, without which Precaution the City could not have held out half ſo long. *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro* followed his Footſteps, having not been ſeen without his Clothes and Arms for ſeven Months together. The City-Major *Manoel Marques Gorjaon* did aſſiſt them in his Station, as did likewiſe *Caſpar Figueira de Serpe*, the *Diſſaves* of the *Corles* of *Negumbo* and of *Mature*, *John Coelho de Caſtro*, *Manoel Gil*, *Manoel Seixas*, and *John Banha*, who were preſent in all Places, where there was the moſt danger to encounter. The Clergy, but eſpecially the Capucins, were very aſſiduous in confeſſing the Soldiers, in praying and doing all manner of good Offices without Intermiſſion; and ſome of them would not be backward in being upon the Guard with the Soldiery, and give the Enemies ample Proofs of their Valour.

The Enemy thunder'd ſo furiouſly againſt the Baſtion of St. *John*, that it appear'd like a heap of Rubbiſh; then they turn'd their Fury againſt the Horn-work of St. *Stephen* and the adjacent Point; but *Manoel da Veiga* the Commanding Officer on the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, *Franciſco Gorian Fialho*, *John Ferraon d' Abreu*, *Gonzal Martinho Piementel*, *Manoel Carvalho*, and others employ'd in the Defence of the Works towards St. *Sebaſtian*, were indefatigable in repairing the Breaches, and rendring the Baſtions tolerably defenſible.

Bravery of the Beſieged.

Hieronymo Lucena ſhew'd the ſame care in the Baſtion of *Madre de Deos*, till he was reliev'd by *Lewis Tavera de Cunha*; and the Wall which extended towards St. *Sebaſtian* being found very weak, the General recommended the Defence thereof to the four Captains of the *Galliots*, lately come from *Goa*. Theſe order'd an Entrenchment to be made there of 150 Yards long, one broad, and ſix Foot high. Father *Damian Vieira* the Jeſuit being employ'd in furthering this Work, a Bullet taking away a great piece of the Wall, ſtruck him on the Head, ſo that he fell dead upon the Ground; but ſoon recovering himſelf, he fell to his Work again, his Servant conſtantly attending him with a Sword and Fuſee, wherewith he did conſiderable Execution, being commonly one of the foremoſt in charging the Enemy. Finding that the Baſtion of *Xaverius* (otherwiſe call'd *Couras*) began alſo to be ſorely batter'd by the Enemy, the care thereof was committed to an old famous Soldier, *Manoel Rodrigos Franco*, who ſoon put it out of all Danger.

The City ſummoned to ſurrender.

The 29*th* of *Novemb.* the *Dutch* General *Gerard Hulſt* ſent a Drummer with a white Flag with a Meſſenger into the City, to ſummon our Governor to a Surrender, who delaying his Anſwer till next day, the Enemy fir'd moſt furiouſly with his Cannon all that Night; but the next Morning we ſent *Diego de Souza de Caſtro* and *Thomas Fereire Leite* with an Anſwer, the laſt perſonating a Drummer, in order to get ſome Intelligence of the Condition of the Enemy; but they were upon their Guard, and therefore ſent a Captain and a Lieutenant, attended by two Soldiers to receive our Governor's Letter, wherein he told the General, that he wanted neither Will nor Power to defend the Place to the utmoſt for his King's Service, being ſtill ſufficiently provided with Powder and Ball, and other Neceſſaries; and to add the more weight to his Words, we fir'd moſt furiouſly all that Night.

The *Dutch* repay'd us in the ſame Coin, ſending us commonly a Preſent of 800 Cannon-ball and 900 Granadoes every Day. The 12*th* of *Novemb.* they celebrated the Feaſt of St. *Martin* the Pope by a new Invention of Fireballs, whereof they ſent a good Number into the City,

and

and ſeconded the Game by a general Aſſault. For early in the Morning three of their ſtouteſt Ships appearing in ſight of the City, one of them called the *Maid of Enchuyſen* enter'd the Harbour, carrying the red Flag in her Stern; and coming to an Anchor within Muſquet-ſhot of the Baſtion of St. *Cruz*, gave us ſeveral warm Salutes, under the ſound of Drums and Trumpets; but *Manoel d' Abreu Godinho* and *Anthonio de Silva*, the Commanding Officers on the Baſtion of St. *Laurence*, did ply them thick with their Cannon, that having firſt brought by the Board all her Maſts, they made ſoon after ſo many Holes in her ſides, that ſhe was ready to ſink, and a few of her Crew made hard ſhift to eſcape in the long Boat. The other two Ships ſeeing the other ſo ill treated, did not think fit to follow her Footſteps, but made the beſt of their way to the Road, alledging in their behalf, that they were not able to come up with the other.

General Aſſault given upon Columbo.

At the ſame time they attempted the Aſſault on the Land ſide. Mr. *John van der Laan* aſſaulted with 7 Companies the Gate of *Acouras*, advancing boldly with Sword in hand to the very Faces of our People, the foremoſt of which began to give way, and in all likelihood the reſt would have follow'd their Example, had not Father *Antonio Nunes* a Jeſuit, with his drawn Sword threatn'd ſuch as were ready to fly with preſent Death; nay his Comrade *John Cordeiro* wounded one of the Soldiers as he was flying with his long Rapier. Soon after *Caſpar Figueira de Serpe* coming with freſh Supplies, this ſo animated our Soldiers, that they not only ſtopp'd the Enemies Fury, but alſo made them give way in a little while after. In this Action an Enſign and Serjeant acquired Immortal Honour, and *Manoel d' Almeyda*, tho a very old Soldier, yet did not leave his Poſt till he had received 11 Wounds. *Felicio de Seixas* and *Contrero de Seixas* loſt their Lives with their Swords in their Hands; *Manoel Guerreiro*, i. e. the *Warrior*, did great Service with his Cannon from his Redoubt, he being an expert Cannoneer.

The Dutch *repulſed.*

Major *van der Laan* ſeeing there was no likelihood of ſucceeding, ſounded a Retreat, leaving the Ground covered with the dead Carcaſes of the *Hollanders*. The Enemy receiv'd alſo conſiderable Damage from the Tower, where *Diego de Souza de Caſtro* commanded, and no queſtion much more might have been expected had we been provided with good Gunners: for it muſt be confeſſed, that we wanted not Officers of Courage and Experience, but only ſuch as underſtood the Mathematicks and the Art of Gunnery; an Inſtance of which might be given in one of our Gunners, who having double charged a Cannon, did wound one of our Captains and two others, *viz. Thomas Fereira Leite*, and *Pedro Gonſalves Salgado*, tho for the reſt their Fidelity ought not to be paſs'd by in ſilence; it having been obſerv'd, that not one of our Cannoneers deſerted to the Enemy, but moſt of them loſt their Lives in the Service.

Baldæus.

Not one Portugueſe Cannoneer deſerted.

The Gate of *Rajuba* was attack'd with 800 choice Men by General *Hulſt* in Perſon, who endeavoured to mount the Walls with ſcaling Ladders: As they paſſed the Bridg, they were ſorely gall'd from the Baſtions of St. *Stephen*, St. *Sebaſtian*, and that of *Madre de Deos*, the Defence whereof being committed to *Rodrigo Boralho*, *Antonio de Mota d' Oliveira*, and *Manoel Cabreira de Ponte*, they gave ſuch a hot ſalute with their Firelocks from behind their Palliſado Works to the *Hollanders*, that many of them were laid dead upon the Ground. A certain Cannon of Stone did them conſiderable Damage, and would have done more, had it not burſt in pieces. Three times they renewed the Aſſault with incredible Fury, and as often were they repulſed with an unſpeakable Bravery. At laſt General *Hulſt*, to encourage his Men, cried out aloud, *Soldiers, the Princes Standard is ſet upon the Baſtion of St.* John (which in effect was not ſo) and ſo with a Curſe (*Sante Diabo*, i. e. Holy Devil) he ſnatch'd a Ladder out of a Fellow's Hand; but finding no body ready to follow him, whilſt he was encouraging his Men, and fixing his Ladder to the very Gate, he was wounded in the Thigh, and ſo forc'd to retreat. On the ſide of the Lake or Fens (called *Lagoa* by the *Portugueſes*) 240 Men were embark'd in 8 *Chineſe* Boats brought from *Batavia* for that purpoſe. They were met by *Domingos Coelho d' Alla* in 5 *Manchous* or Barges, who fought with them courageouſly for ſome time, but was forced at laſt to ſuffer them to land, but retir'd into a Palliſado-Work near *Maria Telles*, from whence he with *Sebaſtian Caldeira*, and 5 or 6 more (the reſt being run away) fir'd briskly upon the *Hollanders*; who at laſt finding a Hole or Gate near the Houſe of *Sebaſtian Caldeira*, they forc'd their way, notwithſtanding the brave Reſiſtance made by *Manoel Rodrigues Franco*, *Guardian de Varo*, and *Franciſco Rebello de Palſares*, who ſent a good quantity of Hand-granadoes and Fire-balls among them,

Baldæus. them, the ſaid *Guardian* having receiv'd two Wounds by Muſquet-Balls. The *Dutch* forcing their way into a narrow Street, were there met by *Manoel Fernandes de Miranda*, who tho ſorely wounded yet continued fighting with his Sword and Buckler, till exhauſted of his Strength by the Loſs of Blood, he was ready to drop, and would infallibly have died upon the Spot, had not *Franciſco de Lemos* carried him off. In his Place ſucceeded *Diego Leitaon de Souza*, who diſcharging a Muſquetoon on the Corner of a Street among the *Dutch*, made them halt; the ſame was done by Father *Damian Vieira* the Jeſuit, who with another Muſquetoon made ſuch a Havock among the Enemy, that theſe two ſtopped their farther Progreſs, till *Antonio de Leaon* appear'd at the Head of a good Troop of Souldiers; he being provided with another Muſquetoon, charged the Enemy ſo briskly (as they were endeavouring to break into the backſide of ſome Gardens) that they were forc'd to retreat back into the narrow Street, where he maintain'd the Fight (tho his Muſquetoon, by reaſon of its being too frequently charged, ſtruck him down to the Ground) till *Anthonio de Melo de Caſtro* came with his whole Company to his Relief, when after ſome firing Quarter being offered to the Remnants of the *Dutch*, they accepted of the ſame; ſo that 74, tho moſt of them wounded, were made Priſoners of War, whereof 8 only return'd into the *Dutch* Camp afterwards, the reſt dying in the City, many whereof were converted to the Catholick Faith, by the indefatigable care of the Jeſuits, and eſpecially of *Damian Vieira*.

This was the Succeſs of the general Aſſault begun early in the Morning, and not ended till two in the Afternoon, during which the Governor *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho*, and *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro*, kept in Perſon the Guard with ſome other Officers of Note in the Market-place, from whence they diſpatch'd their Orders, as Occaſion requir'd. The City-Major *Manoel Marques Gorian*, did likewiſe appear in all Places where the Danger was moſt preſſing; and *Caſpar Figueira* was very careful in ſending what Succours he could ſpare from the Baſtion of St. *John*. In ſhort, the Streets, Breaches, the Lane and Ditch were all tainted with the Blood of the *Hollanders*, and the Ground cover'd with Colours, Arms, Drums, Scaling-Ladders and dead Carcaſes, their Loſs being computed at no leſs than 1000 Men, and among them many brave Officers. On our ſide we had not above 30 Men killed, tho the Enemy to diſſemble their Loſs, gave us a general Salvo of at leaſt 1000 Muſquets. The next day Father *Damian Vieira* going without the Walls in order to bury the Dead, was ſaluted by three Firelocks from the Enemy, which made him retire, and defer his charitable Reſolution till the next following Night. We obſerv'd a black Flag in one of their Works, as a Signal, that they would give Quarter to no body without exception, the ſame Order having been given them likewiſe before the Aſſault begun. We got no leſs than 30 pieces of Cannon out of the Ship that lay under the Water-Fort, which were planted on our Works. Some Refreſhments were alſo diſtributed among the Soldiers, tho to confeſs the Truth, the Publick Stores being very low, every one provided for himſelf, as well as he could, without any regard to the poor Soldiers. However about 18 days after, Father *Damian* (by Order from the General) went with ſome *Dutch* Priſoners aboard the Veſſel, where they found ſome Casks of Wine, and ſome Meat and Bacon.

Loſs on both ſides.

Some Proviſion taken out of the Dutch *Veſſel.*

In the mean time the Enemies were not idle, but daily encreaſed their Works; they made a Covered Way within 40 Paces of St. *John*'s Baſtion from Weſt to the Eaſt, in form of a Redoubt, upon which they planted ſix great Guns, *viz.* three againſt the Baſtion of St. *John*, and the other three againſt that of St. *Stephen*. From thence they carried on their Trenches to the Sea-ſide from South to North, cloſed with another Redoubt, which being provided with two pieces of Cannon, much annoyed the Wall betwixt the Baſtion of *Couras* and St. *John*. This made the Governor *Coutinho* order ſome of the Citizens to raiſe a kind of an Entrenchment of about two Foot thick and three high behind it. From the ſecond Redoubt the Enemy carried on their Trenches into the open Field, and at laſt added a third Redoubt, from whence they could batter the Wall betwixt the Baſtions of St. *John* and St. *Stephen*, which being likewiſe forc'd to be ſtrengthened by ſome Works of Earth and Faſcines, no body, not even the Governor himſelf, were ſparing in laying hand to ſo uſeful a Work, which being 400 Ells in length, each Diviſion had its ſhare allotted, in order to bring it the ſooner to perfection.

Domingo Coelho d' Alla, aſſiſted by *Caſpar d' Aranja Pereira*, *John d' Andrade Ma-*

chado, and *Don Franciſco Rolim*, all Inhabitants of the City, did great Service with their Slaves, in the *Manchous* or Boats, in protecting our Workmen on that ſide, as well as the *Diſſaves*; and to be ſhort, there was no body ſo young, no body ſo old, that was exempted from continual Labour or Watching.

The *Dutch* on the other hand carried on the Trenches from the Redoubt with ſix Guns, to the Hill of *Aqua de Lupe*, and made another Trench from the Redoubt in the Plain, which was to meet another Redoubt thrown up on the Front of the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, beyond the Lake or Fens. They alſo raiſed another Battery in the Garden of *Antonio de Mota*, againſt the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, and another near the before-mention'd Redoubt of ſix Guns, in a parallel with that in the Plain, and another juſt at the Foot of the Baſtion of St. *Crus*, which being ſo near the Ditch, was likely to be a Thorn in our Eye, there being nothing but the Ditch betwixt us and the Enemy, ſo that we could throw Stones at them, and often talk'd with one another.

Figueira *lays down his Commiſſion.*

About the ſame time *Caſpar Figueira de Serpe* deſir'd leave to lay down his Commiſſion, not to ſhun the Danger or Trouble of his Station, but becauſe many of the Gentlemen and Subaltern Officers refuſed to obey his Command; ſo he was diſcharg'd, and *Antonio de Melo de Caſtro*, Nephew to the late Governor *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro*, who had behav'd himſelf with more than ordinary Bravery in his Poſt during the Siege, put in his place.

As we ſhrewdly ſuſpected the Enemy to have a Deſign of undermining the Baſtion of St. *Stephen*, a Cavalier was order'd to be rais'd near it, in caſe the ſame ſhould ſucceed. This was done by the contrivance of a certain *Indian* Merchant of the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, who alſo order'd the Redoubt, demoliſh'd ſince the laſt general Aſſault, to be repaired: By the direction alſo of another certain Merchant (who was Surveyor of our Magazine) a Countermine was contriv'd, which did us great Service. It was a moſt deplorable thing to have in ſuch a Fortreſs as this, not ſo much as one *Portugueſe* Engineer, nay not ſo much as a good Carpenter of our Nation, the Defect whereof can be attributed to nothing elſe but to the Covetouſneſs of ſome of the King's Officers, who put the Mony deſign'd for that uſe into their Pockets, and at the ſame time put it to the King's Account. Neither were our Fortifications in ſuch a Condition as they ought to have been; for whereas we had had ſufficient time to encloſe that part of the City near the Sea-ſide, call'd *Galvoca* (comprehending a third part of the whole) with ſtrong Walls, and to render it impregnable, by reaſon of the natural Situation thereof, being acceſſible only in certain Places in ſmall Boats, they had planted only ſome Coco and Palm-Trees there, which periſh and are waſh'd away by the Waves in a ſhort time. Thus the Baſtions, which ought to have been fac'd with Stone, were only made of Earth, which are not durable, and eaſily ſpoil'd by the Water-Floods; the effects whereof were then obvious enough, from the Hoſpital to the Gate of the Jeſuits College, which comprehends a very large Tract of Ground. Beſides this, the Carriages of our great Guns were ſo rotten, that moſt of them after the firſt Diſcharge broke to pieces; ſo that we were forc'd to take the Wood from the Houſes, nay even out of the Churches (as we did in that of St. *Domingo*) to make new Ones. *Baldæus.*

Covetouſneſs of ſome of the Officers.

My Pen wants Words to expreſs the Affronts put upon the Holy Images by the Hereticks, whereof I will give you only one Inſtance. They took the Image of the Holy Apoſtle St. *Thomas*, and after they had cut off the Noſe, Ears and Arms, ſet it up for a Mark to ſhoot at; afterwards they knock'd it full of great Nails, and ſo ſhot it out of a Mortar *Nov.* 16. into our Ditch, whence it was taken up and carried to the Jeſuits College, by Father *Damian Vieira*, and two Reform'd Officers, *Manoel de Seixas*, and *Manoel de S. Jago Garcia*. But the *Franciſcans* laying Claim to it, they carried it in Publick Proceſſion to their Church, and placed it upon the High Altar. Father *Franciſco S. Mattheus* ſolemniz'd the Day with a learned Speech.

The 20th of *Novemb.* the holy *Thomas* bleſſed us with the Arrival of a certain *Portugueſe*, a Native of *Aveiros*, named *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, who for certain Reaſons being retir'd from *Goa* to *Wingurla*, had ſerved among the *Dutch* in a very good Station in the Camp; but finding his Countrymen in Diſtreſs, left all and came over to us, and did us moſt ſignal Service in the Siege.

The Enemy carried on their Trenches from the Foot of the Baſtion of St. *Crus*, to the Edg of the Ditch, with an Intention to fix their Miners under the Baſtion of St. *John*; but we made a Countermine, and defended the Ditch on the other ſide with a good Breaſt-work, to ſecure our Peo-

Baldæus. People againſt the Granadoes, which the Enemy threw in without Intermiſſion. This Poſt being recommended to the care of *Domingos Coelho*, he ſtrengthen'd the ſame by Palliſadoes, from whence he commanded the Paſſage over the Ditch with his Fire-arms; and *Manoel Rodrigos Franco*, and *Manoel de S. Jago Garcia*, would often skirmiſh with the Enemy on their own Bridges; two whole Companies under the ſaid *Coelho*, and *Diego de Souza de Caſtro*, being appointed to ſecond them as Neceſſity requir'd.

The 10*th* and 11*th* of *Jan.* the Enemy advanc'd to the Ditch in two Places, *viz.* thro the before-mention'd Breaſt-work, and ſomewhat lower: From the firſt Place they played with a great Cannon, and on the other ſide having made a great Breach thro the Wall, they threw Faſcines, Logs of Wood, Baskets with Earth, and ſuch like Materials into the Ditch; and the better to cover their Workmen, and afford an eaſy Paſſage to their Souldiers, they fix'd their Gallery: but *Emanuel Guerreiro* at the Head of his Company, *Domingos Coelho d'Alla*, *Emanuel de S. Jago Garcia*, and *Diego de Souza Caſtro*, did receive them ſo courageouſly, that from 10 at Night till break of Day, there was nothing to be heard or ſeen but firing, both at the entrance of the Mine, and from the Baſtion of St. *John*, from whence Don *Diego Vaſconcelhos* did conſiderable Miſchief to the *Dutch* with his great Cannon, who meeting with ſo unexpected a Reception, thought fit to retire with conſiderable Loſs, leaving moſt of their Materials behind them, which were brought into the City. We loſt only two Men in this Action, and the *Dutch* for ever after were not ſo forward to come ſo near us, but ply'd us chiefly with their Cannon-balls, Stones and Bombs; whereas we had but one Mortar, which was uſeleſs to us (for want of expert Cannoneers) till *Simon Lopes de Baſto* came over to us, who now and then ſaluted the Enemy with Stones out of that Mortar, who anſwer'd us briskly, tho moſt of them broke in the Air, and did no other Miſchief but to ſome Houſes, that were miſerably ſhatter'd. One of the Enemies Bombs happening to fall entire upon the Ground, *Matthias d'Albuquerque*, a Native of *Goa*, ſtanding hard by, took it up, and threw it into the next *Dutch* Mine, with an unparallel'd Courage, with ſuch Succeſs, that it blew up into the Air immediately.

Bravery of Matthias Albuquerque.

The 28*th* of *Jan.* four Ships arriv'd from *Gale*, and ſoon after two more, which with the 14 that were in the Bay before, made up 20 in all. The ſame day the *Dutch* planted a Croſs upon the Redoubt call'd *Conception*, under the tripple Diſcharge of their Cannon and Small Arms. This Redoubt had been made by the Direction and Aſſiſtance of the Governor, the Maſter of the Ordnance, and ſeveral of our beſt Officers, and the *Diſſaves*. That day two new liſted Men, belonging to Don *Rodrigo de Caſtro* his Company, deſerted to the Enemy; and *Fernaon Martinho de Souza* the Governor's Son, a Gentleman who had given ſeveral Proofs of his Courage, was unfortunately ſhot with a Muſquet-ball in the Head on the Baſtion of S. *John*, of which Wound he died ſoon after. About the ſame time died alſo *Anthonio Barboza Pinheiro*, one of our Captains of the Artillery, a Perſon of indefatigable Care, and who had ſignaliz'd himſelf upon many Occaſions, both in the Field and the City.

The Governor's Son killed.

The 1*ſt* of *Feb.* two other new liſted Soldiers of *Manoel de Veigas* his Company deſerted to the Enemy, and the 6*th* nine Ships return'd from the Bay to *Gale*. By this time we began to be reduc'd to great Extremity for want of Proviſions, a little Meaſure of Rice being then ſold at half a *Seraphyn*; ſo that we ſaw the poor Wretches (as well *Europeans* as *Negroes*) drop down dead in the Streets: The *Berbery*, Bloody-Flux and ſpotted Fevers being grown ſo common, that few were free from them. To be ſhort, we were in a conſtant Conflict with three moſt dreadful Enemies, the Plague, Hunger and Sword. To add to our Affliction, the Heat was ſo exceſſive for want of Rain (which uſually falls in *Ceylon*) that many were ſtifled for want of Air, which made us drive about 300 of theſe miſerable Creatures (unfit for Service) out of the City on the 8*th*, who were forc'd to return by the *Dutch* the 9*th*. The 12*th*, 500 *Negroes* were forc'd out of the City, but were ſent back by the *Hollanders* the ſame day. The 17*th*, we ſaw divers Gibbets erected without our Walls, on which they did hang divers of the miſerable Creatures that were forc'd out of the Town. We had ſo many dead in the City, that we wanted room to bury them. The 19*th* two of our Soldiers deſerted, one whereof being taken, was hang'd up immediately. The 23*d*, 50 Negroes (the Remnants of the laſt 500) return'd to the City. The 27*th*, the Bridg made by the Enemy on this ſide of their Trenches, was ſet on fire from the Baſtion of St. *John*, but the Fire was ſoon quench'd.

Negroes forced out of the City.

*

quench'd. The 29*th* the Beſieged made a kind of a Cover'd Way, near the Gate of *Rajuba*, from the Baſtion of *Madre de Deos*, to that of St. *Sebaſtian*.

The 2*d* of *March*, our City-Major was ſent in a ſmall Veſſel to *Manaar*, to ſollicite for Succours there, in caſe any ſhould have been lately arrived from *Portugal*; for at *Goa* they thought of nothing leſs than *Ceylon*, for they did not want either Men or Ships to ſend to *Macaſſar* or *Moſambique*, but could find none for *Columbo*; for tho the Cinnamon was upon the King's Account, the reſt of their Cargo belonged to private Perſons, who would not venture their Ships for the Publick, without extraordinary Rewards.

Columbo neglected by thoſe of Goa.

The ſame day an Advice-Boat arriv'd from *Gale*, and we made the beginning of a *Cavallier* on the Baſtion of *Madre de Deos*; but finding that the Enemy were raiſing a Battery againſt it, it was not brought to Perfection. Two *Portugueſes* and nine *Laſcaryns* deſerted. The 3*d*, the Enemy began to open their Trenches on the ſide of the *Mapaneſe* Fields. The 6*th* one *Dyke* deſerted, and the 7*th* another did the ſame, leaving the Boat, where were ſome *Canaryns*, who returned. The 11*th* another Soldier belonging to *Alvaro Rodrigo Boralho*'s Company, went over to the Enemy, who receiv'd that day a Reinforcement of 10 Ships.

The 12*th* early in the Morning we found that the Enemy had poſted himſelf upon an Eminency at the Foot of the Baſtion of St. *Crus*, juſt over againſt our Redoubt, and that they had carried on their Trenches a good way into the Field. A Soldier of *Manoel Cabreira* deſerted to the Enemy. The 13*th* we ſent away four *Pachas*, or Advice-boats. The 14*th* we diſcovered three Sails with ſome Sloops, which occaſion'd great Joy in the City, thinking that it had been the ſo long look'd for Succours, but ſoon found our Miſtake; the ſame day two *Dutch* Deſerters and a Boy came into the Town. The Enemy having ſtrengthen'd their Battery againſt the Outworks of the Baſtion of St. *Stephen* and St. *John*, they laid the 16*th* one ſide of St. *Stephen*'s Baſtion level with the Ground.

Famine encreaſes.

The Famine encreaſed every day, a Fig-Tree or a Papey-Tree was now ſold for 50 *Pardaus*: Herbage we had none, ſome Roots there were, but miſerably dry, by reaſon of the Heat of the Seaſon, which cauſed a great Mortality.

The 17*th* an *Aratche* and two *Laſcaryns* went over to the Enemy, and perceiving that they had raiſed an Eminency, in order to erect a Redoubt and Battery near the Gate of *Rajuba*, we demoliſhed the ſame by planting a 28 Pounder againſt it. We had an Advice-Boat ſent us from the Northern-Quarter, and about Midnight the Enemy alarm'd us by a falſe Attack. The 20*th*, five Soldiers being taken that were going over to the Enemy, four of them were hang'd immediately, the fifth who had diſcover'd the reſt, eſcaping with his Life.

Baldæus.

4 Deſerters hanged.

The 21*ſt* we made a Countermine, about ten Foot from the Enemies, which was carried to the Palm-Trees planted on the Fortifications; whilſt *Simon Lopes de Baſto* Maſter of our Ordnance, *Manoel Fernandes da Miranda*, *Manoel de S. Jago Garcia*, Father *Damian Vieira*, and ſeveral other *Portugueſe* Officers, were employed in encouraging the Workmen; one of our Cannon-balls fell among ſome Granadoes and other Fire-works, which cauſed a great Alarm in the whole City, and the brave *John Pereira Corte Real*, a Native of *Negapatnam*, who had ſignalized himſelf upon a thouſand Occaſions in the Service of our Artillery, here loſt his Life, being generally regretted by all who new his Merit. The 22*d* and 23*d*, the Enemy continued to perfect their Works near the Gate of *Rajuba*, againſt which we play'd with a Demi-Cannon from behind the Wall of St. *Stephen*'s Baſtion.

The 24*th* two Meſſengers from the K. of *Candy* brought a Letter to the Governor, and another to the Inhabitants of *Columbo*, in anſwer to a Letter ſent to that King, at the beginning of the Siege. They appear'd in Mourning-Apparel, to intimate (according to the Cuſtom of that Court) how much concern'd his Majeſty was at the many Injuries and Affronts put upon him during the late War. They contain'd in Subſtance, that the King ſummon'd them to a Surrender, promiſing all the Inhabitants the free poſſeſſion of all their Eſtates, Villages, *&c.* for their Suſtenance, as the only means to deliver them from the Miſeries and Oppreſſions they now groan'd under, alledging that the ſame were the effects of God's juſt Vengeance for their Ingratitude, ſhewn upon ſo many Occaſions to his Imperial Majeſty, in return of the many Benefits they had receiv'd at his Hands, and not admitting his Ambaſſadors ſent to them with Propoſals of an Alliance. Theſe Letters were likewiſe ſubſcribed by the *Dutch* General *Hulſt*, which being read publickly, the Meſſengers were diſ-

Two Meſſengers with Letters from Raja Singa come to Columbo.

Baldæus.

miſs'd with much Reſpect, but were ſcarce got out of the City, when they were overtaken by a moſt dreadful Storm of Rain, Thunder and Lightning.

The 25*th* *Alvaro Rodrigo Boralbo* kill'd a Soldier as he was going over to the Enemy.

They ſend an Advice-Boat for News.

The 26*th* an Advice-Boat was diſpatch'd to get Intelligence whether there were any hopes of Succours for *Columbo*; but all the News we could learn, was that the Viceroy of *Goa* (the only Perſon we put our Confidence in next to God) was lately dead; which tho it was doleful News for us, yet was it reſolv'd to hold out to the laſt Extremity, which was perform'd to the greateſt nicety, the *Dutch* never being able to become Maſters of the Place, till moſt of us were conſumed either by the Sword or Famine. Advice was alſo brought us, that Bonfires had been made at *Goa*, upon certain Advice brought by ſome Negroes (under Protection of the *Dutch*) taken at *Putelaon* in *Ceylon*, that *Columbo* was not in ſo deſperate a Condition as had been repreſented, which they had reported upon the Credit of a certain *Dutch* Maſter of a Veſſel.

The 27*th* of *March* one of our Serjeants was devour'd by a Crocodile in the Fens, his Clothes and Arms being found afterwards. At this time a *Parra* of Rice was ſold at 25 *Seraphyns*, or Gilders; and all our Church-yards being fill'd with dead Corps, we were forc'd to have another conſecrated for that purpoſe.

The 28*th* in the Morning the Enemy had thrown up another Redoubt near the Wall of the Gate of *Rajuha*. One of the Inhabitants, a Native of *Cranganor*, went over to the Enemy from the Baſtion of S. *John*, being forced thereunto by Hunger, which was grown ſo exceſſive, that Dogs, Cats and Rats, and other ſuch like things were ſold at a very high rate.

Cats and Dogs ſold at a great Price.

The 31*ſt* two Soldiers and a *Laſcaryn* went over to the Enemy. The next Morning we ſaw ſome ſmall Batteries raiſed againſt the Redoubt of S. *John*'s Baſtion, where our People had made ſome Entrenchments raiſed like ſteps of 10 Paces high, cover'd with a Breaſtwork like a cover'd way, call'd *Aleapaon* by the *Portugueſes*. At the ſame time we began to work on a Countermine, within 20 Paces of the Enemy's Mine at S. *John*'s Baſtion. The ſame day above 50 of our ſick died in the Hoſpital, beſides what were daily found dead in the Houſes and Streets, the Ammunition-Bread being by this time become a moſt precious Commodity.

The firſt of *April* one of the Enemy's Advice-Boats came into the Road. The ſecond 7 *Laſcaryns* deſerted, and ever after 20 or 30 a day went over to the Enemy. The third two *Dutch* Yachts came into the Road, aboard one of which was a Chirurgeon. At the ſame time a *Parra* of Rice was ſold for 59 *Seraphyns*, or *Gilders*; but the worſt was, that there was not enough of it, and could not be purchas'd but with ready Mony. The Governor's Steward (tho without his knowledg) * refuſing to part with any without ready Gold, to the great Diſreputation of his Maſter, who tho a Gentleman of great Honour, yet was highly blam'd for committing a thing of ſuch moment to the management of ſo avaritious a Perſon.

* Semper inveniuntur mercatores humanarum calamitatum. *Baſil.*

The 4*th* of *April* the Enemy had raiſed a new Redoubt and Battery provided with two pieces of Cannon, near the Gate of *Rajuha*, wherewith they had ſo batter'd our Paliſado's, and other wooden Fences, that there was no ſafe paſſing betwixt the Fortifications and the Wall on the other ſide of the Ditch. The Enemy receiv'd a Succour of two Ships, and the next day four more. The Enemy made their Approaches with ſo much Circumſpection, that they advanc'd to the Ditch (where it was dry) with the loſs of a few of their Men, who improvidently expoſed themſelves to our Fire-Arms.

The 6*th* we begun another Countermine, and the 7*th* the Enemy threw abundance of Faſcines and Faggots into the dry Ditch, and ſet fire to our Paliſado's, which was ſoon quenched by the induſtry of our Men; whilſt the *Dutch* were employ'd on the other ſide to cut a Breach with Pickaxes in the Wall, but were ſoon chaſed from thence by our Firelocks, not without conſiderable loſs.

The 8*th* of *April* we began another Countermine, which being fenced with a kind of Paliſado Beams cover'd with Earth to reſiſt the Enemies Fire-works, was carried on under the Conduct of the Maſter of the Ordnance *Antonio de Melo de Caſtro*, the Serjeant-Major *Antonio de Leaon*, *Diego de Souza*, and *Manoel de S. Jago Garcia*. The ſame day at leaſt 70 ſick Perſons (moſt *Europeans*) died in the Hoſpital; many of the Negroes lay dead in the Street for want of room to be buried in, which produced a moſt nauſeous ſcent. The Hunger was encreaſed by this time to ſuch a degree, that they began to feed upon Mens Fleſh;

ſeveral

Utmoſt extremity for want of Proviſions.

ſeveral Mothers murder'd their own Children to feed upon, two whereof were executed. It was a moſt doleful Spectacle to hear the poor miſerable Wretches cry out in the Streets for Bread, ſome imploring Heaven for Aſſiſtance, others curſing thoſe who were the occaſion of their Miſery, others expiring and breathing their laſt in the Houſes and Streets.

The 9*th* *Domingo de Ramos* forced a multitude of poor Wretches out of the Town; but theſe being driven back by the Enemy, and expos'd to our ſmall ſhot, periſh'd either by them or by Famine upon the ſhore.

The Enemy advanc'd this day briskly with their Trenches, as we did on our ſide in our Retrenchments.

The 10*th* we ſet fire to the Enemy's Gallery, which however did not ſucceed according to expectation for want of ſufficient Fuel; but Father *Damian Vieira*, *Manoel Guerreiro*, and *Simon Lopes de Baſto* did kill many of the Enemy upon this occaſion.

The 11*th* we planted a Cannon betwixt our Paliſado's againſt their Gallery, but they had ſtrengthned it ſo well that we could effect nothing of moment. One of our Soldiers run over to them.

The 12*th* we began two other Mines with incredible labour, but indifferent ſucceſs, for want of skilful Engineers. Four ſelected Men were poſted in the Redoubt of S. *John*'s Baſtion, who defended that Poſt, which was within a few Rods from the Enemy's Works, with a great deal of Bravery, as they did in moſt other places, notwithſtanding we were reduced to a very inconſiderable number, there being not above five or ſix Men left in ſome Companies, as thoſe of *Diego de Souza de Caſtro*, *Manoel de S. Jago Garcia*, and *Don Diego de Vaſconcelbos*, who perform'd Wonders in the defence of the Baſtion of S. *John*.

The 13*th* the Enemy having receiv'd a Reinforcement out of two Yachts, they bour'd very hard in their Mine on the Baſtion of S. *John* under favour of their Cannon, which play'd inceſſantly: At that time Father *Damian Vieira* kill'd a ſtout *Hollander* who had the Direction of the Work, which advanced apace, tho we ply'd them very warmly with our Fireworks. Two of our Soldiers deſerted to the Enemy.

The 18*th* we began to work on our Countermine from the foot of the Baſtion of S. *John* towards that of S. *Stephen*, under the Direction of Father *Damian Vieira*, *Simon Lopes de Baſto* and *John Fereira d' Abreu*, whilſt the Serjeant-Major *Antonio de Leaon*, *Diego de Souza de Caſtro*, and *Ruy Lopes Coutinho* ply'd the Enemy with their Fireworks, and other combuſtible Matter. *Baldæus.*

The ſame day we got intelligence by an Advice-Boat that the ſo long expected Succours under the Command of *Franciſco de Seixas Cabreira* was come upon our Coaſt; it conſiſted of 21 Ships, and two Galliots with Proviſions, one whereof was upon the King's account, the other of *Simon Souza*, a Gentleman of Honour, who took Compaſſion of our preſent Condition. They ſet ſail from *Goa* the 29*th* of *March*; but as they were endeavouring to make the Cape *Comoryn*, one of the Galliots, in which was *Simon de Souza*, was attack'd ſo furiouſly by a *Dutch* Veſſel coming from *Calecoulang* with Pepper, that after having loſt her Maſt ſhe ſunk, *Simon de Souza* being narrowly ſav'd with a few Soldiers, and carried to *Columbo*. The *Dutch* Ship then falling in among the reſt fought ſo manly, that ſhe forced our Ships to retreat into the Harbour of *Tutecoryn*, from whence they could not come to *Columbo* till *Auguſt*; tho if the ſaid Fleet had arriv'd ſafely, they had brought ſcarce Rice enough to ſerve only for a little time. *News of the defeat of the Succours deſign'd for Columbo.*

About the ſame the ſame time Father *Damian Vieira*, *John Fereira d'Abreu*, and *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, went with ſome other Officers (call'd *Reformado's* by the *Portugueſes*) into one of our Mines. Father *Damian* and Lieut. *Nunes* going about 6 paces before the reſt, to diſcover whether any of the Enemys were at hand, and being miſtaken by their Comrades for *Hollanders*, theſe diſcharged their Muſquetoons upon them, notwithſtanding which the Jeſuit eſcaped miraculouſly the danger, without receiving the leaſt hurt. This happy eſcape was attributed to the Prayers of Father *Frey Luys* a *Capucin*, to whom ſuch as were going upon ſome deſperate Enterprize us'd to recommend themſelves. *A ſtrange Eſcape.*

The 15*th* *Nicholas de Moura* eſcap'd out of Priſon (where he was detain'd ever ſince the buſineſs of the Count *d'Obidas*) and with five *Miſtices* went over to the Enemy, as did much at the ſame time a Serjeant and a Soldier. About 80 Paces from the Gate of *Rajuba* the Enemy batter'd part of our Wall betwixt the Baſtions of *Madre de Deos* and S. *Sebaſtian*, from a Battery of 5 pieces of Cannon, from whence they ſhot 350 Cannon-Balls againſt it in one day.

Baldæus. The 16*th* we made a falſe Alarm to try whether every one would repair readily to his Poſt: two new-liſted Soldiers took this opportunity to deſert, and being now deſtitute of Men to work in our Mines, nobody was excuſed from that Service, from the Governor to the private Centinel.

The 17*th* the Enemy having fix'd another Cannon upon the Battery before the Gate of *Rajuba*, they laid the Wall level with the ground; our People being ſo weakned by Famine, that they were not in a condition to carry thither any Faſcines or Earth to repair it. At the ſame time *Manoel Fragoſa* a Reform'd Captain who had done ſignal Services in the *Indies*, and eſpecially in *Ceylon*, went over to the Enemy, becauſe his Pay (which was given to others who much leſs deſerv'd it) was refuſed him, nay he could not even get Suſtenance for his Mony, which put him upon this deſperate Reſolution; two common Soldiers Natives of *India* deſerted at the ſame time. There died ſuch a vaſt number every day in the Hoſpital for want of Neceſſaries, that many of the Soldiery choſe rather to abide with their Companies, where they expir'd in ſight of their Comrades.

Great Mortality at Columbo.

The Enemy receiv'd a Succour of two Ships, a Yacht and a Galliot, whereas the poor Beſieged had not the leaſt Relief in ſeven Months.

The 18*th* Mr. *Adrian van der Meyden* Governor of *Gale*, ſent us a Letter (their General being lately dead) and to terrify us the more, preſented all his Forces in order of Battel betwixt his Trenches; but our Men commanded by *Alfonſo Correa*, *John Ferraon d'Abreu*, *Manoel Pereira Matoſo*, *Ignatio Fernandes*, *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, and Father *Damian Vieira*, made a vigorous Sally the next following Night out of the Gate *Rajuba*, when *Franciſco Aſca* a Reform'd Captain took the opportunity to deſert us.

The 19*th*, *Diego de Souza de Caſtro* was ſent with an Anſwer to the Governor's Letter; and the Son of *Manoel de Souza* went over to the Enemy.

The 20*th* a Soldier deſerted from the Baſtion of S. *Crus*, on which ſide the Enemy had attack'd us with the greateſt fury ever ſince their loſs ſuſtain'd there under the Command *Caſpar d' Aranja Pereira*, who ſucceeded *Manoel d' Abreu Godinho*, after his Poſt was aſſign'd him, behind the Wall betwixt St. *John*'s and S. *Stephen*'s Baſtion. The City Major having four Buſſlers left which had drawn a Waggon for a conſiderable time, had them kill'd for the uſe of the Gariſon, who, after the Meat was conſumed, feaſted alſo upon the Hides, which they cut into ſmall pieces.

The four laſt Buſſlers.

The 21*ſt* the Enemy had drawn a Line of Communication from the Battery near the Gate of *Rajuba* to the Lake: At the ſame time five Perſons were wounded by one of their Bombs, and Capt. *Manoel Guerreiro* mortally, who had kill'd many a brave *Dutch-man* with his Fuſee during this Siege.

A Bomb kills five Perſons.

The 22*d* the Enemy having ſet fire to our Countermine, the brave *Joan Ferraon d'Abreu* and *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, were the chiefeſt that gave their Aſſiſtance in quenching of it amongſt a ſhower of Bullets and Hand-granadoes. At the ſame time a *Topas* went over to the Enemy, the only one that deſerted of that kind, tho we had a good number of them among us, who for the moſt part died with the *Portugueſes* in the Defence of the City.

The 23*d* Father *Damian Vieira*, *John d' Abreu*, *John Pereira* (Inhabitants of S. *Thomas*) *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, *Manoel Pereira Matoſo*, *Sebaſtian Rodrigues*, *Ignatio Fernandes*, *Joſeph Coelho* and *Manoel Feveira Gomes*, got early in the morning croſs the Fens, in order to ſurprize one of the Enemy's Works, but were ſo warmly received, that they were glad to retreat, and fight their way through the *Dutch*, who had encloſed them on all ſides.

The 24*th* a *Tony* was ſent to get Intelligence, the Enemy fir'd moſt furiouſly from their Battery againſt S. *Stephen*'s Baſtion and the Gate of *Rajuba*, where the Wall being laid level with the ground, the Houſes ſuffer'd much by their Cannon.

The 25*th* the Enemy planted two pieces of Cannon at the extremity of their Trenches againſt S. *Stephen*'s Baſtion, and *Raphael de Torres* a Priſoner for Debt, eſcaped out of Priſon.

The 26*th* the *Dutch* continued to play without intermiſſion upon the Baſtions of S. *John*, S. *Stephen* and *Madre de Deos*. The ſame day 9 *Portugueſes* were buried in one Pit or Grave, there being no place left to bury them in. A *Candil* of Rice was ſold at that time for 2500 *Seraphyns*, or Gilders, and a Candil of Wheat for 3400 Gilders, and happy was he who could purchaſe it; for you would ſee Women throw their Babes into the Streets for want of Suck and other Suſtenance, and others to part with their Jewels for

Great Extremity in Columb.

a ſlender Meaſure of Rice, a Commodity more precious at that time than all the precious Stones. During this general Calamity the City-Major *Manoel Marques Gorian* ſhew'd himſelf a true Patriot in all his Actions, but eſpecially in diſtributing what Rice he had left among the Soldiers, which if he had ſold muſt have amounted to a conſiderable Sum of Mony at that juncture; but he was willing to part with all, in hopes to preſerve the Place for his King. At the ſame time a falſe Attack was made near the Gate of *Rajuba*.

The 27*th* one of our Serjeants belonging to Capt. *Santjago*'s Company deſerted to the Enemy. At the ſame time we ſaw them carry on their Trenches from the Battery raiſed againſt the Gate of *Rajuba*, towards the Baſtion of S. *Sebaſtian*. Their Batteries continued to play without intermiſſion day and night. The ſame night Father *Damian Vieira* with ſeven more made a Sally upon the ſaid Trenches, and carried off moſt of the Tools of their Workmen. *Simon Lopes de Baſto* took this opportunity of ſending two Spies into the Enemy's Camp, who being diſcover'd had much ado to ſave themſelves, being forc'd to paſs through a ſhower of the Enemy's Bullets. They return'd the 29*th*, and brought Advice of the Death of General *Hulſt*, and the Commodore * of the *Dutch* Fleet. At the ſame time an Advice-Boat † carrying three Guns came into our Harbour, aboard whereof was the Fiſcal. An Alarm was order'd to be given at four in the Morning with the ſound of Drums, Trumpets, and other Warlike Inſtruments, and a general diſcharge of our Cannon and ſmall Arms.

* *He means* Dirk Ogel *the Vice-Commodore.*

† *Call'd the* Lion, *which brought the News of the defeat of the* Portugueſe *Succours.*

The 30*th* Father *Damian Vieira*, *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, *John Pereira*, *Alphonſo Correa*, *Sebaſtian Rodrigos*, and *Joſeph Coelho*, went out to take a view of the Enemy's Works, and advanced within 10 paces of them, which they found defended by a kind of Breaſt-work made up with Hurdles; notwithſtanding which they attack'd them with Sword in hand.

The 1*ſt* of *May* the Enemy deſir'd to have their Priſoners exchang'd for ſome of ours, which being agreed to, the ſecond we deliver'd up eight of their Priſoners, the only Remnants of thoſe taken in the laſt general Aſſault, in lieu of which we had as many of ours reſtor'd to us. They then began a freſh to play moſt furiouſly from their Mortars and Cannon.

The 3*d* at ſeven in the Morning, Father *Damian*, *John d' Abreu*, and *Simon Lopes de Baſto* went without the Fortifications, to gather up the Bullets near the Baſtion of S. *Stephen*, which uſed to be taken up by the Enemy in the night time. Father *Damian Vieira*, *Simon Lopes*, and two more made another Sally, to level ſome of the Enemy's Works, but without Succeſs. The ſame day two Soldiers went over to the Enemy. *Bullets.*

The 4*th* Father *Vieira*, *Simon Lopes*, *Franciſco Valente dos Compos*, *Antonio Madeiro*, *John Pereira*, *Manoel Pereira Matoſo*, *Alfonſo Correa*, *Manoel Fereira Gomes*, *Manoel Nuguera Freire*, and *Thomas Fereira Lete*, made a vigorous Sally, and with Sword in hand attack'd the Enemy's Batteries raiſed againſt the Outworks of S. *Stephen*, S. *Sebaſtian*, and the Baſtion of *Madre de Deos*, with ſuch Succeſs, that they ruin'd them entirely, and ſet fire to the Faſcines, Hurdles and other Woodwork that ſuſtain'd them, notwithſtanding the *Dutch* came with a conſiderable Body to the relief of their Countrymen, but were repulſed not without a conſiderable loſs, and among the reſt one of their braveſt Officers, who was buried under a triple Salvo of their Firelocks; ſo that our People remain'd Maſters of the Poſts, and return'd victorious into the City. *A ſucceſsful Sally.*

The 5*th* *Ignatio Fernandes*, *Manoel de Santjago Garcia*, *Sebaſtian Rodrigues*, *John Pereira de Lago*, and Father *Damian Vieira* (who never ſtaid behind upon ſuch like occaſions) made another Sally, but not meeting with any Enemy where they expected him, return'd without effecting any thing.

The 7*th* about ſix in the Morning (it having been rainy before, which is a rarity here at this ſeaſon) the Enemy made an Aſſault upon the Baſtion of S. *John*, defended by *Don Diego Vaſconcelhos*, and two Youths, *Don Conſtantino de Meneſes*, and *Diego Jaques*, both under 14 years of Age, all the Soldiers being ſwept away by Famine; for within theſe two months above 400 Men died in our Hoſpital, and our ſo long expected Succours being block'd up at *Tutecoryn*, we were paſt all hopes of Succours, whereas at *Goa* there was nothing to be heard of but Divertiſements. To be ſhort, the Enemy made themſelves Maſters * of the Baſtion, after having kill'd the Captain and the two Youths, who defended themſelves like Lions ſet upon by a multitude of *Dutch* Dogs. This done, they turn'd the Cannon againſt the City, whereby many of the *Portugueſes* that were

* Martin Scholtes *firſt enter'd the Breach.*

Baldæus. were haſtening to its relief, were ſlain in the Streets. The ſecond Baſtion, aſſaulted at the ſame time by the *Dutch*, was bravely defended by *Manoel Figeiros*, who with two pieces of Cannon kill'd abundance of them; but being conſtantly ſeconded by freſh Troops, eſpecially of the *Cingaleſes*, they ſent ſuch ſhowers of Arrows and Bullets among our People, that they were forced to quit that Baſtion alſo.

From thence marching into the City, they were met at the entrance of a Street by the Commander in chief *Antonio de Melo de Caſtro*, *Diego de Souza de Caſtro*, Father *Anthony Nunes* the Jeſuit, *Sebaſtian Rodrigues*, *John Pereira*, *Vincente de Silva*, *Franciſco Valente dos Campos*, *Alfonſo Correa*, *Sebaſtian Periera*, *John Ferraon d' Abreu*, *Anthonio de Magalhanes*, and an Enſign under Capt. *Alla*. Theſe, tho few in number, but many in Valour, charg'd the *Dutch* with incomparable Bravery. The *Portugueſe Alexander Manoel Marques Gorjaon*, making the beſt of his way over the dead Carcaſes that cover'd the ground, ſingl'd out a *Dutch* Captain of a Gigantick Bulk, who ſhot him with a Piſtol through the Body, notwithſtanding which he run him through with his Sword, and ſent him immediately to the other World; then puſhing on his Fortune, made the *Dutch* give ground, and having rallied his Men ſecur'd the Poſt for that time. The *Dutch* renew'd the Charge five times ſucceſſively, but were as often courageouſly repulſed by *Anthonio de Melo de Caſtro*, and thoſe few that follow'd him; and being reſolv'd either to conquer or to die, they broke in with Sword in hand amongſt the Enemy, and again poſſeſs'd themſelves of the firſt Baſtion, and ſoon after alſo of the ſecond: the firſt who enter'd the laſt was *Anthonio de Magelhanes*, who fought with an uncommon Zeal againſt the Enemy; for before they became Maſters of our Cannon, he ply'd them very warmly from behind the Wall (the only defence he had left) ſo that it coſt them many a brave Fellow before they could make themſelves Maſters of it; and being now poſted again upon the ſame Baſtion, he was bravely ſeconded by two Demi-Cannons from the new Baſtion, and a ſmart ſhower of Fire-works, which ſet the circumambient Air into ſuch a flame and ſmoak, that at a diſtance it appear'd like the Mouth of Hell.

A ſharp Engagement in the City of Columbo.

At the ſame time the Governor *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho* and *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro* did all that could be expected from brave Men on the *Couras*, or the Baſtion of *Xaverius*, both by way of Command, and by charging the Cannon in Perſon, and performing the Duty of common Soldiers. The Fathers *Philippo* and *Pedro de Caſtelbranco*, both *Auſtin* Friers, were not behind-hand with the reſt in giving their utmoſt Aſſiſtance for the defence of the Place, being appointed to keep a watchful Eye upon the Enemy whenever they were going to alarum or amuſe us with falſe Attacks.

It muſt certainly be confeſs'd, that this Engagement was one of the moſt remarkable that ever happen'd in the Eaſt, conſidering that a few, and theſe moſt wounded, ſick, or weakened by Famine, did engage a much greater number, continually ſuſtain'd by freſh Troops, from ſix a Clock in the Morning till eight in the Evening, during which time the Enemy was repulſed not only once but five ſeveral times, by a much inferior number, who having not the leaſt relief or time to breath, were forced all that time to endure the danger and fatigues of the Action, which coſt the Enemy above 400 Men kill'd, beſides thoſe wounded and burnt by our Fire-works: On our ſide we loſt alſo the flower of our Forces, ſome whereof were ſlain, others wounded and burnt to that degree, that they were diſabled from bearing of Arms for a conſiderable time after. Among the ſlain were, *Diego de Vaſconcelhos*, who had given a thouſand Proofs of his Bravery in this Siege; Father *Antonio Nunes* the Jeſuit, a Pattern of Virtue, who ſignaliz'd himſelf not only all along on the Baſtion of S. *John*, as well as in other parts of the City, by incouraging the Soldiers, comforting the Sick, and burying the Dead: He was ſhot at the Gate of the Baſtion with a Muſquet-Ball, receiv'd afterwards a deep Cut, and at laſt ſlain by a hand-granado after he had kill'd ſeveral of the Enemy with his Muſquetoon. At the ſame time died in the Bed of Honour (after they had given a thouſand Proofs of their Bravery) *Alfonſo Correa*, *Vincente da Silva*, *Franciſco Valente de Campos*, *Sebaſtian Pereira*, and that brave Sea-Commander *Sebaſtian d' Abreu Godinho*, beſides an Enſign, a Native of *Bazain*, belonging to Capt. *Alla*'s Company; *Manoel de Seixas* an Inhabitant of *Columbo*, and *Anthonio Caminha d' Alzevedo*, were ſorely burnt; *Diego de Souza de Caſtro* was mortally wounded with two Bullets, notwithſtanding which he would not retire from the Engagement till he receiv'd a deep Cut. *Manoel Caldeira de Britto Vidav*

Incredible Bravery of the Portugueſes.

Their Loſs.

* *Vidav*

Vidave was wounded by a Muſquet-ball, as were likewiſe *John Ferraon d' Abreu*, *Andreas de Seixas*, *Manoel Nugueira Freire*, *Manoel de Souza*, and *Manoel Segaldo*. *Laurence Days* a Native of *Columbo*, was wounded with no leſs than 3 Muſquet-balls; *Ruy Lopes Coutinho*, *Domingos Pires*, Inhabitants of *Negapatan*, Lieut. *Arrais*, Captain *S. Jago*, *Manoel Correa*, Commander in Chief upon the Baſtion of S. *John*, *Franciſco Pereira*, *Simon Lopes de Baſto*, and many more were miſerably burnt. Moſt of theſe received their Wounds by the accidental ſetting on fire of a Veſſel fill'd with Gunpowder, thro the careleſneſs of our own People. The Reverend Father *Paulo* was wounded, as he was furniſhing the Combatants with Fireworks, as was likewiſe Father *Manoel Velles*, who was touch'd by two Bullets, without receiving the leaſt harm by 'em; a Granado did alſo fall juſt before his Feet, without doing him the leaſt harm, as he was buſy in defending his Poſt with *Alvaro Rodriges Boralho* at the Gate of *Rajuha*.

Father *Damian Vieira* with his Company did conſiderable Miſchief to the *Dutch* from the Church of St. *Domingo*, being bravely ſeconded by *Caſpar Aranja Pereira*, Knight of the Croſs, and an old Servant of the King (who ſucceeded the City-Major in his Place) with 9 or 10 of his Followers; this being the Place moſt expoſed to the Enemy: The Commander in chief *Antonio de Melo de Caſtro*, no leſs annoy'd them from the new Baſtion, and with their Shot ſo ſcoured the Streets, that there was no ſafe Paſſage for the *Dutch* and *Cingaleſes*.

The *Dutch* without the Town, did on the other hand exert their utmoſt Efforts againſt the old Baſtion, which being almoſt laid level with the Ground, the Wall without ſerv'd for a Breaſtwork; and being continually ſupply'd with freſh Troops of the *Candineſes* and others, put our Men, but few in Number, moſt of them ſick, wounded or half-ſtarved, and beſides that but ill provided with Ammunition, very hard to it on that ſide. For by this time we had not only but few Men, but alſo not above 15 days Proviſions left, and ſcarce ſo much Gunpowder as would ſuffice for two Charges of our Artillery.

Conſultation about a Surrender. Things being come to this Paſs, it was debated in the Council (conſiſting of 34 Perſons) whether it were not beſt to think of a Surrender; 13 were of Opinion rather to die upon the Spot, than to treat with the Enemy: but the moſt being of a contrary Opinion, and nine of them poſitively inſiſting upon it, that it would be moſt conducing for the King's Intereſt, that ſeeing the Place was no longer tenable, to preſerve the Remnants of theſe brave Fellows, who had behaved themſelves ſo courageouſly, it was agreed to enter upon a Treaty. *Baldæus.*

Accordingly the 10*th*, *Manoel Cabreira* was ſent with a Letter to Mr. *John van der Laan*, concerning the Conditions of the intended Treaty; an Anſwer to which being ſent the 11*th*, *Laurence Fereira de Britto*, *Diego Leitaon de Souza*, and *Hieronymo de Lucena* were diſpatch'd as Plenipotentiaries, to demand a Ceſſation of Arms till the 25*th* of *May*, againſt which time we expected the ſo long deſir'd Succours. But the Enemy, who were not ignorant of our preſent Circumſtances, would hearken to no other Conditions, than to ſurrender the City the next day by 12 a Clock at Noon, which if we refuſed, they threatn'd to give us no Quarter; ſo that we were forc'd to obtain the beſt Terms we could, without any longer Heſitation, the Articles whereof being drawn up in haſt (for want of time) I had not the Opportunity to peruſe them, and therefore can only tell you upon this Head, that *Columbo* was forc'd to ſurrender, tho I can't preciſely tell upon what Terms. *Is ſurrendred.*

No ſooner was the News of the Treaty divulged among the People, but nothing was heard but dreadful Outcries and Lamentations: The Eccleſiaſticks (or at leaſt the moſt cautious among them) hid the Images and Relicts, and unfurniſh'd the Altars, for fear they ſhould be defiled by the Hereticks, as had frequently been done before upon ſuch like Occaſions. The *Dutch* having taken poſſeſſion of the Baſtions, our Gariſon conſiſting of 90 Soldiers and 100 arm'd Inhabitants, including Officers, nay even the lame and maim'd, marched out, ſome with their Swords and Muſquets in one Hand, and a Stick or a Crutch in the other. *The Gariſon conſiſting of 190 Men march out.*

The *Hollanders* ſeeing theſe poor Remnants, moſt of which appear'd more like Skeletons than living Men, were aſtoniſhed at their Bravery, in the defence of a Place they had been forced to purchaſe with ſo much Blood. Ten *Dutch* Companies march'd into the City, at the Head of which appear'd the General, *Adrian van der Meyden*, and Mr. *John van der Laan* on Horſeback, not to reckon the *Cingaleſes* ſent to guard the Governor of *Columbo*'s Houſe; which was no ſooner done, but a Meſſenger was ſent to him to demand *Si-*

mon

Baldæus.

mon Lopes de Baſto; being not in a condition to refuſe him, he order'd immediately the ſaid *Simon Lopes*, with a certain *Aratche* of *Negumbo*, and ſome *Dutch* Deſerters, to be deliver'd to him, who were all hang'd on a Gibbet ſoon after in ſight of the *Portugueſes*, who were forc'd to be Eye-witneſſes of the miſerable Exit of this *Simon Lopes*, who for the ſignal Services he had done them in the Siege, deſerv'd to have a Monument of Braſs erected to his Memory. To the Shame of thoſe be it ſpoken, who ought to have endeavour'd to afford him a much better Recompence for his paſt Services, and rather expoſed him in a Boat to the chance of the Seas, than to a certain ſhameful Death.

The *Hollanders* were ſufficiently ſenſible of the Bravery of the *Portugueſes* during this Siege, which laſted 7 Months (without receiving the leaſt Succours or Supplies) by the Loſs they ſuſtain'd of their braveſt Soldiers and beſt Officers, which amounted to 3000 Men, beſides the wounded and maimed; beſides that the Charges of the Siege amounted to more than would have built ſuch another *Columbo*.

The General and Mr. *John van der Laan* were no ſooner ſettled in their Habitations, but they gave Liberty to the Soldiers to plunder the Place (contrary to their Parole) for one day, which was extended to five by Mr. *van der Laan*, *viz.* from the time of their coming into the City, till the time we march'd out, which was perform'd by the Hereticks with the utmoſt Rigour; nay whilſt our Soldiers were embarking, and the Inhabitants within three days after, they continued their Robberies even upon the Seaſhoar. Almoſt all our People went aboard along with them, except a few who ſtaid behind with the Governor and Deputy-Governor; and ſome, that (by great Promiſes) were engag'd in the King of *Candy*'s Service, which perhaps has happen'd by a ſingular Providence of God, as a means to influence that King's Counſels, in order to expel the *Dutch* one time or other out of the Iſle of *Ceylon*.

This is a groſs Falſehood, a Soldier having been whipp'd at that time for ſtealing

Our People were tranſported to *Negapatan*, where they were moſt kindly received and provided with Medicines, Clothing and other Neceſſaries by the Inhabitants, till they received their Pay, after the Arrival of *Antonio Amiral de Menezes* Governor of *Jafnapatnam*, who at the ſame time intreated *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha* (who after having been detain'd a Priſoner at *Gale*, was now come to *Negapatan*) to go along with him to *Jafnapatnam*, in the Quality of his Deputy-Governor, as not queſtioning but that he ſhould be the next againſt whom the Enemy would exert their utmoſt Efforts, which he accepted of; tho conſidering the Fatigues and Miſeries he had endur'd of late, he might very well have excuſed the ſame, as well as the reſt of the Soldiers; who notwithſtanding this, half ſick and half ſtarv'd as they were, did embark for one of the moſt dangerous Places in *Ceylon*, to give freſh Proofs of their Bravery.

This was the end of this Siege, one of the moſt remarkable in all its Circumſtances that ever was heard of, conſidering that a Place of that bigneſs was defended by ſo ſlender a Number for the ſpace of ſeven Months (without the leaſt Supplies) againſt a powerful Force of the *Dutch* and *Cingaleſes*, who firſt defeated the *Portugueſe* Forces (compoſed of the Flower of their Men) in two ſmart Engagements; ſo that the whole Number of the *Portugueſes* was at laſt reduc'd to 200 Souls. The Account of this Siege being ſpread among the Eaſtern Moors and Pagans by ſeveral Perſons, who had been Eye-Witneſſes of the great Actions perform'd there, did beget an incredible Reputation of the Bravery of the *Portugueſes* among thoſe Nations, tho the ſame proved unfortunate in the end.

Thus his Majeſty of *Portugal* loſt a Place, and with it a whole Kingdom, three times bigger than *Portugal* it ſelf, and much richer and more plentiful, the very Center of the World, the richeſt Tract of Land under the Sun, and with it (probably) all that is in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſes*, to the South of Cape *Comoryn*. His Majeſty loſt a conſiderable Squadron of Ships ſent to the Relief of *Columbo*. The firſt Squadron intended for this Expedition, did come no higher than the Cape *Comoryn*, the pretended Succours from *Manaar* came to nothing: And the ſecond Squadron promiſed by the Viceroy of *Goa* in *January*, did not ſet ſail till the 29*th* of *March*, and was forced to retreat without effecting any thing.

Some Pretences for the not relieving of Columbo.

The want of Money was alledged as the main Reaſon of this delay, when it is ſufficiently known that the King had both Ships and Mony enough at *Goa*, which could not have been better employed than for the Relief of a Place of ſuch vaſt Importance: We know what vaſt Sums *Nuno Alvares Botalho* conſumed at *Moſambique*, which was nevertheleſs not diſapproved

by

by the King of *Caſtile*, and why might not the ſame be expected from the King of *Portugal*? To conclude, *Columbo*, and with it the whole Iſle of *Ceylon*, being loſt for want of Succours, all ſuch as have deſerved well in the Defence of that Place, ought to be rewarded for their Services, as thoſe who have been neglectful in their Duty for the Preſervation thereof, deſerve condign Puniſhment at his Majeſty's Hands. And as nothing is more common, than that Courtiers employ their Favourites in Places of Truſt (without any regard to Merit) and afterwards endeavour to conceal their Miſcarriages from the King; it is for this reaſon that we lay this account at your Majeſty's Feet, taken from the Journal kept at *Columbo* and other authentick Records, confirm'd by the Teſtimony of many Perſons of Credit, both Eccleſiaſticks and Laymen, that were preſent from the beginning to the end of this Siege.

Baldæus.

Addreſs to his Portugueſe Maj.

CHAP. XL.

The Origin of Columbo. *Arrival of the* Portugueſes. *Their Engagements with and Conqueſt of the* Moors. *They fortify* Columbo. Raja Singa *diſſatisfied.*

Origin of the City of Columbo.

THE City of *Columbo* is an antient City, ſeated at 6 ½ Degrees of North Latitude, in a pleaſant Country, near a delightful River; which queſtionleſs induc'd the *Portugueſes* to fix upon this Place for their chief Reſidence in this Iſland. For *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, having been fully inform'd concerning the Condition of *Ceylon*, order'd a Fort to be erected there, for the better Eſtabliſhment of his Affairs there, and to curb the Emperor. *Lup. de Britto* being ſent thither with a good Number of Soldiers and Workmen, *John Silva* deliver'd the ſaid Fort up to him. For *Zoares* who was lately ſail'd with 20 Ships and 700 Landmen to *Ceylon* (after *Laurence d' Almeyda*, who ſome Years before entred into a Confederacy with the King of *Ceylon*) had juſt before made an Agreement with the Governor of *Columbo* about a Settlement in that Place, which he look'd upon as the moſt proper for a Fortification, both in reſpect of its Situation, and the Plenty of the beſt Cinnamon that grows in the whole Iſle, being ſeated in the Form of a Creſcent, and affording ſafe Anchorage for Ships, provided they are not too bulky.

Accordingly it was agreed to erect a Fortification there, under pretence of ſecuring the Commerce of the *Portugueſes*, but in effect to curb the King and the Natives. He who reign'd at that time in the Iſle being a *Brahman*, was not a little jealous of the *Europeans*; but being ſenſible to what pitch of Greatneſs the King of *Cochin* was lately arriv'd by the Aſſiſtance of the *Portugueſes*, he gave his Conſent, tho not without ſome Reluctancy,

Treaty betwixt the Portugueſes and the Cingaleſes

and conſequently was of no long Continuance. For the *Saracens* who were chaſed thither from the Continent, and had ſettled their Traffick in this Iſle, found *means* by the Promiſes of great Sums of Mony, and of their Aſſiſtance, to entice the King and Court to oppoſe the Deſigns of the *Portugueſes*, who intended to enſlave them, under pretence of ſettling their Commerce; for which purpoſe they raiſed ſome Works, and having mounted ſome Iron Cannon upon them, ſeiz'd ſome *Portugueſes* that came aſhore, without ſuſpecting any harm.

Is ſoon broken.

Zoares coming aſhore with his Workmen, in order to raſe the intended Fortifications, was ſurpriz'd to find ſome Forts erected by the *Cingaleſes*; and having receiv'd certain Intelligence, that the ſame had been done at the Inſtigation of the *Moors*, he eaſily gueſſed that nothing but Force was likely to eſtabliſh the *Portugueſes* in *Ceylon*. Accordingly having landed his Men, he attack'd the Enemy, who at a diſtance ſomewhat gall'd his Forces with their Arrows; but after they came to a cloſe Engagement, the *Cingaleſes* were quickly put to the Rout, and purſued by the *Portugueſes* with conſiderable Loſs: The *Portugueſes* had many wounded but few killed, among the laſt was the brave *Patieco*, lately come from *Malacca*.

The Portugueſes rout the Cingaleſes

Zoares having allow'd one day only to his People to refreſh themſelves, began the next Morning an Entrenchment, reaching from the Harbour to the Seaſide, without the leaſt Oppoſition: within this he order'd a Fort to be erected, whereupon having mounted his Cannon, and

Baldæus.

ſtrengthen'd it by a Wall that ſurrounded it, he ſoon made the King repent of his Inconſtancy, who ſent his Envoys to *Zoares*, asking Pardon for what was paſs'd, and deſiring that the former Alliance might be renew'd: But *Zoares* refuſed to hearken to theſe Propoſitions, demanding Satisfaction for the Affront, and a yearly Tribute to be paid to K. *Emanuel*; which the King of *Ceylon* (who dreaded the *Portugueſes*) not daring to refuſe, it was agreed that he ſhould pay to *Portugal* an annual Tribute of 124000 Pound Weight of Cinnamon, 12 Rings ſet with the moſt precious Rubies and Saphirs, and 6 Elephants, under Condition that K. *Emanuel* ſhould aſſiſt the King of *Ceylon* and his Succeſſors both by Sea and Land, againſt all his Enemies.

Force the King to pay a yearly Tribute.

The Treaty being thus concluded, *Zoares* continu'd his Fortifications, which being brought to perfection with the aſſiſtance of the *Cingaleſes*, he left *John de Silva* with a good Gariſon there, and *Anthonio Miranda Azevedo* with four Ships to guard the Coaſt; which done, he return'd in *December* to *Cochin*, where he was received with all imaginable Demonſtrations of Joy. *Lup. de Britto* (before mentioned) ſucceeding *John de Silva*, brought along with him abundance of Workmen and Bricklayers, who made a kind of Mortar of the Sea-cockles, and lin'd the Fortifications with a ſtrong Wall, deepned the Ditches, and added what Works they thought neceſſary for the Accompliſhment thereof.

Is ill digeſted by the Cingaleſes.

This created no ſmall Jealouſy (not without reaſon) in the *Cingaleſes*, which was encreaſed by the Inſinuations of the *Mooriſh* Merchants, who told the King that their Prophecies were like to prove too true, ſince he was now made ſenſible, that theſe Foreigners had not only excluded all other Strangers from the Traffick of this Iſle, but alſo had made him a Tributary of *Portugal*, and ſhortly would make him their Vaſſal, if he did not in time hearken to the Counſel of his Friends.

Theſe Inſinuations had the deſired effect, for the King not only cut off all Supplies of Proviſions and other Neceſſaries from the Fort; but the common People being alſo incenſed by theſe Diſcourſes, murdered ſeveral *Portugueſes*, who ventur'd a little too far without the Fort. *De Britto* at firſt diſſembled the matter, but finding he could no longer contain his Soldiers (burning with Revenge) he choſe 150 of his beſt Men, and with them aſſaulted the City of *Columbo* (which lay near the Fort) juſt about noon, when moſt of the Inhabitants were aſleep to avoid the Heat of the Day, and at the firſt Alarum betook themſelves to their Heels, leaving the City to the Enemies Mercy.

Britto ſurprizes Columbo.

De Britto ſeeing himſelf Maſter of the Place without the leaſt Oppoſition, forbid his Soldiers to plunder, or commit any other Outrages; but order'd the Women and Children to be tied to the Poſts of the Doors, with an Intention to convince the *Cingaleſes*, that he was not come like an Enemy to deſtroy, but like a Friend to preſerve them. But as he had but little reaſon to rely upon their Generoſity, he thought fit to make a Trial of their Inclinations; ſo he ordered ſome Houſes that lay next to the *Portugueſe* Fort to be ſet on fire: this had the deſir'd Succeſs; for the *Cingaleſes* out of the Affection they bore to their Wives and Children, had gather'd all their Force in order to relieve them at any rate; but finding their Houſes on fire, run firſt with all Speed to quench the Flame, whereby *Britto* got leiſure to retreat in good Order into the Fort, and to provide himſelf againſt the intended Aſſault, which however could not be done without ſome Loſs, above 30 of his Men having been wounded in the Retreat.

However *Britto* reaped no other Benefit by this Enterprize, than that the *Cingaleſes* (exaſperated to the higheſt Degree) beſieged the Fort with 20000 Men; and tho they were often bravely repuls'd, yet did they perſiſt in their Reſolution, in hopes of reducing the Place by Famine, becauſe the approaching Month of *May* (the firſt of the Winter-Seaſon) did bereave them of all hopes of Succours. In the mean while the *Cingaleſes* did not ceaſe to carry on their Works to the very Ditch, from whence they annoy'd the *Portugueſes* with their Arrows, their Number making up the Defect of their Force, which was not comparable to the *Portugueſe* Artillery and Fire-arms. They alſo gather'd up 600 Bullets that were ſhot at them from the Fort, of which they made the beſt uſe they could.

Portugueſes beſieged in the Fort.

But what moſt troubled the *Portugueſes* was, that they were to fetch all their freſh Water without the Fort, and that they were extremely haraſſed with continual watching: However they hoped to defend the Place till the next Summer, in hopes of Succours, in which they at laſt found themſelves fruſtrated; *Anthonio de Lemos* coming only with one Galley

and

and 50 Landmen to their Relief, *Seguera* with the reſt of the Forces having ſtaid behind.

The *Cingaleſes* in the mean time had found means to erect two Wooden Towers fill'd with Earth, which being plac'd near the Ditch, they intended to make uſe of to cover their Pioneers, whilſt they were buſy in filling it up. *Britto* was not a little ſtartled at this Device, and finding himſelf now reduc'd to ſuch Straits, as to be obliged to venture at all, he order'd *Anthonio de Lemos* to draw as near to the Shore as poſſibly he could, and to endeavour to ruin theſe Towers with his great Cannon, whilſt he would make a Sally with 350 Men, and attack the Enemy with the utmoſt Vigour; this was put in execution accordingly with ſuch Succeſs, that the Towers were entirely ruin'd, and the *Cingaleſes* beaten out of their Works.

Make a vigorous Sally.

Notwithſtanding this Defeat, the *Cingaleſes*, encourag'd by the *Moors* who came to their Aſſiſtance with 150 Horſe, and 25 Elephants, reſolved to try their utmoſt againſt the *Portugueſes*. Theſe Elephants having Turrets fill'd with Men arm'd with Cutlaſhes on both ſides, did ſtrike no ſmall Terror at firſt into the *Portugueſes*, but afterwards turn'd to the diſadvantage of the *Cingaleſes*; for theſe Beaſts not able to bear the Wounds that were given them by the *Portugueſe* Artillery, ſoon turn'd their Backs, and put their own Troops into Diſorder, with a great Slaughter among the *Cingaleſes* and *Moors*, who now beginning to deſpair of Succeſs, raiſed the Siege immediately, and the King ſent his Ambaſſadors to *Britto*, to ask Pardon for what was paſt, and to deſire a Reconciliation.

The Siege raiſed.

Thus we ſee how the *Portugueſes* have been forced to ſettle, or at leaſt to maintain themſelves in *Ceylon* by the Sword; and the better to attain their end, it was their conſtant Practice in the *Indies* to ſow the Seeds of Diviſion among thoſe Princes; an Inſtance whereof is given us by *Maffæus* himſelf, in his Hiſtory of the *Indies*.

The King of *Cota* had three Siſters Sons, who (according to the Cuſtom of the Country) being his Legal Heirs, began to be very uneaſy at the long Life of their Uncle, found means to remove him out of the way, and to divide the Country betwixt them: But *Parca Pandar* the eldeſt of the three, having murder'd the ſecond, *Maduyn* the youngeſt began alſo ſoon after to conceive a Jealouſy at his Brother's Proceeding, complaining that he was not rewarded according to his Deſerts, as having been the Adviſer and Executer of the Murder of their Uncle. *Parca Pandar* finding his Brother diſſatisfied, thought it his ſecureſt way to fore-arm himſelf againſt him, and therefore enter'd into a Treaty with the King of *Portugal*, to ſettle the Succeſſion of the Crown upon his Daughter's Son (with the Excluſion of *Maduyn*) directly contrary to the Cuſtom of that Country. *Maduyn* exaſperated to the higheſt degree at this Proceeding, denounc'd open War againſt his Brother, and after having ravag'd the Country thro which he paſſed, laid Siege to *Cota*.

Baldæus.

Differences betwixt 2 Brothers fomented by the Portugueſes.

The elder Brother diſdaining to be attack'd in his City, march'd out againſt *Maduyn*, and pitch'd his Tent in an advantageous Poſt. He had a Troop of *Portugueſes* in his Camp, one whereof (whether hir'd thereunto by *Maduyn*, or by chance, is uncertain) ſhot him thro the Head. After his Death the *Portugueſes* ſet his Daughter's Son upon the Throne with the uſual Solemnities: but in conſideration of his Youth, and the Weakneſs of his Title, introduced contrary to the Cuſtom of the Country, they much fear'd the Hatred of the People, back'd by the Intereſt of *Maduyn*; they ſent therefore for Succours to *Noronha*, who ſoon after arriv'd with a good Squadron of Ships and 3000 Men, under pretence of aſſiſting the young King (as *Maffæus* expreſly tells us) but in effect to make himſelf Maſter of the Treaſure buried at *Columbo*, 100000 Crowns of which he carried off along with him.

In the mean while *Maduyn* fortified himſelf with all poſſible Diligence in the City of *Ceta-Vaca*, nine Leagues from *Columbo* (according to *Maffæus*) but *Noronha* having with little Oppoſition taken and burnt the ſaid Place, return'd victorious to *Goa*. What further became of *Maduyn*, is not mention'd by *Maffæus*, or any other Hiſtorian.

Thus we have ſeen the beginning of *Columbo* under the *Portugueſes*, and its Surrender to the *Dutch* 1656. They found about 6 or 7 Loads of muſty Rice in the Place, ſome Packs of Cinnamon, good Store of *Areek*, ſome good, ſome not, 24 Light Frigates, 9 whereof were ſunk, 1500 Guilders ready Money coin'd in the City, 33 Packs of Clothes, 25 Bells of Metal, 60 Braſs, and 68 Iron pieces of Cannon, one Mortar, and ſix leſſer Pieces, 10000 Cannon-Bullets of different Sizes and Weight, 6500 Pound Weight of good Gunpowder, and 1150 bad,

What was found in Columbo.

Baldæus. bad, a good Quantity of Brimſtone and Saltpeter. No ſooner were we in poſſeſſion of *Columbo*, but *Raja Singa* ſhew'd his Diſſatisfaction by the following Letter.

Raja Singa's Letter.

" YEſterday and the Day before yeſterday it was reported at our " Court, that there was a Treaty on " foot with the *Portugueſes* about the " Surrender of the City, ſince which I " have receiv'd Intelligence, that the " ſame is brought to effect. If it be true, " you ought to have given notice there- " of to our Imperial Majeſty, which is " the reaſon, I can't as yet give entire " Credit to it: But in caſe it ſhould be " ſo, I deſire to know with all poſſible " ſpeed the Articles of the ſaid Treaty. " Whilſt our Beloved Director-General " was alive, I writ to him concerning " certain matters he promiſed ſhould be " perform'd, which I deſire you to re- " member.

From our Imperial Court at *Reygamwatte, May* 11. 1656.

Signed,

Raja Singa Rajou, Moſt Potent Emperor of *Ceylon*.

CHAP. XLI.

Deſerters ſeverely puniſhed. Raja Singa *forbids all Commerce with the* Hollanders. *His Letter of Complaint. Divers* Portugueſe *Ships taken.* Raja Singa *ravages and plunders the Lands and Subjects belonging to the Company.*

Deſerters puniſh'd with Death.

IT was now thought high time to puniſh ſuch as had deſerted our Service during the Siege. Among theſe *Simon Lopes*, a *Portugueſe* by Birth, who had 50 Guilders *per* Month Pay in our Service, and after we were repulſed in the general Aſſault was gone over to the Enemy, did lead the Van, and was, notwithſtanding all the Interceſſions of the *Portugueſes*, hang'd on a Gibbet. Two other *Europeans* (whoſe Names we will paſs by in ſilence) underwent the ſame Fate; and another was ſeverely whipp'd, and forc'd to ſtand with a Rope about his Neck for 12 Hours under the Gallows.

The next thing to be done was to take care of the Tranſportation of the *Portugueſes*, among whom the Eccleſiaſticks and Inhabitants of *Columbo* were ſent beyond Sea to Mr. *Laurence Pit* our Governor, who was to diſpatch them further to the Iſle of S. *Thomas*. About that time we receiv'd a Letter from *Raja Singa*, wherein he ſufficiently teſtify'd his Diſſatisfaction. *Walraven Thomas* our Book-keeper ſent word from *Montual*, that he had ſent the Corporal *Hans Jacob Lambert*, 10 *Mardykers*, and a Serjeant to the Paſs of *Nacclegamme*, with Orders to oppoſe the Forces gather'd thereabouts by the *Diſſaves* of *Oüva*, of the four and of the ſeven *Corles*; which not agreeing with the Sentiments of the General and his Council, they order'd the ſaid Corporal to ſend back the *Mardykers* to *Montual*, and not to ſtop the Paſſage of any of the Royal Forces, for fear of giving any occaſion of Offence to the Emperor.

Notwithſtanding this, we ſoon found the effects of the Diſſatisfaction of *Raja Singa*, who having cut off all means of receiving Supplies by Land from the *Sabandar*, *Don John de Coſta* was diſpatch'd to the *Diſſaves* of *Saffragam*, and thoſe of the four and ſeven *Corles*, who told him, that their People were at their full Liberty (tho we knew to the contrary) to bring their Proviſions to our Market, but that they durſt not give a Viſit to the General, without expreſs Orders from Court. *Raja Singa ſhews his Diſlike.*

The 22*d* of *March*, the Yachts the *Mars* and *Lyon* came to an anchor in the Road of *Columbo*, aboard one whereof was the Vice-Commodore *Roothaus*, who (upon the Receipt of a Letter from our Head Factor Mr. *Reinier Serooskerke*, intimating that a ſmall Yacht laden with Proviſions upon the King of *Cochin*'s Account, was gone from thence to *Columbo*) had left the Yachts *Fliſſingen*, *Popkensburg*, *Sea-Coney*, the *Haddock* and the *Roman*, with two other Veſſels on that Coaſt, who were ſupplied with freſh Proviſions by the Inhabitants of *Caylpatnam*. The Inhabitants thereof being very deſirous to renew their Commerce with our Company, they were then equipping two Frigats there. *2 Yachts come before* Columbo.

About the ſame time notice was given us, that *Cannangere Aratchie*, a faithful Servant of the Company, had (to our great Diſſatisfaction) ſubmitted to the King of *Candy*, Cingaleſes *go over to the Emperor.*

Candy, and that 90 of the *Laſcaryn* Deſerters had taken the way of *Angretotte*. Theſe proved the Forerunners of many enſuing Misfortunes. In the mean while *Raja Singa* urg'd ſtifly the Surrender of *Negumbo* and *Columbo* into his Hands, under pretence that theſe Places belong'd to him, by virtue of an Agreement made betwixt him, and the late Director-General Mr. *Gerard Hulſt*; upon which account he writ the following Letter.

Letter of Complaint from the Emperor.

"OUR Imperial Majeſty being very deſirous to introduce the *Dutch* Nation into our Dominions, *Adam Weſterwold* came on this Coaſt with a Squadron of Ships, juſt as we had made our ſelves Maſters of *Batecalo*, when we thought fit to conclude a Peace with him; which being confirmed by Oath, was but ſlenderly obſerv'd by ſome Officers afterwards: As for inſtance by Captain *Burchart Kocks*, alias *Coque* (who was afterwards kill'd by a Soldier at *Puntegale*) and Commiſſary *Peter Kieſt*, who being ſent as Plenipotentiaries to our Court, did confirm the before-mentioned Peace by Oath; purſuant to which at their Departure for *Gale*, they took along with them one of our *Diſſaves*, in order to deliver into his Hands the Country of *Mature*. But at his coming there, they found means to render the ſame ineffectual, by finding out certain Difficulties, which made the ſaid *Diſſave* return to our Court, to our great Diſſatisfaction. It was about that time that our Beloved Director-General did come into our Kingdom from *Holland*, with full Power to act as he ſhould find it moſt ſutable to our Service, and to the Eſtabliſhment of a firm Peace and Friendſhip; purſuant to which, he deſir'd us by way of Mouth to bury all paſs'd Miſcarriages in Oblivion, promiſing at the ſame time in the Name of the Prince of *Orange* and the *Eaſt-India* Company, full Satisfaction for the ſame; as alſo, that the Fortreſſes of *Negumbo* and *Columbo* (when taken) ſhould be deliver'd into the Hands of our Imperial Majeſty, and certain *Hollanders* to be allotted in the ſaid Places for our Service. It is upon this account that we ſent our Auxiliaries to aſſiſt our dearly Beloved *Hollanders* in the taking of *Columbo*; which being taken ſince, they are become forgetful of their Promiſe, and do continue to do ſo to this Day. Your Excellency is left at your own Liberty to do what you think fit, till notice of this Proceeding can be given to the Prince of *Orange*, and the Honourable Company. But I would have you remember, that ſuch as don't know God and keep their Word, will one time or other be ſenſible of the ill conſequences thereof; I am ſenſible I have God on my ſide.

Baldæus.

By way of Poſtſcript was writ.

"TWo Letters have been diſpatch'd from our Imperial Court. Your Excellency has writ in *Dutch* to *George Bloem*, but without mentioning any thing relating to our Service. Your Excellency may write ſuch frivolous Pretences to whom you pleaſe, but ought not to impoſe them upon our Imperial Majeſty; it being in vain to alledg, that the Director-General had receiv'd his Inſtructions from *Batavia*, whereas he brought his full Power along with him out of *Holland*. Such ſiniſter dealings, as they create no ſmall Jealouſy, ſo I can't ſee with what Face you can expect any further Credit from us. I have taken care to have this tranſlated into *Dutch*, that you may have no reaſon to plead Ignorance. *George Bloem* ſhall ſtay here, till I receive your Anſwer, when I intend to ſend him back with a Letter. No more, *&c.*

From our Imperial Court at *Reygamwatte*, *May* 11. 1656.

Unto which was annex'd the following Account, not thought fit to be inſerted in the Imperial Letter.

"THIS Day, being the 22*d* of *March*, his Imperial Majeſty having ſent for me, order'd the Letter writ in *Portugueſe* to be tranſlated into *Dutch*, to be ſent among others to your Excellency. When I ſhew'd the Tranſlation to his Majeſty, he told me, that after the Arrival of the Director-General in *Ceylon*, he had ſent word to him, that ſeveral Rebels ſhelter'd themſelves in and about *Columbo*, eſpecially one *Caſpar Figeiro*, who had done conſiderable Damage to his Majeſty's Lands; as alſo concerning certain Preſents ſent to his Court by the Viceroy of *Goa*, ſome whereof were ſent only by the ſaid Director-General. His Majeſty further deſir'd me to give you

"to

Baldæus. "to understand, that it had been agreed, "not to recede in the least from the "literal Sense of the Treaty, especial- "ly in what related to that Article "concerning any City or Place taken "with the Assistance of his Majesty's "Forces; whereas your Excellency had "not as much as taken the least care "(since the taking of *Columbo*) to send "to his Majesty his rebellious Subjects, "nor any of the Presents, except two "*Persian* Cats, a Ship, &c. deliver'd by "me to his Majesty. The not sending "of the Rebels has been very ill re- "lish'd here.

Raja Singa *is angry with the* Dutch.

Our General took care to send a most obliging Answer to the Emperor's Letter, which however was so far from giving any real Satisfaction to *Raja Singa*, that on the contrary he conceiv'd such a Hatred against the *Dutch*, as made him engage with the *Portugueses* against them. For notice having been sent to our Council by *Anthonio de Motte*, and *Manoel Fonseque de Moniis*, two *Portugueses*, that they had been sollicited by *Raja Singa* to enter into his Service, with Promises of vast Rewards, and the full Enjoyment of the same Revenues they had been possess'd of before, in their most flourishing Estate; it was order'd that none of the Imperial Soldiers should be for the future admitted into the City, except such as should be sent in the Quality of Messengers from the King, or any of his *Dissaves*, to the General and Council: 32 Men were also commanded to guard the Passes near *Caleture*. Most of the *Portugueses* at *Columbo*, were sent under a Convoy of a whole Company to *Gale*; and upon a scrutiny of the Muster-roll, it was found that there were 300 Men missing from among the *Lascaryns* of *Matule*, and many more follow'd their Footsteps soon after.

3 Portuguese *Frigates taken.*

The 30*th* of *May* early in the Morning, four Frigates being discover'd near the Shore, towards the side of *Galkisse*, we took in our Princes Flag, in order to entice them into the Road: the Commodore, who led the Van, perhaps began to suspect the matter, and therefore steer'd his course to the North; but the other three were no sooner come within the reach of our Cannon, but we sent out our small Vessels to fetch their Officers ashore. These told us, that they left the Bar of *Goa* the 22*d* with six Frigates, and that two of them being separated from the rest by a most violent Tempest near *Coulang*, were either lost, or perhaps had saved themselves in some Port or other; one of them having been seen without Masts. They added, that a *Portuguese* Caravan was come to an Anchor in the River of *Goa*. These six Frigates had aboard 68 Soldiers, besides good Store of Provisions, Ammunition and all other Necessaries, intended for the Relief of *Columbo*, in case the Squadron under *Francisco de Seixa* should miscarry. Their Cargo stood us in great stead, considering the Scarcity that was among us at that time.

Another Yacht and Frigate taken.

The 1*st* of *June* we took another Frigate and a Yacht, the Officers whereof being likewise brought ashore, told us, that the City of *Cochin* had contributed a good Sum of Money towards the relief of *Columbo*. Their Letters being open'd, contain'd nothing material, except that they were embroil'd with the King of *Cochin*.

Certain Advice was brought to the Governor, that the Day before, as the before-mention'd Ships of *Cochin* were passing along the Shore of *Galkisse*, the Imperial *Dissaves* of *Matule* and *Ouva*, had been seen to give them a Signal with a white Cloth, and had taken abundance of Pains to get aboard them, offering 400 *Larynes* to the Fishermen, if they would carry them aboard of one or the other; and that they had got ready two Boats, but durst not venture thro the Waves. Considering the Pains the Emperor had lately taken to entice away some of the best Officers belonging to the Company, and divers Outrages committed by the King's *Lascaryns* in the Park of the Company: These together, I say, seem'd to us the infallible Forerunners of the ensuing Broils.

For it was not long before *Cornelius van der Duyn*, Deputy-Governor of *Mature*, sent word from thence, that the King's Officers and Soldiers had forbid all the Inhabitants thereabouts to furnish the *Hollanders* with Provisions, or to obey their Orders, but to retire into the King's Dominions, where they should have full Liberty to make their Excursions into our Dominions, as they had done already at *Billigam*, *Mallimande*, and *Baigam*.

To prevent such like Outrages for the future, three Companies of 40 Men each were sent out of *Gale*, two of which were order'd towards *Accuras*, to protect the Inhabitants against the Inroads made by the King's Soldiers, in the quiet possession of such Lands as were granted to the Company by the Emperor; for by this time we began shrewdly to suspect,

* that

that moſt of the Great Ones were enter'd into a Confederacy with the King againſt us; this appeas'd by the Tergiverſations of the *Adigar*, who paſſing by the way of *Angretotte* to *Mature*, pretended he was come by Orders from our General, which was a manifeſt Falſhood: ſome of their Proceedings may be ſeen out of the following Letter.

" *Attepitty Apuhamy* is come to *Mallimanda*, from whence he has ſent " an *Ola* or Letter, intimating that he " was come by the King's ſpecial Order, " to take poſſeſſion of the Country of " *Mature* in his Majeſty's Name, and to " enjoin all the Inhabitants, not to ſupply the *Dutch* with any Proviſions or " otherwiſe. *He further ſaid*, that he " had intended to have been with them " before this; but being now come with " full Authority, he exhorts them to " obey the Emperor's Orders, for the " Honour of his Court, and of the *Diſſave* of *Mature*, which if they do, " they may aſſure themſelves of all imaginable Favour from the Court. The " *Diſſave* of *Saffragam* has ſent the *Diſſave* of *Mature*, to aſſiſt you upon all " Occaſions.

In *Paſdumcorle* and *Caleture* things went at the ſame rate, where they had taken *Cotteneynde*, his Mother, and Brother (beſides many others) Priſoners, and carried them to the Paſs of *Caleture*: their Intentions appear by the following *Ola*.

" *T'Udoculle Mandonna Apohami* makes " known to all the *Arratches*, *Laſcaryns*, and the chief *Majorals* and Colonels of *Caleture*, *Macoene*, and *Barbaryn*, " that as ſoon as this *Ola* comes to their " Hands, they ſhall not keep the leaſt " Correſpondence with the *Dutch*, nor " pay any Duties to them, from the " Villages (formerly granted to them) " or furniſh them with Laborers to work " on their Fortifications. Thoſe that " ſhall act contrary to the Tenor of this, " muſt expect to be ſeverely puniſh'd; " wherefore come and join with me.

Manoel Andrado (who ſignaliz'd himſelf before *Jafnapatnam*, of which anon) was likewiſe advertis'd by a Letter from his Brother-in-law, that the King's Forces had wounded a Woman and a Slave near the Paſs of *Caleture*, and that therefore he ſhould keep a watchful Eye over his *Laſcaryns*. About *Negumbo* they play'd the ſame Game, and *Raja Singa* had made his Addreſſes to *Patangatti*, the Colonel of *Coquicille*, in hopes by great Promiſes to bring him over to his Party. On a certain Tree near the Church of *Guia de Lobo*, was affixed the following Paper.

Baldæus.

A Paper affix'd to a Tree.

" THE City of *Columbo* is now taken, " and was according to Agreement " to be ſurrendred to his Majeſty, but " has not been perform'd; if any fatal " Conſequences attend this Breach of " Promiſe, we declare our ſelves innocent thereof: But as we are well aſſured of his Majeſty's good Inclinations " towards the *Dutch* Nation, ſo if you " intend to ſend any Deputies to treat " with him, you ſhall have Liberty ſo to " do, and a Paſsport for them.

Contents of the Letter ſent to Raja Singa.

Our General and Council finding themſelves under an abſolute Neceſſity of repreſenting to *Raja Singa* the Injuſtice of his Proceedings in a Letter, they told him, that theſe Proceedings being directly contrary to their mutual Intentions of annoying the *Portugueſes*, and conſequently tending both to his Majeſty and the Company's Prejudice, they deſir'd that all Hoſtilities might be laid aſide, and inſtead thereof their former good Correſpondence be renew'd. They deſir'd *Raja Singa* to ſend his Anſwer, and with it an Envoy, or one of his *Diſſaves*, unto whom they would deliver the Fortreſs of *Negumbo*, after the Fortifications were demoliſh'd. And to leave no room for any further Pretences, the General acquainted the Emperor, that in caſe his Majeſty would let him know what further Satisfaction he requir'd at his Hands, he would be ready to comply with his Majeſty's Demands, provided the ſame could be done without great Prejudice to the Company's Service. But that in caſe his Majeſty thought fit to perſiſt in his unjuſt Oppreſſions of the *Dutch* and others under our Juriſdiction, he proteſted and declar'd in the Preſence of God, and to all the World, that he was innocent of all the Calamities and Effuſion of Blood, that needs muſt be the Conſequences of ſuch Proceedings, which muſt oblige us (tho much againſt our Will) to have recourſe to ſuch means as God had put into our Hands for the Defence of our Subjects. With this Letter they ſent a Faulcon and a Sparrow-hawk, with a *Perſian* Faulconer, as a Preſent to the Emperor.

Advice was brought at the ſame time from *Caleture*, that the King's *Laſcaryns* were

Baldæus. were very troubleſome to our Subjects, who were forc'd to leave their Habitations for fear of being carried away, and that they had wounded ſome and purſued them to the River ſide. That the two *Aratches Cannangere* and *Pittikeri*, lay encamp'd near *Alican*, and had ſummoned the Country thereabouts to join with them within three days; that 10 of our *Laſcaryns*, and 42 Labourers ſent from *Caletture* to *Columbo*, were carried away by a Party of Vagabonds. To prevent the like for the future, and eſpecially to protect our Workmen imploy'd in the peeling of the Cinnamon (call'd *Chalias*) 200 Soldiers were order'd to *Bentot*, under the Command of *Martin Scholtes*, *Peter Chample* and *Joris Hervendonck*, who for their better Security were to be join'd by the *Laſcaryns* under the Captain of *Gale-Corle*.

Outrages committed by the Laſcaryns.

200 Men ſent againſt them.

CHAP. XLII.

A Feaſt appointed. Two Caffers *come over to us.* George Bloem *eſcapes from* Candy. *A Skirmiſh betwixt the* Dutch *and* Cingaleſes. *Robbers puniſh'd. News of the* Portugueſe *Squadron. The arrival of ſome* Dutch *Ships, their miſtake. A ſtrange Notion among the* Indians *concerning* Columbo's *being impregnable.* Negumbo *taken and retaken.*

IT being now a Month ſince the Surrender of *Columbo*, a Thankſgiving Day was appointed to give Thanks to God Almighty for this great Succeſs, and to implore his Mercy to bleſs our Arms for the future. The ſaid Day is kept ever ſince on the 12*th* of *May*.

Raja Singa's Anſwer to no purpoſe.

Raja Singa did ſend an Anſwer to the General's Letter, but ſaid ſcarce any thing in relation to the matter in hand, declaring only his ſatisfaction about the preſent, and deſiring that the *Perſian* Faulkoner might ſtay with him, which the General (to gratify the Emperor) did conſent to, at leaſt till ſuch time that the Ships ſhould be ready to return to *Gamron*. However theſe Civilities did not anſwer the end for which they were intended; *Raja Singa* ordering ſoon after his *Laſcaryns* to take all the *Dutch* they could light on Priſoners, and to cut off the Noſes and Ears of all the Negroes, *Cingaleſes*, *Moors* and *Slaves* that ſerv'd the *Hollanders*; but the 200 before-mention'd Soldiers ſtruck ſuch a Terror into the King's Forces, that they retreated back, and gave liberty at leaſt to 1000 of the Inhabitants to return to their Houſes.

Raja Singa in the mean time continued now as before his Hoſtilities, one of his Parties having lately carried away a *Duria* and two Labourers within half a League of *Columbo*, which oblig'd us to be continually upon our Guard. The *Dutch* ſtill reſiding at *Candy*, being afraid they ſhould be detain'd there againſt their will, writ to the General to haſten the departure of the *Perſian* Faulkoner with the Hawks, in hopes that thereby the King might be brought into a good humour to let them depart.

About the ſame time a certain Meſſenger named *Chitty Maley* came to *Columbo* with ſome Hawks and other Preſents for the Emperor; ſix Hawks more with their Faulkoners were alſo brought from the Coaſt of *Coromandel* for the ſame purpoſe.

Two Caffers come over to us.

The 20*th* of *July* two *Caffers* came over to us, one whereof having been the King's Trumpeter, the other a Drummer, they reported that his Majeſty continued ſtill in his Camp at *Reygamwatte*, but intended ſhortly to break up for *Ruanelle*, the *Diſſave* of *Matule* having been ſent before already to take care of the High-ways through which they were to paſs. They further told us, that the Emperor having granted to divers *Portugueſes* certain goodly Villages, this had created ill Blood among the Courtiers.

Our Interpreter eſcapes from the Camp of the Emperor.

Our Interpreter *George Bloem* was forced to continue there till he found means to make his eſcape in the night-time from the Camp of *Reygamwatte*, by means of a *Tony* or Boat, wherewith he got to *Montual*, having deceiv'd his Guards by giving them a good doſe of ſtrong Liquors. Five other *Dutch* Men who had deſerted our Service continued with the King at Court.

News was brought at the ſame time, that ſome of the King's Forces having got Intelligence that Mr. *Rabel* a brave *Cingaleſe*, a Native of *Mature* in our

* Service,

Service, was abſent from *Hakman* with a Serjeant and moſt of the Soldiers, having left only a Guard of 10 *Europeans* and 15 *Laſcaryns* in the place, they to the number of 100 Men attack'd them on a ſudden, in hopes to carry the Place by ſurprize, but were notwithſtanding ſo hotly receiv'd, that they were glad to retire.

The Cingalēſes in vain attack'd.

Things began thus to grow worſe and worſe, without hopes of Amendment, becauſe we were frequently bit by our own Dogs, I mean the perfidious *Cingaleſes* under our Juriſdiction, who gave conſtant Intelligence of all our Deſigns, ſo that we could not ſend abroad the ſmalleſt Party but the Enemy had beforehand notice thereof; whereas we could never diſcover the leaſt of their Intentions, of which we were ſufficiently convinc'd by divers intercepted Letters.

The King's Forces having ſurpriz'd a Serjeant named *Peter Johnſon*, a Native of *Dantzick*, with ſome Inhabitants of the Country, and four Soldiers Wives, they carried them before the *Diſſave* of the ſeven *Corles*, who told them, that they had been long enough in the *Dutch* Service, and muſt reſolve now to be his Majeſty's Slaves.

Two Robbers puniſh'd.

The 2*d* of *Auguſt* we receiv'd a Letter from *Laurence Haurwyk* our Under-Factor at *Caleture*, that ſeveral Robbers had been ſeen about *Boemboele*, who had cut down the Fruits of the Earth; that *Andrado* being ſent after them with ſome *Laſcaryns*, had met only with two of them, who refuſing obſtinately to confeſs by whom they were ſent out to cut down the Rice, they had cut off their Heads, and ſet them upon Poles near the place where they had ſpoiled the Rice.

The 13*th* of *Auguſt* being Sunday, the Yacht call'd the *Columbo* came into our Road, having left *Tutecoryn* the 11*th*: ſhe brought Letters from the Commodore to the General, intimating that the Enemy's Squadron compos'd of 15 Frigats had eſcap'd his hands the 7*th* of *July*, taking the opportunity of the Night, and the advantage of the Flats betwixt the Iſles; that they were purſued by our Ships as far as *Pambanaar*, which could not come up with them by reaſon of the Sands. He further told him, that ſuſpecting the *Teuver* or Governor of the Country to have been corrupted with Mony, and to have given them a free Paſſage betwixt *Manaar* and *Jafnapatnam* (which he commands by either laying in or removing certain Stones from the entrance thereof) he had been oblig'd to return to *Tutecoryn*.

The Portugueſe Squadron gets clear of the Dutch.

We had at the ſame time advice of the arrival of our Ships, the *Amſterdam*, the *Avenhorn*, *Saphir*, *Haddock*, *Workum*, *Pelican*, *Patience*, and *Black Bull*, upon the Coaſt of *Coromandel*: But it was no ſmall Mortification unto us, that the *Saphir* (contrary to the General of *Ceylon*'s Orders) had left the Priſoners and *Portugueſe* Soldiers (who according to the Articles of Surrender were to have been carried to *Batavia*) aſhore near *Negapatnam*, and that ſhe had not touch'd in the Southern Harbours, where there was a conſiderable Cargo of Clothes and other Commodities ready, which could not be diſpos'd of otherwiſe; and by the firſt overſight the Enemy had been reinforc'd with 80 brave Soldiers contrary to the intention of the Agreement.

Baldæus.

Overſight of the Ship the Saphir.

We had at the ſame time Letters from the Factor *Adrian van Newland*, dated in the *Daniſh* Fort call'd *Tranguebare*, whereby we underſtood that the before-mentioned *Portugueſe* Frigats were paſs'd through the Straits (by the aſſiſtance of the Governor) to *Jafnapatnam*, from whence *Anthony Amiral de Meneſes* (afterwards kill'd by one of our Cannon-balls near *Manaar*) had ſent his Forces in Boats to *Negapatnam*, in order to gather a Body (at the requeſt of *Rajá Singa*) in thoſe parts, which, as the caſe then ſtood, might have prov'd very dangerous to us, had not God through his Mercy prevented their Deſigns.

During all theſe Troubles, our General kept a watchful Eye upon the Enemy's Motions, and order'd Mr. *John van der Laan* with 300 Men to ſcour the Country. Theſe Differences continued for a conſiderable time, *viz.* to the year 1665. and tho ſome glimpſes of Peace appear'd at certain Intervals, yet is it certain that *Rajá Singa* is not reconcil'd to us to this day, and perhaps never will whilſt he lives.

We have hitherto treated of *Columbo*; we now will paſs the River at *Montual*, and take our courſe higher up to *Negumbo*. But before we come thither, I can't forbear to ſay a word or two concerning the general Opinion of the *Indians*, *viz.* That *Columbo* was imgregnable. Hence it was that the *Portugueſes* boaſted in all places, that the King of *Portugal* and Viceroy of *Goa* would never ſuffer ſo ſtrong a Fortreſs to fall into the hands of the Hereticks, eſpecially after we were repulſed in the firſt general Aſſault. I happen'd to be then at *Macaſſar*, where the *Portugueſe* Father ſome Miſſionaries lately come fro

Opinion concerning the ſtrength of Columbo.

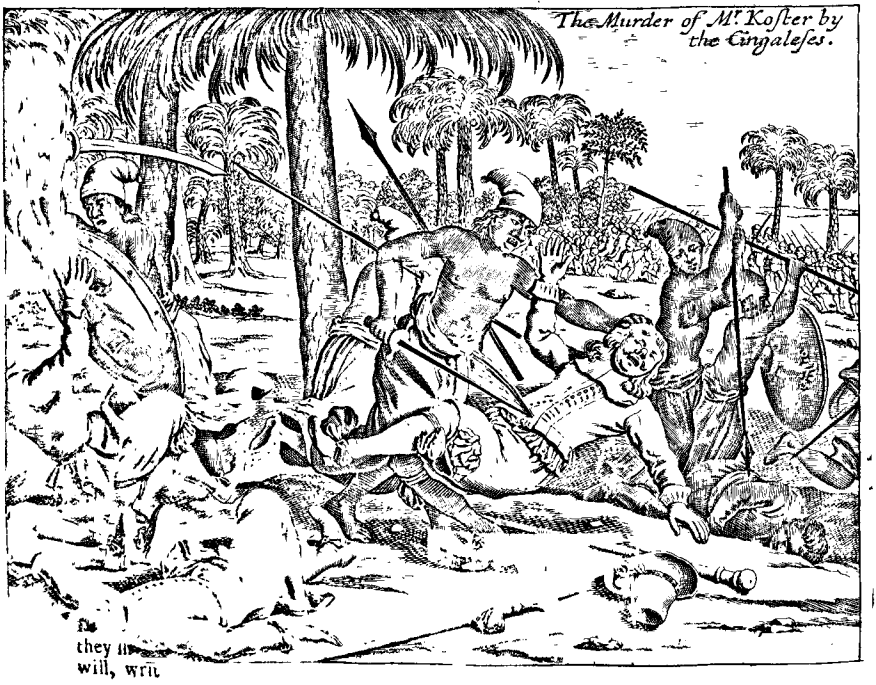
uſed to make this Siege their Sport; and *Baldæus.* one *Franciſco Viero*, one of the richeſt Merchants in the *Indies*, offer'd to lay vaſt Wagers that it was not taken by the *Hollanders*.

The King of *Celebes* and *Macaſſar* (the Capital City of that Iſle) had the ſame opinion concerning the Strength of *Columbo*, he and moſt of his Courtiers being much inclin'd to the *Portugueſe* ſide. But within three Months, juſt at my return to *Batavia* (after the Concluſion of the Peace betwixt us and the King of *Macaſſar*) we had the News of the Surrender of *Columbo*, brought to *Batavia* by *Peter Bitter*, to the general ſatisfaction of the People.

But after this Digreſſion it is time to come to *Negumbo*, which lies about two Leagues and a half, or five good hours walking along the Banks of the River to the North. I am not able to tell you the exact time of its beginning, the *Portugueſe* Hiſtorians being ſilent as to this Point, being no more than a Fort built for the conveniency of protecting the Country, which abounds in Cinnamon.

I told you before, how *Adam Weſterwold* made himſelf Maſter of *Batecalo*: After which *Anthony Caan* took 1639. the Fort of *Trinquenemale*, the moſt ſpacious Harbour on the Eaſt-ſide of *Ceylon*. *Philip Lucas* the *Dutch* Director-General in the *Indies* took *Negumbo* the firſt time *Feb.* 9. 1640. and ſoon after (as has been told before, *viz.* 13 *March* following) our Commodore *William Jacob Koſter* took *Gale* by Storm, but was afterwards treacherouſly murder'd by ſome of *Raja*'s People with four of his Guards.

For the ſaid Mr. *Koſter* coming to *Candy* in Perſon, was detain'd there with vain Promiſes, without the leaſt probability of ſucceſs, till growing impatient he began to utter Threats and very harſh Words (a great piece of Imprudence) againſt ſome of the Great Ones at Court; which coming to *Raja*'s Ears, he was diſmiſs'd without the uſual marks of Honour, and conducted towards *Batecalo*, but murder'd by the way by the *Cingaleſes* his Conducters. This was the Reward beſtow'd by *Raja* upon *Koſter*, who had reduc'd *Trinquenemale*, *Gale* and *Mature*, with all the Countries thereunto belonging, to his Juriſdiction. *Mr. Koſter treacherouſly murder'd.*



The Murder of Mr. Koſter by the Cingaleſes.

they will, writ

•Certain

NEGUMBO

Certain it is, had *Raja* been ſincere, we might with his Aſſiſtance eaſily have made our ſelves Maſters at that Juncture of *Columbo*, when all their regular Forces being ſent to the Relief of *Gale*, there were but a few old Soldiers, Prieſts and Citizens left for the defence of the Place. But *Raja* thought it better to play the Trimmer betwixt two *European* Nations, than to be in danger of being conquer'd by one, and ſo thought it his beſt way to give Opportunity to the *Portugueſes* to recover a little Breath.

For the *Portugueſes* having received a ſtrong Reinforcement from *Goa*, found means to regain the Fort of *Negumbo*; which done, they ſat down before *Gale*, but were bravely entertain'd by *John Thyſſen*, who gave them many a Bruſh; *Raja Singa* ſitting all this while by like a Spectator, tho the *Portugueſes* remain'd Maſters of all the *Low-Lands*, tho we deliver'd *Batecalo* into his Hands, and made much greater Offers by *Peter Borrel* our Ambaſſador. Things continued in the ſame State till the Year 1644, at the beginning whereof *Francis Caron* took *Negumbo* from the *Portugueſes* a ſecond time, and having ſtrengthen'd it with four new Baſtions of Earth, ſurrounded with ſtrong Palliſadoes, left a Gariſon of 500 Men there for its Guard. After the Departure of our Fleet, and ſome Detachments ſent to *Gale*, and other Places, *Don Philippo Maſcarenhas* made an Attempt upon the Place, but being bravely repuls'd, was glad to retire in confuſion to *Columbo*. It was about this time that Mr. *John Maatzuyker* (now Governor-General of the *Dutch Eaſt-Indies*) coming to *Goa*, enter'd into a Treaty with the *Portugueſe* Viceroy, *John de Silva Telles de Menezes*, Earl of *Aveiras*, concerning the Limits betwixt both Nations in the Iſle of *Ceylon*; which being brought to a Concluſion 1645, the ſaid Mr. *Maatzuyker* remain'd in thoſe Parts, in the Quality of Governor of *Puntegale*.

Baldæus.

Negumbo taken a ſecond time by the Dutch.

The Portugueſes attempt in vain to recover it.

CHAP. XLIII.

Raja Singa *treats underhand with the* Portugueſes, *his tame Elephants detained.* Raja *declares againſt the* Portugueſes. *The* Dutch *loſe* Angretotte. *Both the* Portugueſes *and* Dutch *are reinforced. Engagement near* Tiboene. Caleture *deſerted.* Portugueſes *worſted both by Sea and Land.* Manaar *taken.*

Raja ſides with the Portugueſes.

His Elephants ſeized.

RAJA *Singa* at the Inſtigation of the *Portugueſes* being grown very jealous of the *Dutch* being in poſſeſſion of the 7 *Corles*, conniv'd at the Robberies that were committed in thoſe Parts by his People, which at laſt obliged Mr. *John Thyſſen* to proclaim open War againſt them; and accordingly *Nicholas Jacobſon Overſchie*, Governor of *Negumbo*, and Overſeer of the *Dutch* Limits (who died afterwards at *Voorburgh*) cauſed all the King's tame Elephants to be ſeiz'd, which ſo exaſperated his Majeſty, that he drew all his Forces together and entered the ſeven *Corles*, where our People had the worſt of it, becauſe they ſurrendred without being reduc'd to the utmoſt Extremity. However after the return of Mr. *Maatzuyker*, *Negumbo*, *Gale-Corle*, and *Mature*, with the Countries thereunto belonging, were ſoon ſecur'd againſt all further Attempts; the Cinnamon was gather'd and peel'd as before, the wild Elephants tam'd, and every thing elſe ſettled for the Advantage of our Company: nay *Raja Singa* himſelf was appeas'd, who retreated with his Forces, tho without doing any harm to the *Portugueſes*, an infallible Sign that there was no ill Underſtanding betwixt them.

Matters thus continu'd till 1649, when Mr. *Maatzuyker* redeem'd all our Priſoners, and by a Meſſenger ſent with ſome Preſents, brought matters to an honourable Compoſition. In the beginning of the Year 1650, Mr. *Rampot* left *Gale* and *Mature*, to the great Diſſatisfaction of *Raja Singa*, who however was ſo far from breaking with us upon that account, that when we entred into a War with the *Portugueſes*, 1652. *Raja* declar'd againſt them, laying hold of the Opportunity that preſented it ſelf, by a late Mutiny among the *Portugueſe* Soldiers and chief Inhabitants of *Columbo*, rais'd againſt *Manoel Maſcarenhas Homem* their Governor, whom they had taken into Cuſtody.

Mutiny at Columbo againſt their Governor.

Theſe Mutineers having gather'd what Forces they were able near *Columbo*,

march'd on a ſudden with 800 *European* Soldiers and as many Negroes towards our Fort of *Angretotte*, which they oblig'd to a Surrender the 8*th* of *Jan.* 1653. after a Siege of 11 Days, in which they loſt a conſiderable Number of Men; 98 *Germans*, 24 *Javaneſes*, and a greater Number of *Laſcaryns* were made Priſoners of War, under condition that they ſhould be diſmiſs'd for a reaſonable Ranſom. The ſame Afternoon a Body of 300 Men were ſent to their Relief, who happen'd to come too late; tho as the caſe ſtood, their Endeavours would have prov'd in vain, conſidering the Enemy was twice as ſtrong and advantageouſly poſted; and we had not come off at ſo cheap a rate, had not *Raja Singa* given the Enemy a ſtrong Diverſion near *Cottegore*, whereabouts they attack'd the Paſs near *Columbo* with ſuch Vigour, that the Governor and Deputy-Governor were glad to ſend for their Forces from *Reygam* and *Paſdum-Corle* to oppoſe the Imperialiſts. Theſe were no ſooner retreated, but the *Portugueſes* attack'd our Outguards near *Negumbo*, and poſſeſs'd themſelves of the 4 and 7 *Corles*: But *Raja Singa* rallying his Forces, march'd from *Ouva* to *Saffragam* (the Capital City of the five *Corles*) the *Portugueſe Diſſave* was glad to retreat with his Forces to *Gurbeville*, and thereby gave us Opportunity to join our Forces, and ſecure the Countries of *Gale* and *Mature*.

Angretotte taken by the Dutch.

Raja makes a Diverſion in favour of the Dutch.

In the mean while, *viz.* the 10*th* of *May*, the *Portugueſes* in *Columbo* receiv'd a Reinforcement of 12 Frigates, with a good number of Officers and Soldiers from *Goa*, under the Command of *Franciſco de Melo de Caſtro*; our Cruizers being ſcarce two days before (to our great Misfortune) forc'd to retreat from their Stations by ſtreſs of Weather into the Harbour of *Gale*. Notwithſtanding which, they made no conſiderable Attempt againſt us, being contented to ſecure only their Workmen employ'd in peeling of the Cinnamon, and other Inhabitants of the Country againſt our Parties.

The Portugueſes are reinforc'd.

Raja Singa finding that in 1653 in *September*, the *Portugueſes* had receiv'd a freſh Supply from *Tutecoryn*, whereas our four Ships did not bring one ſingle Soldier to relieve the reſt; that our Governor *Jacob van Kittenſtein* had obtain'd leave to depart; and that when Commiſſary *Rijklof van Goens* touch'd with his four Ships towards the latter end of *October* in *Ceylon*, in his way to *Perſia* and *Suratte*, without bringing us the leaſt Succours, he retreated with his half ſtarved tatter'd Troops from *Caravanella*, thro the 7 and 4 *Corles* to *Candy*, to refreſh themſelves.

The *Portugueſes* finding themſelves ſecure on that ſide, did appear with all the Forces they could bring into the Field before *Columbo*, in hopes of drawing our Forces out of the Fort; but finding themſelves fruſtrated in their hopes, they retreated in the beginning of 1654, towards *Reygam* and *Paſdum-Corle*, whence they ſent frequent Parties to take away our Cattel, and to ſpoil the Fruits of the Earth. But Major *John van der Laan* was always at hand with a good Body to obſerve them.

The 20*th* of *March* our Governor *Adrian van der Meyden*, marched from *Gale* to *Caleture*; and being join'd there the 23*d* by all his Forces, he follow'd the *Portugueſes* thro *Berberin*, *Dodangodde*, and *Tiboen*, where he attack'd them the 26*th* in the Morning, in their advantageous Poſt: the Engagement was very fierce for a whole Hour, when our Forces feign'd a Retreat, in hopes to draw the Enemy from his Poſt, but they were too wiſe to follow us; they had more Men ſlain on their ſide than we. After our Forces had refreſh'd themſelves a little while at *Tiboen*, we march'd to *Caleture*, and the Enemy retreated out of our Dominions croſs the River to *Columbo*.

An Engagement betwixt the Portugueſes and Dutch.

Soon after 5 Galeons with 1000 *Portugueſe* Landmen aboard them, arriving upon our Coaſt, engag'd three of our Yachts call'd the *Greyhound*, the *Rhinoceros*, and *Dromedary*, and purſu'd them to the Flats of *Negumbo*, but took none of them, our Veſſels retiring under the Cannon there, and the *Portugueſes* to *Columbo*, having loſt their Captain-Major, and many others in this Engagement.

5 Portugueſe Gallies engage 3 Dutch Veſſels.

A Council being call'd to conſult what to do in this Emergency, it was reſolv'd to leave *Caleture*, and to employ our whole Force in the defence of *Negumbo*, without which we were not in a condition to maintain that Fortreſs, which was of the greateſt conſequence to us. Accordingly *Negumbo* being well provided with what Forces we were able to gather, the Enemy (whoſe Forces were conſiderably encreas'd by the late Reinforcements) march'd from *Galkiſſe* to *Caleture*, and thence to *Alicaon*, where they pitch'd their Tents; to oppoſe which we brought into the Field about 200 *Europeans*, 80 *Javaneſes*, and a good Number of *Laſcaryns*, wherewith we made a ſhift to defend our Country as well as we could.

About

Van Goens beats the Galeons. About this time Commiſſary *van Goens* in his return from *Perſia* and *Suratte* to *Ceylon*, had the good Fortune to beat the Galeons near the Cape *du Ramos*, and thereby to releaſe 20 of our People made Priſoners at *Angretotte*, who were ſet aſhore at *Puntegale*. This was the reaſon that the *Portugueſes* could not ſpare many Men for the uſe of their Frigates, having ſuſtain'd a conſiderable Loſs of them in the late Engagement with Mr. *van Goens*, near *Achiera*; neither were they ſo active in the Field till the enſuing *July*, when we having receiv'd ſome Reinforcements, appointed our Rendevouz at *Bentotte*, in ſight of the Enemy, having only a River betwixt us and them. We kill'd the *Portugueſes* about 30 *Europeans* in divers Skirmiſhes, and took from them divers Boats, which made them not ſo eager afterwards to attack our Countries, in order to ſpoil our Cinnamon and *Areck* Harveſt, and the taking of Elephants, wherein conſiſts the chief Revenue of this Iſle, belonging to our Company.

Some Supplies brought to the Dutch. The 13*th* of *Septemb.* the Yachts the *Turtle-Dove*, the *Red-Lyon* and the *Haddock*, arriv'd with freſh Supplies and 50 Soldiers. The 4*th* of *Decemb.* the Yacht the *Kanien* brought us a Supply of 54 Soldiers more; beſides which, 159 Seamen were taken out of four Ships (come with the Director *Henry van Gent* into *Gale*, to provide themſelves with freſh Water) all which being join'd with our Forces encamp'd at *Bentotte*, we embarked the 16*th* of *Decemb.* all our Forces, 690 ſtrong (including Officers) compoſed of Seamen, Land-Soldiers, *Javaneſes* and *Cingaleſes*, in 20 *Catapaneels* or Land-Boats, and thus paſſed the River *Alicaon*.

The Dutch *paſs the River Alicaon.*

But ſcarce had we reach'd the oppoſite Bank of the River, but we met with ſo warm a Reception from 300 choſen *Portugueſes*, and ſome *Topaſſes* and *Cingaleſes*, that moſt of our *Indian* Forces betook themſelves to their Heels; but being rallied again upon the Bank of the River, return'd to the Charge; and being bravely ſeconded by the reſt, forced the Enemy to retreat, leaving one of their Cannon of 1000 Pounds Weight behind them, 60 ſlain, and many more wounded. They behaved themſelves bravely, but were forc'd after this Defeat to retire by the way of *Malvane* to *Columbo*.

Beat the Portugueſes.

The *Portugueſes* finding us not ready to attack *Caleture* (after they had given the uſual Pay to the Soldiers) they broke up in the beginning of 1655, and ſurpriz'd *Raja*'s Forces, under the Command of the *Diſſave* of the four *Corles*; and being reinforced by ſome other Forces from *Jafnapatnam* and *Manaar*, beſides a good Number of *Laſcaryns*, they purſued the *Diſſave* of the ſeven *Corles*, as far as to the Straits of *Candy*, plundring all the Country thro which they paſſed: which ſo exaſperated the King, that he order'd all his Forces to appear in the Field; but his Van being routed in *April* near *Attapitin* by *Caſpar Figeiro*, the King quitted the Field full of Diſſatisfaction.

Baldæus.

Raja's Troops routed.

It happen'd to our good Fortune, that the new Governor and *Portugueſe* Admiral, *Anthonio de Souza Coutinho* (under whoſe Government *Columbo* was loſt) coming with 8 Frigates and 500 Landmen into theſe Parts, was the 18*th* of *May* forc'd towards the Coaſt of *Gale*: We ſent out two Yachts, *viz.* the *Lyon* and *Kanien*, who coming up with them, took two with all the Men and Proviſions, and forc'd two more aſhore; ſo that no more than two or three of them got ſafe to *Columbo*, and *Coutinho* himſelf was forc'd to take his Courſe round the Point *das Pedras* to *Jafnapatnam* and *Manaar*, from whence he came with a good Troop by the way of *Putelaon*, *Calpentyn*, and the ſeven *Corles*; in *Auguſt* to *Columbo*, where he was no ſooner eſtabliſh'd in his Dignity, but he viſited with *Anthonio Mendes d' Arangie* the Fort of *Caleture*, where he left a Gariſon of 300 *Europeans*, and a good Number of Negroes, but reſolv'd to keep *Caſpar Figeiro* near his Perſon.

The Portugueſes *routed at Sea.*

By that time the Director-General *Gerard Hulſt* came in Company of Mr. *John van der Laan* (a Perſon well verſed in the Affairs of *Ceylon*) into thoſe parts. About the middle of *Septemb.* three Yachts were diſpatch'd from Cape *Comoryn*, in order to obſerve the Frigates ſent from *Columbo* to *Tutecoryn* for Proviſions, and either to take them or to block them up betwixt the Iſlands. It was alſo reſolved to force the *Portugueſes* to quit *Caleture*, whilſt the Enemy were yet under apprehenſion of the Strength of the Forces come alongwith the Director-General, and lately landed at *Negumbo*, from whence he intended to give the Enemy a Viſit on the other ſide of the River at *Montual*.

However the *Portugueſe* Squadron, conſiſting of 20 Frigates and ſome Barks, loaden with all ſorts of Neceſſaries at *Jafnapatnam*, and ſome other Places on the *Indian* Coaſt, made ſhift to paſs by with full Sails within ſight of *Negumbo* (where our Ships lay at anchor) and to our

our ſignal Regret got into *Columbo*. Mr. *Hulſt* receiv'd at the ſame time Advice by a ſmall Advice-boat, that a new Vice-roy was arriv'd at *Goa* with three Galeons, one Yacht, and a good Number of Land-men. A Council being call'd, it was thought convenient to try whether theſe Galeons might not be ſurpriz'd near *Marmagon* or *Agoada* (two Caſtles in the Bay of *Goa*) At the ſame time Mr. *Hulſt* came with four Ships and a good Number of Soldiers before *Berberyn*, where having landed and join'd his Forces with the reſt the 28*th* of *Septemb.* he ſoon after made himſelf Maſter of *Caleture*, an account whereof has been given before.

Baldæus. *A new Viceroy comes to Goa with ſome Galeons.*

But it is time to leave *Negumbo*, provided with a good Gariſon (firſt by Major *John van der Laan*, and afterwards by the Head Factor *Edward Hauw*) and to go towards *Manaar*. In the Year 1661. I undertook a Journy over Land from *Jafnapatnam* to *Columbo*, 49 or 50 Leagues diſtant from one another, which I accompliſh'd in ſeven Days.

Diſtance betwixt Jafnapatnam and Columbo.

From *Negumbo* you travel by the way of *Cajuel*, to the River *Chilauw*, and ſo thro the Countries of *Madampe* and *Putelam*, leaving the Iſle of *Calpentyn* to the left; then thro *Aripou* (where the Chriſtians have a Church) to *Manaar*, thence to *Wannias*, the Church of *Mantotte*, and ſo to *Jafnapatnam*, of which more hereafter. We made this Obſervation in this Journy, that no Cinnamon grows, except on the other ſide of the River *Chilauw*, and beyond *Jafnapatnam*. For the reſt, all theſe before-mention'd Countries have a very fruitful Soil (except *Calpentyn*, which is ſomewhat barren) eſpecially about *Madampe*, but are deſtitute of Inhabitants: The Bufflers feeding here in vaſt Herds, which makes me believe that it would afford plenty of every thing were it well cultivated.

Goodneſs of theſe Countries.

We will now proceed to give you ſome account of the Iſle of *Manaar*, which formerly adhered to the Continent, as ſufficiently appears by the Sand Bank, called *Adams-Bridg*. Next unto this lies the Iſle of *Rammanakoyel*, where is to be ſeen a rich and famous *Pagode*, belonging to the *Tewver* or Governor, who has a Fort on the Continent. At certain Seaſons there is a Paſſage with ſmall Boats, thro ſome Depths of this *Adams-Bridg*, one whereof I had once occaſion to paſs my ſelf.

The ſaid Iſle was reduced by the *Hollanders*, 1658. in the following manner, by Mr. *Rijklof van Goens*. The *Portugueſes* had made Entrenchments all along the Shore, which were defended by 1000 choſen Men and 12 Frigates, to hinder the Approach of our Boats. Our great Ships were order'd to advance as near as they could, under favour of which our Boats landed the Men. Serjeant *Henry van Wel* (ſince a Lieutenant) was the firſt who ſet foot on ſhore; and being bravely follow'd by the reſt, were as courageouſly receiv'd by the *Portugueſes*, who did all that Men could do to ſecond their Comrades; but our Cannon from the Ships, together with our ſmall Arms, made ſuch a Havock among them, that they were forc'd to quit their Entrenchments. Here it was that *Antonio Amiral de Menezes*, the *Portugueſe* General, loſt his Life by a Cannon-Bullet, and *Anthonio Mendes d' Arangie*, a famous Soldier, was mortally wounded, with many other brave Officers.

The Iſle of Manaar taken by the Dutch.

On our ſide we loſt an Enſign, and before our Landing (when the Long-boat of the Ship *Naarden* was taken) the brave Lieutenant *Block*, which we return'd 'em with full meaſure; all their Frigates, as they paſſed by our Squadron, being either ſunk or taken, with a great Slaughter of their Men. Major *John van der Laan* (tho he had a heavy Fall before our Landing, being a very large and fat Perſon) did nevertheleſs behave himſelf upon this Occaſion with incredible Bravery, breaking thro the thickeſt of the Ranks of the Enemy, whereby he made good the Title beſtow'd upon him long before, of being *the Terror of the* Portugueſes.

After this defeat, the *Portugueſes* not thinking themſelves ſecure in the Fort *Manaar*, retir'd over the Water to *Jafnapatnam*, leaving only *Andrew Villoſa* with a very moderate Force in the Caſtle of S. *George*. They would not have eſcaped our Hands at ſo cheap a rate, had we not been ſtop'd by the great Rains and Tempeſts.

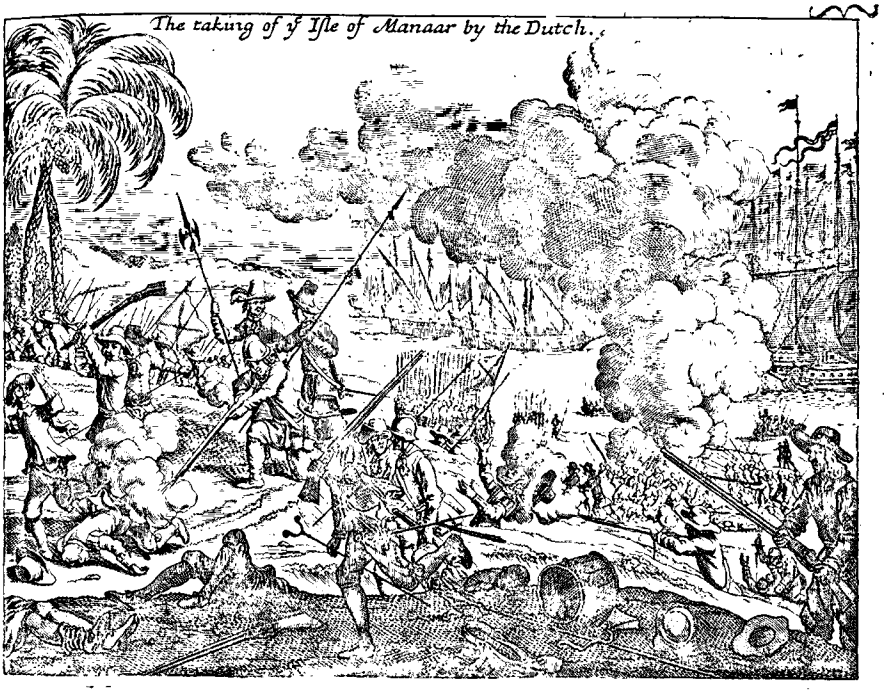
Portugueſes leave the Fort Manaar.

The 22*d Andrew Villoſa* being deſerted by moſt of his Men, was oblig'd to ſurrender the Caſtle of St. *George* upon reaſonable Terms. We took about 200 Priſoners, both *Europeans* and Negroes, and among them a *Caffer* (or *African* Negro) who pretending to be a Captain, was ſo ſtubborn, that he would not take up his Arms or ariſe from the Ground (as he was commanded to do) without a good Baſtinado.

S. George ſurrendred.

The 24*th* of *Febr.* I preach'd the Thankſgiving-Sermon in the great Church upon the Text of 1 *Sam.* 7. 7. for the moſt fortunate Reduction of this Iſle, whereof our General might ſay with *Cæſar*,

Baldæus.



far, *Veni*, *vidi*, *vici*, being beyond all queſtion one of the greateſt Actions that ever happen'd betwixt us and the *Portugueſes* in the *Indies*, conſidering we were forc'd to attack the Enemies Forces, compoſed of Veteran *European* Soldiers, and to chaſe them from their advantageous Poſts, and that only with 800 Men, and conſequently with the utmoſt hazard; being reſolv'd either to overcome or die in the Attempt, becauſe we had quite drain'd the Gariſon of *Columbo*, leaving only a few, and thoſe infirm Perſons to guard that Place, becauſe we expected hourly the Arrival of the Ship the *Salamandar* with ſome 100 Soldiers, and good Store of Ammunition and Proviſion, having aboard the Commodore *Peter de Bitter*, the Factor *Edward Ooms*, and Captain *Peter Waſch*. The ſame having been detained by Calms and Tempeſts for near ſix Months, and endur'd great Hardſhips about the *Maldive* Iſlands, arriv'd at laſt ſafely at *Columbo*, but was ſoon after order'd by the Governor *Adrian van der Meyden*, to ſail to *Manaar*, where ſhe came to an Anchor immediately after we had made our ſelves Maſters of that Iſle, and were juſt then preparing to march towards *Jafnapatnam*. But before we leave *Manaar*, we muſt add ſomething concerning the true Condition of this Iſland.

The Salamandar brings a Supply of Men and Proviſions.

CHAP.

Baldæus.

CHAP. XLIV.

A Description of Manaar. *How the Christian Religion was planted, and might be further promoted there. A Description of the Country of the* Wannias. *Our March towards* Jafnapatnam. *We pass the River; rout the* Portugueses, *and take the Water-Fort.*

Manaar whence it has its Name.

MAnaar derives its Name from the *Malabar* Language, from the word *Man*, i. e. *Sand*, and *Aar* a *River*, signifying as much as a *Sand-River*; it being observable, that both the *Cingalese* and *Malabar* Languages are spoken in the Isle of *Ceylon*. The first is used beyond *Negumbo*, viz. at *Columbo*, *Caleture*, *Berberyn*, *Aican*, *Gale*, *Belligamme*, *Mature*, *Dondere*, &c. But in all the other parts of this Isle opposite to the Coast of *Coromandel*, and all along the Bay, they speak the *Malabar* Tongue; whence it seems very probable, that that Tract of Land (as the Inhabitants of *Jafnapatnam* themselves believe) was first of all peopled by those of *Coromandel*, who brought their Language along with them; it being certain that in the Inland Countries about *Candy*, *Vintane*, *Ballaney*, &c. they speak only *Cingalese*.

The Cingalese and Malabar Tongue used in Ceylon.

Situation of Manaar.

The Isle of *Manaar* is situate at 9 deg. of Northern Latitude, its length being about two and a half *German* Leagues, and one broad, including the Salt-water River (as you will see in the Map) which reaches as far as the great Church call'd *Carcel*. The Castle is seated upon a Canal able to bear small Yachts, which draw 3, 4, or 5 foot Water, and can go from thence to *Jafnapatnam*. This Castle was strengthened with some additional Fortifications, and surrounded with a deep Ditch, after we had taken it from the *Portugueses*. The whole Isle has no more than seven Churches, unto each whereof belong divers considerable Villages: The first is the *City Church*, next that call'd *Tottavaly*, then *Carcel*, *Erkelampatti*, S. *Peter*'s Church belonging to the Fishermen; *Peixale*, and the last *Tillemanaar*, lying at the furthermost, and near the Sea-side.

Its Churches.

This Island was formerly celebrated for the *Pearl Fishery*, as well as the City of *Tutecoryn*; but no Pearls having been taken there for these 10 years last past, the Inhabitants are reduc'd to great Poverty; whereas the sumptuous Edifices, Churches and Monasteries, with their Ornaments, are sufficient Demonstrations of its former Grandure.

Pearl fishery at Manaar.

In the year 1666. (after my departure) our Company order'd the first time the Pearl-fishery to be renew'd again, with no ill success; and according to several Letters I have receiv'd from thence, they took a considerable quantity of Pearls, the second time, in the year 1669.

The Inhabitants of *Manaar* speak (besides the *Malabar*) most generally *Portuguese*, being long ago converted to the Christian Faith, for which reason they have suffer'd most cruel Persecutions from the Kings of *Jafnapatnam*, who baptiz'd many of the new converted Christians with Blood, after they had receiv'd the Baptism with Water. Many of them fled for this reason to *Goa* by Land, being above 100 Leagues, and among them a young Gentleman of Royal Extraction, who embrac'd Christianity there.

The Inhabitants of Manaar speak also Portuguese.

Persecution of the Christians in Manaar.

It was *Franciscus Xaverius* who converted the Inhabitants here, as well as those on the Cape *Comoryn* and the *Paruas*, as we have told you before in the Description of the *Indian* Coast, and in the account of his Life. The said *Xaverius* establish'd among them certain Teachers call'd *Canacappels*, who were to instruct the Inhabitants in the first Rudiments of the Christian Religion, as the Ten Commandments, the Creed, Our Father, &c. which they did with indefatigable Care and Industry: These were succeeded by the Jesuits (call'd *Paulites* here, because they were sent into the *Indies* by Pope *Paul* III.) who in their way of teaching both the old and young ones, did far exceed the *Franciscans*, and all other Orders among the *Romanists*. And I am very free to confess, that I have frequently follow'd their Footsteps in reforming the Churches and Schools in *Manaar* and *Jafnapatnam*, as far as they were consistent with our Religion, and consonant to the Genius of these Nations. It being absolutely necessary, that he who undertakes this task should be well acquainted with the method to be used among these People in the Infancy of their Conversion, intricate Questions and Mysteries being more apt to confound than to instruct them: For which reason it is most proper to teach them the naked Truth of the Gospel in as few Points as possibly can be done (the

What Method is most proper for the Conversion of these Nations.

Youth

The Island of Manaer.

Youth being very apt to retain here what they have been told) to catechiſe frequently the young ones in the preſence of their Parents, thereby to excite in them a laudable Emulation to follow their Footſteps. St. *Paul* himſelf leads us the way, when he ſays, that you muſt firſt lay the Foundation of the Doctrine of Chriſt, before you can raiſe the Edifice of the Church.

It is alſo abſolutely requiſite, that the ſame Catechiſm that has been at firſt introduc'd among the Native Chriſtians ſhould be retain'd without any alteration, which, as it would over-charge their Memory, ſo it would breed nothing but Confuſion inſtead of Profit. It was for this reaſon, that when by order from the ſupreme Magiſtrates, the Reformation of theſe Churches was committed to my care, I reduc'd the chief Points of the Chriſtian Doctrine into Queſtions and Anſwers, which were afterwards introduc'd into the Churches of *Jafnapatnam*, *Manaar*, *Gale*, *Columbo*, *Negumbo* and *Mature*, and receiv'd by the ſucceeding Miniſters, by ſpecial Command from the General and Council of the *Indies*, and the Governor of theſe places; and were afterwards confirm'd by the General Aſſembly of the Clergy of *Ceylon* held at *Columbo* 1659. from the 24*th* of *February* till the 3*d* of *March*.

The Catechiſm once introduc'd among the Natives, muſt not be alter'd.

They had had enough of the Miſchiefs that enſued upon theſe Alterations, introduced by new Miniſters into the Iſle of *Formoſa*, who inſtead of following the footſteps of *Robert Junius* and *George Candius* (Miniſters of the Goſpel there) would introduce certain Novelties. I found it alſo abſolutely neceſſary to have theſe Queſtions and Anſwers put, not only in the *Portugueſe* but alſo in the *Malabar* Tongue, ſeveral Copies whereof were ſent to our Brethren at *Columbo*, *Gale* and *Negapatnam*.

It is beyond all diſpute that the *Low-Dutch* Tongue is not ſo proper to propagate our Religion here as the *Malabar* and *Portugueſe*; and conſequently, that the Miniſters of the Goſpel ſent into thoſe parts ſhould rather apply themſelves to theſe Languages, than to impoſe their own upon the new Converts, which always meets with great difficulty, and can't be introduc'd without vaſt Trouble and Charges: beſides, that it is much more reaſonable one Man ſhould accommodate himſelf to many, than theſe to one Man. It is furthermore requiſite, that as the Miniſters ought to pay all due Reſpect to the Magiſtrates, ſo theſe ſhould treat them with all imaginaale Civility and Honour, to acquire them the more Authority among the Natives.

Baldæus.

The Iſle of *Manaar* abounds in Fiſh to ſuch a degree, that the Inhabitants here (as well as at *Negumbo*) dry and ſend them into other parts in vaſt quantities. They have here a peculiar Fiſh (properly a Sea-Calf) of an amphibious nature; the Females have Breaſts and give Suck, and the Fleſh when well boil'd taſtes not unlike our Sturgeon, and might eaſily be miſtaken for Veal.

Manaar has plenty of Fiſh.

A peculiar kind of Fiſh.

But it is time we paſs the River of *Manaar* towards *Mantotte*. This River is not very deep; nay on that ſide where you come to it over the Canal near the Caſtle, it is ſo ſhallow, that you may wade through it with eaſe, the Water ſcarce coming up to your Knees, tho it is ſo broad that it will take up half an hour before you can paſs it. The Country on the other ſide is call'd the Country of the *Wannias*, under the Juriſdiction of our Company; their Churches make up together with thoſe of *Manaar* no leſs than 14, and are under the Inſpection of the Miniſter who reſides in the Iſle of *Manaar*, and duly viſits them once a month. This Country, tho it acknowledges the Juriſdiction of our Company, pays the uſual Taxes, furniſhes them with Elephants, *&c.* yet muſt they be mildly treated, it being their general Maxims to diſoblige neither *Raja Singa* nor the Company.

The Country of the Wannias.

In the year 1658. in the beginning of *March* (after the taking of *Manaar*, and providing it with a good Gariſon) we march'd into that Country towards *Jafnapatnam*. *Mantotte* begins to the North of the *Salt River* near the Village of *Peringaly*, extending to the South along the Sea-ſhore, as far as the River *Aripouture*, where *Mouſilipatte* begins, near the Village of *Aripou*, extending further Southward to the Mountains of *Condremale*, which face the Bay oppoſite to the Iſle of *Calpentyn*, and croſs the Country *Mantotte*, ſtretching to *Setecoulang*, 6 Villages whereof belong to *Manaar*, 6 to *Jafnapatnam*, and 5 to *Mantotte*.

The reſt of *Mantotte* and *Mouſilipatte* extends to the Eaſt to the great Foreſt (the Boundary of the Country on that ſide) *Mantotte* it ſelf has 64 Villages, *Mouſilipatte* 24, and that part of *Setecoulang* 6, amounting in all to 84. All theſe Countries are very fertile, eſpecial-

Baldæus. ly in Rice, which produces a hundred-fold Crop; but the worſt is, the Elephants do great Miſchief in thoſe parts that are not very populous.

Winter and Summer at once in divers parts of Ceylon. It is very remarkable what *John de Lucena* obſerves in the Life of *Xaverius*, *viz.* That on the Cape *Comoryn*, and all along that Tract of the *Eaſt-Indies*, whilſt it is Summer and dry Seaſon on the Weſt-ſide of the Cape, the Winter and rainy Seaſon appears on the oppoſite ſide: the ſame is to be obſerv'd in the Iſle of *Ceylon*. For whilſt the Winter continues about *Jafnapatnam*, the *Wannias* and *Manaar*, during the Months of *October*, *November* and *December*, it is Summer in all the other parts: On the contrary, in the Months of *April* and *May*, whilſt it is Summer about *Jafnapatnam*, which continues ſix or ſeven Months, it is Winter and rainy Weather at *Columbo*, *Gale*, and the Countries thereabouts. In the Low-Lands remote from the mountainous part of *Ceylon*, there blow only two Winds; but about *Columbo*, *Gale*, and ſome other places, you have duly a Day and Night-Wind, as upon the Coaſt of *Coromandel*. From *April* till *October* the Wind blows conſtantly a brisk Gale from the South with a clear Air and bright Sun-ſhine, as does the North-wind from *November* till *April*. In *January*, *February* and *March* it is generally very calm, with intolerable Heat; but a Dew falls in the Night, which being very unwholeſom, the Inhabitants return with Sun-ſet into their Houſes: and were it not for theſe Dews and the ſtrong Winds which cool the Air, the Heat would be unſupportable here.

Our March from Manaar to Jafnapatnam. As we march'd through the Country of *Wannias*, we kept a moſt exact Diſcipline; and as we had no great plenty of Proviſions, we allow'd only a ſmall meaſure Rice every day to each Soldier, rather than incommode the Inhabitants: and finding our Forces to be extremely tir'd by long Marches, and conſequently uncapable of engaging with the ſame advantage with the Enemy in caſe they ſhould be attack'd, it was reſolv'd inſtead of marching up to the head of the River through the ſandy ground, to paſs the River in Boats, tho it would require near an hour and a half for every Boat to paſs it.

Paſſage over the River. The worſt was, that upon our arrival on the other ſide of the River we expected the Enemy ready to give us a warm Reception, becauſe we could not tranſport above 200 or at moſt 300 Men at once over the River, and that the Bank was very muddy; for I remember that ſome years after two Elephants paſſing over to the *Jafnapatnam* ſide, one of them ſtuck in the Mud, and was kill'd by the Inhabitants, nothing being more common than for the Elephants to come croſs the River to feed upon the Fruits of the Palm-trees, to come at which they trample the Roots of the Trees ſo long with their Feet till they looſen, and afterwards throw them down with their Bodies, and ſo eat the Fruit.

However the firſt Troop of our Forces got over without any oppoſition, and no ſooner had put themſelves in order of Battel, but receiv'd Intelligence that the Enemy were retreated from thence the day before, in order to expect us at the head Spring of the River.

We march towards Jafnapatnam. After we had tranſported all our Forces over the River, the Inhabitants treated us very civilly, and furniſh'd us with plenty of Proviſions and Fruits. The firſt place we came to was the chief Church of the Province of *Tenmarache*, call'd *Chavagatzari*, where after we had refreſh'd our ſelves with a good Dinner, we march'd forward the ſame day with two Field-pieces to *Navacouli* (two hours from *Jafnapatnam*) where we encamp'd that night.

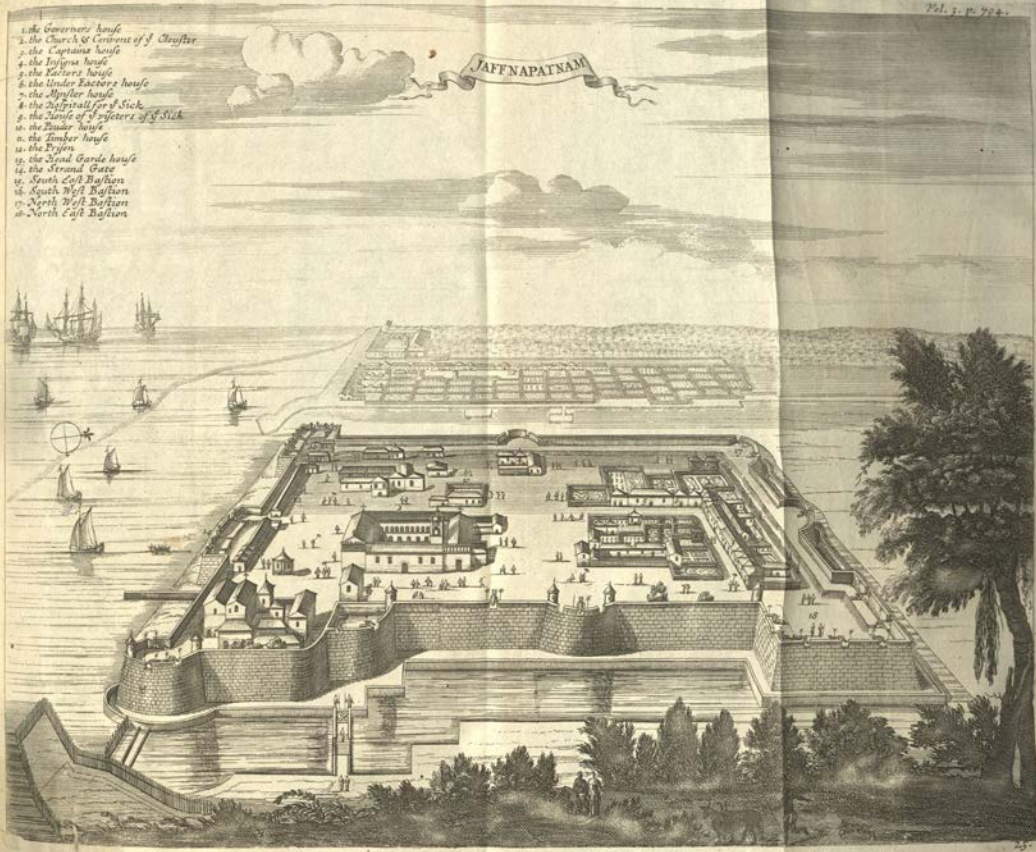
The next day (after Morning-Prayer) we march'd on to the River, where we expected to meet with a vigorous Oppoſition; but finding no Reſiſtance, we advanced by degrees towards the Caſtle near the Church of *Sundecouli*, where in the Evening we had a ſmart Skirmiſh with the *Portugueſes*, of whom we kill'd many upon the ſpot, and poſted our ſelves that night round about the before-mentioned Church.

A Skirmiſh with the Portugueſes.

The City of Jafnapatnam taken. The next following day we advanc'd to the City, which being without any Fortifications, we broke through the Wall and Houſes; and purſuing the Enemy from Street to Street, under the favour of our Cannon, which opened us the way, we advanc'd towards the Caſtle. The *9th* of *March* we made our ſelves Maſters of the Jeſuits Church and College at the Weſt-End of the City, and the *18th* following of the Church and Monaſtery of the *Dominicans* on the Eaſt-ſide: which made us give publick Thanks to God Almighty for his Bleſſings, the Text being the *7th* Verſe of the *20th* Pſalm.

The Enemy being thus forced to quit their Houſes, had no other way left than

to


1. the Governers house
2. the Church & Convent of ye Cloyster
3. the Captains house
4. the Insigne house
5. the Factors house
6. the Under Factors house
7. the Mpister house
8. the Hospitall for ye Sick
9. the House of ye vijsters of ye Sick
10. the Powder house
11. the Timber house
12. the Prison
13. the Head Garde house
14. the Strand Gate
15. South East Bastion
16. South West Bastion
17. North West Bastion
18. North East Bastion
JAFFNAPATNAM

Baldæus.

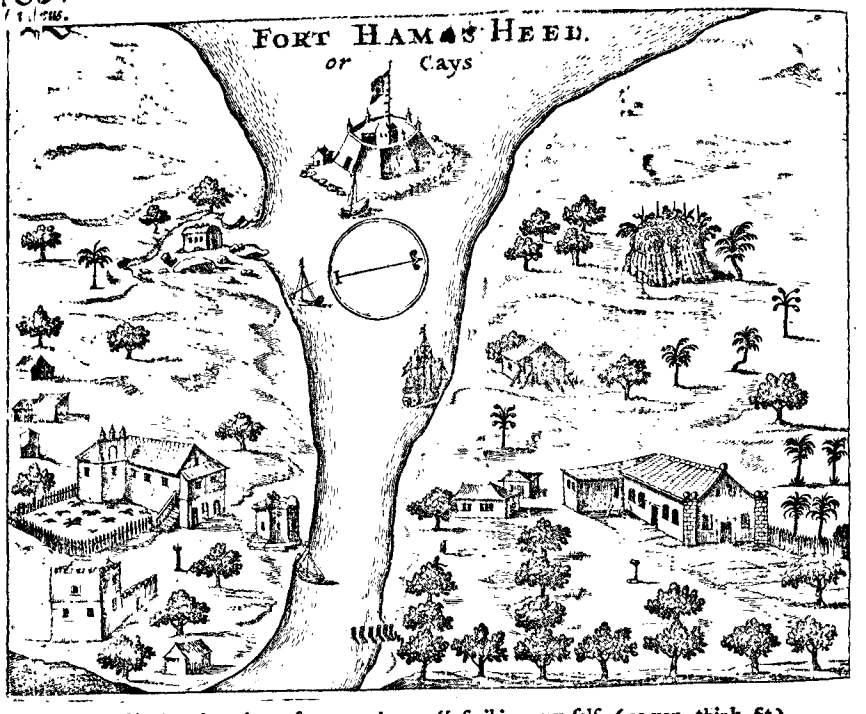
to retreat to the Caſtle, which they did in great diſorder, many of the Inhabitants of the Country thronging in among the *Portugueſes*, ſo that the Caſtle was ſo crowded with People that they had not room enough to diſpoſe them to any advantage.

But the better to ſtraiten the Caſtle of *Jafnapatnam*, and take away from the Gariſon all hopes of relief, it was thought neceſſary to attack a certain Outwork or Redoubt, built upon a ſmall Iſle in the middle of the River, not far from its Entrance, which it commands. This Fort was built by *Anthonio Amiral de Menezes*, and may juſtly be call'd the Key of *Jafnapatnam*; and if ſuch another were made on the Point of *Calmom*, no Veſſel could approach the Caſtle without leave.

Accordingly we detatch'd a good Body of Men to the Iſle of *Ourature*, in order to attack the ſaid Fort, in which at that time commanded one *Hieronimo de Paiva* with a good Gariſon. The Iſle of *Ourature* (where formerly the *Portugueſes* had a Caſtle, the Ruins of which are yet to be ſeen) lying at ſome diſtance from this Water-Fort, we were forc'd to raiſe our Batteries againſt it upon the Iſle of *Caradiva*: But finding that by reaſon of the diſtance betwixt us and them, and the ſtrength of the Wall, we could make no Breach in it, it was reſolv'd to aſſault the place by the help of certain Veſſels provided with Breaſt-works and Cannon. But before we thought fit to venture at ſo deſperate an Attempt, it was reſolved to ſend the following Summons to the Commander of the Fort.

The Fort Cays ſummon'd to a Surrender.

" IT having pleaſed Almighty God to " bleſs our Arms with ſuch Succeſs, " that there is no poſſibility left for you " to reſiſt us, or defend your ſelf againſt " our Attacks: It is therefore that we " have thought fit to let you know " (as is uſual upon ſuch occaſions) that " we are come to ſummon the Fort of " *Cays*, in the Name of the States-" General of the *United Provinces*, of the " Governors of the *Eaſt-India* Compa-" ny, and his Excellency *John Maat-" zuyker* Governor-General, and the " Council of the *Indies*; as by theſe Pre-" ſents I ſummon the ſaid Fort, not



" queſtioning but that after you have " given ſufficient Proofs of your Cou- " rage, you will now conſider how un- " able you are to reſiſt our Force. " Don't therefore obſtinately reſiſt God's " Will, and our Strength, ſince we " offer you ſuch Conditions as are ge- " nerally allow'd to brave Soldiers. " But in caſe you will be obſtinate in " making trial of our Strength, we pro- " teſt before God and the Chriſtian " World, that we are innocent of all " the fatal Conſequences and Miſeries " that are likely to befal you; being " reſolved on our ſide (if God grants " us Victory) to treat you after the " ſevereſt manner, according to the " Cuſtom of War, and not to hearken " to any Conditions. You have given " ſufficient Proofs of your Courage to " admiration; it is time therefore you " ſhould now act with Prudence, and " conſult your ſafety. We expect your " poſitive Anſwer within three hours " by the Bearer of this, or whom " your Excellency ſhall think fit to " ſend to us, who ſhall return ſafely " upon our Word and Honour: Sub- " ſcribing my ſelf (as you think fit) " either your Friend or Enemy.

From the Camp, 10 *April* 1658.

The Admiral and General of the *Dutch* Forces, both by Sea and Land.

This Letter being tranſlated into *Portugueſe*, was ſent into the Fort; the Commander whereof remembring the old Verſe,

Fiſtula dulce canit, volucrem dum decipit auceps,

ſent the following Anſwer.

" That the Fort belonging to nobody, *The Anſwer thereupon.* " but to the King of *Portugal* his Maſter, " he was oblig'd to maintain the ſame " for his Majeſty till the laſt drop of " his Blood. That he could do no " more than what pleaſed God to per- " mit him, but neither he nor his Men " were to be terrified by Threats.

* This

Vol. 3. p. 797.

Meridies
Chette Cou lang
W A N N J A S
P R O U J N
C J Æ
P A R S
Manaer Insula
Adams brugh
Patiarapalli
Provin cia
Ten ma rache
Jafnapatnam
Leyden
Middelburgh
I. Dona Clara
Provincia
Billegam
patte
Waddemarache
Provincia
R E G N.
I. Amsterdam Olim I. Caradiva
Oriens
Occidens
Septentrio
REGNUM
JAFNAPATNAM,
cum
INSULIS ADJACENTIBUS.
Duytsche mylen
Spaensche Leagues
Eng. and French Leagues

20.

This bold Anſwer made us think of nothing elſe but Force, ſo that we were preparing every thing for an Aſſault, which would have coſt us many a brave Fellow, had not the want of Freſh Water in the Fort oblig'd them to come to a Capitulation. For having no other freſh Water in the Fort, but what was preſerved in a large Wooden Ciſtern, part whereof was taken away by the Ships, that tranſported ſome Women of Quality with their Riches from *Jafnapatnam* to *Negapatnam*, and the reſt being ſpoil'd by our Bombs, they were glad to accept ſuch Articles as we were willing to give them, which however were very honourable, the Soldiers being allow'd to march out with all the Marks of Honour, and to be tranſported into *Europe*. The Commander who had a Wife and Children, was permitted to go to the *Indian* Coaſt, or that of *Coromandel*. The 28*th* of *April* I preach'd the Thankſgiving-Sermon for this Surrender, upon the Text out of the 48*th Pſalm*, *ver.* 8. Upon this Occaſion Captain *Cornelius Rob* the younger (who died two Years after at *Amſterdam*) Captain *Peter Waſh* (who was kill'd afterwards before *Cochin*) and Mr. *Van der Rheede*, gave moſt ſignal Proofs of their Courage. Since that time divers Vaults for freſh Water have been made in this Fort and in *Manaar*.

Baldæus.

The Fort ſurrendred.

CHAP. XLV.

Continuation of the Siege of Jafnapatnam. *Sea-fight before* Goa. *Divers Engagements betwixt the* Dutch *and* Portugueſes. Jafnapatnam *ſurrendred. Some* Portugueſes *living among the* Hollanders *there plot againſt them, are betrayed by a* Topas. *The Provinces and Churches of* Jafnapatnam.

Strength of the Caſtle of Jafnapatnam.

BUT it is time to return to the Caſtle of *Jafnapatnam*, which being built upon a Rock, and ſurrounded with a ſtrong triple Wall, ſeem'd to defy both our Mines and Cannon, eſpecially ſince we were not ſo well provided with Gunpowder as we ſhould have been; wherefore we thought it our ſafeſt way to expect that from Time, which Force was not likely to procure, reſolving in the mean while to annoy the Enemy as much as poſſibly we could with our Bombs, which kill'd them abundance of Men.

The Portugueſes endeavour in vain to fetch Proviſions.

The Enemy finding themſelves in a little time reduc'd to great Straits, ſent out divers Boats to fetch ſome freſh Proviſions from the Iſlands, but were always forc'd to return without Succeſs. Upon this occaſion *Ysbrand Gotskens* born at the *Hague*, then Director of the Company in *Perſia*, and *Barent Clebont*, then a Lieutenant, ſince a Captain at *Jafnapatnam*, behaved themſelves bravely, being both wounded, one near the Mouth, the other in the Knee.

A Topas comes over to us with a Letter.

The *Portugueſes* in the mean while living in hopes of Succours from *Goa*, ſent a Letter by a certain *Topas* from *Trinquemale*, named *Ignatio Feras*, to their Admiral; but this Negro coming over to us with the Letter, we ſent a good Body of our beſt Forces to prevent their Landing, but we heard of none.

The Dutch worſt the Portugueſes at Sea.

On the other hand we received the joyful News, that Commodore *Adrian Roothaus*, had *March* 23. in an Engagement with the *Portugueſes* near *Goa*, burnt one of their biggeſt Galeons call'd the St. *Thomas*, and had ſo diſabled the reſt, that they had but little hopes left of relieving *Jafnapatnam*. For which Victory we gave publick Thanks to God the 26*th* of *May* 1658. the Text was taken out of *Exod.* 15. 9.

Several Sea-Engagements betwixt them.

About the ſame time I received a Letter from the Reverend *Theodoro Sas* (ſince Miniſter at *Malacca*) then in the *Dutch* Fleet before *Goa*, intimating that the 20*th* of *Jan.* in the ſame Year 1658. the *Portugueſes* attack'd us with 10 Galeons and ſome Frigats; the Engagements laſted till Night without any conſiderable Damage on our ſide. That on the 27*th* and 29*th* of the ſame Month another Combat enſued, without any great Loſs on both ſides. The 3*d* of *Febr.* the Enemy attack'd us once more, but were chaſed under their Caſtle. In all theſe three Engagements the *Dutch* had no more than 9 Men killed and a few wounded. The Letter was dated aboard the *Phenix*, cruiſing before the Bar of *Goa*, *Febr.* 11. 1658.

In the mean while our Forces having ſo cloſely ſurrounded the Caſtle of *Jafnapatnam* with their Lines and Works, that they

they could not ſtir even with the leaſt Boat, without being taken or ſunk; and being now deſtitute of all hopes of Relief, they hung out the white Flag, *June* 21. on the South East Baſtion. The Capitulation was agreed upon the next following Day, under theſe Conditions: That the Gariſon ſhould march out with their Arms, Colours flying, Drums beating, &c. and take along with them one piece of Cannon, and to be tranſported to *Europe*; the Head Officers ſhall be civilly treated, and to be conducted to one or other of their Forts, and the Eccleſiaſticks to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*. All Gold, Silver and other Precious Moveables, ſhall be left to the Diſpoſal of the Conquerors; the Inhabitants ſhall likewiſe be tranſported to what part of the *Indies* they like beſt, moſt of whom went afterwards by the way of *Malacca* to *Batavia*.

Batavia.

Jafnapatnam ſurrendred.

The Conditions.

They march out.

Accordingly *John de Melo Leonardo d' Oliveiro*, *Viador de Fazendas*, and *Anthonio Mendes d' Aranha* march'd out of the Caſtle with the reſt of the Head Officers, *Rodrigo Boralho* delivering the Keys at the ſame time to Major *John van der Laan*; but they were ſo weak, that they did not think fit to carry along with them their piece of Cannon, tho they ſpent two whole days in marching out. A conſiderable Number of Soldiers laid down their Arms and Colours before the Standard of the Company, as did many of the Inhabitants (among whom was *Caſpar Figeiro* the Scourge of the *Cingaleſes*) with their Wives and Children, Negroes, 40 or 50 Eccleſiaſticks, *Franciſcans*, *Jeſuits*, and *Dominicans*; notwithſtanding that during the Siege (which laſted 3 ½ Months) they had loſt near 1600 Men by the Sword and Mortality.

Immediately after Commodore *Peter de Bitter* was ſent to *Batavia*, by the way of *Malacca*, to bring this joyful News to Mr. *John Maatzuyker* our General, and the Council of the *Indies*. The 23*d* of *Jun.* I preach'd a Thankſgiving-Sermon out of *Exod.* 17. 15. which was continued every Year on the ſame Day.

When we entred the Caſtle, we found it all battered to pieces by our Bombs; and ſuch was the ſtench, that for ſometime no body could abide there. We took care to have the Springs clear'd, the Dung removed, the Churches, Houſes and Walls repair'd; 300 Coco-Trees were alſo to be planted, and many Houſes, that ſtood too near the Ditch of the Caſtle, to be broken down; and to encourage the Inhabitants of the Country to ſettle here, the Cuſtom upon Tobacco was taken off, and *Jacob Rhee* our Head Factor, a very underſtanding Perſon, conſtituted *pro tempore* Commander in Chief here.

The Caſtle repaired.

Things being thus diſpoſed, our Forces were ſoon all tranſported to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, in order to reduce the City of *Negapatnam*: We left but a ſlender Gariſon at *Jafnapatnam*, compos'd for the moſt part of *Portugueſes*, who had taken Service among us; beſides which there was a conſiderable Number of Priſoners in the Caſtle.

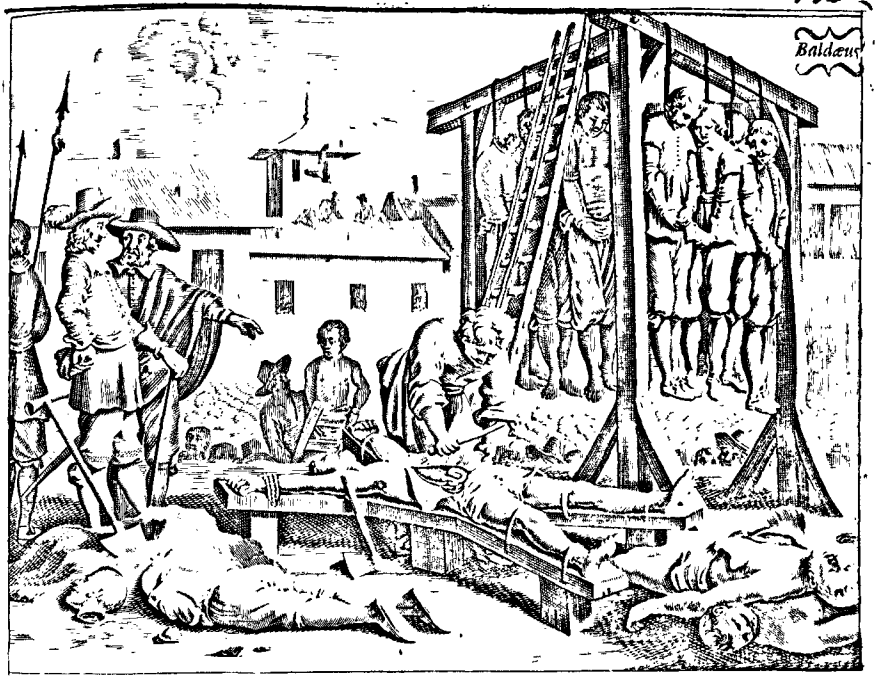
A treacherous Deſign formed againſt the Dutch at Jafnapatnam.

Theſe in conjunction with ſome of the Natives (not without the Conſent of *Raja Singa*) fram'd a Plot againſt us: Their Deſign was, to murder all the Officers in the Caſtle, whilſt I was preaching in *Portugueſe* in the City; which done, certain Perſons of their Gang ſhould attack and kill the Guard, and thus to make themſelves Maſters of the Caſtle.

Is diſcovered.

It happen'd by accident that whilſt I was preaching, *Don Manoel Andrado*, one of our *Cingaleſe* Captains and *Modliar*, coming with 18 of his Followers (who generally attended him) to the Church, remain'd in the Porch, where he could hear as well as within the Church. He was not a little ſurpriz'd (as he himſelf told me afterwards) to ſee the *Portugueſes* remain ſtanding likewiſe without the Church-door, and laying their Hands upon their Swords; yet not being able to gueſs the true reaſon thereof, this Treachery was not diſcover'd till ſome days after, when the whole Deſign being laid open to Mr. *Jacob van der Rhee*, he took care to double the Guards, to ſhut the Caſtle-gates, and to ſecure all ſuch as had a hand in the Plot. The next thing was to ſend for me by a Letter (I being then viſiting the Churches in the Country) upon the receipt whereof I return'd immediately to the Caſtle, where with great Aſtoniſhment I had an account given me of the whole Deſign, how it had been diſcover'd, and the Traytors ſecured. For which Delivery I preach'd a ſolemn Thankſgiving-Sermon in *Low-Dutch*, the 15*th* of *Septemb.* 1658. out of the Book of *Eſther*, *Chap.* 9. 20——24.

Not long after moſt of the Traitors having confeſſed their Crimes, ſome were condemn'd to be hang'd, others to be beheaded, and ſome to be laid upon the Wheel. The three chief Heads of this Conſpiracy were, a certain Inhabitant of *Manaar*, one *Don Louys*, and another *Portugueſe*; theſe three were laid upon the Wheel or a Croſs, and after they had received



The Traytors executed.

ceiv'd a Stroke with the Ax in the Neck and on the Breaſt, had their Entrails taken out, and the Heart laid upon the Mouth.

A certain Jeſuit nam'd *Caldero*, a Native of *Malacca*, was beheaded. This unfortunate Perſon being prevented by Sickneſs from going along with the reſt of the *Portugueſe* Clergymen, had not been concern'd in this treacherous Deſign, much leſs given his Conſent to it. But ſome of the Traytors having given notice thereof to him by Letters, wherein they ſtiled him the *Father of their Souls*; he was unwilling to betray his Countrymen, for which he paid now with his Head: eleven more were hanged, and afterwards expoſed in the open Country on Trees; but the Heads of the Ringleaders were fix'd upon Poles in the Market-place.

The Caſtle of *Jafnapatnam* is of a Quadrangular Figure, and ſtrongly fortified with very high and thick Walls; it is bigger in Circuit than the Caſtle of *Ratnania*, being the Capital City of the whole Kingdom. *Philippo de Olivero*, after he having defeated the *Cingaleſes* near *Achiavelli*, not far from the great *Pagode* (the Ruins whereof are to be ſeen to this day) took the ſame from the Emperor of *Ceylon*. Hard by this *Pagode* is to be ſeen a moſt miraculous Spring, 24 Rods in Circumference, cut out of an entire Rock, or, as the Inhabitants will have it, open'd by a Thunderbolt, of which more hereafter, when we ſhall treat of the Iſles of *Jafnapatnam*: we took it after it had been 40 Years in the poſſeſſion of the *Portugueſes*.

The Portugueſes conquer Jafnapatnam.

A miraculous Spring.

Jafnapatnam is divided into four Provinces, which are very populous; its whole Length is about 6 *German* Leagues, and its Breadth 3, being well inhabited and adorned with Villages and Churches. The whole Number of the Villages amounts to 159, of their own Churches 34, beſides the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe* Churches. *Jafnapatnam* is on the Northſide waſh'd by the Gulph of *Bengale*; and borders to the South of a River, which makes it a kind of an Iſland, and exonerates it ſelf in two different Channels into the Sea.

Bigneſs of Jafnapatnam.

The Provinces of *Jafnapatnam* are *Belligamme*, *Tenmarache*, *Waddemarache* and

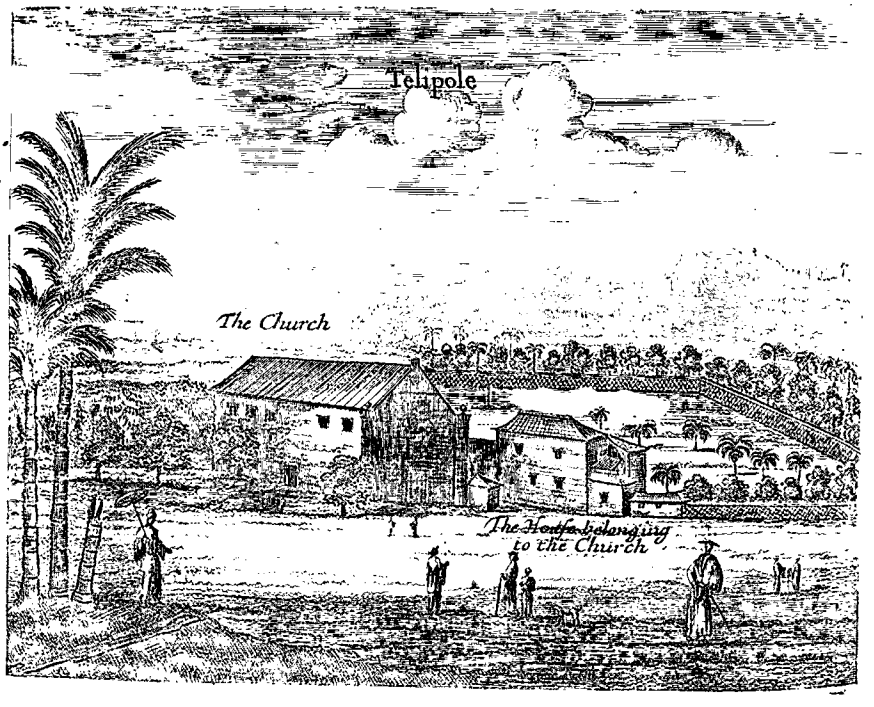
Provinces of Jafnapatnam.

Buddæus. and *Patchiarapalle*. The Province of *Belligamme* has 14 Churches, the chief whereof is *Telipole* a large Structure, with a double row of Pillars; the Houſe thereunto belonging is the Work of the Jeſuits, beautifyed with a pleaſant Garden, handſome Court and moſt delicious Vineyards, affording moſt ſorts of *Indian* Fruits, and water'd with ſeveral Springs.

The Church Telipole.

In *Auguſt* 1658, the Reform'd Religion was the firſt time (as in all other Churches of *Jafnapatnam* and *Manaar*) introduced and taught here by me. The 12*th* of *Jan.* 1661. the holy Sacrament was the firſt time adminiſtred to 12 Communicants of the Natives. The 19*th* of *April* in the ſame Year their Number encreaſed to 15, and before my Departure to 30. In the Year 1665, we had above 1000 Schoolboys, among whom were 480 who could anſwer all the Queſtions relating to the chief Points of our Religion. I have ſometimes had no leſs than 2000 Auditors in this Church.

The Sacraments firſt adminiſtred to the Indians here.



A certain *Indian* named *Michael Fonſeca*, ask'd me once a very odd Queſtion, *viz. When* John *baptized Chriſt, whether he be baptized him in the Name of God the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghoſt*; and being anſwer'd *Yes*, he reply'd that thus *Jeſus Chriſt* was baptiz'd in his own Name, which he could not well comprehend. I told him, there was not the leaſt Abſurdity in the matter, ſince *Jeſus Chriſt* was not baptized upon his own account, or as God alone, nor as a bare Man, but as being endowed both with the Divine and Human Nature. That the *Son of God* could not be baptized otherwiſe but in the Name of God; and that under the Word *God*, was not only comprehended the *Father*, but alſo the *Son* and *Holy Ghoſt*; that *Jeſus Chriſt* was the ſame in eſſence with the Father and the Holy Ghoſt; and that there were no degrees in the *Deity*, for tho the *Father* was the firſt, yet were the Son as well and truly *God* as the *Father* and *Holy Ghoſt*: wherewith he was well ſatisfy'd. For the *Indians* being generally very ingenious, they will ask many acute Queſtions, as concerning the *Creation and End of the World*, *the Immortality of the Soul*, *Hell*, and ſuch like.

Moſt of the Churches here have certain Scaffolds or Theaters near them eſpecially

Theaters near the Churches.

Mallagam.

Achiavelli.

Mayletti.

Oudewil.

pecially that of *Telipole*, where the Jesuits used to represent certain Histories of the Bible to the People on Holidays.

The Church Mallagam. About half an Hour thence stands the Church *Mallagam* of good Brickwork, with an adjacent House built upon two Arches, and a handsom pair of Stairs leading to the top of it. The Church was begun by the *Portugueses*, but finish'd by the *Dutch*. It has 200 School-boys, but not above 600 Auditors.

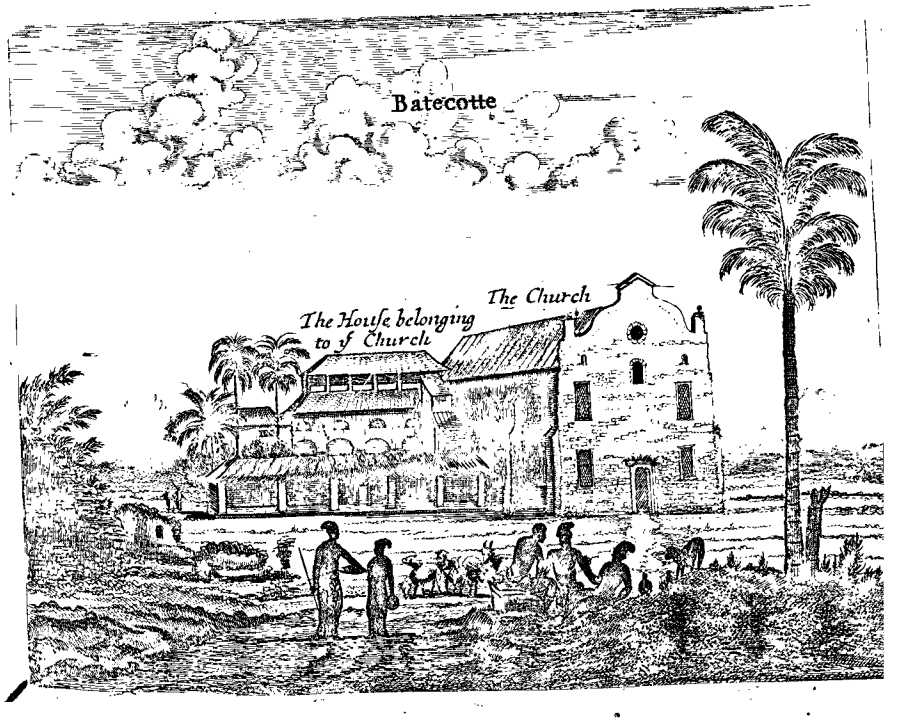
The Church Mayletti. The Church *Mayletti* is about 5 Quarters of an Hour from *Telipole*. Here are 750 Schoolboys, all taught by one Master, who has more work than the two at *Telipole*: the Auditors of this Church amount to 1500 or 1600. The Church is a large Structure of Stone; the House belonging to it is lofty, with a Balcony on the top of it, affording a very fine Prospect into the main Sea, so that it may well deserve the Name of *Belle videre*. The Church is not above half a Mile from the Sea-side. They abound here in Fish, such as Crabs, Soles, Plaice, *&c.* as likewise in Hares and Partridges.

Church Achiavelli. The Church *Achiavelli* lies about two Hours from *Telipole*, it is a large and lofty Structure built of Stone, capable of containing 2000 Persons; it was not finish'd till in our time. The Village lies extremely pleasant among the Woods, stor'd with vast Quantities of Turtle-Doves, which cue at certain Hours three times a day, and serve the Inhabitants instead of a Clock, to know the time of the Day. They have also Plenty of Hares, Stags and Wild-Boars, but are also annoyed by the Serpents.

Baldæus.

Pleasantness of the Village.

As divers old *Brahmans* live in this Place, so were the Inhabitants not so forward in embracing the Christian Religion; the antient *Brahman*, named *Philippo*, does not want the Knowledg of the Fundamentals of our Religion, but is more inclin'd to the Historical, than the Doctrinal part. Among others there lived here a certain *Brahman*, a Learned Person, with whom I used to have frequent Conversation, whilst I liv'd at *Achiavelli*; he was baptized at last in the 46*th* Year of his Age, and afterwards writ the *History of the Life and Passion of our Saviour*, in a lofty Poetical Stile, in the *Latin Malabar*, call'd *Hanscreet*, which is quite different from the common *Mala-*



bar Characters. The School here has about 4 or 500 Boys, and the Church 7, 8 or 900 Auditors.

The Church Ondewil.

About an Hour from *Telipole* ſtands the Church *Ondewil*, in a great Plain, with an adjacent large Stone-houſe, formerly the Habitation of a *Franciſcan* Fryar. The Soil is very luſcious here and fertile in Rice, *Naceny*, and other Eatables. The Schoolboys amount to 600, and the Auditors to 900 or 1000.

The Church Batecotte.

Two hours diſtant from the Caſtle is the Church *Batecotte*, with a lofty adjacent Houſe, flat on the top, and adorn'd with a pleaſant Garden, well ſtor'd with Trees; the Fields round about it are extremely fruitful. It is ſeated near the *Salt River*, and abounds in Fiſh and all manner of other Proviſions. Of Schoolboys they have here about 8 or 900, and of Auditors in the Church near 2000.

The Church Paneteripou.

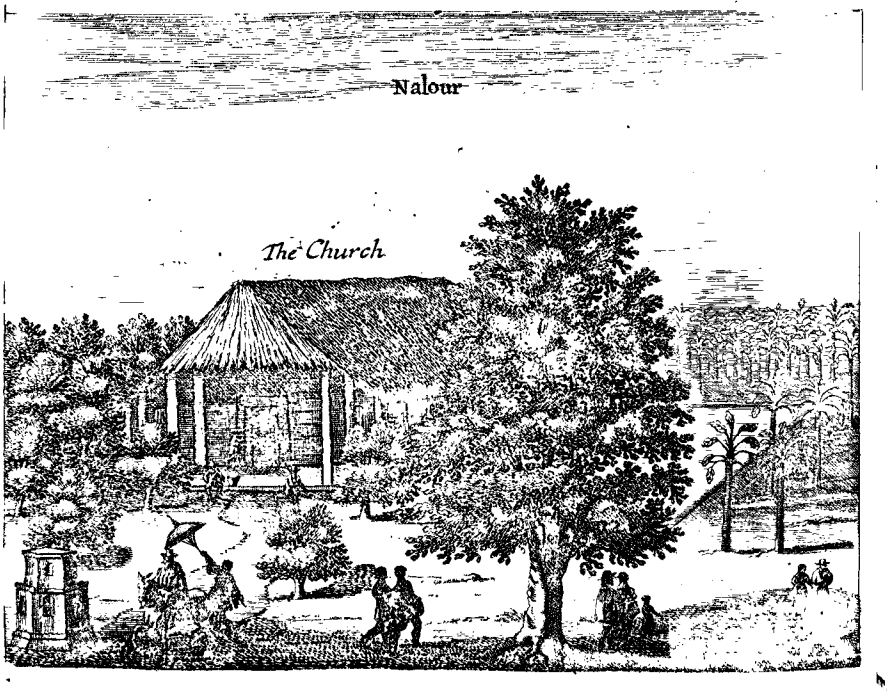
About half an hour from *Batecotte* is the Church *Paneteripou*, a neat and magnificent Edifice of Stone, with a pleaſant Houſe near it built upon Arches, with two ſpacious Rooms and a Gallery, fine Gardens, and a delicious Fiſhpond or Ciſtern. The School is frequented by 600 Boys, who in my time had made ſuch conſiderable Progreſs, that they could refute the *Popiſh* Errors concerning Purgatory, the Maſs, Indulgences, Auricular Confeſſion, *&c.* Mr. *Andrew* the Schoolmaſter and his Uſher, being Perſons very diligent in their Stations. The Inhabitants are very devout here, and at Sermon-time ſeldom leſs than 12 or 1300 come to Church.

The Church Changane.

The Church *Changane* is not above a good Mile from *Paneteripou*, lying with this and *Batecotte* in a Triangle, almoſt at an equal diſtance from one another. Both the Church and adjacent Houſe are built of Stone, as is alſo *Paneteripou*: They are very conveniently built with a Court before, ſurrounded by a Brick Wall; behind is an Orchard of *Cocoe* and *Portugueſe* Fig-Trees, beſides *Potatoes*, *Bananaes*, &c. The School is frequented by 700 Boys, who are carefully inſtructed by their Schoolmaſter nam'd *Ambroſio*. The Inhabitants flock to Church with ſo much Zeal, that there is ſcarce room to contain them all.

The Church Manipay.

Two hours from *Jafnapatnam*, and one from *Changane*, ſtands the Church *Ma-*



Paneteripou
The Church
The Church house

Manipay
The Church
The Church house

Changane
The Church
The Church house

Vanarpone
The Church

nipay. About 560 Children are educated in this School. It is ſcarce to be imagined, that at ſo ſmall a diſtance there ſhould be ſo great a difference betwixt the People, the Inhabitants here being a malicious Generation, ſuperſtitious, and ſtill much inclin'd to Paganiſm. The Church is big enough to contain 2000 Souls, but ſeldom above 7 or 800 come to hear the Sermons. The Houſe is built only of Clay, and cover'd with Palm-tree-Leaves. Juſt before the Church is a fine Pond or Ciſtern with freſh Water, near which ſtood formerly one of their *Pagodes*. This Place is inhabited by ſeveral of the Family of *Madapoli*, who were concern'd in the Plot (lately mention'd) with *Don Louys*.

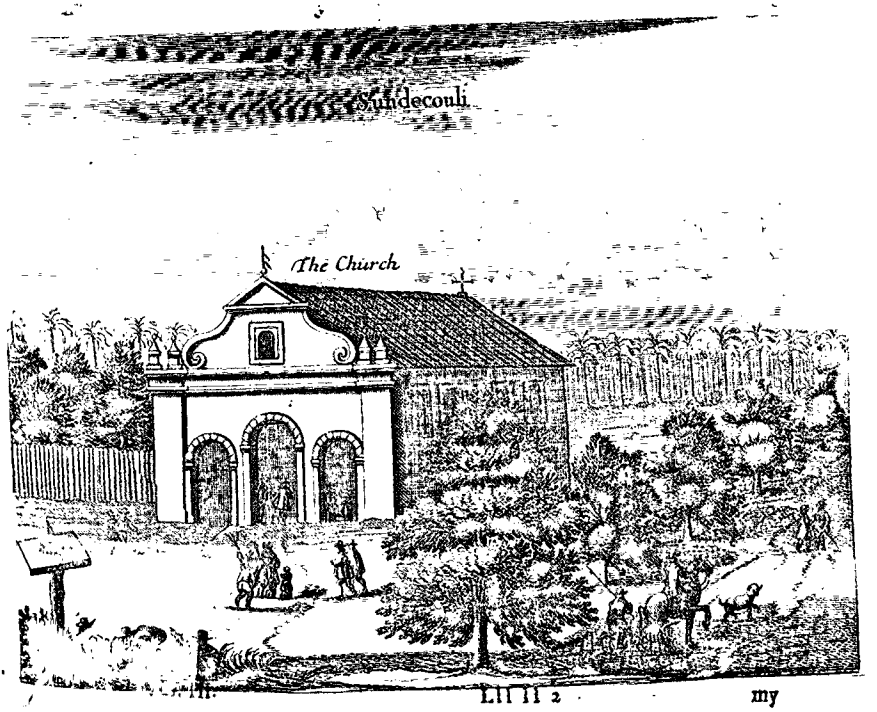
The Church Vanarpone. The Church *Vanarpone* ſtands juſt under the Caſtle of *Jafnapatnam*, moſt inhabited by Waſhers; *Vanar* ſignifying as much as a Waſher in the *Malabar*. It is not very big, nor has a Houſe belonging to it. The Schoolboys amount to 200, and the Auditors in the Church to about 5 or 600 Souls.

The Church Nalour. Juſt by *Vanarpone* is the Church *Nalour*, built only of Clay, and ſtenderly cover'd. Here alſo ſtood formerly a *Pagode*. The School is frequented by about 590 Children, who are not ſo well verſed in the Points of the Chriſtian Religion as moſt of the reſt, the People here retaining ſtill a ſtrong Inclination to Paganiſm, eſpecially ſince ſome Years ago about 100 Printers of Callicoes were tranſplanted hither from the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, to the no ſmall Prejudice of the Chriſtian Religion, tho the Company were no great Gainers by it; ſince it is evident, that for want of good Water at *Jafnapatnam*, the ſame can't be brought to their true Perfection, and therefore are much better bought and tranſported from the Coaſt of *Coromandel*.

Baldæus.

This is certain, that this Generation is very miſchievous to the Chriſtians here, it being frequent to ſee them appear in publick painted with *Cinza* or Aſhes (accounted holy among them) and to carry their Beads; beſides that the *Moors* have their publick Schools allow'd them of late Years. I muſt confeſs that whilſt Mr. *Anthony Pavilioen* (at the time of my being there) was Governor of *Jafnapatnam*, he did all in him lay to aſſiſt me (at

*



Videtur. my requeſt) in ſtopping the Progreſs of the Pagan Superſtitions, and was not well pleaſed to ſee the Callico Printers introduc'd here, it being (not without reaſon) to be fear'd that in time they may (by promiſcuous Marriages) increaſe to ſuch a number as may endanger both the Church and State, eſpecially if they are allowed the burning of their Dead, and ſome other Pagan Ceremonies they much inſiſt upon.

It is further to be fear'd, that in time there may be a promiſcuous Copulation betwixt the Chriſtians and Pagans, which muſt needs produce direful Effects in the Church. It may be objected, that ſevere Puniſhments will put a ſtop to that Evil (ſome having already been puniſh'd with Death upon that account) but this does not altogether remove the Danger; beſides, that it ought to be conſider'd whether ſuch a Severity be conſonant to the Word of God or not.

The Church Sundecouli. The laſt Church not far from the City, is call'd *Sundecouli*, belonging to the *Civias*, or Chair-men and Water-Carriers. The Church is a neat Structure, but the Inhabitants an idle and baſe Generation. About 450 Children belong to the School, but ſeldom frequent it, becauſe they generally go abroad a fiſhing with their Parents. Seldom above 400 come to Church, whereas there are about 1500 Inhabitants. It is a pleaſant place, deliciouſly ſeated among Trees of a conſiderable bigneſs. Thus far we have ſpoken of the Province *Belligamme*, and its Churches, unto which belong likewiſe *Copay* and *Pontour*, containing about 800 School-boys, and 2000 Souls. The Children in theſe Schools are diſtinguiſh'd into ſeveral Forms, according to their reſpective degrees of Proficiency; ſo that thoſe who have learn'd (for inſtance) the *Creed*, and *Our Father*, teach thoſe that ſcarce know to ſay *Our Father*. Among theſe Boys, they have ſome they call *Merinbos*, who take an account of ſuch as are abſent, and return them to the Maſter, or the Head *Merinbo*.

CHAP. XLVI.

The ſecond, third and fourth Provinces, with their reſpective Churches, belonging to Jafnapatnam. *The Iſles of* Jafnapatnam. *Vaſt number of Chriſtians. The Author's Zeal in promoting the Chriſtian Religion.*

THE ſecond Province of *Jafnapatnam* is *Tenmarache*, which contains five Churches, with the Villages thereunto belonging. The firſt is the Church *Na-*

The Church Navacouli. *vacouli*, ſeated in a pleaſant Plain abounding in Cattel and Fruit; as the Woods afford great ſtore of Apes and Monkys, and all ſorts of Veniſon and Wild Fowl. Both the Church and adjacent Houſe are only of Clay, and cover'd with Palm-leaves. The School is frequented by 400 Children, and the Church by 7 or 800 Auditors.

The Church of Chavagatzery. An hour from *Navacouli* ſtands the Church of *Chavagatzery*, the biggeſt of the whole Province, and the adjacent Houſe, very ſtrong and well-built, having a pleaſant Proſpect towards the Sea, with fine Gardens, well ſtor'd with all ſorts of *Indian* Fruits. They abound in Fiſh, for they live upon Husbandry and Fiſhing. The School is frequented by 1000 Children, who are inſtructed by two Maſters and an Uſher, and the Church by betwixt 2 and 3000 Souls.

The Church Cathay. The Church *Cathay* is an hour from *Chavagatzery*, through ſandy and difficult Ways, but full of Ponds ſtor'd with Wild-ducks; beſides which they abound in Snipes, Herns, *Indian* Ravens, and all ſorts of ſmall Birds. The Church and Houſe are only of Clay, and cover'd with Leaves, like that of *Navacouli*. The School has 550 Children, and the Church 11 or 1200 Auditors.

Betwixt *Cathay* and the Church *Waranni* are ſandy and difficult Ways. The Church ſtands in the midſt of a ſmall Wood of *Areek*, *Coco*, *Palm*, *Banano's*, *Mango's*, *Cajou* and *Guiavo*-Trees. This place affords, beſides the ordinary Melons, the moſt delicious Water-Melons in the *Indies*. The Church is but ſlenderly built, and encloſed with a Wall of Earth, as is likewiſe the Houſe; yet has it divers ſpacious Apartments, and a handſome Entrance. The School has about 800 Children, and the Church 2500 Auditors. *The Church Waranni.*

The laſt Church of *Tenmarache* is that of *Illondi Matual*, unto which belongs the Village of *Nagar Kojel*, famous for a large *Pagode* that ſtood there formerly. The Church is only of Clay, but the adja- *The Church Illondi Matual.*

*

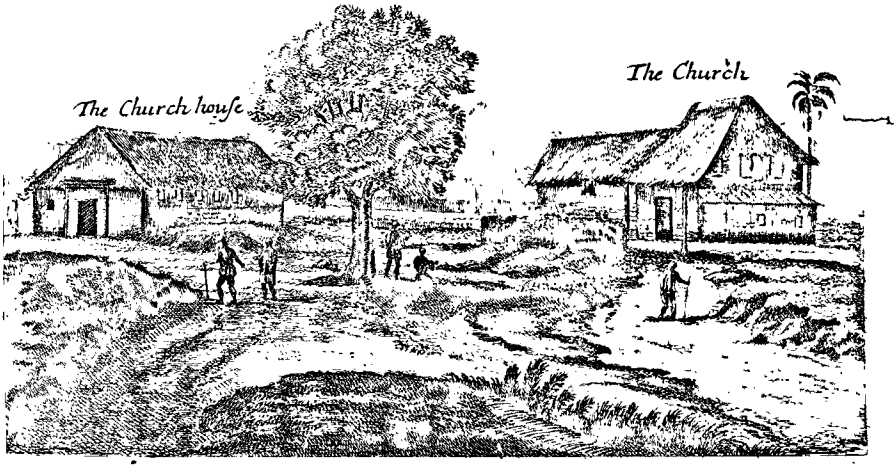
Kopay
The Church
The Church House

Pontour
The Church
Church house

Navaconli
The Church House
The Church

Chavagatzeri
The Church
The Church House

Cathay



Batticus. adjacent Houſe of Stone, unto which you aſcend by ſteps; it has three large Apartments, a neat Entrance, and a fair Proſpect. Hereabouts are great numbers of Peacocks, and ſometimes they ſee ſome Elephants in this Tract of Land. The Company alſo maintains here ſome tame Elephants, as in divers other places, they being ſeparated at ſome diſtance for the better conveniency of their Fodder. Unto this School belong about 650 Children, and to the Church 1100 or 1200 Auditors.

The Province Waddemarache. The third Province is call'd *Waddemarache*, having only three Churches. It affords ſuch plenty of Paſture, of Cows, Sheep, Goats, Fowl, Pigeons, and Partridges, that you may buy a Sheep for 8 or 10 *d.* 60 Eggs for 3 *d.* and four good Pullets for a *Fanam*, or 5 *d.*

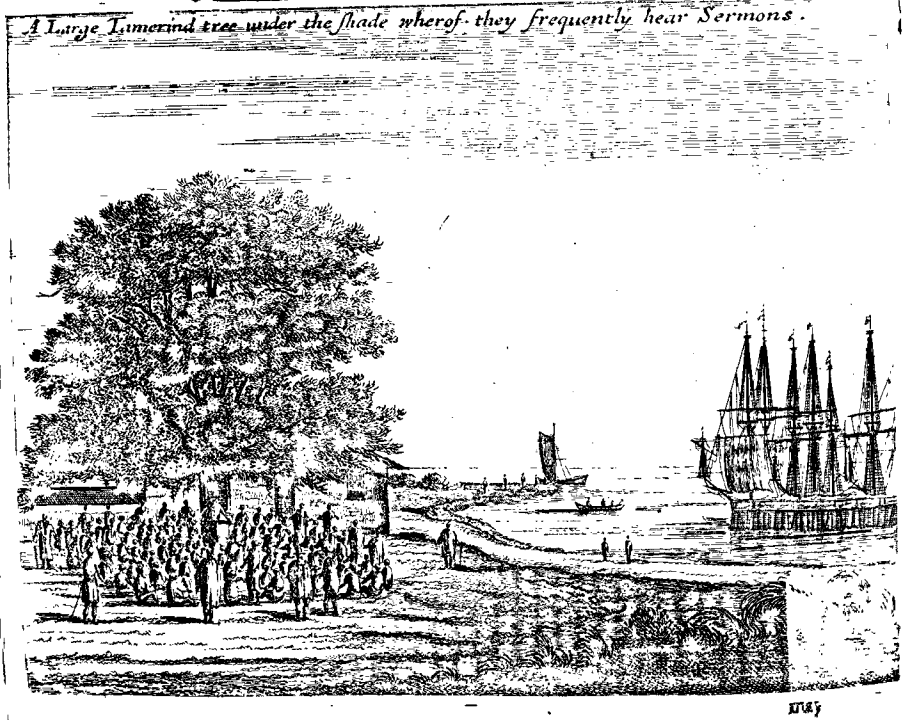
The Church Catavelli. The firſt Church is call'd *Catavelli*; the Church and adjacent Houſe are both of Brick, the laſt having a Summer-houſe on the top of it, from whence you have a delightful Proſpect into the Plain. The School has 600 Children, and the Church 1000 or 1200 Auditors.

The ſecond Church is *Vreputti*; the Village is inhabited by a ſet of Vagabonds and Thieves, of the Family of the *Nalloas*, not much inclin'd to Religion. The School is frequented by 690 Children, and the Church by 8 or 900 Auditors leſs or more. The Children are taught here to make their Letters in the Sand.

The Church Paretiture. The Church *Paretiture* is the fineſt and largeſt of this Province, call'd by the *Portugueſes*, *Punta das Pedras*, or the *Rocky Point*. *Paretiture* ſignifies in the *Malabar* Tongue as much as *Cottons Harbour*, from the great quantity of Cotton that grows thereabouts on ſmall Trees. Not long ago, whilſt we were engag'd in War with the *Engliſh*, a Fort was order'd to be erected here. During the War with *Portugal*, the *Dutch* carried off from hence one of their Prieſts, and plunder'd *Manaar* at the ſame time. Hereabouts alſo happen'd a ſmart Engagement betwixt the *Portugueſes* and us, wherein we were hard put to it, and loſt among others Capt. *John Hooghſaten*. During the Siege of *Jafnapatnam* the *Portugueſes* expected the landing of their Succours in this place.

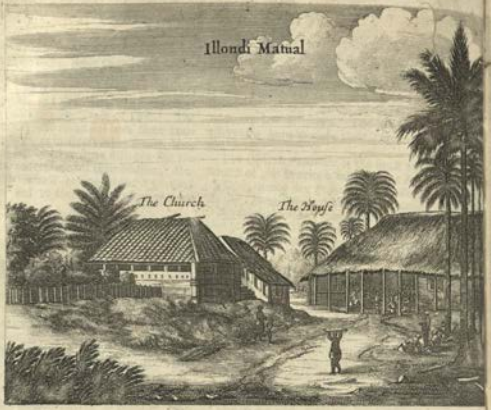
A ſmart Skirmiſh betwixt the Portugueſes and Dutch in this place.

The Road is ſo good here, that Ships



A Large Tamerind tree under the ſhade whereof they frequently hear Sermons.

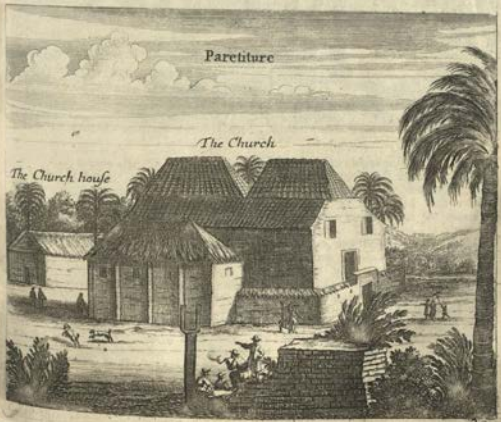
Illondi Mahal



Ureputti

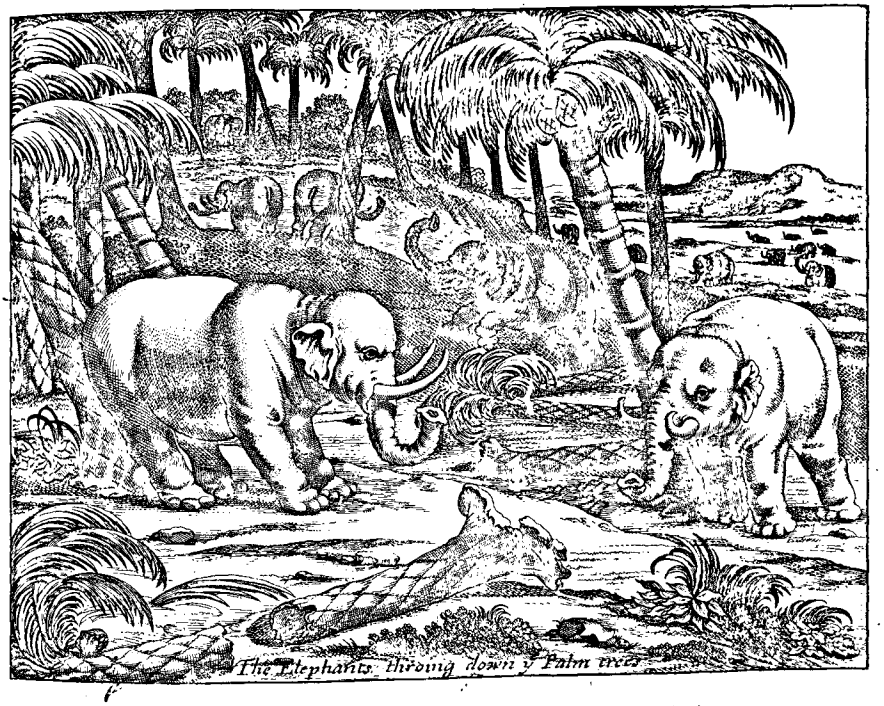
Catavelli

Paretiture



A good Road. may ride ſafe at Anchor for 7 or 8 Months, but they muſt take care to depart before the Northern *Mouſſon*, which renders this Shore very dangerous: So ſoon as any Ships are diſcover'd at Sea, a Flag is put out on a long Pole for their Direction. The Church was much decay'd, but has been repair'd of late. *Great number of Chriſtians at Puncticure.* Juſt before the Church ſtands a tall Tamarin Tree, which affording a very agreeable Shadow in the heat of the day, the People are often inſtructed by the Miniſter to the number of 3000. The School has about 1000 Children. *Baldæus.*

The laſt and furthermoſt Province is call'd *Patchiarapalle*, which has four Churches, and as many Schools. This Province is very ſandy and unwholeſom, wants good Water, and is much infeſted by the Elephants, by reaſon of the vaſt quantity of wild Palm-Trees that grow here, and afford Food to the poorer ſort of Inhabitants, tho the Elephants throw down ſome hundreds every year, being

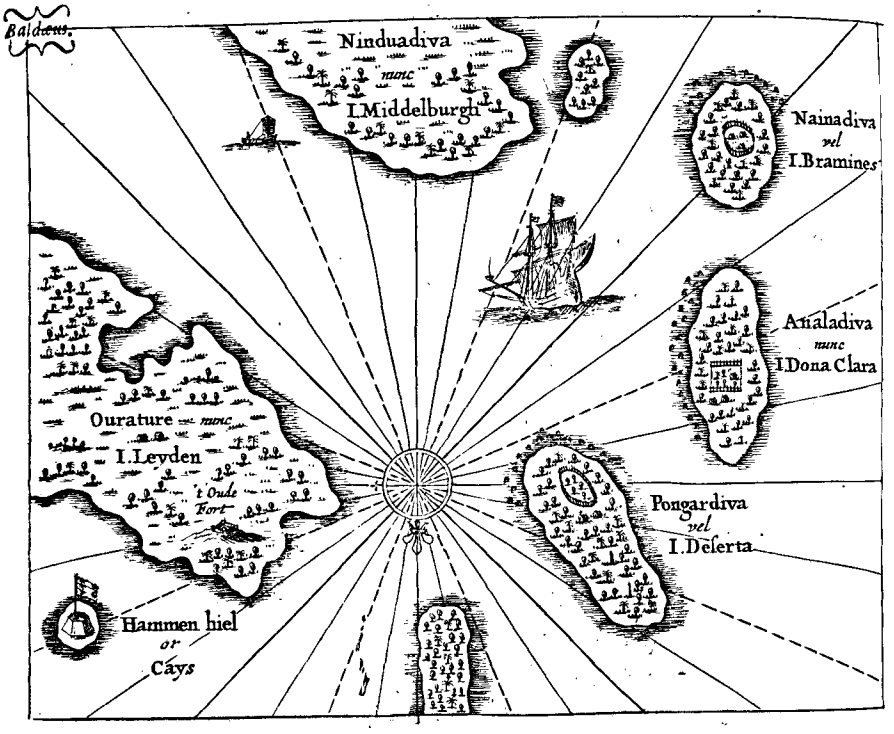


The Elephants throwing down y Palm trees

very greedy after the Fruit when it comes to Maturity. At a certain ſeaſon of the year the Children are ſeiz'd here with a certain Swelling in the Belly and Groin, which ſweeps away a good number of them. They are alſo afflicted with certain Fevers (like thoſe of *Manaar*) which regulate their Fits according to the Moon, and kill in a little time. The Itch and Small-pox are alſo very common here: The Inhabitants being very poor, and feeding moſt generally upon unwholeſom Diet, ſuch as dry'd Fiſh, *Pounatei*, *Kelenges*, and a little Rice. As this Province borders upon *Raja Singa*'s Country, ſo they are ſubject to the Incurſions of the *Cingaleſes*, which is the reaſon that the Houſe belonging to the Church of *Poelepolay* (the firſt in this Province) is ſurrounded with a high Wall with Port-holes in the nature of a Redoubt. The School has about 300 Children, and the Church 600 Auditors. Here are certain Women who have a way to play upon Earthern Veſſels or Mugs (call'd *Callangs*) by blowing into them as into a Trumpet. This Province affords a kind of Wood call'd *Jagers-Wood* (or *Hunters-wood*) which for its goodneſs is tranſported to the Coaſt of *Coromandel*.

The Province of Patchiarapalle unwholeſom. *The Church Poelepolay.*

Two



The Church Mogommale.

Two good hours from *Poelepolay* ſtands the Church of *Mogommale* in a Wood, with an adjacent Houſe, both well built; the School has about 450 Children, and the Church 500 Auditors.

The Church Tambamme.

The Church *Tambamme* is the largeſt and beſt ſeated in the whole Province. The School has 500 Children, and the Church 900 Auditors.

The Church Mulipatto.

Mulipatto is the laſt Church, about a day's Journy from *Jafnapatnam*, near the Head of the River call'd *Paſſo Seco*, or the *Dry Paſſage*; where we have a *Palenka* guarded by ſome Soldiers. The Church-Houſe is provided with Port-holes for its Defence, but the Church is mean and ſmall. The School has no more than 215 Children, and the Church ſcarce 350 Auditors.

Thus far of *Jafnapatnam*, and its Provinces, Churches and Schools. We will now paſs over into the adjacent Iſles, which are ſix in number.

Ourature *the firſt Iſle of* Jafnapatnam.

The firſt of theſe Iſles is *Ourature*, which has three Churches, *viz. Aleputti*, *Welane* and *S. John*, or *Ourature*, all which have together about 800 School-boys, and 2600 Auditors. This Iſle has been ſubject to great Floods, both before and in the time of the *Portugueſes*, to ſuch a degree that the People were forced to ſave themſelves on the tops of the Trees. Of this we ſaw an Inſtance in the year 1658. when a moſt furious Tempeſt, accompanied by a Hurrican, raiſed the Waters beyond the Shore to ſuch a height, that it broke into the Water-Gate of the Caſtle, throwing down every thing that ſtood in the way; the Tiles were all blown from the Houſes, the Trees tore up by the Roots, and unſpeakable damage done both to Men and Cattle. After the fury of the Tempeſt was ſomewhat allay'd, ſeveral Fiſhes were taken in the Church-porch, which had been carried along with the Water over the Cortin. This Iſle has plenty of Fiſh and Stags: It produces alſo a certain ſmall Root call'd *Saye*, us'd by the Dyers to dye Red Cloths. They make alſo very good Butter here, and have ſtore of Larks and ſome Sea-gulls.

An inſtance of a Flood.

The Products of this Iſle

The Iſle of *Ourature* and *Caradiva* are ſeparated by the River, in the midſt whereof lies the Fort *Cays* (or *Hammeel*) of which we have ſpoken before.

The Iſle of Caradiva.

From

*

The Church Poelepolay
The House

The Church House
The Church Magamma le.
The foot of ye Cross

The Church Tambamme
The House

The House
The Church

Baldæus.

This Blank was left by a Miſtake.

From this Iſle the Elephants are embark'd by means of a Bridg, and tranſported to *Coromandel* and *Bengale*. This Iſle is ſuppoſed to produce the beſt *Saye* in the *Indies*. It has a well built Church and Houſe belonging to it of Stone; the Church was finiſh'd in my time, as was that of *Ourature*, which was ſet on fire by the *Portugueſes*. The School is frequented by 490 Children, and the Church by 1000 or 1100 Perſons.

Somewhat further into the Sea to the right as you ſail to the Iſle *Pongardiva*, lies a little Iſland call'd *Ilha Deſerta*, i. e. the *Deſert Iſland*, by the *Portugueſes*. This Iſle as well as that of *Carativa*, abounds with Serpents, and furniſhes our Ships with Fuel.

The Deſert Iſland.

Pongardiva.

Pongardiva is a large Iſle, but the Ground being rocky, produces but little for the ſuſtenance of Mankind, except Stags, Hares and Peacocks in great quantities; they abound alſo in Fiſh, and eſpecially in large Oiſters, which are better to ſtew than to be eaten raw. The Men are generally much taller here than in any other part of the *Indies*. The School has 200 Children, and the Church 800 Auditors.

The Iſle *Analativa* is ſmall, but produces vaſt plenty of Oiſters. The Inhabitants of both Sexes amount to about 800, and 200 Children. It has a little Church and convenient Houſe near it. It was formerly call'd *Donna Clara*, from a certain Lady that liv'd there, and was Miſtreſs of it in the time of the *Portugueſes*. They ſtill ſhew there a Chair wherein ſhe uſed to ſit, which is big enough to hold conveniently two Perſons at once.

Analativa, or D. Clara.

The Iſland *Nainativa* has got its Name from the great number of *Jackals* that are found there; of which more anon. It is very ſmall, and inhabited by *Brahmans* turn'd Chriſtians, who lead very ſober Lives. The School has 70 Children, and the Church 300 Auditors. The Church is very ſmall, yet has an adjacent Houſe fit to lodg Strangers in.

Nainativa.

Nindundiva, or *the Long Iſle*, from its length, which is about ſix Leagues, is call'd *Ilha das Vacas*, i. e. the *Cow Iſland*, by the *Portugueſes*, becauſe abundance of

Nindundiva, or Ilha das Vacas.

Cattel are tranſported thither from *Tondaday*, which makes Cattel ſo cheap there that you may buy a good Cow for four *Dutch* Shillings (or half a Rixdollar) but their Oxen and Cows are not near ſo big as thoſe on the Continent of *Jafnapatnam*. Oftentimes a Mortality happens among the Cattel, becauſe the Ground being hot and dry, produces divers venomous Herbs, which they feed upon. The Inhabitants are very poor, and live upon miſerable Diet: I remember that being once eight days in this Iſle, I and my Company could ſcarce get Proviſions for our Suſtenance. The Iſle is of difficult acceſs, becauſe the Shore is rocky, and has no Bays, but only a few narrow Creeks, where there is no coming in except in very calm Weather; otherwiſe the Sea beats with ſuch violence againſt the Rocks, that there is no coming near them, tho there be ſometimes five or ſix fathom Water. For which reaſon there is no coming at it except in the calm Seaſons, which happen twice a year at the change of the *Mouſſons*: For the South-wind forces you upon the Rocks, and with the North-wind the Shore is too ſhallow to approach it. The *Portugueſes* had formerly a Fort here, the Ruins whereof are to be ſeen to this day. They alſo brought ſome Horſes into this Iſle, which multiplying in time produc'd a certain kind of Horſes that are very ſmall, but hardy and very fit to travel on ſtony and rocky grounds: They live in the Wilderneſs, and are taken by forcing them unto the Bank of a River or Pond, where they catch them in Snares or Ropes. This Iſle produces alſo a certain kind of Goats, out of which they take Bezoar Stones, but they are none of the beſt. It has about 900 Inhabitants, and 170 Children.

Baldæus. Abounds in Cattel.

Great Mortality among them.

It is very remarkable that there is no freſh Water in all this Iſle, except what is found in one place among the Rocks, being above half a mile in Circuit. If we may credit the Inhabitants, theſe Rocks were ſplit by a Thunderbolt, which occaſion'd theſe Springs, ſome whereof have not above half a foot, others a foot deep Water: The entire Rocks ariſing betwixt theſe Springs have often caſt Men and Beaſts down the Precipices.

A remarkable Spring.

There are ſome other Iſlands near this Shore, but being very ſmall and not inhabited (as the *Paletiva*, and the two Brothers, ſince call'd *Hoorn* and *Enchuyſen*) are not worth our particular Obſervation.

In the year 1663. I and my Collegue Mr. *John à Breyl* ſent the following account to Mr. *Maatzuyker*, General of the *Indies* for our Company, *viz.* That in *Jafnapatnam* were at that time 15012 Children under the Tuition of the reſpective School-maſters there, being all Natives; not reckoning thoſe of *Manaar* and the Country of the *Wannias*, where in my Viſitation 1665. in *March* and *April*, I found in thoſe of *Poenery*, *Polveraincatti*, *Peringale*, *Mantotte*, *Nanatam*, and *Aripou*, all Churches belonging to the *Wannias*, and in the Churches of *Manaar*, viz. *Totavalli*, *Karſel*, *Irkelampatti*, *Tellemmaar*, *Peixale*, the Fiſhers and City Churches, 1315 Children of the Natives. Such as were come to Age of maturity amounted in the *Wannias* to 4533, and in the Iſle of *Manaar* to 3520, not including 214 Slaves lately converted, who had already learn'd certain forms of Prayers. According to the Church-Regiſters (call'd here *Patolas*) in the year 1663. there were of Chriſtian Men and Women in the Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam* 62558, not including the Slaves, whereof there were 2587. The number of the baptiz'd Children from 1658, till 1661, *viz.* in three years and a half, in the Churches of *Jafnapatnam* amounted to 5799 Children, and 36 that were come to Age of Maturity. During that time were married 2158 Couples, not reckoning thoſe baptiz'd and married in the *Low-Dutch* and *Portugueſe* Churches. At the time of my departure the number of the Children in the Schools was riſen to 18000, and that of the baptized Children in 1663 to 12387. From the year 1658, till 1661. the whole burden of viſiting all the before-mention'd Churches lay upon my Shoulders, till Mr. *Sweerius* was join'd with me, who dying before my return to *Holland* (his Corps being inter'd at the *Cape of Good Hope*) Mr. *Bartholomew Heyne* ſucceeded in his place.

Chriſtians in the Wannias and Manaar.

Number of Chriſtians in Jafnapatnam.

In the Churches of *Jafnapatnam* the Ten Commandments written in large *Malabar* Characters, are hung up on a Table, on both ſides whereof are the *Our Father*, and the *Creed*. Every Sunday the People come to Church about Ten a Clock, and after they have ſung a Pſalm, the School-maſter reads a Sermon in the *Malabar* Language, for which purpoſe a certain number of Sermons are allotted to each Church, to be read in the abſence of the Miniſter. This done, they conclude with ſinging another Pſalm.

How the Religious Worſhip is perform'd.

But

The Catching of Horses in Jafnapatnam
132

But the greateſt Trouble that belongs to a Miniſter in theſe parts, is the Inſtruction to be given both to young and old by way of mouth, which is beſt done by way of Queſtion and Anſwer, which makes the deepeſt Impreſſion into the Minds of theſe tender Chriſtians. Beſides, as the *Malabar* Tongue is ſo difficult to attain to, that none of our Miniſters dare pretend to the Perfection of it; ſo on the other hand, they may learn without much trouble, as much as is requiſite for the inſtructing them in the main Points of our Religion. Add to this, that our Miniſters undergo much more Fatigue in their Stations than the *Romiſh* Eccleſiaſticks, who preach very ſeldom; and each Church having its peculiar Attendant, they are not oblig'd to travel from place to place as we do. Beſides, that they bring the *Portugueſe* Language commonly along with them, which ours are forc'd to learn upon the ſpot, not without great difficulty; not to mention ſeveral other Diſadvantages on our ſide, ſufficient to convince thoſe who extol the Merits of the *Romiſh* Clergy upon that ſcore, and vilify ours: theſe I would have conſider, that at this time there are no more than two or three Miniſters belonging to all theſe Churches, which had no leſs than forty in the time of the *Portugueſes*; and we have three Sermons every Sunday, and one in the Week; beſides the conſtant Viſitations of the Churches in the Country.

The Dutch Miniſters in the Indies undergo more Difficulties than the Romaniſts.

Before my departure, I took care to have the next following Pieces tranſlated (the ſame being revis'd by me before) out of the *Portugueſe* into the *Malabar*, by *Francis de Fonſeca*, a Member of the Reform'd Churches.

" The Goſpel of St. *Matthew*. The " Leſſer Catechiſm. Inſtructions for " Communicants. Queſtions and An- " ſwers out of the New Teſtament. " Short Queſtions and Anſwers concern- " ing the chief Matters contain'd in the " Old Teſtament. (This was not quite perfected at the time of my departure.) " Conſolations for the Sick. Formulary " of Baptiſm, both for Children and o- " thers. Morning and Evening Prayers, " as alſo Devotions to be uſed both before " and after Sermons, and before and after " Meals. Prayers for Rain and a fruitful " Seaſon. Thankſgivings on account of " Victories obtain'd againſt our Enemies. " Prayers to be us'd in the Army before an " Engagement. Prayers for Criminals " before Execution. Formulary and Pray- " ers of Marriage. Some Pſalms of " *David* ſet in Metre after the *Malabar* " faſhion. Some Sermons, *viz.* upon the " Nativity of Chriſt, upon his Paſſion, and " Death, Reſurrection and Aſcenſion; " upon the ſending of the Holy Ghoſt, " the Circumciſion of our Saviour, the " Hiſtory of the Wiſe Men of the Eaſt, " the Reſurrection and Day of laſt Judg- " ment; upon Charity due from one " Chriſtian to another, out of *Luke* 10. " Who is our Neighbour? the rejoycing " of the Angels in Heaven for the Con- " verſion of a Sinner, upon the Queſtion " of the Phariſees, *Mat.* 12. *v.* 38. and " ſuch like. *Baldæus.*

I had abundance of other Sermons by me in the *Portugueſe* Language, but for want of a good Interpreter (whom I mention'd before, having his hands full with the reſt) the ſame was fain to be defer'd till another opportunity, tho at the ſame time I never thought it convenient to overcharge theſe People with many Books, purſuant to the Opinion of Mr. *John Maatzuyker* our General, in his Letter ſent to me from *Batavia*, Sept. 18. 1662.

" I Could not without an extreme Sa- " tisfaction underſtand the happy Con- " dition of the Churches in *Jafnapat- " nam*, and the Effects of your Induſtry. " God Almighty bleſs your Endeavours " and Zeal to the honour of his holy " Name, and the Salvation of many " thouſand Souls. Being in great want " of Books for the Churches and Schools " of this Country, it is impoſſible to " gratify your deſire, eſpecially ſince " many of theſe Books are very ill ma- " nag'd by ſome People. I hope you are " pretty well provided by this time, " that your good Intentions may not be " diſappointed for want of them. Tho " in my opinion Reading and Writing are " things not ſo abſolutely neceſſary for the " Edification of theſe poor Wretches, as " that they may be inſtructed in the " Fundamentals of Religion, which con- " ſiſts in few Points. For in caſe we " pretend to propagate Chriſtianity by " reading and writing, I am afraid it " will prove both tedious and chargeable " to the Company. To promote this " holy Work we have ſent three Mini- " ſters, whereof two are gone with the " Ships to *Malabar*, and the third is late- " ly arriv'd with the Yacht the *Achilles*: " they are all three young Men, and " not long ago came from *Holland*, and " conſequently moſt likely to do conſi- " derable Service for a long time, provi- " ded

Baldæus. " ded they are indued with due Zeal, as " I hope they are, for the benefit of the " Iſle of *Ceylon*, and the places there- " unto belonging. We have alſo ſent a " Miniſter to *Negapatnam*: ſo recom- " mending you to the Protection of " Almighty God, I reſt

From the Caſtle of *Batavia* 18 Sept. 1662.

Your affectionate Friend,

John Maatzuyker.

CHAP. XLVII.

The Nature and Qualifications of the Inhabitants of Jafnapatnam. *The* Bellales, *and their manner of living. The* Brahmans, *their Doctrines ſhewn and refuted.*

Qualifications of the Inhabitants of Jafnapatnam.

IT is time to ſay ſome thing of the Inhabitants of *Jafnapatnam*; which done, we will return to *Batecalo*, and ſo leaving the Iſle we will turn our ſelves another way.

In *Ceylon* are divers Clans, or Families, as well as on the Coaſt of *Coromandel*. The Generation of the *Bellales* is the chiefeſt here ſince Chriſtianity has been introduc'd, the *Brahmans* challenging the firſt rank among the Pagans.

The Habit of the Bellales.

The *Bellales* wear a kind of Garment from above the Navel, turning betwixt the Legs like a pair of Drawers. They alſo make uſe of *Seripous* (or Sc es) tied to the bottom of the feet with Leather Straps, the upper part of the feet being bare, to preve their ſweating. Upon the Belly they have a kind of a Bag (call'd *Maddi*) being part of their Garment roll'd together, wherein they keep their *Areek* and *Betel*, and ſome Paper to make uſe of upon occaſion. On the right ſide they carry a kind of a Knife in a Sheaf, and an Iron Pen pointed with Silver, as is likewiſe the Sheath, in which they keep alſo a piece of Steel to ſharpen their Knife upon. They make holes in their Ears from their Infancy, which being adorn'd with Golden Pendants, draw them down to their Shoulders. They live upon Husbandry, and are rich in Cattel, ſuch as Cows, Oxen for the Plow, Sheep, Goats and Buffalers. Their Habitations are both convenient and neat, with pleaſant Gardens, well planted with *Betel*, and furniſh'd with excellent Springs, which furniſh them (during the dry Summer Seaſon) with Water for the watering of the Gardens. Their Harveſt is in *January* and *February*; their Winter, or rainy Seaſon being in *November* and *December*. In ſome places, *viz.* in the low marſhy Grounds, they have Harveſt twice a year: They threſh their Corn (after the manner of the *Iſraelites*) with Oxen, not muffled; theſe tread the Seed out of the Ears.

Are rich in Cattel.

Their manner of threſhing the Corn.

During the rainy Seaſon it rains with ſuch violence, that the Fields are all overflown; and I remember that in my time a conſiderable part of the *Cortin* of the Caſtle was waſh'd away by the Rains. This continues for two months, and it happens oftentimes, that for eight months after it rains not above three times, which is the reaſon that they are oblig'd even to water the Coco-Trees till they are ſix years old. If you dig about two foot deep you meet with rocky ground, ſo that if you will have a Spring you muſt cut them out of the Rocks with vaſt Charge.

Great Rains.

The Ground rocky.

The before-mention'd *Bellales* make likewiſe Butter, but not after the ſame manner as we do in *Holland*. They take a kind of a Mill made like a Star at the bottom, this they roll betwixt both hands (as we do with our Chocolate) till the Butter comes. Some of our *Dutch* Women make alſo good Cheeſe, but it is not regarded among the Inhabitants; but Butter is in great eſteem among them as well as among the *Moors*, nay the Family of *Commety* uſe Butter like Drink. Milk turn'd to Curds (call'd by them *Tayr*) is alſo in great requeſt with them, and uſed like a cooling Medicine in Fevers, and the Small-Pox, which are very frequent here.

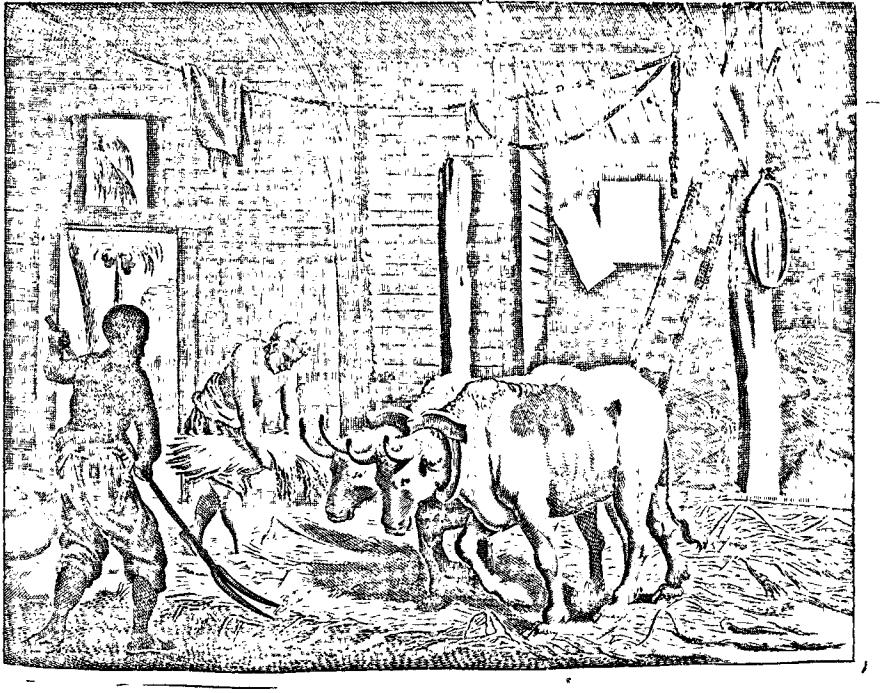
Their way of making Butter.

Their Cattel they keep both day and night in the Field, tho towards night they drive them into a certain Encloſure: They are never hous'd in the Winter, but feed in the Grounds where the Corn firſt ſprouts forth, and afterwards are fed with Hay till Harveſt time. If the Cattel happen to break into a Neighbour's Field, the Owner is oblig'd to make good the Damage. The *Bellales* are generally the richeſt of the Country; they don't marry except in their own Family, and

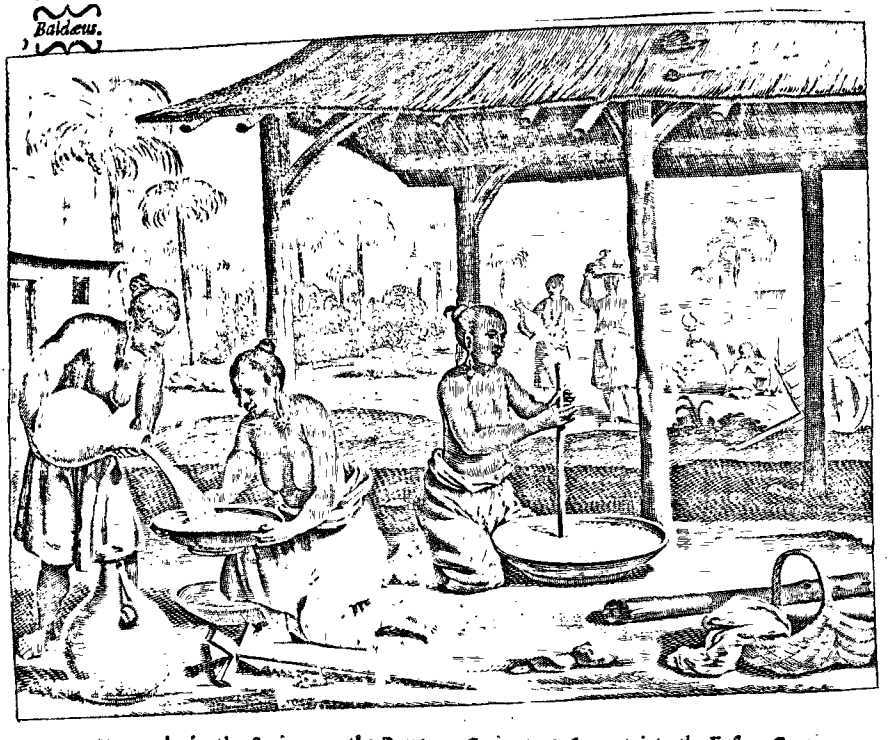
How they manage their Cattel.

com-

*



Baldæus.



commonly in the Spring; as the *Romans* did formerly in *May*, and the *Perſians* in the Spring: if it happens to be a fruitful Year, they are the more inclined to marry. They are very litigious, and will go to Law for a Trifle, becauſe they are conſtantly envious at one another.

Are litigious.

The Brahmans.

The *Brahmans* living in *Jafnapatnam*, or any other part of the *Indies*, are for the moſt part Men of great Morality, ſober, clean, induſtrious, civil, obliging, and very moderate both in eating and drinking; they uſe no ſtrong Liquors, waſh or bathe twice a day, eat nothing that has had or may have Life, yet are much addicted (like all the reſt of the *Indians*) to Pleaſure. Notwithſtanding they are Chriſtians, they carry ſtill certain Beads, and (as *Rogerius* obſerves, *fol.* 71.) like thoſe of *Coromandel*, never marry out of their Families, but frequently their Brothers and Siſters Children; tho elſe they are great Enemies to Inceſt, but excuſe this near Alliance by the great Value they put upon their Generation, which they deduce from *Bramma*, and ſome Learned Men from *Abraham* and *Ketura*, whoſe Children, according to *Gen.* 25, v. 6. *went into the Eaſtern Country.*

From whence deſcended.

Tho they bear the Name of Chriſtians, and know how to diſcourſe rationally of the Ten Commandments, and the other Points of the Chriſtian Doctrine, they ſtill retain many of their Pagan Superſtitions. If you tell them of the Chriſtian Liberty in Victuals and Drinks, they reply, that they are not ignorant of it, but as the Eſſence of Chriſtianity does not conſiſt in eating and drinking, ſo they did not think themſelves obliged to feed upon ſuch things as are contrary to their Nature and Education, being from their Infancy uſed to much tenderer Food, which agrees beſt with their Conſtitution, and makes them generally live to a great Age.

Retain ſome Pagan Superſtition.

They are not ignorant in the Courſe of the Stars, in calculating the Eclipſes of the Sun and Moon, know the *ſeven Stars*, which they call *Arramien*, i. e. *Six-fiſhes*, becauſe, ſay they, we ſee no more than ſix. They underſtand alſo the Names of the Planets, and chiefeſt of the fixed Stars, but this muſt be underſtood from the moſt Learned among them.

Their reaſons for it.

* Tho

Tho we ſhall treat in particular hereafter of the Errors of the Pagans, yet can I not paſs by here in ſilence, what I have obſerv'd my ſelf concerning their Opinion of *the Creation of the World, its Age*, and *Tranſmigration of the Soul.* In the Year 1665, after I had catechiz'd the People after Sermon in the Church of *Paretiture*, happening to diſcourſe concerning the *Creation* and *Age* of the World; ſome of the *Indians* affirm'd that the World had ſtood 4864 Years ſince their *Kaligam* or fourth Period. For they have four Periods, the firſt called *Creitagam*, the ſecond *Treitagam*, the third *Dwaparugam*, and the fourth *Kaligam.* And whereas the *Indians* in *Coromandel* did in the Year 1639, compute no more than 4739 Years ſince the Creation of the World, I told 'em that they follow'd the Footſteps of the *Chineſes*, who in their Computations made no great account of 100 Years leſs or more, which made 'em ſmile. I told 'em further, that there was no certain Computation from the beginning of the World, except what was founded upon the Holy Scripture; and that in the Year 1665 (according to the *Jewiſh* Computation) the World had ſtood 5425 Years. Concerning the Origin of the Soul, I found them of the ſame Opinion with the Great *Rabbi*, viz. *That all Souls were created in the beginning, and kept till they were to be communicated to certain Bodies.* Unto which they have added the *Pythagorean* Tradition of the *Tranſmigration of the Soul.*

Their Belief concerning the beginning of the World.

Their Belief concerning the beginning of the Souls.

I remember that at a certain time, as I was walking with ſome of them, and endeavouring to refute this Opinion; they objected that it was impoſſible for a Child to be born Blind, Dumb or Lame, without having receiv'd a Soul that had been guilty of very groſs Sins. For, ſaid they, ſince the Child has not committed any Sins, and God does not puniſh any Body without ſinning, this muſt be attributed to the Sins committed by the Soul whilſt yet in another Body, and now entred into the Child. Unto which I reply'd in our Saviour's Words, out of *John* 9. 1. when his Diſciples ask'd him concerning the blind Man from his Birth, *Neither had this Man ſinned nor his Parents, but that the Works of God ſhould be made manifeſt in him.* Whence it ſeems that the *Jews* were ſomewhat infected with this Tradition, mention whereof is alſo made by *Joſeph. Antiq. l.* 18. *c.* 11. and *de Bello Judaico, l.* 2. *c.* 8. The Words of *Herod, Mat.* 14. 2. when he ſays concerning Chriſt, *This is* John *the Baptiſt, he is riſen from the Dead*, intimate the ſame; as likewiſe what the *Jews* ſaid concerning Chriſt, *Mat.* 16. 13, 14. ſome that he was *John the Baptiſt*, ſome *Elias*, and others *Jeremias.* Hence *Elias* (commonly call'd *Levita*) in his Book *Tisbi*, and the other Cabaliſts of the *Jews* were of Opinion, that the Souls paſs thro three diſtinct Bodies, which they pretend to evince from the Words of *Job* 33. 29. *Lo! all theſe things worketh God twice or thrice thro one Man.* Thus the *Jews* affirm that the Soul of *Adam* was tranſlated into the Body of *David*, and afterwards into that of the *Meſſiah*; which Error having been introduced into *Paleſtine* by *Antiochus*'s Philoſophers, the *Jewiſh* Doctors did not ſtick to maintain that *the Souls of ſinful Men did tranſmigrate into the Bodies of Beaſts, according to the degrees or heinouſneſs of their Crimes*; whereas it is manifeſt, that a rational Soul can't fix its Habitation but in the Body inſtructed with proper Organs, whereby it exerts its Operations; and the Scripture tells us expreſly, that the *Soul and Spirit returns to God who gave it*; beſides many other Arguments I alledged to them upon this Head againſt their Opinion.

Error aiming the Jews, concerning the Tranſmigration of the Soul.

Baldæus.

The learned *Voſſius* is of opinion, that this Error took its beginning from the true Tradition of the Reſurrection of the Dead, which was ſpread even among the *Druids* in *Gaul*, according to *Cæſar*, *lib.* 6. with this difference however, that the *Pythagoreans* affirm the Souls to tranſmigrate even into the Bodies of Beaſts; whereas the firſt reſtrain it only to the Bodies of Men, which made them face Death with an undaunted Courage, according to *Lucan. lib.* 1.

This Opinion receiv'd among the Druids.

Felices errore ſuo, quos ille timorum
Maximus haud urget lethi metus, inde ruendi
In ferrum mens prona viris, animæque capaces
Mortis, & ignavum eſt redituræ parcere vitæ.

Appian ſays of the antient *Germans* among other things, that they deſpiſed Death in hopes of another Life; and *Thomas Aviot* an *Engliſhman* aſſures us, that the ſame had been found in *Virginia*. *Joſeph Acoſta* ſays the ſame of *Peru* and *Mexico*; and the ſame is related of *Guinea*, of the *Chineſes*, the antient *Egyptians* and *Getes*. The *Pythagoreans* ſay of *Athalides*, that his Soul before it entred the Body of *Pythagoras*, tranſmigrated into three ſeveral other Bodies, firſt into that of

Eu-

Baldæus. *Euphorbus*, the Son of *Panthus* in the *Trojan* War, afterwards into *Pyrrhus*, next into *Eleus*, and then into *Pythagoras*. All the *Indian* Pagans are infected with this erroneous Opinion, as we shall see more at large hereafter: but what is more surprizing is, that the *Sadduces* among the *Jews*, who had so much Veneration for the Books of *Moses*, should deny the *Immortality of the Soul*; when it is said in *Gen.* 1. 16. *That the Soul of Man was not created*, like material Substances, but was part of the *Spirit of God*. The same say all the *Gentiles*, as *Hermes*, *Zoroaster*, *Chalcidius* and *Epicharmus*. *Cicero in Somnio Scip.* says, *There is a near Relation betwixt God and our Souls*. *Seneca* in his Letter to *Lucilius* tells him, That *the Souls are in Heaven*; and speaking of the deceased Son of *Marcia*, he says, *in meliori Statu est*, he is *in a better State*. The *Turks*, and *Persians*, and *Mahomet* in his *Alcoran* acknowledg the *Immortality of the Soul*; which put these Christians to the blush, who affirm that *the Souls of the Wicked are annihilated*, or what others assert, *That the Souls rest in the Matter till the Day of Judgment*.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Marriages of the Bellales *and* Brahmans. *Divers Circumstances observed upon that account. Families, Degrees, and Handicraftsmen of* Jafnapatnam. *The Taking and Description of* Trinquenemale.

IN the preceding Chapter we told you concerning the Marriages of the *Bellales*, and how the *Brahmans* often marry their Brothers and Sisters Children. *Marriage-Customs.* Among some of the Christians in *Ceylon* obtains a certain Custom to this day, to tye the *Tali* or Bracelet of the Bride about the Bridegroom's Neck, a thing introduced by the *Pagans*, and imitated by the Christians: for as *Rogerius* observes, the Inhabitants of the Coast of *Coromandel* look upon it as a Ceremony so necessary towards the Confirmation of the Marriage, that whenever the Husband dies, the *Tali* he wore about his Neck on his Marriage-Day is to be burnt with him.

As Maidens without a good Portion are a very bad Commodity here, hence it is that frequent Collections are made to help the poorer sort to Husbands. They are of Opinion, that a single Man is but half a Man; nay that those who neglect or lose any time in propagating their own Kind, are not far different from a Murderer and a Destroyer of Human Kind (according to the opinion of *Plato*, which was likewise encourag'd among the *Athenians* and *Romans*) which is the reason they often marry their Daughters at 10 and 11 Years of Age, and nothing is more frequent than to see them bring forth Children at 13 or 14.

Weddings. After they have been three times proclaimed from the Pulpit, the Marriage Ceremony is perform'd by the Minister; the House where the Wedding is kept being generally adorn'd with a kind of Triumphal Arch raised without Doors, made of Fig-tree Branches, Flowers, Pomegranates, and such like. The richer sort seldom fail to give a good Entertainment to their Friends, of Venison, Hares, Partridges, Fish, Fruits, Preserves, &c. and the Evening is spent in dancing, singing, and divers other Diversions. However strong Liquors are never made use of on such Occasions, unless the *Hollanders* (who can't well be merry without them) bring some along with them. These Marriage-Diversions continue sometimes four or five days successively.

I remember that during my Residence here, sometimes Children of eight or nine Years of Age would have engaged in mutual Promises of Marriage, in mine and their Friends Presence; which I always opposed, fearing, not without reason, that they might repent their Bargain, before they came to a marriageable Age. For the rest they constantly observe this Custom, that the Female is younger than the Bridegroom; nay they seldom will chuse a Maid, that has already had her Monthly Times: this Custom is so strictly observed on the Coast of *Coromandel*, that if a *Brahman*'s Daughter remains unmarried till that time, she must lay aside all hopes of it for the future. *They marry very young.*

The learned *Selden* shews out of *Rabbi Moses Maimonides*, that the *Jewish* High Priests were not allow'd to marry a Maiden, unless she was under 12 Years of Age; and the antient *Romans* commonly married their Daughters at 10, 11 or 12 Years *The same practised by the Jews and Romans.*

Years of Age. It is ſufficiently known what *Moſes* ſays, in relation to the Marks of Virginity, *Deut.* 12. 17. which to this day is followed by the *Moors* of *Fez* and *Morocco*. If they happen to die without Iſſue, the Mother's Portion returns to her Friends, the reſt to the Huſband's. One laudable Cuſtom they have, which is, that ſcarce ever Children marry here without the conſent of their Parents; a Cuſtom not only agreeable to the expreſs Command of God, expreſs'd in divers Places of the Scripture, and the Practice of all Ages even among the *Pagans*, but alſo conſonant to the Civil Conſtitutions, and the Decrees of the Council of *Lateran* and other Councils, which declare a Marriage betwixt *Raptorem* and *Raptam* invalid in it ſelf.

Children never marry without the Conſent of their Parents.

Divers Tribes. The Tribe of the Chivias.

The Tribe or Family of the *Chivias*, uſe formerly to attend the Service of the King of *Jafnapatnam*, but now do all ſorts of Drudgery, as carrying of Water and Wood for the *Dutch* Inhabitants; they make uſe alſo of them for Littermen, 10 or 12 of them being ſometimes employed at a time, to carry a good bulky *Hollander*, 10, 20, nay 30 Leagues in a Litter. However as they are deſcended from Courtiers, ſo they are too proud to carry any ordinary Perſon, who muſt be contented to be carried by the ordinary *Coelys* or Labourers, who live all over the Country; whereas the *Chivias* inhabit in the Diſtrict of the Church of *Chundecouli*.

Of the Parruas.

Thoſe of the Tribe of the *Parruas* do not live in ſuch great Numbers in *Jafnapatnam*, as they do about *Tutecoryn*; they apply themſelves to the Sea, and eſpecially in diving for Sea-Horſe Teeth and Pearls. They generally ſpeak *Portugueſe*, and are an active ſort of People.

Of the Chittiis.

The *Chittiis* live for the moſt part upon the Linen Manufacture and Traffick, the word *Chitty* ſignifying as much as a Merchant; they are a crafty Generation. Each of theſe Tribes does not marry into any other, beſides their own, nay commonly in the ſame Family. Beſides which, each Handicraftſman educates his Son to the ſame Trade he is of; thus a Weaver's Son follows the Weaving-Trade, as the Smith's Son does that of a Smith.

Of the Carreas.

The Tribe of the *Carreas* live upon Fiſhing, which they perform with monſtrous large Nets; they inhabit near the Sea-ſhore of *Jafnapatnam*, and the Banks of the *Salt-River*. Thoſe of the Tribe of the *Mokkuas* are likewiſe Fiſhermen.

Of the Nallouas.

The *Nallouas* are generally Slaves to the *Bellales*, and much blacker than the reſt. Their Buſineſs is to gather the Liquor that flows out of the Coco-Trees, call'd *Suyri* and *Euwak* by the *Indians*, to dig the Ground, tend the Cattel, water the Trees, and ſuch like Drudgeries, as is commonly done alſo by the *Coelys* or ordinary Labourers. They are a naſty Generation, you may ſmell them at a good diſtance, not unlike the *Hottentots* on the Cape of *Good Hope*.

Baldæus.

Of the Parreas.

The *Parreas* are the moſt deſpicable of all, their Employment being to carry out Dung and ſuch like filthy things, they feed upon Rats and Mice.

Great Difference in the degrees of their Tribes.

It is obſervable, that the Tribes of the higher Rank look upon the inferiour Ones with a great deal of Scorn, theſe being obliged to ſalute the others in the Streets with deep Reverence, and other Ceremonies to ſhew their Submiſſion. On the other hand, all the Men of what Rank or Quality ſoever, exerciſe a great Authority over their Wives, whom they rarely honour ſo far as to eat with them, but commonly dine alone. None of all theſe Tribes eat Cows Fleſh, which is the reaſon that no Cows are killed but by the *Dutch*, the Cow being look'd upon among the reſt as a Sacred Creature, as it was formerly among the *Egyptians* *, of which more hereafter.

**See* Exo. 8. 26. & Gen. 43. 32.

Tho their Tribes are very numerous, yet do they relate to ſome few Families, from whence they take their Original, like the Branches from the Stem of a Tree. The ſame was practiſed among the antient *Egyptians*, who diſtinguiſh'd their Nation into four Head Tribes, *viz.* the *Prieſts*, the *Soldiers*, the *Artiſans* and *Handicraftſmen*, and the Sheep and Cowherds. Juſt as now-a-days ſome of the *European* Nations are diſtinguiſh'd into four Eſtates, *viz. Noblemen*, *Patricians* or *Gentlemen*, *Citizens*, and the Common People.

For the reſt, the generality of the Inhabitants of the Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam* are naturally ingenious, and have a ſtrong Memory; they are very ſober and moderate in their Diet, and (except the *Nallouas* and *Parreas*) very clean in their Apparel, not quarrelſom, but very free with their Tongue.

The Inhabitants of Jafnapatnam.

Their general Vice is Fornication and Adultery, eſpecially among the young Men, as the old Ones are much addicted to Superſtitions, as to the choice of certain Days (whereof ſomething was ſaid before concerning *Raja Singa*) the Cries of Birds, and ſuch like things uſed among the antient *Romans*. Hence it is that the *Portugueſes* in thoſe Parts have a Proverb to this day, *I know*

Baldæus, *not what unfortunate Sight* (Rosto Mosin-ho) *did come in my way this day.*

Their Superstition. Thus on the Coast of *Coromandel*, they look upon it as fortunate, if they see a certain red Bird, with a white Ring about his Neck. *John van Twist* in his Description of *Gusuratte*, tells us of the Natives there, that they look upon it as a good Sign, if they meet an Elephant or Camel loaden or unloaden, a Horse without a Burden, or a Cow or Buffler with Water on their Backs, for without a Load they were accounted unfortunate; a Ram or Dog with a piece of Meat in his Mouth, a Cat passing to the right hand of them: they also reckon it fortunate, if they meet any Body that carries Meat, Milk and Butter, or if a Cock crosses the way.

It is certain, that the Observations of the Cries and Flights of the Birds have not only been usual among the antient *Romans*, but also the *Jews*, with several other such like Superstitions, Predictions, asking Advice from the Devil, the finding out of stolen or lost Goods, *&c.* for *Necromancy* was forbid, *Isa.* 8. 19. Incantations, *Acts* 19. 15. Observations of the Cries of the Birds, *Ezek.* 21. 21. the choice of certain Days, *Esth.* 3. 7. & 9. 24. the consulting of Woods, *Hos.* 4. 12. besides which, the Predictions from the different Appearance of the Water, Air, Fire and Earth, out of certain Union of Characters or Numbers (called *Cabala*) Chiromancy, Astrology, Inspections into the Magic Glass, and such like Diabolical Illusions, described more at large by *Peucerus* in his Treatise, *de variis Divinationum generibus.*

Besides the Artisans and Handicraftsmen, whereof there is great Plenty in *Jafnapatnam*, they have certain Persons who apply themselves to the Law; and in the high Court of Justice, composed of *Hollanders* and *Indians*, were set always (besides the *Modeliars*) a certain Person well versed in the Laws and Constitutions of his Native Country. They have also their Advocates, who make very long Speeches in their Pleadings.

Lawyers in Jafnapatnam.

Their Physicians. Neither are they destitute of Physicians, such as they are; for to speak Truth they are more than Empiricks, who practise according to certain Books and Traditions, transmitted to them by their Ancestors, and confirm'd to them by their own Experience. They know not what Anatomy is, and very little of the nature of purging Medicines, which are not often used in this hot Climate: However when a Purge is to be given (whether a Potion or Pills) the Composition is always made of fresh Herbs; and if it works too strong, they mix some powdered Pepper with Water, and apply it to the Navel in the nature of an Ointment. I can tell it by my own experience, that it is a good Remedy against the Belly-ach and Looseness.

Surgeons and Barbers. They have also good Store of Surgeons and Barbers, the last carry always a small Looking-glass along with them, their Razors are thicker on the back than ours; they not only shave your Beard and Head, but also pare your Hand and Toe Nails, and cleanse your Ears.

Weavers. Weavers are here in abundance. These sit flat upon the Ground, their Feet being plac'd in a Hole dug for that purpose, whilst they are at work.

Painters. Callico-Printers or Painters are numberless here, who have a way of preparing their Colours, that they never go out by washing, tho those printed at *Jafnapatnam* are not near so good as those of the Coast of *Coromandel*, and especially those done at *Masulipatan.*

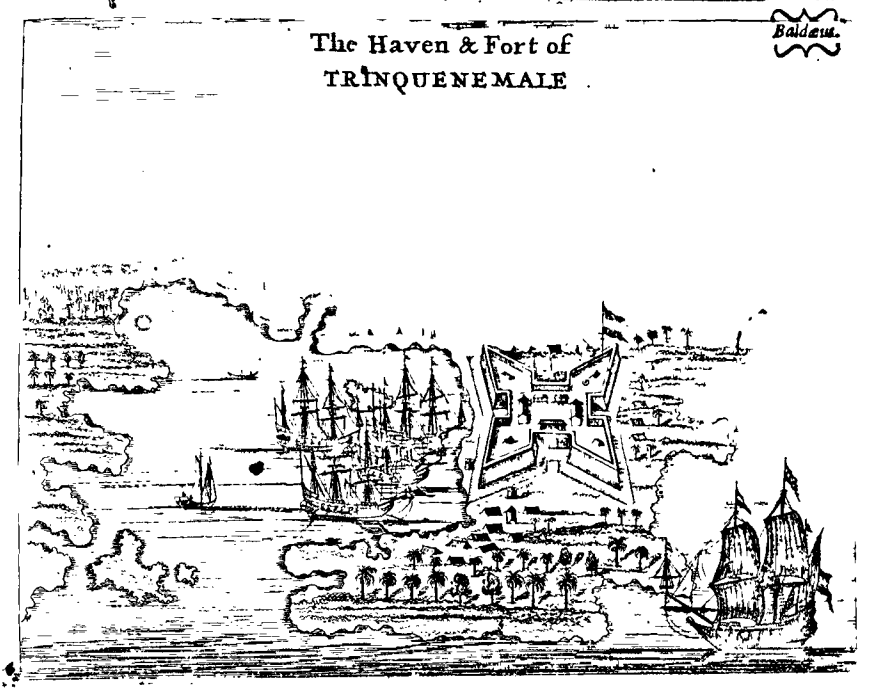
They are excellent Workmen in Ivory and Ebony Wood, as likewise in Gold and Silver, and will come with their Tools (which are but few) to work in the Houses of the *Dutch*. They are exactly well versed in the essaying of Gold.

Other Handicrafsmen. They are as well provided with Smiths, Carpenters and Bricklayers, as most Places in *Europe*, tho a Carpenter or Bricklayer gets not above five or six Pence a day.

Having thus given you a full account of the Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam*, we will now go from thence along the Seashore to *Trinquenemale*, taken 1639 by Mr. *Anthony Caan*, which might have been done before whilst Mr. *Adam Westerwold* was in *Ceylon* (there being no more than 50 Men in Garison) had not *Raja Singa* bent his Thoughts upon *Batecalo*, or as some will have it upon *Matecalo*. *Trinquenemale* has a most excellent Harbour, (as you may see by the Draught) nay to speak the Truth, the best and largest in the whole Isle of *Ceylon*, there being more secure riding at anchor here, than in the Harbours of *Belligamme*, *Gale* or *Columbo*.

Trinquenemale. This Place was several times relinquish'd and rebuilt by our Company, especially during our War with the *English*, it being not thought convenient to leave so good a Harbour, and so conveniently seated for the interrupting all Correspondence betwixt Foreigners and *Raja Singa*, to the Discretion of an Enemy;

*



nemy; tho the repairing of it (during my ſtay in *Ceylon*) under Captain *Peter Waſh*, coſt us abundance of People, that were ſwept away by a Phrenſical Diſtemper, which made them drown themſelves in the Sea. Some of their Bodies being open'd, certain Worms were found in the Subſtance of the Brains, occaſion'd queſtionleſs by the Violence of the Heat, the continual Labour, Watching, and the feeding upon Salt-Proviſions; but more eſpecially by the cold Night-Fogs. After which time it was ſtrengthened with ſome additional Fortifications, as appears by Captain *Peter du Pon*'s Letter, dated the 5*th* of *Octob.* 1667. from *Macaſſar* in the Iſle of *Celebes*.

Strengthened with additional Fortifications.

" I was once more order'd to ſail with " ſome Forces to *Trinquenemale*, to take " once more poſſeſſion of that Harbour " and Bay for our Company, which I " did accordingly with good Succeſs; " and having refortify'd the Place with " four Baſtions, and reduc'd the circumjacent Inhabitants to our Subjection, I " left a ſufficient Gariſon there, and ſo " return'd to *Columbo*.

From *Trinquenemale* you travel by the way of *Capello* to *Batecalo*, the firſt place conquer'd by the *Dutch* in this Iſland, whereof we have given you the beſt account we were able, not queſtioning but that in caſe we ſhould once live in Peace with the King of *Candy* (who is very old, almoſt doting, and much addicted to ſtrong Liquor) our Countrymen will be much better acquainted with the Inland Countries than they have been hitherto.

According to the laſt Letter I receiv'd from *Tutecoryn*, dated *Decemb.* 20. 1668. there had been lately an Inſurrection in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, ſo that they were forced to draw their Forces together out of *Saffragam* and *Manhekewarre*, but was appeaſed ſince, tho the Forces were not as yet diſmiſſed.

Baldæus.

CHAP. XLIX.

Natural History of Ceylon. *Their* Pagodes, *Convents, Monks. Manners, Habit and Oeconomy of the* Cingaleſes.

HAving hitherto taken a view of thoſe Places of *Ceylon* that are under the Juriſdiction of the *Dutch* Company, we will now take a turn to *Candy*, the Imperial Reſidence, as the moſt proper place to be inform'd concerning the real Conſtitution of this Iſle, and its Inhabitants.

The City of Candy. The City of *Candy* is ſeated about 30 Leagues from the Sea-ſide, and 9 from *Vintane* up the River of *Trinquenemale*, about 21 Leagues by Land from *Matecalo*, and 9 from the Sea-ſhore, where the Emperor has his Docks for building and refitting his Ships and Gallies. The other Cities of *Ceylon* being not deſcribed in any Books, we muſt alſo paſs by in ſilence here. All over the Iſle you ſee abundance of very ſplendid *Pagodes*. The Foundation of that of *Vintane* has no leſs than 130 foot in Circumference; it is of a great height, and gilt on the top; it is oval on the bottom, and ariſes into a four-corner'd Point like a Pyramid. The *Great Pagode* betwixt *Gale* and *Matecalo* is alſo much celebrated, ſerving for a *Their Temples.* Light-houſe to Ships as well as that of *Trinquenemale*. In the large high *Pagode* before-mention'd ſtands an Idol repreſenting a Man with a naked Sword in his hand, lifting up his Arm, as if he were ready to ſtrike. To this Idol the *Cingaleſes* pay their Reverence, and offer their Sacrifices upon all Emergencies, or in time of Sickneſs; for which reaſon they keep a Basket in every Houſe, wherein they gather ſuch Proviſions as they are to ſacrifice. They believe that the World will not have an end ſo long as that *Pagode* ſtands. Some worſhip an *Elephant's Head* of Wood or Stone, to *And Idols.* obtain Wiſdom. They adorn their Idols with Flowers. Theſe Elephants Heads are plac'd ſometimes on Trees in the High-ways, ſometimes in little Brick Houſes or Chappels. You ſee alſo frequently in the high Road certain heaps of Stones, Earth or Dung, upon which each Paſſenger throws ſomething as he paſſes by.

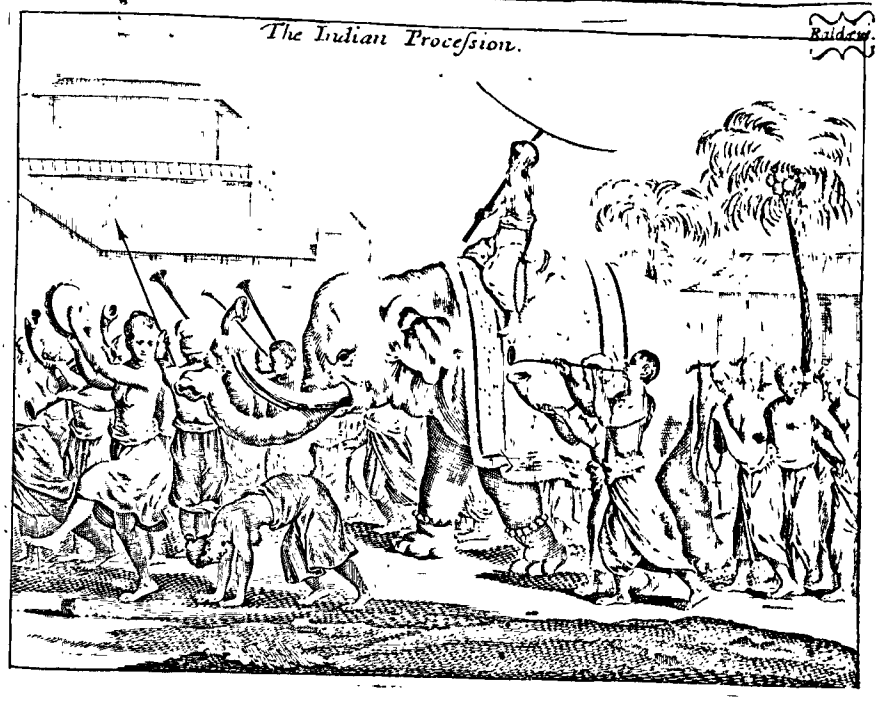
Juſt by *Belligamme* I ſaw the Figure of a Man at leaſt ſix Yards high, cut in a Rock about half a yard deep, who us'd to be worſhip'd by the *Cingaleſes*.

Near it is a high-peak'd Mountain, accounted the higheſt in the *Indies*, call'd *Pico de Adam*, or *Adam's Peak*; becauſe they are of opinion, that here ſtood formerly the Paradiſe, where *Adam* was created: they alſo tell you, that the Print of the Foot of *Adam* is to be ſeen to this day in the Rock, the Draught whereof is kept in the Imperial Court. Unto this Rock a vaſt number of People flock from far diſtant places, to ſee this ſacred Relick, tho the Mountain is of very difficult acceſs, nay (if we may credit *Maffæus* the Jeſuit) quite inacceſſible, unleſs by means of certain Iron Chains and Iron Spikes faſtened to the Rocks. *Adam's Mountain.*

Some are of opinion that they reverence the Chamberlain of the Queen *Candace* in this place, who according to ſome Hiſtorians, but eſpecially *Dorotheus* Biſhop of *Tyrus* (a Man equally famous for his Learning and Sanctity under *Conſtantine* the Great) preach'd the Goſpel in the *Happy Arabia*, *Erythræa* and *Taprobana*.

Convents and Monks of Ceylon. There are alſo divers Convents in *Ceylon*, and a great number of *Brahmans* and Prieſts, who are in great Veneration among the common People; they never eat any thing that has been living, or is capable of producing any living Subſtance, as Eggs, &c. Their Friers wear yellow Habits, with their Heads ſhaven all over, for which reaſon they never appear in the Streets without Umbrello's, and Beads in their hands, muttering out certain Prayers as they go along. Their Convents have divers Galleries and Chappels, wherein are placed the Statutes of ſeveral Men and Women, who, as they ſay, have led holy Lives. Theſe are adorn'd with Gold and Silver Apparel, and attended with burning Lamps and Wax-Candles day and night, plac'd upon Altars: The Candleſticks being ſupported by naked Boys artificially carved. The Friers have their certain hours for Prayers, which they perform in theſe Chappels.

Their Proceſſions. They have alſo their publick Proceſſions: The Head or Abbot of the Convent being mounted on a fine Elephant, ſumptuouſly harneſſed with an Umbrello over his Head, marches along the Street in great Pomp, under the ſound of Horns, Trumpets, and other ſuch



ſuch ſort of Muſick, making an odd kind of Harmony, accompany'd by a great number of Men, Women and Children; the Maidens of Quality dance all along before the Elephant naked down to the middle, their Heads, Arms and Ears adorn'd with Golden Bracelets and Jewels; the Garments which cover their under parts are of different Colours. They pay their daily Devotions to a certain Idol call'd *Sambaja*, by proſtrating themſelves upon the ground, and afterwards claſping their hands together over their Heads. But concerning the Religious Worſhip of the *Cingaleſes* we ſhall have occaſion to ſay more in the following Treatiſe, which in effect differs very little from the *Malabars* and thoſe of *Coromandel*, except that they are not altogether ſuch Bigots, the Emperor of *Ceylon* allowing Liberty of Conſcience to all Nations. The *Cingaleſes* are not ſo ſtubborn, but that many of them have been without much difficulty converted to the *Roman* Faith, and ſince that to the Reformed Religion.

The Genius of the Cingaleſes.

For the reſt the *Cingaleſes* are naturally active and ingenious, and good Workmen in Gold, Silver, Ivory, Ebony, Iron Works, *&c.* Arms inlaid with Silver, eloquent, nimble, courageous, fit for War-like Exploits, ſober and watchful. They march one ſingle Man after another, by reaſon of the many narrow Lanes in this Country; their Arms are a Half-pike, their Drums are ſmall, but make a great noiſe, which may be heard at three Leagues diſtance in the Mountains; they are beſt in the purſuit of a routed Enemy. Since they have converſed ſo much with the *Portugueſes* and other *European* Nations, they are grown ſo cunning that they muſt not be too much truſted, nor deſpiſed.

Inceſt is ſo common a Vice among them, that when Husbands have occaſion to leave their Wives for ſome time, they recommend the Conjugal Duty to be perform'd by their own Brothers. I remember a certain Woman at *Cale*, who had Confidence enough to complain of the want of Duty in her Husband's Brother upon that account. The like happen'd in my time at *Jafnapatnam*, which had been likely to be puniſh'd with Death, had not at my Interceſſion, and in

Baldæus. in regard of the tender beginnings of Christianity, the same been pass'd by for that time.

The Habits. The *Cingaleses* are in Shape and Manners not unlike the *Malabars*, with long hanging Ears, but not so black. The Dress of the Men is a Vest call'd *Ropillo*, of Woolen or Linen Cloth; their under Garment is a piece of Linen wrapt about the middle, and drawn through both their Legs, like a pair of Breeches: On their Heads they wear a kind of red Caps, such as we call *Rock* Caps, which they look upon as a singular Ornament, and in their Ears Rings and precious Stones. The Hilts of their Swords or Scymeters are commonly of Silver, Ivory, or Gold, with flaming Blades.

The common People appear for the most part naked, having only a piece of Cloth wrapt round the middle to cover their Privy Parts. The Women go with their Breasts uncover'd, being generally well limb'd: Instead of a Head-dress they have a way of tying their Hair together like a Cap. They wear Golden or Silver Necklaces about their Necks, and Rings on their Fingers and Toes.

The *Cingaleses* as well as the *Malabars* are much addicted to Idleness and Pleasures, and insist much upon their Pedigree. They marry as many Wives as they think fit, as well as the *Mahometans*, of which there live a considerable number in this Isle. They marry their Daughters at 10 or 11 years of Age, a Custom not to be rooted out among them, they being very fond of the Virginity of their Wives. They bury their Dead after the manner of the Pagans.

Their Oeconomy. In their Houses they are exceeding neat, use instead of Trenchards and Table-Cloths the Leaves of Fig-trees; their Spoons are made of *Coco* Nutshells, and their drinking Vessels of Earth, with hollow Pipes, through which they pour (like the *Moors*) the Drink into the Mouth without touching their Lips; for as the *Cingaleses* and *Malabars* insist much upon their Noble Descent, so they will neither eat nor drink with those of an inferior Rank; nay many of them are so proud as not to eat with their own Wives.

Their Coin. The most current Coin here are the Silver *Laryns*, each whereof is worth about 10 *d.* a *Fanam* is only 5 *d.* tho they have Golden and Silver *Fanams*; a *Pagode* was formerly no more than 84 *Stivers*, but is since raised to 120, or six *Dutch* Gilders; as well in *Ceylon* as *Malabar*, two Golden *Fanams* at 5 *d.* a piece make a *Laryn*.

CHAP. L.

Fertility of Ceylon. *A Description of the Cinnamon and Snakewood. strange Tree.*

Fertility of Ceylon. THE Isle of *Ceylon* is very fertile in Rice, and all sorts of Fruits, as *Ananas*, *Cocoes*, the best Oranges, Lemmons, and Citrons, exceeding by far those of *Spain* and *Portugal*; Fig-trees, *Cajouwes*, Grapes, Potato's, *Quiavos*, *Papajes* and Pomgranats. You have here fresh Grapes the whole year round, except in the three Winter or rainy Months. It abounds also in Sugar-reeds, and Mulberry-trees, which produce a good quantity of Silk; as in Ginger, Pepper, Cardamum, Tobacco, wild Palm-trees, affording vast quantities of a kind of Sugar, and the Juice call'd *Suyri* their ordinary Drink. They are stor'd also with *Calabass* Trees, *Cotton* Trees, *Areek* Trees, *Portuguese* Figs, *Mangos* of divers sorts, long Pepper, Melons, Water-Melons, Onions, and Garlick. Since the settling of the *Dutch* here, they have also propagated with good success Cabbages, Asparagas, Carrots and Radishes: But the *Helen* or the Bride in Contest of this Isle is the finest and purest Cinnamon, which growing only in this Island, no wonder if we have disputed the entire Possession thereof for so many years with the *Portugueses*.

A Description of the Cinnamon, and the Tree. This precious Spice is call'd by the *Cingaleses Cureneo potto*, and the Tree *Curindo-gas*, some of which are of a great bulk, their Leaves resembling those of the Lemmon Trees, but not quite so broad; the Blossom is white and of an agreeable scent, which produces a yellowish Fruit, not unlike a small Olive, out of which the Inhabitants press an Oil not much differing both in Colour and Virtue from that of Nutmegs, but in smell like the Cinnamon it self.

The Manner of peeling Cinnmon.

The Catching of Elephants on the Island of CEYLON.

Baldæus. The Cinnamon-Tree has a double Bark, the outward Bark being taken off with a crooked Knife; the inward Rind is cut with a Knife first round the Tree, and then in length, which being expos'd to the Sun-beams in the Fields, shrinks together into such small Rolls as we see them in *Europe*. The Trees that are thus peel'd perish, instead whereof the Fruits that fall upon the Ground produce other Cinnamon-Trees. The Wood is very white, and used by the Inhabitants for building. It is observable that these Cinnamon-Trees don't grow all over *Ceylon*, but only in some certain places: For in the whole Kingdom of *Jafnapatnam*, and the Isle of *Manaar*, none of these Trees are to be seen, but only beyond the River *Chilau*, in the Country about *Negumbo*, and the Inland Countries, as likewise near *Gale*. These Trees seldom grow together, but are generally seen in Woods mixt with other Trees. Whilst I was Minister at *Gale*, some of my Slaves us'd now and then to bring some Cinnamon Wood among the rest into the Kitchin, which when put into the Fire emitted a very odoriferous scent.

It is further worth taking notice of, that whereas according to the Judgment of the Naturalists and Physicians, the Cinnamon is very hot, yet does the Root of the Tree produce not only a Water smelling exactly like Camphyr, but also the strongest scented Camphyr it self: I have several pieces of it, which smell so strong that I am scarce able to endure it. Out of the Cinnamon Wood, whilst yet green, they distil a Water of an agreeable smell, and very wholesom to our Bodies. The Natives make out of the outward Bark of these Trees curious Cabinets: I have such a one by me of a considerable bigness, which was presented me by Major *Peter du Pon* 1665. just upon my departure from *Ceylon*.

Three sorts of Cinnamon. The *East-Indies* produce three different sorts of Cinnamon. 1. Is the finest Cinnamon call'd *Canel Fino* by the *Portugueses*, being the same that is taken from very young, or at least not very old Trees. 2. The coarse Cinnamon call'd *Canel Grosso* by the *Portugueses*, taken from very thick and old Trees. And, 3. The *Canel de Mato*, or wild Cinnamon, which grows likewise on the Coast of *Malabar*, but is in no esteem; for whereas a *Baar* of *Ceyloneſe* Cinnamon is sold for 50 or 60 *Rixdollars*, the wild Cinnamon yields not above 10 or 12. Tho I have heard some of the most ingenious of the Natives affirm, that the wild Cinnamon might be much meliorated, and made fit for use. The *Dutch* Company is now, through God's Blessing, in the possession of the Cinnamon of all kinds, as likewise of all the Spices, *viz.* of the Nutmegs, Mace and Cloves, except the Pepper, which grows in several places.

The Snake-wood. The *Snake-wood* or *Lignum Colubrinum*, grows most frequently in the Isle of *Ceylon*; it is white inclining to yellow, very hard, and of a bitter taste; it is in great request among the *Indians*, and accounted a good Remedy against several Distempers: They pouder it, and rub the whole Body with it to cure the Itch. They also take an Ounce of pouder'd *Snake-wood* in Water or Wine against the Colick, burning Fevers, and other Distempers, but especially against the Stings of the Serpents, of which there are many in this Island. *Its use among the Indians.*

How first discover'd. The *Cingaleſe* Naturalists say that the Virtue of the *Snake-wood* was first discover'd by a certain small Creature call'd *Quil*, or *Quirpele*, by the *Portugueſes*, being of the bigness of our *Ferrets*, wherewith we catch the Rabbets; of this kind the *Indians* keep many in their Houses, partly for Sport, partly to catch Rats and Mice with. This Creature having a natural Antipathy against the Snakes and Serpents, whenever it is stung by them runs to the *Snake-wood*, and after having eaten of it, is cur'd of its Wound. *Marcellus de Boschhouwer*, a Person in great esteem in *Ceylon*, relates, that he has several times seen this *Quirpele* engag'd with Snakes, and among the rest one that vanquish'd a Serpent; but being wounded run to the next Wood, and having eaten some of this *Snake-wood*, return'd in half an hour to the place, where its vanquish'd Enemy lay extended dead upon the ground. The *Cingaleſes* call the Root of this Tree *Nay Lelli*, unto which they attribute a singular Virtue for the Cure of divers Diſtempers. *Antipathy betwixt the Quirpele and the Serpent.*

There grows a strange Tree in the Isle of *Ceylon* call'd the *Root-tree*, because its Branches turn to the ground like Ropes, where taking Root again, they produce a Tree that spreads in a short time over a spacious Tract of Ground. *Ceylon* produces also *Tamarind*-Trees of a considerable bulk, the Fruit whereof is accounted an excellent Remedy against the Scurvy and Dropsy. There grows another Tree in *Ceylon* like our *Noli me tangere*; for if you go to touch it, it moves backwards, and gives way to your hand.

For the rest, *Ceylon* is sufficiently provided with Medicinal Herbs, and they

cure all their Diſtempers with green Herbs, in the uſe whereof their Phyſicians are better vers'd (by Experience) than many of our pretending Chyrurgeons; God Almighty having provided Remedies ſutable to the Diſtempers of each Country. *Baldæus.*

CHAP. LI.

Great number of Elephants in Ceylon: *Are very pernicious. Divers Inſtances of it. How they take the Elephants. Their Bufflers, Tygers, Bears, Birds, Fiſhes, Crocodiles and Porcupines, or Sea-hogs.*

THE Iſle of *Ceylon* abounds in all ſorts of four-leg'd Creatures, Birds, Fiſhes, Stones and certain Products of the Sea, of each whereof we muſt ſay ſomething.

Elephants of Ceylon. Among the four-leg'd Beaſts the *Elephant* challenges the firſt Rank; of theſe there are great numbers here, and ſo pernicious, that it is not ſafe travelling without ſome Soldiers with their Drums and Kettles, the noiſe whereof frightens theſe Creatures: They are moſt dangerous towards Evening when they are hungry; for the *Coleys* or Littermen often run away at the ſight of an Elephant, leaving thoſe they carry to ſhift for themſelves.

I remember that in my time, a *Portugueſe* Reform'd Miniſter, nam'd *John Fereira d'Almeyda*, travelling with his Wife from *Gale* to *Columbo*, the Litter-Carriers (according to their Cuſtom) ran away at the ſight of an Elephant, who did however not the leaſt harm, but laying his Trunk upon the Woman's *Palankin* or Litter, went away: But things of that nature happen not always alike.

I obſerv'd once as I was travelling from *Manaar* to *Jaſnapatnam*, that the Elephants had done conſiderable miſchief hereabouts, and during the rainy Seaſon had render'd the Ways almoſt unpaſſable. We had the good fortune to eſcape narrowly the danger of an Elephant who kill'd a certain Negro, one of the Commanders of the Elephant-Hunters, in a place we had paſs'd not long before.

How they take and tame the Elephants. At *Mature* are vaſt Stables, where the wild Elephants are tam'd, and afterwards ſold to the *Moors* of *Bengale* and *Coromandel*. They take the Elephants near *Mature* in the following manner: They fix abundance of large Stakes or Trunks of Trees in the ground, ſo as to leave the Entrance wide enough, but growing narrower within by degrees; in theſe they have certain Traps, and the wild Elephants being decoy'd by the tame ones into theſe Encloſures, are catch'd in the Traps or Snares, like as we do in our decoying Ponds. They are very hard to be tam'd, and require ſometimes four whole Months before they can be brought to lie down: All this while they muſt be carried twice a day to ſome River or other to ſwim. This is done by putting a wild Elephant betwixt two tame ones, who take ſuch care of the other, that they hit him from both ſides with their Trunks, till they make him pliable, and at laſt quite tame.

It often happens that the young Elephants are taken in following the old ones. Theſe are very unlucky: I remember, that one time as ſeveral of us were talking together, one of theſe young Elephants came ſlily and puſh'd with his back-ſide againſt one of our Company, that he was ready to fall upon his Noſe.

They feed upon green Herbs and Leaves of Fig-trees, *Coco*, and other Trees; neither do they refuſe *Areek* and Sugar. At a certain time of the year an Oil iſſues out of the Heads of the old Elephants when they run mad, and oftentimes kill their *Carnak* or Guides. The *Ceyloneſe* Elephants are accounted the largeſt and beſt in the *Indies*, and, if you will believe the Natives, are ador'd by the other Elephants.

Horſes. Horſes (great Enemies of the Elephants) were firſt brought from abroad into this Iſle. The *Portugueſes* having ſome years ſince ſent Horſes into the Iſle *de Vacas*, they are multiply'd to ſuch a degree, that you may ſee them feed in Herds of 60, 70, 80, or 100.

Bufflers. Of Bufflers they have a great ſtore in *Ceylon*; I have ſeen whole Herds of them of 100 and more feeding in the Countries of *Chilau* and *Madampe*, which were but indifferently peopled at that time. They have alſo Hedg-Hogs, Oxen, Cows, Bulls, Sheep, Goats, Stags, Does, Elks,

Elks, tame and wild Boars, Hares and Partridges, Peacocks and Apes in abundance. *Baldæus.*

The Woods here produce alſo ſome ravenous Beaſts, as Tygers, tho I never ſaw any, but had a Grey-hound given me by a *Portugueſe*, who bore the marks of a Tyger's Claws on his Buttocks. Bears I have ſeen both in *Jafnapatnam* and *Manaar*; I ſaw once five or ſix young ones drowned in *Manaar* by the Inhabitants, who had found them at *Mantotte*, and thought fit to take this courſe with them to prevent their increaſe. *Tygers and Bears.*

They abound alſo in *Jackals*, a Creature very greedy after Mens Fleſh, for which reaſon they cover their Graves with great Stones; they ſometimes take them with Grey-hounds, but when they are hard put to it, they piſs, which emits ſo nauſeous a ſcent that the Hounds can't endure it. The Fleſh of the *Jackals* is given with good ſucceſs by the Phyſicians of the Country to cure the Conſumption. Towards the Evening the *Jackals* meet and make a moſt dreadful noiſe, and will ſome times fall upon Paſſengers. In my time a *Caffer* who was in drink had his Teeth eaten out by the *Jackals*. The *Jackal* is not unlike a Fox, and has exactly ſuch a Tail. The *Malabars* call the *Jackals Adiviis*. I ſaw but one Leopard in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, and not one Unicorn or Rhinoceros. *Jackals.*

Ceylon affords vaſt quantities of Birds, call'd by the Inhabitants by peculiar Names. Crows you ſhall ſee by thouſands about Noon upon the Houſes, but they are ſo cunning as not eaſily to be ſhot except through a hole or ſmall Window. Towards night they leave the Towns, and retire to the Trees in the Country, and in the morning early look about for Prey. If one of them happens to be kill'd, the reſt make a moſt terrible Outcry. *Crows*

There are certain Birds in *Ceylon* call'd *Minbotos* by the *Portugueſes*, who often make bold with the young Chickens; they have alſo Owls that make a dreadful noiſe in the night-time. They abound in Geeſe, Herons, wild and tame Ducks, Peacocks, Pigeons, Turtles, Partridges, Parrocets, of moſt delicious colours; Peewits, Swallows, Bats, *&c.* Among the reſt here is a certain Bird which builds his Neſt hanging on the Branches of the Trees: They have alſo abundance of fine ſinging Birds, Nightingals and Larks in abundance, Sea-gulls, Water-ſnipes, Bees, Fire-flies, Gnats and Locuſts. *All ſorts of Fowl and Birds.*

Ceylon produces great plenty of Fiſh, as *Cacap*, Plaice, Crabs, Pikes, *Sword-fiſhes*, *Sail-fiſhes*, Craw-fiſhes, Haddocks, Cadieon-*fiſhes*, Sharks, *Orados*, *Sardins*, large Smelts, *Bat-fiſhes*, Seals, Oiſters, Muſcles, Shrimps, *Pampus*, Barbels, *Bomtos*, *Corquados*, &c. *Fiſhes.*

Among the Amphibious Creatures, the *Kaiman* or Crocodile, call'd *Lagarto* by the *Portugueſes*, is very frequent here; ſome of which are 18 foot long. They have four Feet with crooked Claws, their Skin cover'd with Scales, which are ſo hard upon the Back, that they are Muſquet proof; ſo that they are not vulnerable except in the Belly and Eyes: Their under Jaws are unmovable, but they have ſharp Teeth: Their Back-bones being without Joints, they can't turn ſhort, whence the beſt way to eſcape them, is to get away from them by many windings and turnings. 'Tis generally believ'd here that the Crocodile has a Stone or rather Bone in the Head, which given in Pouder is an excellent Remedy againſt the Stone. The Bones of the Sharks are accounted very good againſt the ſame Diſtemper. *Crocodiles.*

Mr. *Rochefort* ſays, that in ſome of the Rivers of the Iſles of *America* are certain Crocodiles that ſmell like Muſque. I have with amazement ſeen Crocodiles lying upon the Water like Logs of Wood, with their Eyes ſhut; and if they happen to meet with a Prey, they leap at it on a ſudden, like an Arrow from the Bow.

Vincent le Blanc tells us a ſtory of a Burgermaſter's Servant of *Alexandria*, who paſſing near the River-ſide was devour'd by a Crocodile which he took for a Log of Wood ſwimming upon the Water. They ſay that they have a white Fat, which is an excellent Remedy againſt ſharp Humours that ſettle in any part of the Body. In *Jafnapatnam* there are many Crocodiles in the Fens, Ponds and Lakes, which if they happen to dry up in the Summer, they dig holes to live in; we were often viſited by them in our Camp before *Jafnapatnam*, but they did no miſchief. The *Chineſes* make a dainty Diſh of the young Crocodiles.

In the Iſle of *Manaar* are great numbers of very large *Porcupines*, or Sea-hogs; they have very ſharp Teeth, and their Fleſh is fit for Food; the Females have Breaſts and Milk, they come often aſhore and feed upon Herbs. *Porcupines.*

* CHAP.

Baldæus.

CHAP. LII.

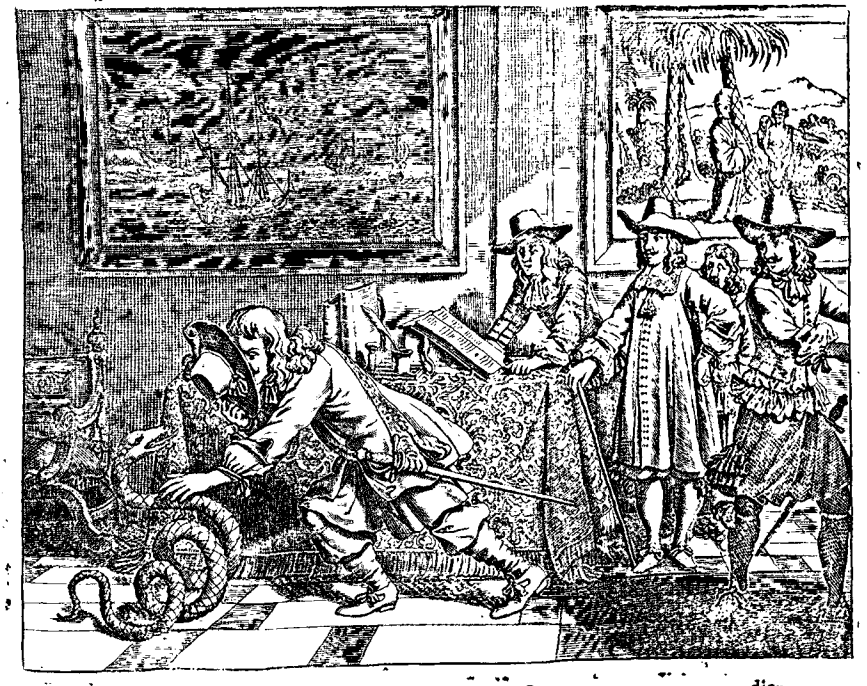
Serpents of Ceylon. *Remedies againſt their Stings. An odd Story of a Serpent-Catcher. Precious Stones, Products of the Sea. Amber-Greaſe, its Goodneſs.*

Serpents. SErpents are very common all over the Iſle of *Ceylon*: The *Sea-Serpents* are ſometimes 8, 9, or 10 yards long. The Land-Serpents call'd *Ratcatchers* are alſo very large, live on the tops of the Houſes, but are harmleſs Creatures. The moſt dangerous are thoſe call'd *Cobres Capellos* by the *Portugueſes*, which frequently uſed to kill People whilſt I liv'd in *Jafnapatnam*. So ſoon as any body is ſtung or wounded by theſe Serpents, they apply the *Adder-ſtone* to the Wound, and give the Patient ſome Milk. Our Chyrurgeon *Albert van Lambergen* writ to me 1666. that being ſtung by a Serpent, he became blind, but after ſome time recover'd his ſight. A Pariſhioner belonging to the Church of *Manipay*, as he was mending the top of the Church, happen'd to be wounded by a Serpent that lay hid among a heap of Leaves, and died ſoon after. I ſaw once two Serpents twiſted round one another ſporting under the Wall of the ſame Church, which I order'd to be cut to pieces by a Soldier. Such of the Inhabitants as retain ſtill ſome Remnants of Paganiſm, will not allow the Serpents to be kill'd.

Remedies againſt their Sting.

The *Malabars* call the Serpents *Pambo* and *Naga*, and give their Cattel and Children their Names; nay they feed them becauſe they ſhould do them no harm. The Serpents come frequently into the Houſes, eſpecially in the rainy ſeaſon. During my Abode at *Jafnapatnam* two Dogs were ſtung to death in the Houſe, and I have ſeen them ſometimes paſs up ſtairs over the Beds. Another time a Serpent paſs'd ſo near my Wife in the Houſe, that he touch'd her Leg with the Tail, and was afterwards kill'd by the Servants.

There is alſo here a kind of Adders call'd *Vipers* by the *Portugueſes*, they are ſpeckled and very venomous. Whilſt I liv'd at *Jafnapatnam*, a certain High-*German* Sol-



Baldæus.

dier belonging to the Gariſon (commonly known by the Name of the *Serpent-Catcher*) being ſent for by Mr. *Anthony Pavilion* Governor of *Coromandel*, to take a certain *Cobre Capel*, that was in his Lodging-room; he came accordingly, and with his Hat only before his Face, laid hold with his other hand of the Serpent, without receiving the leaſt harm; he did handle the Creature afterwards in our Preſence, and not only carried it away in his Snapſack, but alſo uſed to ſleep near it. I ſuſpecting ſome Witchcraft in the matter, talk'd to him ſeriouſly about it; but he aſſured me, that nothing was done but by natural means, and that he always carried the Head and Heart of a Serpent about him: wherewith I was forced to reſt ſatisfy'd, he being not willing to diſcover the whole Myſtery.

An odd Story of a Serpent-catcher.

Among the Inhabitants of the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, and the *Cingaleſes* and *Malabars*, are certain Fellows, who have an Art of making the Serpents ſtand upright and dance before them, which they perform by certain enchanting Songs. Thoſe that are to take an Oath in thoſe parts, put one of their Hands into an Earthern Veſſel, wherein is a Serpent: if they eſcape without being wounded, they are ſuppoſed to ſwear true; but if not, on the contrary.

Remedies againſt the Stings of Serpents.

Upon this Occaſion I can't forget to mention ſome Remedys uſed againſt the Stings of Serpents. Firſt of all it is requiſite to bind the affected Part above and below the Wound, to prevent the Poiſon from being communicated to the Maſs of Blood, and afterwards hold it over or as near to the Flame as it is poſſible. I would have every body that goes to the *Eaſt-Indies*, to provide himſelf with ſome *Orvietan*, *Theriac*, *Mithridate*, Confection of *Alkermes*, Balſam of *Peru*, *Rue*, *Scordium*, *Scorzonera*, *Angelic*, and *Contrahierva* Roots, theſe being great Cordials and Antidotes.

They muſt keep to a cooling Diet, and avoid purging and bleeding, but inſtead thereof make uſe of bathing to open the Pores of the Body. The Peel of Lemons or Citrons taken freſh from the Tree, is accounted an excellent Remedy, and faſting Spittle applied to the Wound. If you can take the Serpent that has given the Wound, bruiſe the Head, and apply it to the affected part. However the *Adderſtone* ſurpaſſes all the reſt, but is often adulterated. The right one raiſes no Bubbles upon the Water, and ſticks cloſe to the Lips, if put to the Mouth.

The Serpents of *Ceylon* are not altogether ſo large as thoſe of *Java* and *Banda*: at *Batavia* there was once taken a Serpent, which had ſwallowed an entire Stag of a large Size; and one taken at *Banda* had done the ſame with a Negro Woman.

Beſides theſe Serpents, *Ceylon* produces ſeveral ſorts of other crawling Creatures, as *Thouſand Feet*, called *Millepie* by the *Portugueſes*, which are ſometimes 7 Inches long; Scorpions, Spiders of a prodigious Bigneſs, Frogs, Tortoiſes, Toads, *&c.* *Ceylon* alſo affords divers precious Stones, as *Saphirs*, *Rubies*, *Topazes*, *Granats*, &c. Some ſay it alſo produces Gold, Silver, Iron, and other Metals, but that their Kings will not allow theſe Mines to be dug. This ſeems not improbable, it being certain that Iron has been bought out of the Country. It affords alſo Chryſtal in abundance. The Commodities chiefly vented here by the *Portugueſes*, were colour'd Stuffs of all ſorts, Velvets, Silks, Red Caps, Porcelain Spices, *Amfira* or *Opium*, *China* Root, Camphyr, Musk, Sandel wood, Lead, Copper, Tin, Saltpeter, Brimſtone, gilt Looking-Glaſſes, glaſs Bottles, painted Callicoes of *Suratte* and *Coromandel*, all which are ſtill in vogue here.

Precious Stones.

Commodities ſold here.

The Iſle of *Ceylon* has beſides Fiſh, ſeveral Products of the Sea. Of the Pearls and Pearl-fiſhery we have ſpoken before, in the Deſcription of *Tutecoryn*. *Ambergreeſe* is found here ſometimes near the Sea-ſhore, in good large pieces and of the beſt kind: they call it *Panahambar* in the *Maldive* Iſlands. This precious Drug was altogether unknown to *Hippocrates*, *Dioſcorides* and *Galen*, and to this day its true Origin is a Riddle to us; tho ſome will have it to be the Seed of the Whales, others a certain fine Earth, others a certain Pitch or Roſin, growing at the bottom of the Sea, and forced thence to the Shore by Tempeſts. Certain it is, that it is generally found after ſtormy Weather. Mr. *John Huygan van Linſchoten* mentions a piece of *Ambergreeſe*, taken up near the *Cape Comoryn*, 1555, which weighed 30 Quintals. It's ſaid, that the Birds are very fond of the Scent of it, and the Prints of the Bills of Birds have ſometimes been perceived in the *Amber*, and is accounted a certain Sign of its Goodneſs.

Ambergreeſe.

Its Origin.

Mr. *Rocheford* in his *Natural Hiſtory* of the *American Iſlands*, ſays, that the *Amber* there, when firſt taken, has ſo nauſeous a Scent, that the Birds are drawn towards it as by the Smell of a Carrion: He ſays, it ſmells like rank Bacon.

* The

Diffetence. The *Amber* is of different kinds; the black (the worſt of all) is found near the Iſle of *Mauritius*; next is the *White*, and the *Grey* the beſt of all. In ſome parts of *America* there is a kind of *Amber*, they call the *foxed Amber*, becauſe it is ſwallowed and vomited up again by the Foxes without any Alteration, except that it loſes ſomething of its Scent. The beſt *Ambergreeſe* is of an Aſh Colour, like Aſhes mix'd with Wax. It is adulterated with Wax, Roſin and Pitch; to know the real Goodneſs of it, you muſt thruſt a hot Needle into it, and by the Smell of the Moiſture that adheres to it, you may judg of its Goodneſs: You may alſo lay a ſmall quantity of Amber upon a hot Knife; if it be good, it will melt immediately like Wax; and provided the Knife be very hot, it will quite evaporate without leaving the leaſt Dregs behind. *Scaliger*, *Garcias*, *Monard*, *Fernandes Lopes*, *Cluſius*, and *Rocheford* have written of the *Ambergreeſe*, its Medicinal Virtues we will leave to the Judgment of the Phyſicians.

Goodneſs how to be tryed.

Baldæus.

The Sea about *Ceylon* produces likewiſe whole Coral Trees, ſome Branches whereof curiouſly grown I preſerve in my Study. It affords alſo certain Horns of Sea-Horſes, called *Chankos*, which are frequently tranſported to *Bengale*, beſides divers other ſorts of Horns and Shells (but not ſo curiouſly twiſted as thoſe of *Amboyna*) *Sea-Apples*, *Sea-Stars*, and ſuch like.

THE

Baldæus.

THE IDOLATRY OF THE East-India Pagans,

Giving a true and full Account of the Religious Worſhip of the *Indoſthans*, the Inhabitants of *Coromandel*, the *Malabars* and *Ceyloneſes*; with a Deſcription of their Idols.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

The general Conſent of all Nations concerning the Exiſtence of God. Divers Sects of the Brahmans. *Their Opinion concerning the Creation. The Idols* Ixora *and* Quivelinga.

The Exiſtence of a God.

THE Exiſtence of a God or ſupreme Being, is ſo firmly rooted in the Heart of Mankind, that there is no Nation in the World but what has acknowledged the ſame. What is alledged to the contrary by ſome, of the *Chileſes*, *Tapujars*, *Braſilians*, *Madagaſcarians*, as alſo of the Inhabitants of *Florida*, the *Caribee* Iſlands, and eſpecially of the *Cape of Good Hope*, muſt rather be attributed to the want of Knowledg of thoſe Authors, than real Truth. Of this I was ſufficiently convinced 1666. when I tarried three Months at the *Cape of Good Hope*, where I found theſe Barbarians to perform their Religious Service in the Night time, which I had no Opportunity to obſerve in 1665, when I came that way before. What is ſaid of *Diagoras*, *Theodorus*, *Cyrenaicus*, *Bion*, *Evemerus*, *Lucianus*, *Epicurus*, and eſpecially of *Protagoras*, *Abderites* and *Socrates*, and their Denial of the Exiſtence of God, being to be underſtood only of the Plurality of Gods, which was always rejected by the wiſer ſort among the Pagans; whence it is that we meet with the Titles of *Ens Entium*, *the Being of all Beings*, *Ens primum*, *the firſt Being*, *Primus motor & vis motrix*, *the firſt moving Cauſe and Subſtance*, in their Writings.

This being laid down as a fundamental Rule, we will proceed to give an account of the Idolatry of the Pagans inhabiting the Coaſt of *Malabar* and the *Indies* on both ſides of the Cape *Comoryn*, viz. at *Tutecoryn*, *Trevanor*, *Coulang*, *Co-*

Calecoulang, *Cochin*, *Crangenor*, *Calecut*, *Cananor*, as also on the Coast of *Coromandel*, and the Isle of *Ceylon*. According to *Rogerius*, the *Brahmans* are distinguish'd into six Sects, *viz.* *Weistnouwas*, *Seiria*, *Smaerta*, *Schaerwaeka*, *Pasenda* and *Tschectea*; and the *Benjans* of *Gusuratte* into no less than 63: but in the forementioned parts, the *Brahmans* are divided into four head Sects.

Sects of the Brahmans.

The first are the *Cenrawack*, who use neither Fire, nor Candles, nor cold Water, for fear it should contain some living Creatures; they don't pass the Streets unless they be swept before with a Broom, which they always carry with them, for fear of treading upon any thing that is living. They believe neither God nor Providence, but that all things are produced by Chance.

The second Sect is called *Samaraeth*, they actually believe a God.

The third *Bisnou*, who call their God *Ram*. They have a Fast which begins in *August*, and holds 40 days.

The fourth Sect is that of the *Goegii*, who have no Habitations of their own, but sleep in the Night-time in the Churches; they walk generally naked, having only a Cloth to cover their Privities, and besmear themselves all over with Ashes. They believe a God (whom they call *Bruyn*) the Creator of the Universe, who is in every thing, whether Man or Beast (tho he can't be seen by the Creature) gives Light to Sun and Moon, and annihilates what and when he pleases. They say, that such as die in their Faith, go directly to their God *Bruyn*: they do not burn, but bury their dead. Whoever embraces their Sect, is obliged to take near a Pound of Cowdung every day among his ordinary Food, for six Months successively, the Cow being accounted sacred, and her Dung the purest thing among them. They are very superstitious: a Cart, Buffler or Ass without a Load, a Dog empty mouth'd, a Hegoat, Ape, a Goldsmith, Carpenter, Barber, Taylor, Smith, Cottonweaver, a Widow, a Burial, or some body going to a Burial, are altogether ill Omens to them; as an Elephant, Camel, an Horse without a Burden, a Cow, an Ox and Buffler laden with Water, pretends good Luck in their Opinion. Some acknowledg one *Vistnou* for their supreme God, but the most one *Ixora*; we will first treat of *Ixora*, and afterwards of *Vistnou* and *Bramma*.

See Rogerius, Texeira, Carolino, John van Twist, &c.

The *Brahmans* have a very odd Opinion of the Creation of the World (of which more hereafter) They say that this World will diminish by degrees, till it comes to a Drop of Water, which is the *Ixoretta* or *Divinity* it self: After that it shall encrease again, when *Ixoretta* crying out aloud, *Quen*, *quen*, will make it turn again into a single drop of Dew; this will make it revive again, first into a Mustard-Seed Corn, then turn to a Pearl, and lastly into an Egg, containing the five Elements. This Egg they say is to have seven distinct Shells or Partitions like an Onion, whence will break forth the Fire and Air upwards, and the others downwards; and the Egg being thereby broken into two pieces, the upper part produced the Heavens, as the under part did the Earth; and because the Egg had seven Shells, which by the Division thereof made 14 half ones, the seven uppermost Parts furnished the matter for seven Heavens, as the seven undermost did for as many Worlds. An unpardonable Contradiction, when they themselves acknowledg their *Bramma*, and implore him as *the Creator of Heavens and Earth*; and how incongruous is it, to make the *Ixoretta* or Divinity subject to decrease?

Opinion of the Brahmans concerning the Creation of the World.

Baldæus.

They further add, that at the opening of the beforesaid Egg, there appear'd a Thred drawn all along the middle, which join'd the 14 upper and under Worlds: *Ixoretta* then taking his Place in the highest Sphere of the Heavens, there arose at the same time a Mountain on the Earth, named *Calaja*, on the top of which stood a Triangular Substance (*Triconi Sacra*) which produced a round Substance, called *Quivelinga*, i. e. *the Members of Generation of both Sexes*; which *Quivelinga* they say, is *Ixoretta* or the Divinity: for finding that all living Creatures were procreated by the carnal Copulation of Men and Women, they reverenced this *Quivelinga*, as the Original of all created things, and adorned him in their Temples with the best sweet Herbs and Flowers. They have a certain religious Order called *Jogiis*, who wear the Figure of this *Quivelinga*, either of Wood or Copper, about the Neck, and offer him daily the best of their Victuals. *Rogerius* speaks to the same purpose of the *Lingam*, i. e. *Membrum virile in Muliebri*, as the *Ixora* or *Eswara* is represented in their *Pagodes*.

What Quivelinga was.

St. *Austin* * tells us something like this of the *Priapus*, which used to be carried in Procession in Honour of *Bacchus*, thro the Cities of *Italy*, and that the Matrons used to crown his *Membrum virile*

L. 7. c. 21. de Civitate Dei.

Baldæus.

virile with Garlands. I have read in ſeveral Authors of known Integrity, and ſpeak it upon the Credit of divers People yet living, that the *Canarins*, and Inhabitants about *Goa*, do carry their Brides to ſuch a *Priapus*, in order to deliver them of their Virginity. The whole matter whereof I will for Modeſties ſake relate in Latin: *Sponſa magno comitatu multaque cum pompa inter plauſus ac ſonos muſicos ducitur ad Idolum, quod æneа virga vel ferrea, vel eburnea prominente præditum conſpicitur, & ad hanc nudata viſte Sponſa a Matre vel a proximis Conſanguineis vehementer impellitur, quod cum abſque gravi dolore fieri nequeat, illi qui adſunt, cantando & ſaltando ſponſæ flebiles voces opprimant, ſi quæ eſt, quæ dolorem immenſum verita, hoc modo Virginitate privari recuſat, blandis Conſanguineorum verbis ad Idolum paulatim adducitur, atque ad id a Matre tamdiu (invita quamvis) adigitur, donec Virginitatem amiſerit; poſtea Sponſa domum redens Sponſo traditur, qui de hoc præ ſe ſuſcepto Labore ſibi maximopere gratulatur.*

Canarins offer their Brides to Priapus.

Baal Phegor ſeems to have been the *Priapus* of the *Jews*. *Jerom* in his Commentary upon the Prophet *Hoſea*, ſays, That the *Jewiſh* Women worſhipped *Baal Phegor, ob obſcæni magnitudinem Membri, quem nos* Priapum *poſſumus appellare.*

The *Brahmans* will indeed not allow of this Interpretation, alledging that they adore under this, the Circular Figure which is infinite, whereas the Signification of the word ſufficiently contradicts them. *Quivelinga* being compoſed out of the word *Linga* or *Lingam*, i. e. the *Manly Yard*, and *Quiven*, the ſame with *Ixora*; and the Figure carried by the *Jogii*, expreſly repreſents the Conjunction of the Members of both Sexes.

Quivelinga then (as we ſaid before) is of a Circular Figure, which being enclоſed in three diſtinct Rinds or Shells, which they ſay are tranſmuted into three Gods, *viz. Bramma*, *Viſtnum* and *Quiven*; the firſt and hardeſt produces *Bramma*, the ſecond *Viſtnum*, and the innermoſt *Quiven*. *Quivelinga* being thus deſpoil'd of his Shells, was burnt to Aſhes by Fire, and fix'd in the Triangle: *Quivelinga* being thereby become a thing without Senſe or Motion, it was requiſite it ſhould be guarded by ſome body; which *Bramma* and *Viſtnum* refuſing to do, *Quiven* undertook the Task, and conſtantly attending *Quivelinga* with Prayers and Sacrifices of Flowers, deſerved thereby to be ranked above his Brothers, and obtain'd the Title of the *Great God*, as their Poets call him. The *Brahmans* ſay, that *Bramma*, *Viſtnum*, and *Quiven* or *Ixora*, are commiſſioned by the *Firſt Being* to rule the World in the Nature of his Viceroys. They ſay *Ixora* reſides in *Calaja*, *Viſtnum* in the *Milk-Sea*, and *Bramma* in *Sattialogam*, or the higheſt Place in Heaven, of which more hereafter.

CHAP. II.

A Deſcription of Ixora, *his Wives.* *Abſtinency of the* Brahmans. *Divers ſorts of Eunuchs.*

A Deſcription of Ixora.

IXORA is as bright and white as Milk, with three Eyes, two whereof are plac'd as thoſe of other Men, and the third in the Front, being ſo full of Fire, that it conſumes every thing it looks upon. His Stature is immenſe; for *Bramma* being deſirous to ſee his Head, ſoar'd up high into the Earth, but could not reach it. *Viſtnum* (whom they call the God of Inventions and Changes) having the ſame Curioſity to ſee his Feet, which reach'd deep into the Ground, transformed himſelf into a Hog, the better to dig up the Earth, but could likewiſe not obtain his Wiſh. For, ſay they, *Ixora* is of ſo vaſt an extent, that the Serpent *Bategu* (which is ſo long as to compaſs the ſeven Worlds and the ſeven Seas) was not big enough to ſerve him for a Bracelet. I heard a Pagan once ridicule a *Brahman*, becauſe he put the Figure of *Ixora* in his Chamber; whereas according to their Opinion, it was much larger than the Serpent *Bategu*.

His Bigneſs.

This Pan was anciently repreſented with Horns reaching up to the Clouds.

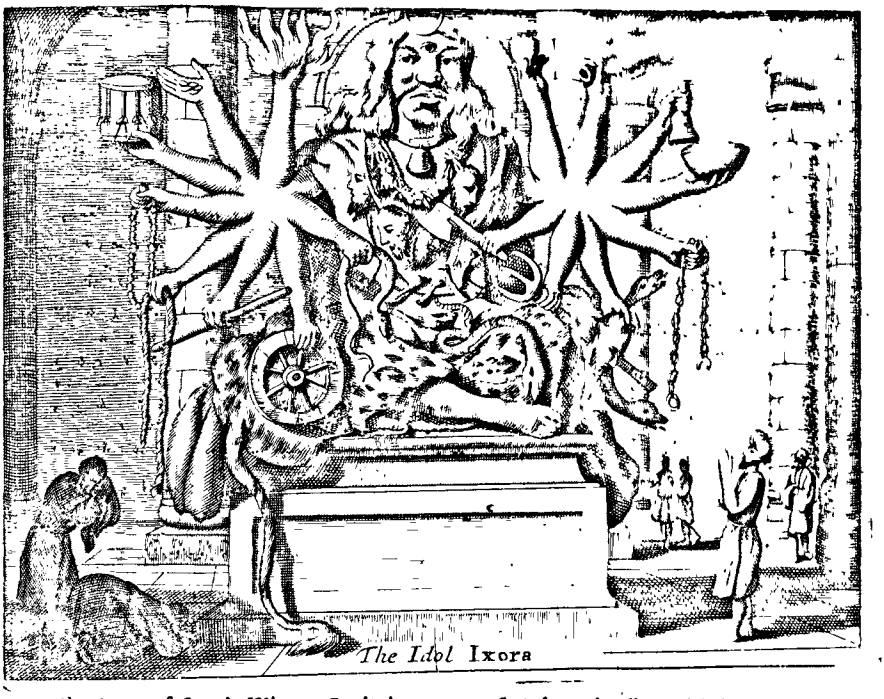
Ixora has no leſs than 16 Hands, wherewith he holds the following things, *A Heart*, a *Chain*, a *Fiddle*, * a *Bell*, *Porcellain Baſon*, *Capalla*, i. e. *Bramma's Head*, a *Trident*, a *Rope*, an *Ax*, *Fire*, *Gold*, a *Drum*, *Beads*, a *Staff*, an *Iron Wheel*, a *Serpent*, with a Creſcent or half Moon on his Forehead. His Apparel is a *Tygers* Skin, his Cloke the Hide of an Elephant, ſurrounded with Serpents †. He wears about his Neck a Collar of the Skin of a certain Creature, called *Maudega*,

* As Pan had his Flute.

† Pan wore the Skin of a Panther, the Spots whereof intimated the variety of Nature in Stars, Flowers, Iſles, &c.

dega, on which is faſtened a Bell, ſuch as our Oxen or Sheep commonly have about their Necks.

He has alſo about his Neck three Chains, one whereof being intermix'd with Roſes and other Flowers, affords an odoriferous Scent. The ſecond is made of the Heads of *Bramma*; for they ſay, that *Bramma* dies and revives every year, and that *Ixora* gathering his Heads as often as he dies, had made this Chain of it. The third is made of the Bones of *Baldæus.*



The Idol Ixora

Chatti, one of *Ixora*'s Wives. For it is to be known that he has two Wives, one named *Grienga* or the *Goddeſs of the Seas*, whom he always carries in his Hairlocks; the other this *Chatti*, otherwiſe called *Parameſceri*, who they ſay dies and revives once a Year; and as often as ſhe dies, he takes one of her Bones, which are put into this Chain. He carries alſo the ſame Beads as the *Brahmans* do, his whole Body being beſmear'd with Aſhes, and thus rides in Triumph thro *Calaja*, upon an Ox named *Irixapatan*, unto whom they offer certain Sacrifices.

His Attendants are called *Pudas*, *Pixaros* and *Pes*. *Pudas* is repreſented like a fat and ſhort Perſon, with a large Paunch, without a Beard, having Serpents hanging down with their Tails from his Head. He wears a Bracelet on his left Arm, and two others about his Thighs, made of Serpents, and a Staff in his Right Hand. The *Pes* and *Pixaros* are repreſented much taller, with burning Torches in their Hands in the Night-time.

They ſay that *Bramma* has created the Univerſe, *Viſtnum* governs it, and *Ixora* kills and puts a Period to every thing. They further add, that *Ixora* has communicated part of his Subſtance to his Wife *Parameſceri*, alias *Parvati*, and ſhe again to him; ſo that they are both Hermaphrodites, and *Ixora* is ſometimes repreſented as ſuch; and *Rogerius*, *lib.* 2. ſays, that the *Brahmans* call their *Ixora*, *Ardhanari*, i. e. a *Manwife*. There are however a certain ſort of *Brahmans* called *Tirimimpi*, who are ſo far different from the reſt, that they won't as much as caſt an Eye upon a Woman; for which reaſon as often as they paſs thro the Streets, they have certain Perſons, who bid the Women go out of the way. Thus the *Hierophantes* of *Athens*, and the Prieſts of the Goddeſs *Cybele* among the *A ſtrict ſort of* Brahmans.

Romans, uſed to deny themſelves the uſe of Venery, the firſt by caſtrating themſelves, the others by certain Drugs. The *Jews* diſtinguiſh betwixt *Eunuchs made by God*, and thoſe made by Men, the laſt are believed to owe their Original to the *Perſians*; and among the *Jews* they had certain Perſons, called *Impingentes*, becauſe they uſed to run againſt Poſts and Doors, rather than to look upon a Woman.

Baldæus.

Divers ſorts of Eunuchs.

Rogerius * mentions another ſort of *Brahmans*, called *Sauſiazii*, who renounce all Worldly Pleaſures, abſtain from Women, and even the *Betel* (tho generally uſed all over the *Indies*) eat but once a day, have no fix'd Habitations, die nothing but earthen Veſſels, and live upon Alms. The fundamental Rules of their Sect being to withſtand *Luſt*, *Anger*, *Covetouſneſs*, *Pride*, the *Pleaſures of the World*, and *Revenge*.

* L. 2. c. 4

CHAP. III.

Conteſt betwixt Bramma, Viſtnum *and* Ixora, *who is obliged to be a Mendicant twelve Years. A Child produced out of the Blood of* Viſtnum, *occaſions new Differences.*

THE Reſidence of *Ixora* is upon the Silver Mount *Calaja*, to the South of the famous Mountain *Mahameru*, being a moſt delicious Place, planted with all ſorts of Trees, that bear Fruit all the Year round. The Roſes and other Flowers ſend forth a moſt odoriferous Scent, and the Pond at the Foot of the Mount is encloſed with pleaſant Walks of Trees, that afford an agreeable Shade, whilſt the Peacocks and divers other Birds entertain the Ear with their Harmonious Noiſe, as the Beautiful Women do the Eyes. The circumjacent Woods are inhabited by a certain People, called *Mumis* or *Rixis*, who avoiding the Converſation of others, ſpend their time in offering daily Sacrifices to their God.

It is obſervable, that tho theſe Pagans are generally black themſelves, yet do they repreſent theſe *Rixis* to be of a fair Complexion, with long white Beards, and long Garments hanging croſswiſe, from about the Neck down over the Breaſt. They are in ſuch eſteem among them, that they believe, that whom they bleſs are bleſſed, and whom they curſe are curſed.

Within the Mountain lives another Generation, call'd *Jexaquinnera* and *Quendra*, who are free from all Troubles, ſpend their Days in continual Contemplations, Praiſes and Prayers to God. Round about the Mountain ſtand 7 Ladders, by which you aſcend to a ſpacious Plain, in the middle whereof is a Bell of Silver, and a ſquare Table, ſurrounded with nine precious Stones of divers Colours. Upon this Table lies a Silver Roſe called *Tamara Pua*, which contains two Women as bright and fair as a Pearl; one is called *Brigaſiri*, i. e. *the Lady of the Mouth*, the other *Taraſiri*, i. e. *the Lady of the Tongue*, becauſe they praiſe God with the Mouth and Tongue. In the Center of this Roſe is the *Triangle*, (mentioned in the 1*ſt Chap.*) of *Quivelinga*, which they ſay is the permanent Reſidence of God.

Ixora being one time diverting himſelf in this *Cajala* or *Paradiſe*, with *Pudas*, *Pes* and *Pixajos*, let fall ſome Words, intimating him to be the greateſt in all the World; which *Bramma* and *Viſtnum* not able to brook, a Conteſt aroſe about the Precedency, to decide which *Ixora* told them, that which of the two could take a full view of him from Head to Foot, ſhould be accounted the Greateſt.

Conteſt betwixt Ixora, Bramma and Viſtnum.

Bramma hereupon got upon his Bird *Annam* (whereof more anon) and paſſed up into the Air, to get Sight of *Ixora*'s Head, whilſt *Viſtnum* transforming himſelf into a Hog, dug into the Ground, to come at his Feet: whilſt he was thus employed, meeting with a moſt poiſonous Serpent, he was ſo ſtartled at it, that he deſiſted from his Enterprize. This Story is related more at large by ſeveral of the *Malabar* Poets.

Bramma on the other hand, reſolute in his Deſigns, ſoared very high into the Air, when being met by three Flowers, they ask'd him whither he was a going; he replied, to get ſight of the Head of *Ixora*; they told him, *his Labour was in vain*, by reaſon of the vaſt diſtance, which made *Bramma* change his Reſolution: but at the ſame time deſired the Flowers to tell *Ixora*, that he was prevented from coming ſo high as his Head, by a ſudden Giddineſs in his Brains, which

which they promised, and did accordingly; but *Ixora* being sensible of the Deceit, did with his *Chacra* or Scymeter, cut off one of the four Heads of *Bramma*, and cursed the Flowers. Out of the Blood of *Bramma*'s Head, came forth a Man with 500 Heads and 1000 Hands, named *Sagatracavaxen*. The day on which *Bramma*'s Head was cut off, was ever after looked upon as ominous, and named *Pongalacha*, i. e. *Dies infestus*; whence arose the Proverb of a thing that is never to be done, *It shall be at Pongalacha.*

One of Bramma's Heads cut off by Ixora.

The three Flowers were cursed, *viz.* That one of them should grow upon a Dunghil, and be cut down there; the other to be turn'd into a Crow, and the third into a Cow.

The *Brahmans* further say, That *Ixora* to expiate the Crime he had committed by cutting off the Head of *Bramma*, turned Mendicant as the *Jogii* do, with *Bramma*'s Skull in his Hand, till the same should be filled with Alms; whence arose that Custom practised to this Day, that he who kills a *Brahman*, must beg Alms for 12 years in the Skull of the *Brahman* killed by his Hands. *Ixora* therefore beg'd Alms for 12 Years; for tho he receiv'd sufficient Alms, yet by the fiery Rays that darted from his Eye in his Forehead, it was all consumed and turned to Ashes in an Instant.

One day as he was gathering Alms among the beforesaid *Mumis*, their Wives came running with whole Ladles of Blood to fill the Skull; but not being able to sustain the Glance of his Eyes, they were so surpriz'd, that they let slip not only their Ladles, but also their Clothes. The *Mumis* seeing their Wives naked, did fall Pellmell upon *Ixora*; one attack'd him with an Ax, which he seized and got up into the Air; another would have killed him with a Serpent, which he took in his Hands, without receiving any harm. Then they brought a furious Tyger to devour him, this he killed and flee'd, and made a Garment of the Skin; then they set upon him a wild Elephant, who underwent the same Fate, his Hide serving him afterwards for a Cloke; this *Ax*, *Serpent*, *Tyger*, and *Elephant*, are the same Trophies he holds in his Hands.

Ixora attacked by the Mumis.

Baldeus.

Vistnum willing to deliver *Ixora*, appear'd to the *Mumis* in the shape of a most beautiful Virgin, which occasion'd such a Surprize to them, that the Men (as their Wives had done before) fell into a Trance, and *Ixora* spill'd his Seed upon the Ground, which *Vistnum* with his Hand form'd into a Child.

Ixora being towards the end of the 12*th* year, quite tired with his Mendicant Life, had recourse to *Vistnum*, who commiserating his Condition, put out the fiery Eye, that consumed all the Alms in the Skull; which done, *Vistnum* wounded himself in one of his Fingers, and fill'd the Skull with the Blood, which put an end to his Pilgrimage, but gave birth to the Order of the *Jogii*, who in the Memory of *Ixora*'s Pilgrimage, lead a Mendicant Life to this Day.

Relieved by Vistnum.

Out of the Blood of *Vistnum* a Child was procreated, called *Vareu*, which occasion'd new Contests, *Bramma* challenging it as his own, because it was begot in his Skull, *Vistnum* because it came forth out of his Blood, and *Ixora* because it came out of his Hands. To reconcile this Difference, *Devaindra*, a King of the aerial Spirits, persuaded them to relinquish their Pretensions by joint Consent; which they having consented to, *Devaindra* educated the Child at *Devalogam*, where becoming a famous Bowman, he protected that Place against *Sagatracavagem*, who, as we told before, being the Product of *Bramma*'s Head, had 500 Heads and 1000 Hands. Afterwards *Ixora* returned to *Calaja* his former Residence.

Another Contest.

It is observable, that if one of their Kings dies, they tie his Hands and Feet, when certain Soldiers come to threaten him with their Sticks; which Affront, they believe is a means to expiate the Trespasses committed by him in his Lifetime against his Subjects.

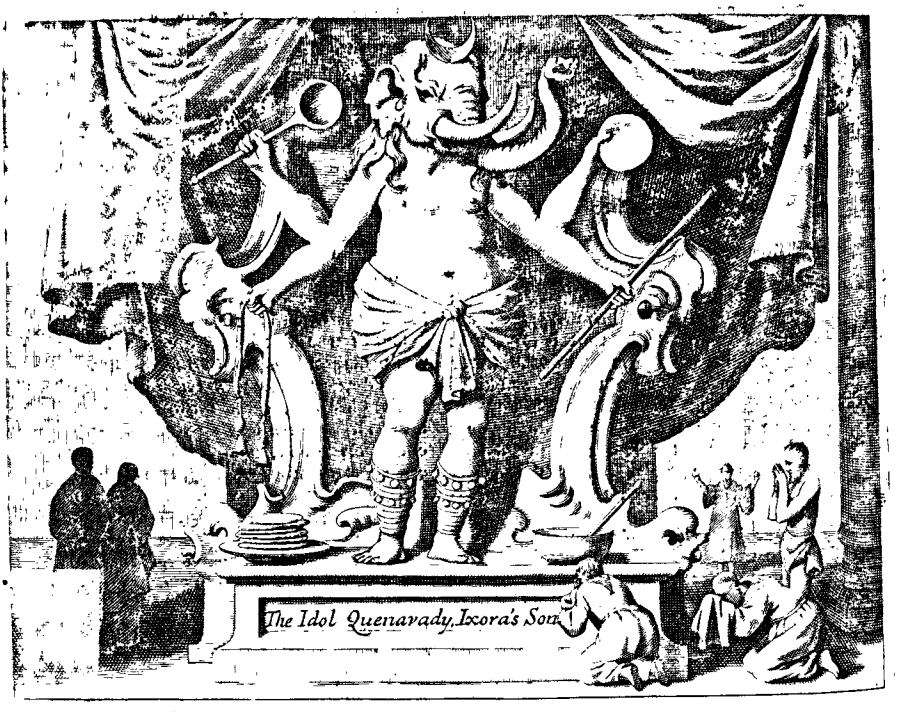
CHAP. IV.

The Children of Ixora; *the Nativity and Constitution of* Quenavady. *The Origin of* Sura. Quenavady *castrated. Contest betwixt him and* Superbenma. *His Habitation and Gluttony. Funeral Feasts of the* Malabars.

Children of Ixora.

IXORA had three Sons and one Daughter, the eldest resembling an Elephant, the second an Ape, the third had 6 Faces and 12 Hands. The Daughter, who was as black as a Coal, had the Face of a Hog. The eldest Son named *Quenevady*,

Baldæus. *navady* was born in the Wood by *Piragu*, with an Elephant's Head and Face, the reſt of his Body being like other Men. For *Ixora* walking one time with his Lady *Parameſceri* towards the Wood *Piragu*, ſhe ſaw an Elephant ſporting with a Female of the ſame kind, and ſo raiſed her Appetite, that ſhe deſir'd *Ixora* to be both tranſform'd into Elephants; which being done accordingly, they ate of a certain Fruit in the Wood, which mad them quite frenzical, ſo that they made the ſame noiſe, overturn'd the Trees, threw up the Sand with their Trunks, and did all the other Actions of Elephants, not excepting even their Copulation. The *Quenevady's Original.*



The Idol Quenavady, Ixora's Son.

Female having conceiv'd immediately, brought forth this Child with the Elephant's Head and Face, and ſoon after they reſumed their own Shape. *Parameſceri* tried to give ſuck to this young Monſter, but being in danger of having her Breaſt torn in pieces by it, ſhe deliver'd it up to *Ixora*, who had it brought up in *Calaja*.

A Deſcription of him. This *Quenevady* had the Hand, Teeth and Face of an Elephant, with large hanging Ears, and ugly Lips, with red Pimples all over the Face: His Hair is long (like his Father's) tied about with a Serpent or Adder, with a Creſcent or Half-moon on his Fore-head, and four Hands, beſides the Trunk; the reſt of his Body like other Men, but ſhining like Gold, with a large Paunch tied about with a red piece of Stuff: He wears alſo the Girdle of the *Brahmans*, and on his Feet divers Gold Rings and Bells.

They tell you another Story of *Ixora*, *viz.* That being one time inebriated with the *Sury*, or Juice of the *Coco*-Tree, and having Carnal Copulation with *Parameſceri*, a ſmall quantity of *Ixora*'s Seed was ſpilt upon the ground, and afterwards cover'd with Earth by *Parameſceri*; this produc'd a Palm-tree. *Ixora* coming ſoon after into the Wood, and ſeeing the young Tree, cut off the top thereof with his *Chacra*, or Weapon. The Liquor which iſſued thence ſo well pleaſed *Ixora*, that he took a good quantity of it in his Cup he always carried along with him, and having drank his full ſhare, ty'd up the Tree, and ſo return'd to *Calaja*. He repeated this ſo often, that *Parameſceri* finding him always return in Drink *A Story of Ixora.*

from

from the Wood, took the next opportunity to follow him thither, and finding the Juice very acceptable, she tasted so long of it, till she was also inebriated. *Ixora* when he first espy'd his Wife behind him, cry'd out to her, *Calli*, that is, you *she-Thief*: whereupon she answering, *Calla*, i. e. *Thief*; the *Malabars* to this day call the said Juice *Calla*. *Ixora* being well pleas'd with the young Tree, he stretch'd it with his hand higher and higher, and so turn'd it into a Palm-tree.

It seems somewhat odd, that the *Brahmans* who pretend so much to Sobriety, should make their *Supreme God* a Drunkard, when they are so nice in this Point, that they will never make use of our Ink, for fear there should be some Wine in it. Thus the *Samoryn* of *Calecut* kill'd his own Brother-in-law because he was drunk, and the King of *Cochin* did the same to a Company of drunken *Nairos*.

The Brahmans averse to Drunkenness.

They further tell us of this *Ixora*, that he caus'd his Son *Quenavady* to be castrated, because he once, whilst yet in his Mother's Arms, touch'd her Privy-Parts with his Trunk: others say he actually enjoy'd her; which is the reason the *Malabars* say that the Elephants have no Testicles.

Quenavady castrated.

It is to this *Quenavady* the Pagan Artisans, Workmen, *&c.* offer the first-fruits of their Labour. After they have reverenced and offer'd Sacrifices to him for 12 years, he moves one of his Ears, as a sign that they must continue the same; which being done 12 other years, he shakes the other Ear, to give them to understand that he requires still more at their hands; if they hold on 12 years longer, he opens his Eyes and grants their Requests.

How worshipp'd.

Ixora being at a certain time desirous to try the Agility of his two Sons *Quenavady* and *Superbennia*, offer'd a very fine Fig as a Reward to him who should carry the day. *Quenavady* having a very thick Skin, and riding only upon a Mouse, whereas *Superbennia* had 6 Faces and 12 Arms, and rid upon a Peacock, being sufficiently convinced that his Brother would carry the Prize, took his opportunity whilst the other was riding round the *Calaja*, to turn short and so lay hold of the Fig. *Superbennia* having taken his turn, pursuant to the Wager, and not finding the Fig, did fall upon *Quenavady* so furiously, that he beat out one of his Teeth: But *Ixora* giving *Superbennia* another Fig, the difference was soon ended. But not knowing what to do with the Tooth, he gave it to *Vistnou*, desiring him to restore it to *Quenavady*, which he did accordingly by putting it into a Fig which he gave to his Nephew, who as he was going to eat the Fig found the Tooth, which he turn'd into a nice writing Pen, and kept it to write his Poetry with.

Difference betwixt Quenavady and Superbennia.

Baldæus.

For the rest *Quenavady* is represented as very voracious, for they say he could devour the whole World; nor is he to be satiated but in the *Sugar-Sea* call'd *Jexucadhil*, which is of a vast extent, and always boiling-hot, having in the midst a Mount compos'd of 9 very fine Stones, with a Plain on the top, deliciously seated, in the Center whereof stands the Tree *Luola*, inclosed with a row of precious Stones curiously wrought. In this Enclosure is a Structure of the finest red Coral, cover'd with precious Stones: The Doors whereof, as well as the Avenues to the place, are guarded by a good force of the *Pudas*, who spend their time in holy Meditations and Prayers in the Company of a good number of Women, who sing to the Praise of God. Close about the Tree *Luola* are Seats of Gold, and a Table made of the most precious Stone call'd *Bairacalle*, upon which stand a bright shining Mouse, and a Rose, in the Leaves whereof are written 14 Letters or Characters. This is the Residence of *Quenavady*, who rides upon the said Mouse.

The Sugar-Sea.

He has on each side of him a most beautiful Woman, who are continually employ'd to lade Sugar mixt with Hony into his Mouth; and for fear he should be tir'd with the same Diet, good store of *Affes* (*Indian* Cakes) fried in Butter-milk, Butter, and divers other Provisions, stand always before him. The Hills near it afford also Figs, Grapes, *Coco* Nuts, and all other sorts of the best Fruits, as well as Roses and other Flowers; the Musicians that attend divert him with Fiddles, Trumpets, Flutes, Hautboys, and other Musical Instruments, as many Women are employ'd to make rich Incenses, and to anoint his Body with Sandal Wood, Civet, Musk, and to offer all sorts of odoriferous Flowers.

The *Malabars* celebrate yearly the Memory of their deceased Friends with great Pomp and vast Charge, according to their Abilities. The Kings upon this occasion entertain the *Brahmans* (who are in high esteem there, as being the Interpreters of their *Vedam* or Law-book) magnificently, and distribute Money after the Feast. And because in the *Indies*,

Funeral Feasts of the Malabars.

Baldæus. *Indies*, but especially on the Coast of *Malabar*, there are many petty Kings, as those of *Trevancor*, *Coulang*, *Calecoulang*, *Porca*, *Cochin*, *Cranganor*, *Cananor*, &c. these Feasts are frequent in those parts, and the *Brahmans* will be sure to partake of them, tho they travel sometimes 10, 15, nay 20 Leagues for it, and take their full share; for tho they value themselves much for abstaining from Flesh, Fish, Eggs, Wine and other strong Liquors, yet will they make themselves a full amends with such Victuals as are allowable by their Constitution.

CHAP. V.

Of the other Children of Ixora. *A* Coco-*Nut in the Head of an Ape.* Siri Hanuman *born an Ape. Reviv'd from the dead. Combat betwixt* Superbennia *and* Quenavady. *His cursing of the Moon.*

THE next to *Quenavady*, is stiled *Egasourubum*, or the *true God*, represented with an Elephant's Head, and 11 Hands. He is only to be worship'd by the *Brahmans*, tho others also sacrifice to him, but must at the same time abstain from Flesh, Fish, Eggs and Wine. Next to him comes *Ceuxi*, whose Origin is related thus: *Parameseeri Ixora*'s Spouse having anointed her Body with Oil and Saffron, and washing her self in a Pond, did form from the Impuritys of her Body a living Man; *Ixora* seeing him at a distance, and believing him to be her Lover, hastned thither, and struck with his Weapon his Head off at the foot of the Mountain *Calaja*, which was turn'd into a *Coco*-Tree, whence it is that the *Indians* say, that the print of a Man's Face was fix'd in the *Coco*-Nut. *Parameseeri* being sorely afflicted at her Son's Death, *Ixora* pleaded his Ignorance, and to comfort her in her Affliction, cut off the Head of a white Elephant, which he put upon the Shoulders of her dead Son, and so restor'd him to life again. He is represented with an Elephant's Head and two Hands.

Why the Coco-Nut has the print of a Mans Face.

Ixora had also another Son, named *Siri Hanuman*, by *Parameseeri*, which was born an Ape. *Ixora* it seems was a most celebrated Dancer, and used frequently to shew his Activity in the presence of the Celestial Spirits, as well as his Spouse *Parameseeri*, who was so active in dancing, that one time when she had lost her Ear-Jewel out of one Ear, she took it up with two Toes of her Feet, and put it in her Ear again, to the incredible surprize of the Spectators. Hence perhaps arose the Custom used among the Ladies of the *Nairos*, who whilst they are dancing at a certain Feast celebrated in honour of one their Idols, let on a sudden slip all their Clothes, and remain naked. But to return to *Ixora*: Having invited many of the Celestial Spirits to see him dance, *Parameseeri* happen'd to see two Apes sport together in the adjacent Wood; she desir'd *Ixora* to transform both her and him into Apes, which done, they leapt about in the Wood till coming to a *Bambo*-Tree, *Parameseeri* then conceiv'd an Ape. In the mean time the Celestial Spirits being come, according to invitation, and among them *Jecxa*, *Quinnera* and *Quendra*, and finding their Host abroad, they sent the *Wind* (as the nimblest of all) to find out *Ixora*, who having told him his Errand, they both resum'd their former shapes.

The Wives of the Nairos slip off their Clothes in dancing.

Parameseeri being now asham'd of her Burden, requested the *Wind* to convey the Ape into the Womb of *Anhema*, one of the Ladies of the Celestial Spirits; and so they return'd home, where *Ixora* danc'd to the admiration of the whole Assembly. *Anhema* afterwards brought forth an Ape as white as *Ixora* himself, who being endow'd with peculiar Virtues by his Father, performed many noted Exploits; of which more hereafter in the History of *Siri Rama*.

Odd Stories of the Ape Siri Hanuman.

Two odd Stories they tell of this Ape: First, That being one time very hungry, and taking the Sun for a dainty bit, he was endeavouring to leap up towards it, but was beat back by the Iron Weapon of *Ixora*, who gave him a good knock on the Pate, but without any harm, whence he got the Name of *Hanuman*. The other is, That meeting one time with a white Elephant call'd *Acrapadia*, on which was mounted *Devaindra* King of the Celestial Spirits, a Quarrel arose betwixt them, in which *Hanuman* was slain: His Father the *Wind* being afflicted at his Death, hid his Face under ground, so that the Inhabitants of the Earth being ready to perish for want of Air in the

extre-

extremity of Heat, they addreſs'd themſelves to *Ixora*, who reſtor'd *Hanuman* to life, and recal'd the Wind above ground.

Thus the Wind was ador'd as a God both by the *Greeks* and *Romans*. The *Athenians* erected a Temple to the Wind, as *Auguſtus* did in *France*; the *Phenicians* did the ſame. This Ape has divers celebrated *Pagodes* erected to him by the *Indians*. We read in the *Portugueſe* Hiſtories, that in 1554, when they plunder'd the famous Pagode upon the *Adams Mount* in *Ceylon*, they found an *Ape's Tooth*, (the moſt ſacred Relick of the Pagans of *Pegu*, *Ceylon*, *Malabar*, *Bengale*, *Coromandel* and *Biſnagar*) encloſed in a Box ſet with precious Stones, which they carried to *Goa*; ſome of the *Indian* Princes offer'd 700000 Ducats to redeem it, but it was not accepted of, by reaſon the Biſhop of *Goa* oppoſed it.

Another Son of *Ixora* was call'd *Superbennia*, with 6 Faces and 12 Hands, the occaſion whereof happened thus: *Parameſceri* being one day employ'd in waſhing her ſelf in a Ciſtern, 6 Weavers happen'd to paſs by, who inflam'd with Luſt, look'd very wiſhfully at her; this having the ſame effect upon her, ſhe conceiv'd the ſame inſtant: but fearing *Ixora*'s Anger, ſhe threw it out with her Spittle upon the ground, which turning in an inſtant into a Child with 6 Faces and 12 Hands, much reſembling in all other reſpects the 6 Weavers, they took it along with them, and educated it in all manner of Accompliſhments. One time being ingag'd in a Diſpute with *Ixora*, he was ſo taken with his Wit, that he receiv'd him for his Son, aſſign'd him a Place at *Calaja*, and preſented him with a Peacock to ride upon. *Baldæus.*

A Conception by fancy.

Before I conclude this Chapter, I muſt tell you one thing more of *Quenavady*. Returning one day pretty late at night from a Banquet, when the Moon was not very light, it being only the 4*th* day after the New Moon in *Auguſt*, with his Umbrella in one hand, in the other a Poem, and ſome Cakes under his Arm, he ran unwarily againſt a Poſt with ſuch violence, that he fell upon the ground and dropt not only his Umbrella, but alſo his Poems and Cakes: As he was moſt concern'd for the laſt, ſo he took a good bite or two of them before he roſe again, or look'd for his Book and Umbrella. The Moon ſeeing this pleaſant Spectacle, could not forbear laughing; which *Quenavady* perceiving, broke out into this Curſe, *Who ever, O Moon, ſhall ſee thee for the future upon this day in* Auguſt, *ſhall be damnify'd in his Privities.* Hence it is that the Pagans will not ſtir abroad the 4*th* of *Auguſt* after Sun-ſet, nay even not on the 5*th*, for fear of partaking of this Curſe; and if any one is oblig'd to ſtay without doors, he covers his Face, and even will not look into the Water for fear of ſeeing the Moon, tho they ſee the St. *Thomas* Chriſtians, the *Jews* and *Mahometans* look upon it at the ſame time without the leaſt detriment. Quenavady *curſes the Moon.*

CHAP. VI.

Ixora's *Daughter, and the Origin of the Small-Pox: Fear of the* Malabars *of that Diſtemper. Their* Pagode Amadyri *plunder'd by the King of* Cochin. *She comes to* Coulang.

A Certain Giant named *Racxada* (of which more anon) having liv'd 12 years with *Bramma*, he receiv'd among many other Preſents a Book from him, and ſome Bracelets, as alſo the Virtue of being invulnerable. The Natives of *Coromandel* believe theſe Giants to have been Children of the *Brahman Caſſiopa* by his Wife *Aditi*, juſt as the *Jews* ſay that *Lilith* brought forth Devils begotten by *Adam*. *Darida* finding himſelf thus plac'd above the common rank of Men, by his Strength beſtow'd upon him by *Bramma*, would needs challenge *Ixora*, who knowing his Strength ſent againſt him a certain Female named *Sorga*, who cut off one of his Heads (for beſides his true Head, he had many others, but only in appearance) but *Darida* returning the next day, reiterated his Boaſts, when *Ixora* engag'd five holy Women, call'd *Chamundigal* by the *Malabars*, in his Quarrel, who cut off his falſe Heads; but all to no purpoſe, ſo that *Darida* perſiſting in his Inſolence, *Ixora* conſulted with *Viſtnum*, what to do in this exigency. Whilſt they were debating the matter, *Viſtnum* ſent forth from his Body a certain matter (call'd *Bixa* by the *Malabars*) which entring that of *Ixora*, paſs'd again thro the Eye on his Front, Darida.

Baldæus. Front, and falling upon the ground produc'd in an inſtant a Female, which *Ixora* acknowledging for his Daughter, gave her the Name of *Patragali Pagode*.

A Deſcription of Ixora's Daughter. This Daughter had 8 Faces, 16 Hands as black as a Coal, with large round Eyes, her Teeth like the Tusks of a Boar: In lieu of Pendants ſhe has two Elephants in her Ears, and Serpents about her Body inſtead of a Garment; her Hair-locks are Peacocks Tails, in her Hand ſhe carries a Sword, a Trident, a large Porcellain Baſon, another Veſſel call'd *Capala* by the *Malabars*, a Scymiter call'd *Mautegam*, a Hanger call'd *Carutela*, an Arrow, a Weapon call'd *Cona*, a Rope, an Ape with an Iron Wheel.

This Monſter was no ſooner born, but ſhe went to revenge her Father's Quarrel, and fighting for ſeven days ſucceſſively, ſhe cut off 7 of his imaginary Heads; but finding all her Endeavours in vain, and that *Darida* was not vulnerable as long as he kept the Book and Bracelets given him by *Bramma*, ſhe apply'd her ſelf to *Sorga*, intreating her to take upon her the Habit of a Beggar, and by that means endeavour to get the beforeſaid things into her hands. Accordingly *Sorga* took the opportunity to ask Alms of *Darida*, when he was at ſome diſtance from his Houſe, who told her, that if ſhe would go to his Houſe his Wife would anſwer her deſire, which if ſhe did not, he would do it himſelf. *Sorga* then went to his Houſe, and ask'd his Wife for the Bracelets and Book in her Husband's Name, who freely delivering the ſame, ſhe brought them inſtantly to *Patragali*. *Darida* having thus loſt his beſt Treaſures, wherein *Bramma* had encloſed all his Happineſs, and thereby being bereav'd of his former Strength, was ſoon after engag'd again, and had his true Head cut off by *Patragali*.

Being much exalted by this Victory, ſhe came ſtrait to *Ixora*, who being then juſt undreſs'd leapt into a Ciſtern, for fear of being ſeen by *Patragali*, from whence he gave her ſome Fleſh and Blood; but finding her not ſatisfied thus, he order'd her to hold out her Baſon, and cutting off one of his Fingers he fill'd it with his own Blood; but *Patragali* continuing ſtill unſatisfied, took one of her Golden Chains (compoſed of ſmall pieces like Pepper Corns) and threw it into his Face, which raiſing in his Face great numbers of Pimples, or ſmall Ulcers, he cry'd out with great ſurprize, *Baſuri*, i. e. *O you revengeful Woman!* and deſiring her to deſiſt, created two young Men named *Birapatrem* and *Ojetragate*, whom he beſtow'd upon her, and thus pacified her Anger; but to rid his hand of her for the future, he preſented her with a Veſſel of Sandal Wood, ordering her to go with it into the World, and to reſide (tho unknown) among the Mortals, and to require Vows and Sacrifices at their hands.

Opinion of the Pagans about the Small-pox. The Pagans therefore imagining that it is *Patragali* ſends the Small-Pox among the People, leave the Patient ſo ſoon as he is ſeiz'd with it; and hence perhaps it is, that they have a certain Idol repreſenting a Female, with a Child laying his Arms about her Neck, and imploring her Aſſiſtance. They deliver up theſe Patients to the care of the *Comaras*, a Fraternity belonging to the *Pagode* of *Patragali*; theſe offer the Blood of ſome Cocks and other Sacrifices to the Goddeſs in behalf of the Sick; and for the reſt give them only ſome *Canjies*, or Rice boil'd in Water; and leaving them for the reſt to their own diſpoſal, more die for want of good looking after, than by the Violence of the Diſtemper; nay ſometimes are kill'd by *Comaras*, who inherit all their Moveables.

We told you before, that *Ixora* call'd his Daughter *Baſuri*, which to this day ſignifies the *Small-Pox* among the *Malabars*, which they ſay is the Sword of *Patragali*, and for that reaſon endeavour to mitigate her Wrath by Sacrifices, wherein they follow the footſteps of the antient *Greeks*.

The Pagode of Patragali in Cranganor. They ſay that *Patragali* has her chief Reſidence in the *Great Pagode* of *Cranganor*, call'd the *Pagode* of Pilgrims, from the vaſt number of Zealots that flock thither; and as this brings in a Revenue of many thouſand *Fanams* to the King of *Cranganor*, ſo the King of *Cochin*, who fain would have had a ſhare in the Booty, did poſt ſome Forces on the Paſſes, who rob'd and plunder'd the Pilgrims, intending by this means to oblige them to reſort to the *Pagode* built in the Kingdom of *Palurti* under his Juriſdiction. Thus the old King of *Cochin* did plunder and rob the famous *Pagode* of *Ammadiri*, of all its Treaſure, at the head of a Body of 10000 Men, and afterwards laugh'd at them into the bargain, ſaying that he had taken it only as his Inheritance, as being the Son and Heir of the Idol; juſt as *Dionyſius* the *Sicilian* Tyrant did with *Jupiter* and *Æſculapius*.

The King of Cochin robs a famous Pagode.

Adventures of Patragali after ſhe left Ixora. But to return to *Patragali*; ſhe was no ſooner got out into the Main with her Veſſel of Sandal-wood, but being attack'd

† by

by ſome Fiſher-men and Ape-Hunters, was forc'd to return to *Calaja*, where finding *Ixora* overwhelm'd with Sleep, ſhe overturn'd his Bedſtead, which awakening him, ſhe told him her Diſaſter; whereupon being endow'd with new Vigor by *Ixora*, ſhe return'd to her Veſſel, and having defeated the *Ape-Hunters*, and landed ſafely on the South-ſide of *Coulang* (a City of *Malabar*) the Queen thereof ſent for her to Court, and entertain'd her there for 12 years as her own Daughter.

The Lord of *Couleta* (a Country 7 Leagues to the North of *Calecut*) then deſiring *Patragali* in Marriage for his Son, the ſame was concluded, and ſhe taken home, where ſhe liv'd for 12 years without ever cohabiting with her Husband, as boaſting her ſelf to be the Daughter of *Ixora*. *Mendoza* ſpeaks of a certain Idol in *China* with a Child hanging about her Neck, which the Jeſuits would fain perſwade the World to have been intended for the Virgin *Mary*, tho it ſeems much more probable, that it was intended for this *Patragali*. What Mr. *Le Blanc* tells us of the Female Idol of *Calecut*, ſeems very ſuſpicious to me. *Baldæus*

CHAP. VII.

Patragali's Father and Mother ſuffer Shipwrack. She ſends her Husband to ſell her Jewels, and goes in queſt after him. Nine ſeveral Adventures which happen to her. The reſt of Ixora *his Children, their Adventures. What further becomes of* Parameſceri.

AFterwards *Patragali*'s Father and Mother-in-law being embark'd aboard a Ship with all their Riches, in order to traffick with them in Foreign Countries, they were attack'd at Sea by the *Ape-hunters*, who ſinking their Ships, they loſt all their Riches. *Patragali* then gave her Golden Foot-rings to her Husband to ſell them, who departed accordingly, but meeting upon the Road a Goldſmith (a Highway-man of *Pandy*) he under pretence of viewing the Rings, entertain'd the Husband, till by ſeveral By-ways they brought him to *Pandy*. Here the pretended Goldſmith (who had not long before ſtoln juſt ſuch Rings from the Queen of *Pandy*) accuſed *Patragali* of the Robbery, who was put in Priſon, and afterwards empal'd alive on a Palm-tree. The Goldſmith's Wife having an averſion to ſo foul a Fact, upbraided her Husband with it, who kill'd and buried her near a Well.

Patragali's Husband executed.

Patragali having ſtaid ſix days without hearing any News from her Husband, reſolv'd to go in ſearch after him.

The firſt thing ſhe met with was a Pigeon, which ſhe ask'd, *whether ſhe had ſeen her Husband?* The Pigeon reply'd, ſhe had ſeen him go that way, but not return. In recompence whereof *Patragali* gave her this Bleſſing, That ſhe ſhould never want Water in *February* (being the drieſt ſeaſon here) and preſented her with a piece of her Chain, which ſhe threw about her Neck, (the Turtles have ſuch a Ring about the Neck.)

Patragali's Adventures whilſt ſhe goes in queſt of her Husband.

Patragali following the way ſhewn her by the Pigeon, met with another Bird, of whom having enquir'd as ſhe did before of the Pigeon, ſhe receiv'd the ſame Anſwer, which made her beſtow a Tuft upon his Head, being perhaps the ſame we call the *Piewet* in our Country, call'd *Carpenteiro* by the *Portugueſes*.

Afterwards *Patragali* coming to a *Mango*-Tree, ſhe ask'd the ſame Queſtion; but receiving no Anſwer, ſhe curſt it, that for the future the dead Corps ſhould be burnt with no other Wood, and that all Veſſels built of that Wood, ſhould rot and be worm-eaten at Sea.

Meeting next a Cow, ſhe was kick'd by her hindermoſt Legs; which ſhe reſented ſo ill, that ſhe gave her this Curſe, That of her four Teats one ſhould be for the uſe of the *Pagode*, the other for the Prince of the Country, the third for the Owner, and the fourth only for her Calf; that they ſhould make Drums of her Skin, and that conſequently ſhe ſhould be ſubject to Blows both dead and alive.

The fifth ſhe met with being a *Nairo*, or Soldier of *Malabar*, this Fellow had dug a hole, and having cover'd the ſame with ſome Twigs and Sand, *Patragali* fell into it as ſhe paſs'd along; ſhe gave him this Curſe, that he ſhould be call'd Coward all his life-time.

The next was a *Naira*, or a *Nairo*'s Daughter, who being ask'd by her, whether ſhe had not ſeen her Husband? ſhe clapt

Baldæus. clapt her Hands, saying in scornful tone, What are you running after your Husband? I have not seen him. She gave him this Curse, That she should be married to a *Nairo*, a Coward, who as soon as he turn'd Soldier should leave her in 40 days after.

She then coming to a *Jaquo*-Tree, she ask'd after her Husband again: the Tree bowing its Twigs, furnished her with some of its Milky Liquor (as this Tree does if you cut any of its Twigs) she bestow'd this Blessing upon it, That its Fruits should be highly esteem'd by the Kings and Princes, and that tho its Stem might corrupt, it should continue to bear Fruit (as in effect it does) and that they should employ its Wood in making their Cymbals call'd *Tabelyne*, and the Statues of their Idols.

The eighth she met with was a *Polia*, a Man of mean Extraction, who not going out of her way (as they usually do) she told him, that he should not be admitted into the Houses of Persons of Quality from *October* till *February*.

The last she met with was a *Parrea*, likewise a Person of low Birth; but having paid her the usual Reverence, she admir'd at his Civility, which made her ask him, Whether he did know her? He reply'd, that he took notice of her Swines Tusks, and the Elephants in her Ears; which so pleased her, that she told him, he should drink of the Liquor of the Palm-tree (which in effect they do when they gather it) and that he and his Family should feed upon Cow's Flesh. Then tracing the way shew'd her by the *Parrea*, she found her Husband empal'd upon the Palm-tree; which being too high for her, she obtain'd by her Prayers that the Palm-tree broke, and so deliver'd her Husband, whom she brought to Life again.

Patragali now burning of Revenge to punish the Murderers of her Husband, address'd her self to *Ixora*, who having furnish'd her with a strong Body of *Raxaxos*, or Devils (having been wicked Men in their life-time) she enter'd the Territories of *Pandy*, and at last kill'd the King and the Goldsmith. His Wife she reviv'd from the dead, who having brought forth a Son, she granted him a Privilege to work in the *Pagodes*, and to receive to himself the tenth part of all the Gold he should make use of, the fourth in 10 of what he should work for the King, and as much as he could get from private Persons.

Patragali revenges her Husband's Death.

We told you before of the *Pagode* of *Patragali* in *Cranganor*, where besides her Statue stands that of a large Lion in Marble, which the *Bramans* knock every day with Hammers upon the Head, to keep it from growing too long.

Thus much of *Ixora*'s Children as two were, properly speaking, only four in number (*Superbennia* being only an adopted Son) we must also go on in the Story of *Parameseeri* his Spouse and her Origin. *Jeexa Pajava* King of the *Peringales* had four Daughters, the eldest whereof was *Parameseeri*, otherwise call'd *Parvati*; *Sarossodi* and *Gojatris* the second and third being married to *Bramma*, and *Pagode Siri* to *Vistnum*. Their Father being desirous to see his Daughters in their full Glory, invited *Bramma* and *Vistnum* to a most magnificent Feast. *Vistnum* asking him whether he had invited *Ixora*, he answer'd, No, (*Ixora* being then in his Mendicant State) but afterwards considering the matter, he invited him at last, which *Ixora* took so hainously, that he resolv'd to spoil the Feast. *Pedegree of Parameseeri.*

The Day appointed for the Feast being come, *Siri Pagode* came in great Pomp in a stately Chariot made of nine most precious Stones, most artificially wrought, her self being adorn'd with numberless Jewels and Pearls, and attended by a splendid Retinue of Servants and Musicians: *Sarossodi* and *Gojatris* the other two Sisters appear'd with the same Splendor. *Parameseeri* in the mean while having obtain'd leave to go to the Feast from *Ixora*, he order'd her to put on her best Apparel, and gave her his Serpents, his Umbrella of Peacocks Tails, his Chain of Bones, his Tygers Skin, and Elephants Hide; thus equipp'd she mounted upon an Ox, and with a large Attendance of Drummers, and *Pudas* and *Pixares*, came to her Father's Palace, where being met at the Gates by her Sisters and the other Guests, these seeing her Equipage much below what they expected, instead of welcoming her as they ought to have done, burst out into laughter, which so vexed *Parameseeri*, that without more ado she return'd to *Calaja*, where she gave an account of what Treatment she had met with, because *her Sisters appear'd at the Feast in a most sumptuous Equipage, their Apparel being cover'd all over with precious Stones and Pearls, whereas she who was the eldest Sister, and married to* Ixora, *had been despis'd for her mean Appearance.* Rogerius *gives a somewhat different Relation.*

Ixora mov'd at the just Complaints of his Spouse, sent his Son *Quenavady* to spoil the Feast. *Vistnum* being well acquainted with *Quenavady*'s Temper, order'd good store of Cakes to be set before him

him in the Hall, which pleaſed him ſo well, that he ſoon forgot his Father's Orders. *Ixora* wondering at *Quenevady*'s long ſtay, ſent his Brother *Superbennia* upon the ſame Errand; *Viſtnum* knowing him not to be diverted with Trifles, ſent out to him ſome ingenious Perſons, who entertain'd him ſo well with ſubtile Diſcourſes and Arguments, that he likewiſe neglected his Father's Commands.

At laſt *Ixora* finding both his Sons to ſtay behind, order'd his Daughter *Patragali* thither; *Viſtnum* no ſooner heard of her coming, but he commanded a moſt delicious Banquet to be ſet before her in the Hall, through which ſhe was to paſs, which ſo diverted her Senſes, that ſhe ſoon forgot what ſhe came about.

Ixora finding all theſe Endeavours to prove ineffectual, reſolved to go thither in Perſon; which *Viſtnum* no ſooner got notice of, but he told King *Jecxa Prajava* his Father-in-law, that not being able to cope with *Ixora*, he would retire with his Wife; and *Bramma* doing the ſame, the *Sun* and the *Moon* (two of the Gueſts) ſtaid only behind: *Ixora* coming to his Father-in-law's Palace, upbraided him with the Contempt he had put upon him and his Wife *Parameſceri*, and ſo taking him by the Hair full of Anger, there came forth at the ſame inſtant a ſtout Warrior arm'd *Cap-a-pee* (like the *Mars* of the antient Pagans) call'd *Virapatren* by the *Malabars*, who cut off *Jecxa Prajava*'s Head, the Hands of the *God of the Fire*, and beat out the Teeth of the *Sun*. What *Rogerius* ſays concerning *Jccxa Prajava*'s having got a Goats Head inſtead of the other, and that the *Moon* alſo got a good banging, I could never learn either from theſe Pagans themſelves, or from the *Portugueſe* Hiſtories. *Bramins.*

PART II.

CHAP. I.

The Idol Viſtnum, *and his Transformation into a Fiſh.* Mats *Altar. Another Transformation of* Viſtnum. *An Account of the Milk-Sea.* Cauram's *Altar.*

Viſtnum's *Deſcent and Reſidence.*

Viſtnum the ſecond in rank among the Gods next to *Ixora*, is alſo deſcended from *Quivelinga*. He is of a black Colour, with one Head, and four Hands; he reſides on the Sugar-Sea, and governs the World ſleeping. Inſtead of a Bed, he repoſes upon a noted Serpent call'd *Annatan*, with five Heads; two whereof ſerve him for Pillars, one for a Bolſter, and two under his Hands. This Serpent, as they ſay, being once in the humour to try the Power of *Viſtnum*, got a ſixth Head, which *Viſtnum* no ſooner ſaw, but he got another Hand to lay upon the Head, and the Serpent having got a ſeventh Head, he got likewiſe another Hand; ſo that, as the Serpents Heads did grow to the number of a thouſand, his Hands encreaſed in proportion; whence it is that they look upon the Serpents as Celeſtial Spirits, keep them in great Veneration, and never kill them, tho they are often hurt by them. Thus the Serpents were reckoned by the antient *Litbuanians*, *Samogitians*, *Pruſſians* and *Egyptians*.

They tell us further, that *Viſtnum* wears the Print of a Foot upon his Breaſt: For one *Ricxi Sirwelſtena* being deſirous to know which of the three was the moſt *Potent God*, came to *Calaja*, and gave *Ixora* a good Box on the Ear, who transform'd him into a Stone; but having after 12 years recover'd his Life, he did the ſame to *Bramma*, who let him go without doing him any harm. Then coming to *Viſtnum*, and finding him upon his Bed, he ſet his foot upon his Breaſt, which *Viſtnum* fix'd there, ſo that he was forced to continue there 100 years. *Wears a Print on his Breaſt.*

Viſtnum had two Wives, one call'd *Leximi* alias *Laetzemi*, and *Siri Pagode* before-mention'd. The firſt *Viſtnum* found in the *Milk-Sea*, in a Roſe of 108 large and 1008 leſſer Leaves; her chief buſineſs is to ſcratch his Head. The Viſtnum's *Wives.*

Baldæus.

other is call'd *Pumi Divi*, i. e. the *Goddeſs of Heaven*, in whoſe Lap he lays his Feet, which ſhe is to rub with her Hands.

They attribute no leſs than ten ſeveral Transformations to *Viſtnum*, nine whereof they ſay are accompliſh'd already, but the tenth is to come. Father *Kircher* the Jeſuit * mentions the ſame to have been related to him by Father *Hen. Roth* an *Auſtin* Frier; and *Rogerius* ſays likewiſe ſomething of them: but as under theſe ten Transformations are hid the chief Myſteries of the Pagan Religion on both ſides of the *Ganges*, ſo we will treat of them at large with this Precaution, that theſe Pagans often give divers Names to the ſame God, by reaſon of the great difference betwixt the Languages of the *Ben-*

Viſtnum ten times transform'd.

* China Illuſtr. Part 3. Ed. 6.

The Idol of Viſtnum.

jans; *Gentives* and *Malabars:* So, tho they acknowledg the same *Ixora*, *Bramma* and *Vistnum*, some of them call'd *Ixora Mahex*, or *Mahadeuw*, *Bramma*, *Bruma* or *Ram*, and *Vistnum Bexuo*, &c. which seems to intimate as if they had a certain respect to the Trinity; just as the *Chineses* worship three Divine Attributes under the Name of *Pussa*, and the *Greeks* placed the three *Charities* near the Throne of *Jupiter*; and if the Modern *Jews* were not quite obstinate in their denial of the Trinity, they might be convinc'd by their own *Rabbies*, *Rabbi Isaac*, *Rabbi Judas Nagi*, and *Rabbi Simeon*.

The first Transformation was into a Fish.

The first Transformation was into a Fish, occasion'd by *Raxiaxa* alias *Adirem*, who having carried away the Law-book of the inferiour Gods call'd *Devagal* or *Dewetas*, hid himself at the bottom of the Sea. The inferior Gods making their Complaints to *Vistnum*, he transform'd himself into that ravenous Fish the *Shark*, and thus diving to the bottom of the Sea, laid hold of *Raxiaxa*, otherwise call'd *Seremiaxen*, and *Sancasoor* by the *Benjans*, kill'd him, and seiz'd the Law-book, divided into four parts; the first whereof treated of the Souls of the Blessed, the second of the vagabond Souls, the third of good Works, the fourth of bad Works. But what *Rogerius* says, *l.* 1. *c.* 5. *viz.* that the fourth part is lost, I could never be convinc'd of. The Fish is call'd *Mat* or *Matbia*, tho the *Malabars* and *Benjans* call it *Zeexis*. The *Benjans* tell us, that these Books were stoln from *Bramma*, but the *Malabars* from the *Dewetas*, or inferiour Gods. The *Benjans* say that *Bramma* was transform'd into a Fish, whereas the *Malabars* ascribe it to *Vistnum*. The *Benjans* call these Transmutations *Altars*; so that according to their supposition *Mats* Altar being the first, has now stood 2500 years.

Upon this occasion I must agree with *Rogerius*, when he says, *l.* 2. *c.* 3. that he could not dive into the Mysteries of the Transformations, because I am certain that it cost me a great deal of trouble before I could attain to the knowledg thereof, and that not without the Assistance of a certain *Brahman*, who coming from *Bengale* settled at *Jafnapatnam*; and as I frequently convers'd with him, so I often used to discourse with him concerning the Animadversions made upon this Head by *Rogerius*: He being afterwards converted to the Christian Faith, and baptized in the Church of *Vanarpone*, and our Discourse running upon the Transformations of *Vistnum*, he told me that this *Vedam*, or Law-book, being inclosed in a *Chanke*, or Sea-horse's Horn, the same was found out by *Vistnum*; whence it is that they say the Prints of the Fingers are to be seen in these Horns to this day; and that they have put the *Saccaram* or Sword, and the *Chanki* or Horn into his Hands, as you see in the proceding Draught, tho some ascribe the same to *Bramma*. *Baldæus.*

But before we enter further upon the Description of the Transmutations, we must add certain Preliminaries as tending to the Explanation thereof.

Four remarkable Divisions of Time.

All these Transformations were perform'd in four different times or spaces: The first call'd *Kortesinge* by the *Benjans*, they say continued 1728000 years. The second *Tretasinge* 1296000 years: The third *Duapersinge* 8064000 years: The fourth *Kallisinge* 4032000 years, being the same term of time we now live in; so that according to their Computation at *Suratte* there were in 1657, at least 4758 years elapsed of this last term of Time. For it is to be known, that the *Benjans*, and most other Pagans, *Egyptians*, *Chineses* and *Japoneses*, differ several 1000 of years in their Computations from ours. And to convince you that the *Benjans* have the same years with ours, it is to be observ'd, that they as well as we divide their Years into 12 Months, amounting in the whole to 360 days in the year; and to make amends for our odd days, they have thirteen Months in every fourth Year, yet so that the 13*th* Month hath no more than 16 days. And it is further their opinion, that after the expiration of this last term of Time of 4032000 years, the World shall be renew'd. In which Point they follow in some measure the Footsteps of *Plato*, who allow'd no less than 36000 years before the Sun could pass through the 360 deg. of the *Zodiack*; tho they make their *Annus magnus*, as the antient Pagans call'd it,

Interea magnum Sol circumvolvitur Annum *. * Virgil. l. 3. Æneid.

The Pagans on the Coast of *Coromandel* and *Malabar* call these four terms of time, *Critagom*, *Treitagom*, *Dwaparugom*, and *Kaligom*; where it is to be observ'd, that according to the Computation of the Pagans, and the *Gentives* of *Suratte*, there are in this year 1670 elapsed 4771. whereas those of *Coromandel* compute 4770, being only one year's difference: but finding in 1665. that the Inhabitants of *Jafnapatnam* computed then the 4864*th* year

Balæus.

year of the laſt Term; I told them that they did not ſtand for 100 years leſs or more, whereat they ſmiled.

The ſecond Transformation of Vitſnum.

But it is time we ſhould now proceed to the ſecond Transformation. The 33 Gods and the *Adires* held an Aſſembly in the *Milk-Sea*, to conſult how to get into their poſſeſſion the *Ambroſia*, call'd by ſome *Amurtam* and *Amortam*, by others *Amratam*. Some ſay that *Ixora* and *Viſtnum* having call'd together all the good and evil Spirits, enter'd upon a Debate, how to find out ſomething endu'd with ſuch a Virtue as to make Men live without Victuals or Drink, and without danger of Death, or being tir'd. Whereupon it being agreed, that they ſhould turn the Mount *Mahameru* (call'd *Merouwa* by *Rogerius*) like the Turners do, and inſtead of a Rope make uſe of the Serpent *Harugu*, call'd *Seſcha* by the *Brahmans*, being of ſo vaſt a bulk, as to encloſe the ſeven Worlds and Seas; accordingly they began their Turners-work, but finding the Mount immovable, they addreſs'd themſelves to a noted Ape call'd *Baly* (of whom more anon in the Hiſtory of *Siri Rama*) by whoſe Aſſiſtance the Mount began to ſtir; and meeting at the ſame time with a beautiful Woman named *Dara*, they beſtow'd her upon *Baly* as a Reward for his Services. But continuing their Work, the Mount by turning round tumbl'd into the Sea; ſo that being deſtitute of all means to recover it thence, they were forced to have recourſe to *Viſtnum*, who taking the ſhape of a *Tortoiſe*, dived to the bottom, and brought the Mount up on his Back. Here it was that *Viſtnum* met with the beautiful *Macha Lecxemi*, whom he married afterwards. But the Mount being exceeding high, *Viſtnum* took the ſhape of a Bird, and flew round about it, till it was brought lower. This Story ſeems to have ſome relation to the Fable of Mount *Atlas*, and what is ſaid *Heb.* 1. *that God bears up the World.*

The Gods and the *Adires* then continuing their Work, did light upon ſome Poiſon, which being too ſtrong for them they ſent to *Ixora*, but were ſtill in purſuit after the *Ambroſia*, which they intended to preſent to their Great King *Deva Indra* (who was then very ſick) ſirnamed *Quiera Navam*, becauſe his whole Body was cover'd with *Manly Yards*, in revenge of the Adultery he committed with the Wife of the Great *Rixi Quendama*: For *Deva Indra* being extremely in love with the ſaid Lady, tranſform'd himſelf into a Cock, and coming to her Houſe in the night-time, began to crow moſt briskly. *Rixi* thinking it had been near break of Day, got out of his Bed, and whilſt he was going to an adjacent Pond to perform his uſual Devotions, *Deva Indra* took the opportunity to enjoy his Wife. *Rixi* returning from his Devotion, and perceiving the Cheat, tranſmuted his Wife into a Stone, and laid the other Puniſhment upon her Lover.

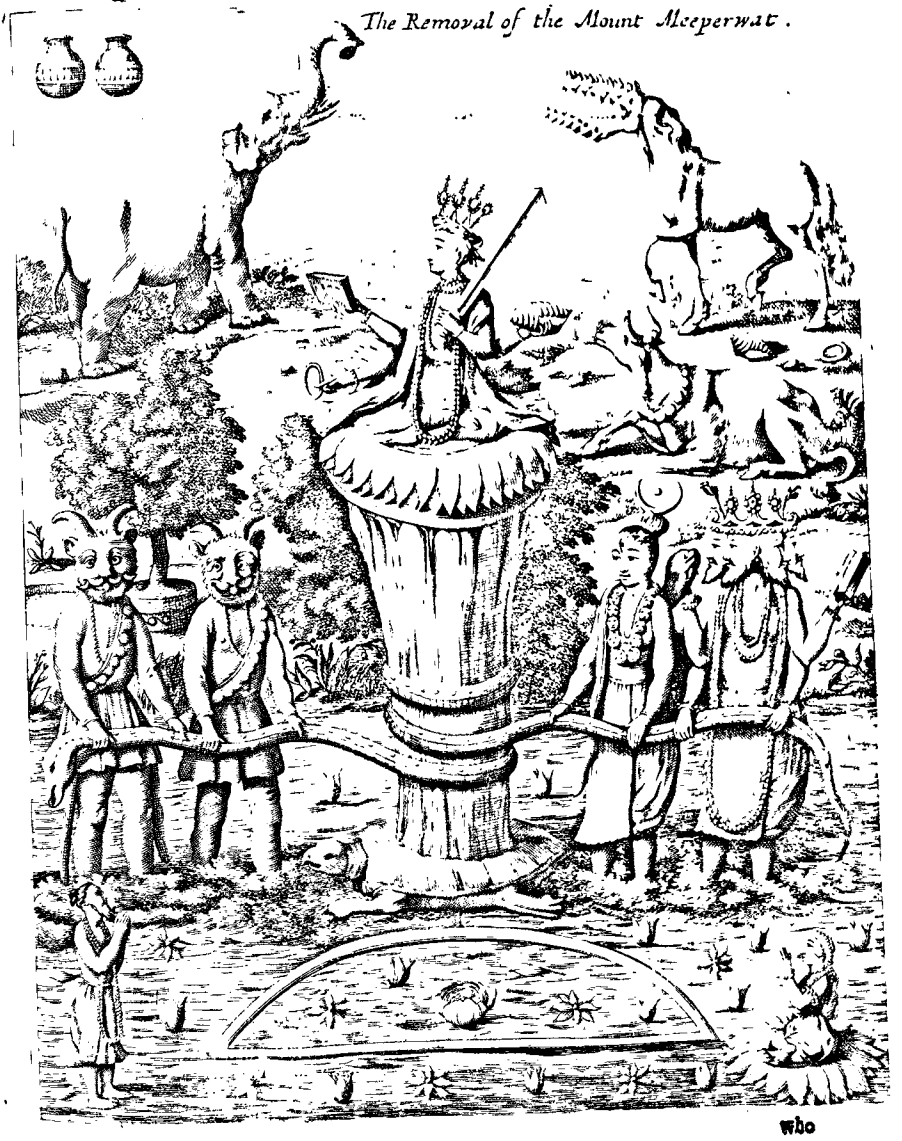
By this time the *Adires* having ſeiz'd upon the *Ambroſia* without giving a ſhare to the Gods, theſe made their Applications to *Viſtnum*, who thereupon taking the ſhape of a moſt beautiful Nymph, ſat down at Table with the *Adires*, when their Attendants were juſt ready to diſtribute the *Ambroſia* among them. Being all extremely enamour'd with her Beauty, every one courted her for his Spouſe. To decide the matter ſhe told them, that they ſhould put the *Ambroſia* into her Hand, and with their Eyes ſhut and Hands ty'd behind them, but their Mouths open, receive every one their ſhare of the *Ambroſia*; and that he upon whom ſhe ſhould pitch for her Husband, ſhould be the laſt. This being done accordingly, ſhe ſeiz'd upon the *Ambroſia*, and carried it to the Gods. But whilſt they were all opening their Mouths to receive the ſaid *Ambroſia*, *Ravaben* (who had aſſum'd the ſhape of one of the Gods) ſhew'd his Boars Tusks, which *Viſtnum* ſeeing gave him ſuch a powerful Blow, that his Head flew from his Shoulders; whence the *Adires*, whatever ſhape they aſſume, always retain their Tusks. However *Viſtnum* throwing the Body and Head into the Air, the ſame were transform'd into two Planets, call'd *Rabu* and *Quendaum*. *Rogerius* calls them, *Ragou* and *Ketou*, which in the *Malabar* ſignifies as much as *Caput* and *Cauda*, or the *Dragon's Head* and *Tail*. But here the *Brahmans* commit an Error in Aſtronomy, for they have no Planets, but a fixed *Sidus* conſiſting of 31 Stars on the North-ſide without the *Zodiac*; where the Moon paſſing from South to North, and again from the North to South, goes through this *Ecliptick-Line*, being the ſame the Sun paſſes through every year, and the Moon every Month in the year; for when ſhe takes her Courſe from South to North, the place where ſhe paſſes through the Ecliptick Line is call'd the *Dragon's Head*, as the place of the ſaid Line through which ſhe paſſes in her return from North to South is call'd the *Dragon's Tail*; hence it is, that (according to

to *Rogerius*) theſe Pagans ſay that there is an Antipathy betwixt Sun and Moon, and *Ragou* and *Ketou*, and when they ſee an Eclipſe of the Sun or Moon, that they are fighting with *Ragou* and *Ketou*, or that they are devour'd by them.

The inferiour Gods employ part of the *Ambroſia* they had got in reſtoring their Great God to Health, and removing the *Manly Members* from his Body, inſtead whereof he got as many Eyes. *Baldæus.*

The before-mentioned Poiſon taken out of the Mount *Mahameru*, being ſo virulent, that whatever it touch'd was conſum'd to Aſhes, was given to *Ixora* in the preſence of *Parameſceri* his Spouſe,

The Removal of the Mount Meeperwat.



who

Baldæus. who dreading the Effects thereof, clapt her Hand to his Throat to prevent him from ſwallowing it, and laying the other Hand upon his Mouth for fear he ſhould ſpue it out again and ſet the World on fire, mingling at the ſame time her Prayers (*Nila candamtre acxeram*) with her Endeavours, the Poiſon forc'd its way through *Ixora*'s Ear, and was in an inſtant transform'd into a Devil, call'd *Canda Carna Pixaxo*. The Prints of *Parameſceri*'s Finger left three black ſpots on *Ixora*'s Throat, whence he got the Sirname of *Nili Candaon*, i. e. *Black Throat*, or *Black Head*.

Different Relation of the Benjans and Gentives of the ſecond Transformation.

The *Benjans* and *Gentives* give a different Relation of this ſecond Transformation. They ſay that the Sea being ſwoln with Pride, broke out in theſe words; *Who is it that can compare with the Riches contain'd in my Azure Marble Vaults? Here it is the Moon has fix'd her Habitation; the Water of* Tammarith, *which renders thoſe that drink it immortal, is incloſed in my Boſom. The Elephant with his ſeven Trunks, and the ſeven-headed Horſe dwell in the Depths, which produce black, white and red Coral in vaſt quantity.* The *Great God of Heaven* being exaſperated at this Vanity, commanded the Giant and the four-headed God *Bramma* to go to the River *Siam Boerwetty*, near which lies the Golden Mount *Meeperwat* ſeated in the Center of the Earth, and 400000 Leagues high, and to remove the ſaid Mount into the Sea, by winding the Serpent *Wakage* about it, and thereby force the Sea to caſt out her Treaſure, which had render'd her ſo vainglorious. This being put in Execution accordingly, the Sea caſt out the following fourteen things. 1. The Mony call'd *Leceſemy*. 2. The moſt precious Jewel *Conſenchmany*, or the Carbuncle, which carries a Luſtre like the Full-Moon. 3. The Tree *Paertſatig*. 4. The Veſſel *Silxeren*, with the Water of *Sora*. 5. *Doctor Dannewanter*. 6. *Indemademaen*. 7. The white Cow of Plenty call'd *Camdoga*. 8. The immortal Water call'd *Amarith*. 9. The Elephant with ſeven Trunks, *Hiera Wanneſty*. 10. The beauteous Female Dancer, *Remba*. 11. The ſeven-headed Horſe *Exmognora*. 12. The Bow *Dennok*. 13. The Horn *Chiank*. And, 14. The Poiſon *Sahar*. This done, the Sea began to abate of its Pride, the Mount and Serpent had their peculiar places aſſign'd them, and the Treaſures of the Sea were diſtributed to different Places and Perſons. Thus far of the ſecond Transformation, containing 2500 years of the firſt term of Time.

CHAP. II.

Viſtnum *transform'd into a Hog:* Waras *his Altar. Some Reflections upon the Fables of the Pagans.* Viſtnum's *fourth Transformation into half a Man, and half a Lion.*

The third Transformation.

A Certain *Adiren*, named *Renniacxem*, was of ſuch vaſt length, that taking up the Earth he roll'd it together like an Anchor-Cable, and carried it upon his Shoulders to the infernal places call'd *Padalas*, whilſt *Viſtnum* was aſleep in his Bed. He no ſooner heard of the Preſumption of this *Adiren*, but he aſſum'd the ſhape of a Hog, and digging with his Snout through the Earth, till he came to the *Padalas*, kill'd the Robber, and taking the Earth upon his Tuſks, fix'd it in its former place. Hence it is, that in the *Pagode* call'd *Adi Warraha*, in the City of *Trimottam*, not far from *Sinzi*, there is to be ſeen the *Head* of a *Hog*, which the *Brahmans* ſay was the Product of the Earth, and is reverenc'd as the true Idol of *Viſtnum* in memory of this Tranſformation.

The *Benjans* and *Gentives* of *Indoſtan* and *Suratte* give us the following account of it. During the firſt term of Time, ſay they, the World was ſo over-burden'd with Sin, that the Serpent of 1000 Heads unable to bear the weight thereof any longer, withdrew her ſelf from underneath it, whereby the World, together with Men and Beaſts, were caſt into and periſh'd in the depth of the Sea. *Bramma* addreſſing himſelf to the Great God, deſir'd him to retrieve the World out of the Abyſs of the Sea, which he willingly granted. Whereupon *Viſtnum* aſſum'd the ſhape of a Boar's Head, with Tuſks as big as an Elephant's Trunk, white all over his Body, with four Arms and Hands, having in one Hand a great Sword call'd *Godda*, and in the other a Book, as likewiſe a Horn and round *Tſicker*. Thus transform'd, he threw himſelf into the Sea, being at firſt no bigger than a Man's Finger, but increas'd before he reach'd the bottom to ſuch a degree, that in

caſe the Earth had been plac'd on the ſurface of the Water, and he ſtood upon it, his Head would have touch'd the Stars. Coming to the bottom of the Sea, he kill'd the dreadful Giant *Hirnaks*, whoſe Blood ting'd the whole Sea with red. *Viſtnum* having trampled him under his Feet, lifted with his Tusks the Earth out of the Sea, and placing the Tortoiſe upon the Water, and the Serpent with a thouſand Heads upon the Tortoiſe, he retir'd to his Reſidence, and *Bramma* with one word created a new Generation of Men. This Transformation comprehends 2700 years, in the firſt Period of time. *Baldæus.*

This Story ſeems to intimate, *that* theſe Pagans have heard ſomething of the Deluge, conſidering eſpecially that

The Idol of Viſtnum in his third Transformation, as deſcrib'd by ſ Benjans.

Baldæus. the *Benjans* do live nearer to the Borders of *Persia* and *Armenia* than the rest of the *Indians*; there being also mention made of the Giants, *Gen.* 6. 4. and it is very probable, that the antient Pagans were not quite ignorant of the History of the Deluge, which they afterwards ushered into the World, under divers peculiar Deluges, as for instance the *Diluvium Ogygicum*, which happen'd in *Attica*, and *Deucalion's Deluge* in *Thessaly*; and the *Prometheus* of the antient Pagans, is by most Criticks taken for the same with *Noah*.

But we come to the fourth Transformation; yet before we enter upon the Particulars thereof, we must add something more relating to the third Transformation. The Earth being restored to its former Station, *Vistnum* upon an exact view found it something inclining to the *South*, which *Vistnum* not being able to remedy, he addressed himself to a certain Saint of very low Stature, nam'd *Rixi Agassia* (*Rogerius* * calls him *Agastea*) who having laid his holy Book upon that part inclining to the South, put it into a just Equilibrium.

* l.2.c.19.

Vistnum walking with this *Agassia* near the Seaside, the Sea asked *Vistnum*, *Who it was that walked with him?* Vistnum replied, *He is a Saint who is going to restore the Earth to its true Ballance.* Whereupon the Sea, scorning his low Stature (he being not above the height of a joint of a Finger) wetted him with its Waves; which Affront being highly resented by *Agassia*, he took some of the Seawater in his hand, and beginning to drink, did not desist till he had drunk up the whole Sea: *Dewetas* and *Rixiis* seeing the Sea thus exhausted, interceded with *Agassia* not to rob the World of so singular a Benefit, and prevailed upon him so far, that he pissed out again all the Water he had drunken before; and this is the reason their Philosophers alledg for the Saltness of the Sea.

Agassia after having restored the ballance of the Earth, took his leave of *Vistnum*, who to prevent the like for the future, order'd the *Great Serpent* to wind herself about the seven Worlds and seven Seas; and for more Securities sake, appointed 8 Guardians to watch over it, called in the *Malabar* by the following Names: 1. *Indra* the King of the Celestial Spirits. 2. *Vanni* the God of Fire. 3. *Padurpati* King of the evil Spirits. 4. *Nirurdi* King of the infernal Spirits. 5. *Varunna* the God of the Sea. 6. *Maril* the God of the Winds. 7. *Cubera* the God of Riches, called otherwise *Bayronnem*. 8. *Ixananam* or *Ixora* himself, hence it is that you see frequently eight Stones placed at the Entrance of, and about their *Pagodes*.

The fourth Transformation. The fourth Transformation into half a Lion and half a Man was occasioned thus: During the first Period of Time, a certain Gyant *Hirrenkessep* (as the *Benjans* call him, but the *Malabars Reniacxen*) having been forced to abscond for 12 years on the account of *Bramma*, afterwards made the following Request to him: *Most Potent* Bramma, *grant me the Favour to make me a great Monarch upon Earth, and bestow this further Blessing upon me, that I may not be killed either by Day or by Night, either within or without my House, either by Heaven, Earth, Sun or Moon, by Thunder, Lightning, Stars or Comets, neither by Clouds, Winds, Hail, Snow or Rains, or Birds, Beasts, Men, Devils, Fishes or Water; not by Serpents, Adders, Poison, Sword, Arrows or any other Weapons.* Bramma having granted the Gyant's request, he soon made himself Master of the whole Earth, and overcome with Pride at his Success, issued out a Mandate, that no body should be adored but himself, under the forfeiture of the Lives of such as should contravene it. Things continuing in this State for some Years, the *Brahmans* began to murmur, that they should be *obliged to adore any terrestrial Power, tho never so great, to the prejudice of the celestial Spirits*; they resolved therefore to make their Supplications to *Vistnum*, imploring him *to deliver them from the Oppressions of this Tyrant*, who gave them for answer, *That the Giant should have shortly a Son born, who should be their Deliverer, and till then they must have Patience.*

Within 10 Months after *Naeckseu*, the Giants Wife, brought forth a Son named *Prellade*, who when he was five years old was put to a Schoolmaster; being one time sent for by his Father, his Master instructed him how to pronounce his Father's Name in short writing, which was *Irenia*, but instead thereof the Boy said *Ary*, being the abbreviated Name of *Vistnum*. The Master astonished put his Hand upon his Mouth, bidding him to forbear, for fear of being the occasion of his own Death; but the more he forbid him, the more the Boy persisted in saying *Ary*, *Ary*, instead of *Irenia*.

The Schoolmaster not knowing what to do, brought him to his Father, telling him, *That his Son would not pronounce his Name, which he had taken so much pains to teach him.* The Father asking him the reason,

reaſon, the Boy anſwered, *Your Name is not the true Name, but the other is the Truth it ſelf.* His Father asking further, *What is Truth?* The Son anſwered, *Viſtnum who fills the 14 Worlds is the Truth. What Benefit,* ſaid the Father, *do you receive from* Viſtnum? *And what Benefit,* replied the Son, *ſhall I receive by yours?* The Giant told him, *Whoever repeats my Name, ſhall be bleſſed with Riches, Honour, Dignities and Life. How,* ſays the Son, *can you give Life and Riches? Yes I can,* replied the Giant, *and will convince you immediately, it being in my Power to take away your Life. That will ſcarce happen,* anſwered the Son, *according to your Providence and Diſcretion. What is Providence and Diſcretion?* asked the Giant. Baldæus.

The Idol of Viſtnuun *tranſformed into half a Man & half a Lyon.*

Raldæus. *That is the Eternal Divine Name of* Viſtnum, replied the Son, *the Creator of the* [illegible] *Worlds.* The Father asking him, *How is this Name to be found?* The Son anſwered, *In every thing both in Heaven and Earth, every thing being filled with* Viſtnum. *What,* replied the Father, *and is* Viſtnum *alſo in this Pillar? Yes,* replied the Son, *and likewiſe in you and me.* The Giant not longer able to contain himſelf, told him, *Boy, becauſe thou inſiſteſt thus upon the Name of* Viſtnum, *I will beat your Brains out with this Stick; but if thou wilt pronounce my Name, thou ſhalt neither die, neither be beaten. That won't be,* ſays the Boy, *for your Names ſake, becauſe God has ordered it otherwiſe. But I will ſpoil that Ordinance,* replied the Giant, and with that ſtruck with his golden Staff at the Boy, who, hiding himſelf behind the Pillar, implor'd the Name of *Viſtnum.* The Giant turning again with more Fury than ever againſt the Son, ſtruck with ſuch Violence that the Pillar burſt and produced a Monſter, *half a Man, half a Lion,* an Hermaphrodite, with Breaſts both above and below, breathing Fire and Flames out of its Noſtrils.

The *Benjans* ſay, that the Giant did erect a red hot Pillar to tie his Son to, telling him at the ſame time, *Let us ſee who can deliver you out of my Hands.* The Son then invoking the aſſiſtance of *Viſnum*, the Pillar burſt, and forth came the Monſter. All the Standers by were amazed at this Spectacle, and the Giant himſelf trembled for fear. *Viſtnum* reſolving to revenge his own Quarrel, and at the ſame time not to break the Promiſe made by *Bramma* to the Giant, laid hold of the Giant, and hurrying him under Ground directly under the Threſhold of his own Houſe, and keeping him there till Sunſet, tore his Body in pieces, thereby fulfilling *Bramma*'s Promiſe, that he ſhould not be killed *within nor without his Houſe, neither in Heaven nor upon Earth, neither by Beaſts, Birds, Sword, Wind, Rain, Hail.* The Giant's Son ſucceeding his Father in the Empire, ruled with great applauſe for many ſucceeding years.

Thus ended the fourth Transformation of the firſt Period of time, called *Korteſinge* by the *Benjans*, comprehending in all 1728000 years; for tho all theſe Transformations were tranſacted within the time of 7700 years and three days, the reſt, *viz.* 1720000 years, 360 days, muſt be ſuppoſed to have been the Intervals of theſe Tranſactions.

CHAP. III.

The fifth Transformation of Viſtnum *into a* Brahman. *Great Plenty under* Mavaly. *The Requeſt of the transformed* Viſtnum. Praſſaram's *Altar and Birth. He kills* Reneca *his Mother.* Raja Inder's *Cow of Plenty.* Praſſaram's *great Actions.*

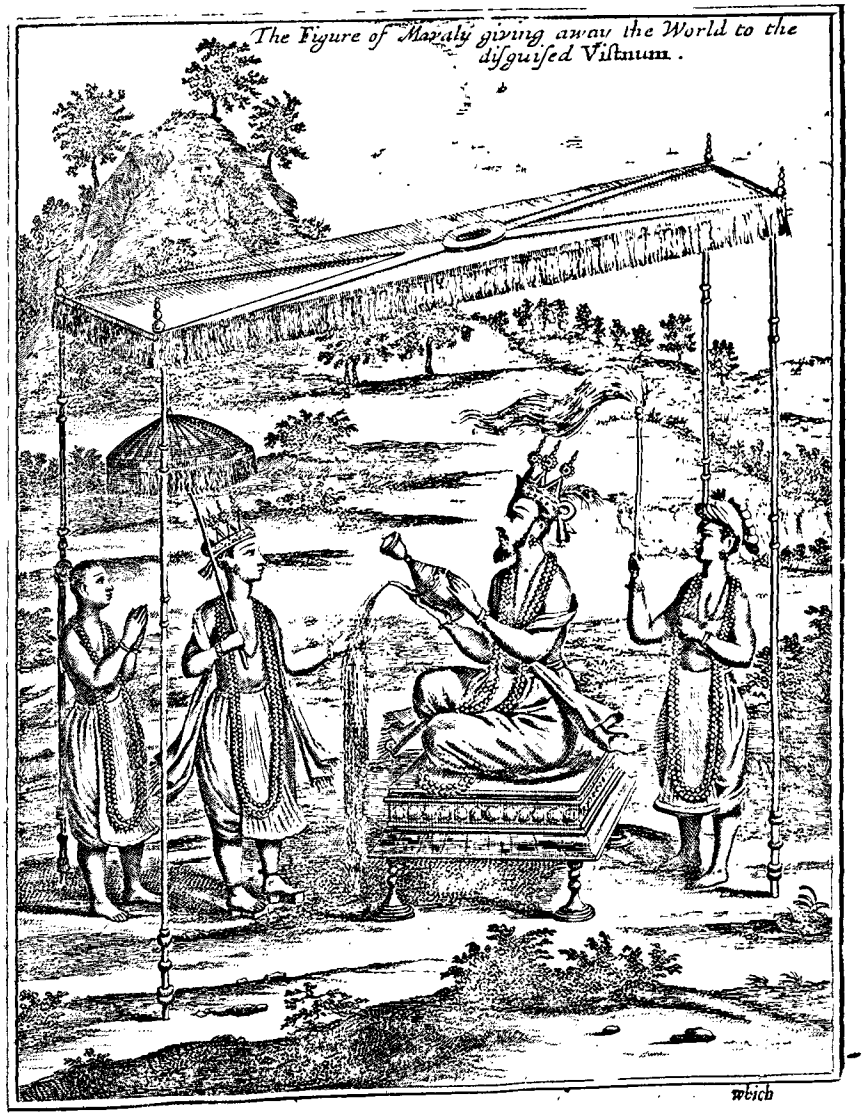
WHilſt *Mavaly* (called *Belragie* by the *Benjans* and *Gentives*) ruled the World, the Inhabitants thereof were ſo plentifully provided with every thing by his Bounty, that Poverty was a thing unknown among human Race. *Viſtnum* perceiving that as the caſe then ſtood, there were no different degrees, nor any dependance in the World either on God or Man, reſolved to diveſt *Mavaly* (by Fraud) of the Government of the World.

With this Intention *Viſtnum* aſſumed the Shape of a *Brahman*, and appearing in a Mendicant Poſture before *Mavaly*, he asked him, *who he was*, and upon what Errand he came? The pretended *Brahman* replyed, *Having heard of your Charity I am come to crave ſome Alms.* Mavaly anſwer'd, *I who have granted the Requeſts of many Kings and Princes, will not deny thee, let it be what it will, whether Kingdoms, Money, Honours, or whatever elſe you can ask.* The *Brahman* replied, my aim is not at ſuch mighty things, but after all, for fear of Denial, I beg of you to promiſe me, without exception to grant my Requeſt. *Mavaly* anſwering that he would, the *Brahman* begged him to confirm it with an Oath.

Mavaly being juſt upon the point of confirming it by Oath, the Planet *Venus* (who ſtood juſt by) told him, *And is it cuſtomary to ſwear to the giving of Alms?* which *Mavaly* being not in the leaſt moved at, ſwore to the *Brahman*, who told him, *I am not covetous of Kingdoms or Provinces, my Deſire is confined to three Foot of Ground, where I may erect a Hut, where to lay up my Books, Umbrella and Drinking-Cup;*

Cup; *I beg you therefore to pour ſome of your Water upon the Ground.* For it is a cuſtom among theſe Pagans, that whenever they diſpoſe of or ſell any thing, they confirm their Promiſe or Bargain, by pouring ſome Water upon the Ground, part whereof the Buyer catches with his Hands and drinks, in confirmation of the Bargain; juſt as *Jacob* deſired *Joſeph* to lay his Hand under his Hips, when he was going to make him his Promiſe upon Oath, *Gen.* 47. 29. & 24. 2. where the Hips (according to ſome Interpreters) are taken *pro partibus generationis, in quibus circumciſionis ſignum dabatur.* *Baldæus.*

Mavaly told him, *Ask a Kingdom and I will grant it.* The *Brahman* replied, *Were I a King, I muſt puniſh Criminals,*



The Figure of Mavaly giving away the World to the diſguiſed Viſtnum.

which

Baldæus. *which I could not do without treſpaſſing the Rules of the Order of the* Brahmans; *wherefore I deſire no more than three Foot of Ground.* Mavaly replied, *that will not be enough to build you a Houſe upon. I want no Houſe,* ſaid the *Brahman, having neither Wife nor Children, I deſire only three Foot of Ground, which you can't refuſe without being perjured. Mavaly* telling the *Brahman* that he never broke his Promiſe, and ordering *Venus* to bring him ſome Water, ſhe deſired him not to pour the Water upon the *Brahman,* whom ſhe looked upon as an Impoſtor. *Mavaly* replied, *Of what conſequence can three Foot of Ground be? Take heed,* anſwered *Venus, for this is* Viſtnum *himſelf, who is come in diſguiſe to deceive you.* Mavaly return'd, *I have not ſinned againſt* Viſtnum, *and therefore have no reaſon to fear him.* Notwithſtanding which *Venus* continued to perſuade him by many Arguments, not to truſt him: But *Mavaly* perſiſting in his Reſolution, told her, *Let come on it what will, if it ſhould coſt me my Life, I will not break my Oath.* Then taking the Veſſel with the Water, he bid the *Brahman* to hold up his Hands, which *Venus* perceiving, ſhe held *Mavaly*'s Arms, deſiring him not to pour out the Water; but *Mavaly* puſhing back her Hand, bid the *Brahman* a ſecond time to hold up his Hands. *Venus* then changing her Shape, ſtopp'd the Pipe of the Veſſel, which *Mavaly* endeavouring to looſen with a Twig, he hurt *Venus*'s one Eye, whence ſhe got the Name of *Chueren.* Then Water coming out of the Spout of the Veſſel, the *Brahman* did drink. This done, *Mavaly* order'd him to meaſure the three Foot of ground where he pleaſed. *Viſtnum* having by this time reaſſumed his own Shape, he covered the whole Earth with one of his Feet, and with the other the Paradiſe called *Sorgalogam.* Whilſt *Viſtnum* was extending his Foot, *Bramma* poured Water upon it, which produced the River *Ganges,* ſo highly celebrated among the *Indians* and other Pagans. *Viſtnum* having thus meaſured two Foot, *Mavaly* told him, he might alſo take the third, which he did by meaſuring the inferiour Region, called *Padalas,* and thus became Maſter of the whole World.

Viſtnum *Maſter of the World.*

The *Gentives* add, that this *Brahman* (whom they call *Vanam*, i. e. *a black Dwarf,* and *Rogerius* calls him *Barmaſari,* i. e. a young *Brahman,* by the Name of *Wamara* *) ſet his Left Foot upon *Mavaly*'s Breaſt or Head, and thus kick'd him thro the Ground into the infernal Region, whereof he made him King. But *Mavaly*'s Wife upbraiding *Viſtnum* with Ingratitude, he carried her to her Husband, and as a Reward of his Piety beſtowed upon him the Government of the place of Darkneſs, *Viſtnum* himſelf remaining with him nine days to guard the Entrance thereof. *Rogerius* calls this *Mavaly* a Devil, named *Belli,* and ſays, that whilſt the Waters of the *Ganges* were flowing from above over *Ixora*'s Head, and riſen out of the Hip of a Saint, 60000 Men were brought to Life. This Fable had queſtionleſs its Origin from the want of Knowledg of the true ſource of the River *Ganges,* for which reaſon they generally ſtile it the *Heavenly River.*

* l. 2. c. 15.

Mavaly being not ſatisfy'd with his preſent Station, made his Complaint to *Viſtnum,* who told him, that in regard he had been a charitable Perſon, a Man of Truth and without Sin, he would conſtitute him King of the Paradiſe. *Mavaly* making a deep Reverence (called by them *Sambaja*) returned for anſwer, It is not my ambition to reign, being only affected with the Hardſhips of my former Subjects, who have no body now to provide them with Neceſſaries, as I uſed to do. *Viſtnum* replied, The poor ſhall ſerve the rich, and be maintained by them; ſo that he that will work, ſhall want for nothing. I will alſo conſtitute you the Doorkeeper of the Paradiſe, ſo that no body ſhall enter there witnout thy Knowledg. But replied *Mavaly,* how ſhall I then be able to judg at ſuch a diſtance, how you deal with Mankind upon Earth? I will, anſwered *Viſtnum,* aſſign you a certain Place in Heaven, from whence you may overlook the Earth; and ſo made him Doorkeeper of the Paradiſe.

Accordingly *Viſtnum* diſtinguiſhed Mankind into three ſorts, Rich, Poor and Middle-ſized, which were to have a Reciprocal Dependance on one another, That ſuch as had lived pioufly and done Acts of Charity ſhould be received after their Death, and live in Plenty and Splendor; but ſuch as did otherwiſe, ſhould after their Deceaſe be transform'd again into Slaves and Drudges, to do Penance for their former Sins, till by their good Works they ſhould merit Paradiſe, which they were not to enter however without *Mavaly*'s Conſent. He alſo conſtituted a Feaſt (called *Ona* by the *Malabars*) to be celebrated yearly in *Auguſt,* when they ſpend ſeveral days together in feaſting and other ſorts of

3 *ſorts of People.*

Di-

Diverſions, and appear in all their beſt Apparel.

The ſixth Transformation.

The ſixth Transformation happened thus: After the appearing of *Hanumans* mentioned in the *5th Chap. Part* 1. one *Braman* and *Bramani* being joined in Wedlock, did for a conſiderable time lead a pious and contented Life near the River *Bewa*; but the Woman being barren (a thing much deſpiſed among the *Benjans*) they reſolved to retire into ſome Deſart, there to implore God's Aſſiſtance. Having thus for ſome time led a Vagabond Life, they came to a certain *Pagode* built in a Foreſt, near which ſtood a very fine Tree, under the Shade whereof they repoſed themſelves for ſome time, and ſent forth their Prayers upon their bended Knees. After ſome time finding their Prayers ineffectual, the Woman told her Husband, that they ought to leave this ſhady Place, and in lieu thereof to expoſe themſelves to the Injuries of the Sun, Rains and Storms, to try whether perhaps by this Humiliation and Penance, God might be prevailed upon to bleſs them with Children. They perſevered in this Auſterity and continual Prayers for ſome longer time, but in vain; the Woman growing beyond all Patience, told her Huſband, that being quite weary of Life, ſhe deſired him to faſt with her, till thereby they could put a Period to their miſerable Life. Accordingly having ſpent nine days without eating or drinking, *Viſtnum* appear'd to them in the Shape of a Child, asking them, what was the occaſion of their Mortification and fervent Prayers. The Woman anſwered, All our Prayers are directed to *Viſtnum*, to bleſs me with ſuch a handſome Child as thee. *Viſtnum* replied, And do you inſtead of Gold and Silver deſire Children, who commonly prove the Toils of Life? *Bramani* anſwered, all the Riches and Pleaſures of this World are not ſo valuable to me, as a Son of my own, ſo well ſhap'd as thy ſelf. *Viſtnum* replied, Your Prayers are heard, and as you have three ſeveral times mortify'd your Bodies, ſo three Sons ſhall be born thee ſucceſſively; and ſo he vaniſhed.

Being both exhauſted with Faſting, they died ſoon after; but the Soul of *Bramani* was infuſed into the Body of the new-born *Reneca*, and that of *Braman* into the Body of the new-born *Braman*, ſirnamed *Siamdichemi*, who being come to their riper Years, were join'd together in Marriage; *Reneca*'s Siſter being at the ſame time married to the Great *Raja Seſtraarſum*, who had 1000 Arms. *Baldæus.*

Siamdichemi retir'd with *Reneca* to a Solitude, near the River *Ganges*, where they built a Hut of Straw, with an Intention to live upon the Fruits of the Earth, and paſs their time in praying to *Viſtnum*.

Praſſaram the Son of Reneca.

It was not long before *Reneca* (purſuant to the Promiſe made by *Viſtnum*) brought forth a beautiful Son, unto whom ſhe gave the Name of *Praſſaram*, who being carefully educated under the Tuition of his Father, did in his 12*th* year interpret the moſt abſtruſe Characters that could be laid before him. His Mother having received a certain Cloth from *Viſtnum*, which keeping Water as well as any Earthen Veſſel, *Reneca* going to fetch Water one time out of the River *Ganges*, ſhe happen'd to ſee the great *Raja Seſtraarſum* with his Spouſe (her Siſter) a hunting near the River-ſide. *Reneca* asked one of his Attendants, who it was, and being anſwered, that it was *Raja Seſtraarſum* with his Queen, ſhe advanced towards them; but finding that her Siſter took no notice of her, ſhe ſat down in a very melancholy Poſture upon the Bank of the *Ganges*, complaining of the vaſt difference there was betwixt her Siſter and her.

Alas, ſaid ſhe, *ſhe is a Queen, and I a poor* Brahman's *Wife; ſhe is poſſeſſed of Riches, Honour and Plenty, and I know nothing but Want and Miſery.*

She was then a going to fill her Cloth with Water, but found it, to her great Aſtoniſhment, leaky; and being afraid to return home, ſtaid abroad till after Sunſet. *Siamdichemi* ſurpriz'd at her long ſtay, look'd out at the Doors, and finding her ſitting in a melancholy Poſture, ask'd her whether ſhe had brought no Water; but ſhe anſwering, ſhe had not, and giving him the reaſon for it, he told her, that he was certain ſhe had uttered ſome Expreſſions contrary to his Zeal and Piety; and being exaſperated to the higheſt degree, commanded his Son *Praſſaram* to cut off his Mother's Head with an Ax. *Praſſaram* would have excuſed himſelf, but finding his Father reſolute, he was forced to obey, and cut off his Mother's Neck. The Father being highly taken with the Obedience of his Son, told him, that he ſhould ask him what he pleaſed, and it ſhould be granted him. *Then*, ſaid the Son, *reſuſcitate my Mother from the Dead*; the Father then taking ſome of the ſanctified Wa-

Reneca killed.

Baldæus.

Water of the *Ganges*, beſprinkled the Body with it, and muttering out certain Prayers, reſtored it to Life again.

Veneta could not forbear to make her Complaints concerning the harſh uſage of her Husband, occaſion'd only by ſome Weakneſſes and Reflections upon her Siſter's good Fortune, repreſenting to him her Piety, Fidelity and Obedience ſhe had ſhown upon all Occaſions. [illegible] Reaſons were ſo prevailing with the Husband, that he received her into his Arms, and baniſhed all Revenge from his Thoughts.

Praſſaram (tho not above 12 years of Age) being by this time advanced ſo far in the Knowledg of the Law, that he was paſt his Father's teaching, was ad- Praſſaram goes to Raja Inder.

viſed

viſed by him to apply himſelf to *Raja Inder*, King of the *bleſſed Souls*, for his further Accompliſhment, which the Son did accordingly; ſo ſoon as the Son had left him, he reſolved to pay his Devotions to *Viſtnum* for 12 years ſucceſſively, ſitting croſs-leg'd without Intermiſſion upon the Ground (a thing much practiſed among theſe Pagans) Thus 1659. I ſaw a certain *Jogy*, or Mendicant, at *Columbo*, whoſe Arms were grown together over his Head, by ſitting in that Poſture.

Soon after it happen'd, that the before-mention'd King *Raja Seſtraarſum*, coming to give a Viſit to his Brother-in-law with a great Retinue, he was ſo faſt aſleep, that all the noiſe of the Hounds, Horns and Drums could not awaken him: his Wife *Reneca* therefore having rouzed her Husband, by ſprinkling ſome warm Water upon his Head, he aroſe; when *Raja* ſaluting the *Brahman*, told him, that the Fame of his Piety had induced him and his Retinue to come to ſup, and to take a Nights Lodging with him.

Raja Seſtraarſum viſits the Brahman.

The *Brahman Siamdichemi*, being much concern'd how to provide for ſo many 1000 Perſons, at laſt conſider'd of the *white Cow*, called *Camdoga*, belonging to *Raja Inder*, which furniſhes thoſe that have her in their poſſeſſion with every thing they wiſh for. Having therefore deſired *Inder* to ſend him the ſaid Cow, he granted his Requeſt; and the Cow being ſent down, the *Brahman* deſired *Raja* and his Attendants to ſit down at Supper, which was ſerved with ſuch Variety and Plenty, that *Raja*, who was come upon no other account than to ridicule his Brother in Law's-Poverty, ſtood amazed thereat; and further to try his Ability, ask'd him, to preſent him with ſome Jewels; which the *Brahman* having preſented him with (much beyond what could be expected) *Raja* ask'd him for ſome Clothes and Money for his People, which being likewiſe brought him by his Brother-in-law, he reſolved alſo to ſtay the next day; and being ſerved at Table with the ſame Plenty as before, he ſtayed alſo the third day; when meeting with the ſame Entertainment, he was amazed to find out whence all this Plenty of Proviſions, Clothes and Riches could come in a place, where he expected ſo little, eſpecially ſince he obſerved that all was brought out of the *Brahman*'s Hut, which was not big enough to hold half the quantity. This made him order ſome of his Spies to take particular notice, whether there was not a Vault underground, from whence theſe things were brought. The Spies watching all Opportunities to ſatisfy their Maſter's Curioſity, found at laſt that a ſlender white Cow did bring forth all theſe things (which ſhe threw out of her Stomach) whereof immediate notice was given to *Raja*.

The Cow of Plenty.

Raja plentifully entertained.

Baldæus.

The next Morning as he was taking his Leave from the *Brahman*, being aſk'd by him, whether he was deſirous of any thing elſe, he told him, that he wanted nothing more, but only the white Cow he had ſeen in his Hut; the *Brahman* replied, that being not his own, ſhe was not in his diſpoſal. *And*, ſaid *Raja*, *will you deny me ſo ſmall a Requeſt, after you have heaped ſo many Obligations upon me before? What I did before*, ſaid the *Brahman*, *was in my own Power, but this is not. How*, replied *Raja*, *don't you know that it is in my Power to take her againſt your Will?* and then calling to ſome of his Followers, he commanded them to fetch the white Cow out of the Hut. The *Brahman* ſeeing this beloved white Cow thus ſnatched from him, told her at parting, *Dear* Camdoga, *muſt I thus leave you, how can I anſwer this to* Raja Inder *your Maſter? revenge thyſelf at once both of thine and mine Enemies.* The Cow *Camdoga* no ſooner heard theſe Words, but aſſuming a ſhape three times bigger than her own, ſhe laid about her with her Horns to that degree, that ſhe kill'd and trod under Foot ſeveral thouſand of *Raja*'s People; which done, ſhe flew like Lightning up into the Air to her own Maſter. *Raja* exaſperated at the Slaughter of his Men, and burning with Revenge, returned to the Hut of the *Brahman*, where they kill'd and left him wallowing in his Blood. The unfortunate *Reneca*, unwilling to outlive her Husband, ſet fire to the Hut, and burnt herſelf with his dead Carcaſe.

Raja's People defeated by the white Cow.

Siamdichemi murdered.

Reneca burns her ſelf with his Corps, whence the Cuſtom of burning the Dead.

Camdoga in the mean while meeting with *Praſſaram* not far from her Maſter's Houſe, told him what had happen'd, who declar'd he would revenge the ſame 21 times upon all the *Ketteriis* (a wicked Generation) and thus making the beſt of his way with his *Perzy*, Bow and Arrow, he penetrated into the middle of *Raja*'s Troops, and kill'd him with all his Guards; thence travelling through the World, he kill'd all the *Ketteriis* he met with, but could not do it ſo effectually, but that ſome eſcap'd his Fury, who multiplying by degrees, he was forc'd to renew his Revenge againſt them, which he did 21 times, till they were quite rooted out from the face of the Earth.

Praſſaram revenges their Death.

Baldæus. By this time *Viſtnum* remembring his Promiſe made to *Praſſaram*'s Parents, *viz.* that they were to be bleſt with three Sons, he commanded *Bramba* (the God with four Heads) to ſend down from Heaven the Souls of *Siamdichemi* and *Reneca*, and to convey them into the Bodies of *Ragia d'Aſſerat*, and his Wife *Couzila* (ſlain among the *Ketteriis*) unto whom he had made a Promiſe of exalting their Poſterity.

Bramba finding by the Celeſtial Records, that their time was expir'd (for theſe Pagans believe that nothing is done without Divine Providence, and that the Fate of Men is written in *Bramba*'s Hand) infuſed the Soul of *Reneca* into the Body of *Couzila*, and the Spirit of *Siamdichemi* into that of *Ragia*, which brought forth a Son named *Ram:* This *Ram* having marry'd *Sytha*, and making his publick Entry into the City (according to the Cuſtom of the *Benjans*) was met by *Praſſaram*, who being inform'd that he was deſcended of the Race of the *Ketteriis*, did let fly at him, which *Ram* perceiving did the ſame from his Elephant on which he was mounted; but their Arrows hitting againſt one another in the Air did no miſchief, except that all the ſtrength of *Praſſaram*'s Arrow being lodg'd in that of *Ram*, he was thereby bereav'd of all his Advantage, being no more than a common *Brahman* for ever after, whereas *Ram* encreaſed every day in Power.

The Story of Ram.

Praſſaram endeavours to kill Ram.

The *Malabars* ſay that this Transformation was made by *Viſtnum* in the ſhape of *Siri Parexi Rama*. For the *Rixi* living in the Deſarts, being no longer able to endure the Oppreſſions from the Neighbouring Kings, offer'd their Sacrifices to *Viſtnum*, deſiring his Aſſiſtance againſt them. A certain famous *Rixi* named *Para Jara*, ſacrificing one day to *Viſtnum*, he appear'd in the ſhape of a Child, and aſſiſted at the Ceremony of the Sacrifice; which done, *Parexi Rama* took up an Ax and kill'd 44 Kings, who uſed to reſiſt the *Rixi*, and put them into the Poſſeſſion of their Territories. *Siri Parexi Rama* being afterwards deſirous to erect certain Temples, and not finding ſufficient room for that purpoſe (becauſe the Sea then touch'd the Mount *Gatte*) he offer'd his Sacrifice, when a Sieve appearing to him (ſuch as they uſe to cleanſe the Rice with) he found that as often as he did ſhake it, the Sea retreated backwards from the Shore; but whilſt he was doing it a third time, *Varrinem* the God of the Sea, having transform'd himſelf into Piſmires (call'd by them *Carreas*) gnaw'd the Sieve in pieces. However *Siri Rama* built 108 Temples, and erected as many Stones near them, from *Mangalor* to the Cape *Comoryn*, much reverenc'd to this day by the *Indians*.

The Malabars account of this Transformation.

In the mean while the Fiſhermen of that Coaſt making their Complaints to *Parexi Rama*, that by this means they had been bereav'd of their Subſiſtence, he conſtituted them his Guards of the Temples he had built, with a ſufficient allowance for their Maintenance; ſo that theſe Fiſhermen being thus become *Brahmans*, they uſed always to wear a Thred of a Fiſhing-Net about their Necks whilſt they were performing their Sacrifices, and introduc'd that Cuſtom among the Pagans, for a new-married Couple to go a fiſhing with a Linen Cloth inſtead of a Net.

Parexi Rama being one time employ'd in his Solitude in ſacrificing to the Gods, *Siri Rama* (or *Viſtnum*) appear'd in the ſhape of a Man; which *Parexi Rama* taking notice of, his Jealouſy was raiſed to ſuch a height, that he would needs enter into a ſingle Combat with him; but being prevented by the *Rixii*, they diſcover'd themſelves to one another, and entring into a ſtrict Friendſhip, *Parexi Rama* preſented his Bow to *Siri Rama*, who return'd to the Milk-Sea.

The Origin of the Brahmans.

CHAP. IV.

The ſeventh Transformation of Viſtnum *into* Rama. *His Birth. He gains his Bride* Sytha *by ſhooting. Beauty of* Lekeman. *His meeting with* Souppenekhia. Rawan *takes away* Sytha; *performs Wonders.* Ram *and* Lekeman *go in queſt of* Sytha. Hanuman's *great Actions in* Ceylon.

IXora being reverenc'd by all the World, but eſpecially by one *Rawan*, (call'd *Rawana* by *Rogerius*, who makes him a Son of the *Brahman Kaſſiopa*) who for 300 years offer'd him 100 Flowers every day; *Ixora* having one time a mind to try

The Story of Rama *or* Siri Rama *is ſo famous in the* Indies, *that Kings and Princes paint it upon their Arms and Palaces.*

try his Sincerity, took away one of the Flowers, and afterwards charged him with want of Duty; *Rawan* ignorant of the Deceit, counted his Flowers, and finding no more than 99, would have torn out one of his Eyes to compleat the number of 100. But *Ixora* ſtopping his Hand, told him, that having now had a ſufficient proof of his Integrity, he ſhould ask what he pleaſed and he would be ſure to grant it: *Rawan* then asked a ſhare with *Ixora* in the Government of the World; which being granted him by *Ixora*, *Rawan* nevertheleſs continued his daily Devotions, and being ask'd the reaſon by *Ixora*, he told him, that he would not deſiſt from his Prayers, till he had given him 10 Heads and 20 Arms, which being likewiſe granted by *Ixora*, he fix'd his Reſidence in the Country of *Lanka*, in the famous Iſle of *Ceylon*, call'd by others *Sanka*, who alſo ſay that he built ſeven Palaces there of Gold, Silver, Steel, Iron, and other Metals.

Having thus rul'd for ſome thouſand years over all the Neighbouring Kings, he became ſo proud, as to force his Subjects to worſhip him inſtead of *Ixora*; which they were forced to do for 25 years, till being quite tir'd out of all Patience by his Tyrannys, they emplor'd *Ixora* to deliver them from *Rawan*, that ſo they might recover their former freedom of adoring him.

About that time there liv'd a certain *Ragie* named *Daſſerat*, or *Deſſeratha*, or *Decxareda*. This King having three Wives, one of them named *Couſila*, after ſome time brought forth a Son named *Ram* by the *Brahman Wiſſiroc*, who encreaſed daily in Wiſdom and Underſtanding, beyond what could be expected from his tender years. His ſecond Wife *Keggy* (call'd *Kaicka* by the *Malabars*) brought forth another Son named *Barrat*; and *Somettery*, or *Somittra*, the third Wife, *Lekeman* and *Setteroukan*. The *Malabars* ſay, that theſe four Sons were born from theſe three Women by the means of four Pills.

Viſtnum being thus brought into the World in the ſhape of a *Ram*, was educated by the *Brahmans* in all manner of Wiſdom and Knowledg. There happen'd to live at that time a certain *Ragie* named *Sannek*, in the Country of *Siannak*, who having fix'd a prodigious ſtrong Bow in a certain Encloſure made for that purpoſe, iſſued his Proclamation, to encourage all ſuch as would venture to draw and break the ſaid Bow, offering his Daughter *Sytha* with a great Portion as a Reward to him who ſhould accompliſh it. This being likewiſe come to the Ears of the *Brahmans*, *Ram* ſollicited his Tutor to let him try his Strength, which the Maſter not without ſome Reluctancy having conſented to, he went along with him under the Notion of his Servant, and coming to *Rag. Sannek's* Court heard him offer the ſame Reward to any one that could manage and break the Bow, telling them, that he who would enter the Liſt ſhould take the Veſſel with *Betel*, which was offer'd by his own hand.

How Ram *got his Bride* Sytha.

Baldæus.

The Malabars ſay, that he was going to ſacrifice, and invited the Brahmans to oppoſe the Demons, that ſometimes uſed to diſturb thoſe Ceremonies.

Immediately after he ſaw the beforementioned *Rawan* with 10 Heads take the *Betel*, and boaſting of his Strength, told them that no body but him ſhould pretend to *Sytha*: then drawing the Bow with his utmoſt Strength, he let ſlip the Sinew, which ſtriking his Thumb off he fell into a Sound. Divers other *Ragies* try'd to mange the ſame Bow, but finding their Strength fail them were forced to deſiſt.

The *Betel* being next brought to the *Brahmans*, among whom ſtood *Ram*, he at laſt obtain'd leave from his Maſter to accept of the *Betel*, which he did accordingly, and entring the Liſt, found a tall Maſt or Poll fix'd in the Center of the Court, on the top whereof was a Fiſh, and at the bottom a Ciſtern with Water, wherein plainly appear'd the ſhade of the Fiſh. *Ram* then drew the Bow with ſuch violence, that he not only ſhot the Fiſh into ſeveral parts, but alſo broke the Bow to pieces.

The Bride rejoic'd at his Succeſs, preſented him with a whole Diſh full of Jewels, as did all the reſt there preſent proportionable to their Abilities: His Parents being alſo ſent for to partake of the Honours done to their Son, they came with their other three Sons, who married the three Daughters of *Raja Sannek*, viz. *Barrat* married *Onnemela*, *Lekeman Sekhy*, and *Setteroukan Lila*.

Ram then deſir'd to return to his Native Country; which being granted, not without great reluctancy, he went back with his Father, Mother and three Brothres, with their Wives, where his Father deliver'd up the Kingdom to him; but having receiv'd a Wound in his Thumb, which prov'd very painful to him, it was healed at laſt by his Wife, in acknowledgment of which Benefit he told her, that he would grant her whatever ſhe would ask: She then deſir'd her Husband to ſend his three Sons, *Ram*, *Lekeman* (call'd otherwiſe *Laatſmana*,

and *Settrugna*) and *Setteroukan* for 12 years into Foreign Countries, and to ſurrender the Kingdom to her Son *Barrat* (call'd *Baratha* and *Pareda* by the *Malabars*); *Barrat* on the other hand was unwilling to accept of this Offer, notwithſtanding which *Ram* departed with his Family and two Brothers to the Village of *Baratpery* 12 *Cos* from *Aſonti*, but leaving a pair of his Slippers behind, *Barrat* who ſtill refus'd to encroach upon his eldeſt Brother's Right, uſed to ſacrifice Flowers, Sandal-wood and Saffron to them in his abſence.

Baldæus.

Ram travels along the Ganges.

Ram in the mean while travelling along the River *Ganges* to *Pouſouwattivan*, where after a month's ſtay, whilſt the Brothers were buſy in erecting the Huts, *Lekeman* uſed to go every day to gather Fruit for their Subſiſtence; he being a very handſom Perſon, and got upon a Tree to gather ſome Fruits, was eſpy'd by a certain Woman named *Souppenekhia* (and *Churpanaga* by the *Malabars*) the Siſter of *Rawan*, and Widow of one *Vivali* (kill'd in *Rawan*'s Service) who being come to waſh her ſelf in the *Ganges*, told him, That *ſhe looking upon him as the handſomeſt Perſon in the World, ſhe muſt be miſerable for ever unleſs he would vouchſafe to love her, which if he refuſed, ſhe would turn her Love into Hatred, when he muſt prepare to engage with her in ſingle Combat.* Lekeman reply'd, That *his Love being fix'd in another place, he could not oblige her, and that to fight with her would not turn to his Honour. O unfortunate Man!* cry'd ſhe, *how little beeſt thou acquainted with my Strength! if I can't enjoy thee, I will have thy Life before I part from this place.* *Lekeman* then conſidering whom he had to do with, told her, that tho he was willing, it was not in his power, ſhe being of the Family of the *Racches*, and he of the Tribe of the *Bram-Ketterijs*; but that if ſhe would go to his Brother *Ram*'s Hut, which was not far thence, and obtain his Conſent, he would not be backward to gratify her deſire. She no ſooner came to *Ram*'s Hut, but he knew her at firſt ſight, and looking upon this as a fit opportunity to revenge the Affront he had receiv'd of *Rawan*, he gave her a Letter directed to his Brother *Lekeman*, wherein he order'd him to cut off thoſe Parts in which her Strength was lodg'd. Thus ſhe left *Ram* well ſatisfied, haſtening to her pretended Bridegroom, whom ſhe found buſy in gathering of Fruit, and delivering the Letter to him, bid him read his Brother's Conſent. But *Lekeman* underſtanding his Brother's Intention, run towards her, and under pretence of taking her up in his Arms, cut off her Noſe and Ears, wherein her Strength was lodg'd.

Rawan's Siſter in love with Lekeman.

He cuts off her Noſe and Ears.

Thus mortified ſhe went away, threatning Revenge to the two Brothers, and making the beſt of her way to her Brother *Rawan*'s Palace; but lighting by chance upon an Uncle's Houſe of hers named *Char*, who commanded 10000 Horſe, ſhe ſtop'd there, and being ask'd how ſhe came ſo defac'd, ſhe told them that ſome Robbers near the *Ganges* had treated her in this manner.

The youngeſt of her Uncles order'd immediately 300 Horſe to be in readineſs to march with him to the *Ganges*, where they attack'd *Ram*'s Habitation with ſuch fury, that *Lekeman* was put under no ſmall Conſternation; but *Ram* defended his Habitation ſo courageouſly, that he kill'd moſt of the Horſe-men with his Bow call'd *Diennoekbaanne*, with their Leader. *Char* had no ſooner receiv'd Intelligence of this Defeat, but putting himſelf at the head of the remaining 9700 Horſe, he march'd to the ſame place, but with no better ſucceſs, being ſlain by *Ram* with all his Forces.

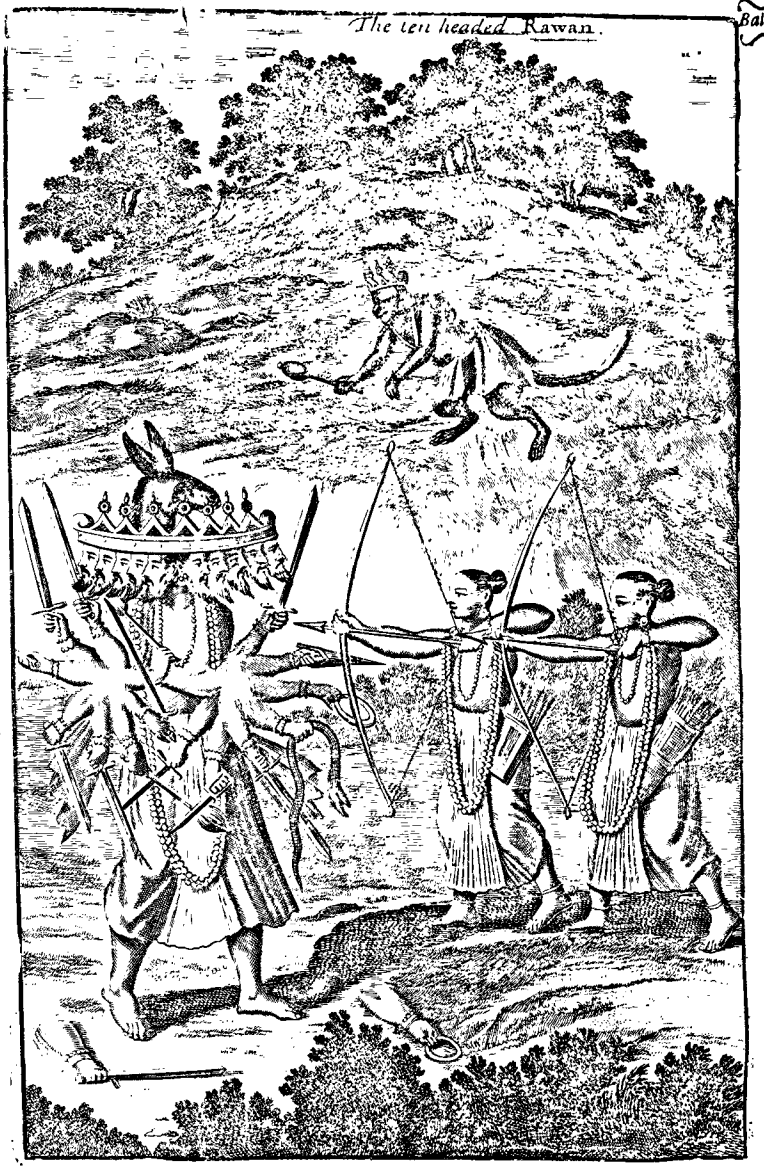
10000 *Horſe-men kill'd by* Ram.

Souppenekhia having been an Eye-witneſs of this Defeat at a diſtance, made all the haſte could to come to her Brother *Rawan*, who having ask'd her the reaſon, ſhe told him, that meeting with a very beauteous Woman near the River *Ganges*, ſhe endeavour'd to perſwade her to come along with her, with an intention to preſent her to him; but being overtaken by her Husband and his Brother, they had ſo mortify'd her in that manner as they now ſaw her. *Rawan* highly exaſperated at this uſage, bid her to ſhew him the place where it happen'd, which ſhe did accordingly, and at the ſame time gave him an account of what had happen'd to her Uncle and the 10000 Horſemen.

Rawan thus fore-warn'd, aſſum'd the ſhape of a Stag with two Heads, and ſo did feed near *Ram*'s Hut, the better to ſurprize him with the firſt opportunity; but being eſpy'd by *Sytha Ram*'s Wife, ſhe was ſo much taken with his bright Skin, that ſhe deſir'd her Husband to ſhoot him, and to make her a Veſt of his Skin. *Ram* told her that the ſame could not be done without danger; but ſhe perſiſting in her Intreaties, he conſented, yet under Condition, that ſhe and his Brother *Lekeman* ſhould not paſs three certain Circles he made with Chalk croſs the Hut. He no ſooner got into the field, but the two-headed Stag ſet up his heels, and being

Rawan *transform'd into a Stag.*

Baldæus.



Is ſhot by Ram.

purſued by *Ram* for 3 *Cos* was ſhot with an Arrow in the Breaſt.

Rawan's Ghoſt at the ſame time entering into the Body of a *Fakier*, he went ſtraitways to *Ram*'s Hut, and with a doleful Voice cry'd out to *Lekeman* to ſuccour his Brother, who was in danger of periſhing by his Enemies Hands. *Sytha* Thunder-ſtruck at this Voice, beg'd *Lekeman* to ſuccour her Husband, who told her, that he believ'd this Voice to be fictitious, as not queſtioning that his Brother,

ther, who had ſo lately ſlain 10000 Men, could be in a condition to cope with one. But *Sytha* imploring his Aſſiſtance with a flood of Tears, he went accordingly.

Baldæus.

In the mean time the *Fakier* endow'd with *Rawan*'s Spirit, having aſſum'd the ſhape of a Beggar, came to beg ſome Alms of *Sytha*, who excus'd the matter, yet at laſt was prevail'd upon to give him ſome Fruit that were left the day before; but as ſhe was extending Arm towards the Beggar, he catch'd hold of her Hand, and pulling her over the Circle (under pretence of bringing her to the place where her Husband was engag'd) he carried her to the Country of *Lanka* in the Iſle of *Ceylon*.

He carries away Sytha.

As he was carrying her along he met with the Giant *Siettank*, of the Tribe of the *Raches*, who beg'd ſome Victuals of him in a threatning tone. *Rawan* having no Proviſions to give him, took up a Stone, which he rubbing againſt his Thigh, made a large hole, the Blood whereof turn'd the Stone into Meat, which he gave the Giant, who had no ſooner eat it, but it turn'd to a Stone again in his Stomach, and oppreſs'd him to ſuch a degree that he was not able to ſtir or move.

Then *Rawan* purſuing his Journy came to the Mountain *Reſmokperwat*, where he met with the Apes with Bears Heads, call'd *Hanuman*, *Suckerige*, *Anget* and *Siamboemt*; and *Sytha* dropping her Ring, the ſame was taken up by *Hanuman*.

Rawan coming into *Ceylon*, and not daring to bring *Sytha* into his Houſe, plac'd her in a Garden under a certain Tree call'd *Syſem*, and having appointed her a Guard of twelve Giants, he daily made his Courtſhip to her, but ſhe refuſed all his Offers.

Places her in a Garden in Ceylon.

In the mean time *Ram* returning homewards, and meeting with his Brother *Lekeman* by the way, they both came to the Hut, but to their great ſurprize found *Sytha* gone. *Ram* in a moſt violent Rage upbraided his Brother with leaving the Hut, but having underſtood the reaſon they reſolv'd to go in queſt of *Sytha*.

Ram and Lekeman go in queſt of Sytha.

As they were paſſing through a very long ſubterraneous Paſſage, they met with a certain Giant at his Devotion, who being ſurpriz'd to ſee them, *Ram* told him, that the deſire of finding out his Spouſe had brought him through this dangerous place, asking him, whether he had not heard any thing of her: He anſwer'd, that he had ſeen a Giant flying through the Air, holding a Woman upon his Hand. *Ram* further enquiring what way they were gone, he anſwer'd, towards the Country of *Dekendeſa*.

Ram verily believing this to be *Sytha*, bleſs'd the Giant, and purſuing his journy to the Mount *Reſmokperwat*, met with the before-mention'd Apes with Bears Heads, where *Hanuman* proſtrating himſelf at his Feet, ask'd him, What brought him to this remote part of the World? *Ram* anſwer'd, To look after his Spouſe. *Hanuman* reply'd, I ſaw a Giant paſs through the Air with a Woman ſitting upon his Hand, who drop'd this Earring. *Ram* infinitely rejoyc'd at the ſight thereof (knowing it to be his Wife's) ask'd him, what way they had taken? *Hanuman* reply'd, To the Country of *Lanka* in the Iſle of *Ceylon*; and at the ſame time offering his Service for the recovery of his Spouſe, he entreated the Ape *Suckerige* to aſſiſt him in this Enterprize; promiſing him, that in caſe they ſucceeded, *Ram* ſhould reſtore to him his Wife and his Eſtate in the Valley of *Kieckenda*, taken from him by his Brother *Bael*: But *Suckerige* remember'd his Brother's Strength, how he had worſted the Giant *Rawan*, and held his Head two Months under his Arms (before the Government of the World was committed to him by *Viſtnum*) beſides ſeveral other Giants told him, that *Ram* being only of a middle Stature, was not likely to conquer him.

Hanuman gives an account to Ram of Sytha

Hanuman however perſiſting in his Perſuaſions, and extolling the Power of *Ram*, *Suckerige* asked a Token, *viz.* that he ſhould ſhoot his Arrow thro ſome of the Branches of the Trees, whilſt they were agitated by the Wind. *Lekeman* having underſtood his Requeſt, ſpoke to his Brother *Ram*, who bidding them ſhut their Eyes, he ſhot at once with his Arrow thro ſeven Trees, and at the ſame time order'd *Suckerige* to challenge his Brother *Bael* in his Name; which being done accordingly, *Bael* appear'd, and in a ſcornful Tone told *Ram*, that he would cut off his Head at one Stroke; whereat *Ram* being exaſperated to the higheſt degree, he drew his Bow, ſent his Arrow through his Body, and reſtor'd the Valley of *Kieckenda* to *Suckerige*, and with it his Wife.

Ram kills Bael.

Ram having now taken a Reſolution to ſtay with his Brother in the Mountain, ſent *Hanuman*, *Anget*, *Suckerige* and *Sucking*, Chieftains of the Apes, into the Valley of *Quicxinta* (as the *Malabars* call it) not far from the Valley of *Kieckenda*, in queſt of his Spouſe. *Hanuman* being ready to depart with his Company, gave him his

Ring

Ring as a token to ſhew to his Spouſe *Sytha*: Accordingly they ſet out on their Journy, taking two different Roads, two and two together; but not meeting with *Sytha*, they met at a certain place near the Sea-ſide full of Deſpair at their ill ſucceſs. However *Hanuman* bid them have a good Heart, telling them, that *Ceylon* lying oppoſite to them croſs the Seas, he would according to the Power granted him by *Viſhnum* fly over the Sea into *Ceylon*, where *Rawan* kept his Reſidence.

Hanuman flies into Ceylon.

Hanuman being at laſt in diſguiſe, arriv'd in the Iſle of *Ceylon*, met with ten Female Giants that were appointed her Guard by *Rawan* in the Air: Theſe refuſing him Paſſage, he aſſum'd the ſhape of a Fly, and thus eſcaping their Hands, advanced to the Shore of *Ceylon*; but being there met by a huge Giant who ſtopt his Paſſage, was forc'd to reaſſume his own Body of an Ape, and ſo to engage the Giant, who ſeeing him to fight ſo courageouſly, commended his Bravery, telling him, that he ſhould ſucceed in what he deſir'd. *Hanuman* anſwering, that he came only to look for his Maſter *Ram*'s Wife: The Giant reply'd, *She is kept by the moſt Potent* Rawan *in a Garden under a Syſem-Tree.*

Hears from Sytha.

Hanuman then purſuing his Journy, and being extremely tir'd, did fall into a ſwound upon the Sea-ſhore; where having ſlept 18 hours, and forgotten the Name of the place aſſign'd him by the Giant, he transform'd himſelf into a Cat, and running through all the Houſes and Corners of *Ceylon*, but without ſucceſs, at laſt happen'd to light upon the top of *Rawan*'s Houſe, from whence eſpying the Tree where *Sytha* was kept, he advanced towards it; but whilſt he was in doubt whether it were *Sytha* or not, he ſaw *Rawan* coming towards her, and renewing his Courtſhip, offering all his Territories and Treaſures in caſe ſhe would conſent to be his Wife; but *Sytha* reply'd, that being *Ram*'s alone, ſhe would never encourage his Addreſſes, threatning to conſume him by Fire if he perſiſted in his Demands.

Rawan was no ſooner gone, but *Hanuman* dropt the Ring given him by *Ram* into *Sytha*'s Lap, who burſt out into Tears, imagining that *Ram* had been kill'd by ſome of the Giants; but *Hanuman* throwing himſelf at her Feet, told her that *Ram* was in good health, and had ſent him to look after her. *Sytha* ſtill queſtioning the truth, *Hanuman* told her that the Ring was given him as a token to her, yet not with an intention to bring her to him, but only to learn News of her. Then haſte away, reply'd ſhe, and deſire *Ram* to deliver me out of the hands of the Tyrant *Rawan*.

Battle of.

Hanuman went his way, but conſidering with himſelf, he would not forſake *Lanka* without leaving behind him ſome Remembrances of his having been there, he return'd to *Sytha*, asking her leave to gather ſome Fruits, which ſhe deny'd, telling him, that he would be unfortunate in his Enterprize, if he fed upon any other Fruit but what he found upon the ground: Well, ſaid *Hanuman*, and ſo laying hold of the next Fruit-Tree, and tearing it up by the root he eat the Fruit, the ſame he did to moſt of the other Trees in the Garden, except that where *Sytha* was plac'd. The Gardiner ſeeing the next Morning what havock *Hanuman* had made, told his Maſter what happen'd, who being incenſed to the higheſt degree, order'd 10000 Giants to kill this Ape. *Hanuman* ſeeing them advancing againſt him, laid hold of one of the biggeſt Trees, and made ſuch havock among theſe Giants, that ſcarce one of them eſcap'd.

Hanuman's Actions at Ceylon.

Rawan no ſooner heard of this Defeat, but he ſent 25000 more to revenge the Quarrel of their Comrades; but theſe having undergone the ſame fate, he ſent his youngeſt Son at the head of 12000 of the choiceſt Giants, who put *Hanuman* ſo hard to it, that they made him reel ſeveral times; but his Strength being continually renew'd by *Ram*'s care, he at firſt ſlew *Rawan*'s youngeſt Son, and at laſt the whole Army.

Great Slaughter of the Giants.

Mandory Rawan's Spouſe did all that lay in her power to perſwade her Huſband to deliver up *Sytha* to *Ram*, for fear of loſing his whole Eſtate; but *Rawan* was ſo far from hearkening to her Counſel, that he iſſued a Proclamation, that he who thought himſelf the ſtrongeſt Man in the Iſle of *Ceylon* ſhould engage with the Ape: But there being no body who durſt compare for Strength with *Rawan*'s eldeſt Son, named *Inderjiet*, (who formerly had vanquiſh'd *Raja Inder*) he order'd him, that whenever he was a going to ſhoot his Arrow, he ſhould utter certain words taught him by *Bramma*, which had that effect as to turn the Arrow into a Serpent, and to entangle his Adverſary.

Inderjiet thus bold with hopes, advanc'd at the head of his Giants againſt *Hanuman*, who laid ſo bravely about him, that he made the Giants ſhrink, which *Inderjiet* per-

perceiving, let fly his Arrow againſt *Hanuman*, which being in an inſtant tranſform'd into a Serpent, was tore to pieces by *Hanuman*; which *Inderſiet* ſeeing, he flew like Lightning thro the Air to the holy *Bramma*, upbraided him with Deceitfulneſs, and threatning him with no leſs than the loſs of his Life, unleſs he ſhew'd him the right way of vanquiſhing his Enemy.

Baldæus.

Inderſiet makes uſe of a bewitched Arrow.

Bramma being put to ſuch a *nonplus*, haſtned to *Hanuman*, and caſting himſelf at his Feet beg'd of him not to oppoſe *Inderſiet*'s Arrow, as wanting not means to protect himſelf againſt his Attempts by divers other ways. *Hanuman* taking Compaſſion of *Bramma* granted his Requeſt, who then told *Inderſiet*, that by his Charms he had ſo order'd the matter as to render his Arrow more effectual than before. *Inderſiet* encourag'd by his Promiſe, ſent forth his Arrow againſt *Hanuman* a ſecond time, which turning into a Serpent ſtuck ſo cloſe to his Limbs, that the Giants had ſufficient opportunity to exerciſe their Weapons upon him, tho he receiv'd no more harm by it than if he had been touch'd with a Feather. However they carried him before the ten headed *Rawan*, who ask'd him by what means he was become invulnerable? *Hanuman* reply'd, By *Ram*'s Bleſſing, whoſe Wife thou haſt carried away, which if thou doſt not reſtore forthwith, thy whole Country ſhall be laid deſolate.

This Story ſeems to have ſome relation to that of Sampſon.

Rawan exaſperated at this Anſwer, commanded 10000 Giants to kill him, but finding their Endeavours prove unſucceſsful, he ask'd *Hanuman* by what means he might be bereav'd of his Strength: He reply'd, If you dip my Tail in Oil, wrap it in Cotton, and then ſet it on fire, all my Strength will vaniſh in an inſtant. *Rawan* believing the matter, put it in Execution, notwithſtanding which *Hanuman* pull'd the Serpent to pieces like a piece of Thred, kill'd moſt of the Giants, and ſet fire to the Houſes. This done, he took his leave of *Sytha*, who gave him one of her Bracelets as a token, to ſhew *Ram* that he had ſeen her, charging him at the ſame time not to look back till he had paſt the Seas, elſe he would be in great danger. *Hanuman* ſtrictly obſerv'd this Rule till he came to the Sea-ſhore, when approaching on a ſudden to a great Flame, he look'd back, and the Flame reaching his Tail, he was glad to run into the Sea to extinguiſh the Fire.

Then taking his courſe through the Air, he paſs'd the Seas, and meeting with his Comrades, told them what had happen'd, who thence made the beſt of their way to the Mountain *Jeſmokperwa*; and having ſhew'd *Sytha*'s Bracelets to *Ram*, who immediately order'd *Suckery*, Lord of the Valley of *Kieckenda*, to ſummon all the Apes under his Juriſdiction to arm againſt *Rawan*, he accordingly appear'd under their 18 Kings, each whereof appear'd at the head of 20000 Apes, amounting in all to 360000 Apes.

Ram and his Brother *Lekeman* march'd at the head of this powerful Army to the Sea-ſide directly oppoſite to the Iſle of *Ceylon*, where *Ram* having ſpent three days in faſting and praying, to open a Paſſage for his Forces through the Sea, but in vain, he drew his Bow threatning the Sea to reduce it into ſuch narrow Bounds, that where then was nothing to be ſeen but Water, the Terreſtial Creatures ſhould ſport upon the pleaſant Sands without danger. The Waves of the Sea thereupon humbling themſelves before *Ram*, told him, that to open him a Paſſage through the depth could not be done without a total Deſtruction of a vaſt number of Fiſhes, but that there was in his Army a certain Ape call'd *Sichem*, endow'd with ſuch a Quality by his Maſter the holy *Narſy*, that whatever Stone he ſhould only touch, would ſwim on the ſurface of the Water like Wood. Accordingly *Ram* order'd a vaſt quantity of Stones to be brought from the neighbouring Mountains, which being only touch'd by *Sichem*, and then thrown into the Sea, did ſwim upon the Surface thereof, and making a Bridg of 100 Leagues in length, afforded an eaſy Paſſage for his whole Army.

A Stone Bridg of a hundred Leagues croſs the Sea.

The Inhabitants of *Lanka* or *Ceylon* being ſoon alarum'd by the noiſe of their Drums, and other Warlike Inſtruments, *Rawan*'s Wife intreated her Husband to take a view of that prodigious Army from the top of his Houſe, whom *Ram* no ſooner ſpy'd at a diſtance, but with his Arrow he ſhot off his ten Crowns from his ten Heads. His Wife laying hold of this opportunity, exhorted him once more to deliver up *Sytha* to *Ram*, who, ſays ſhe, can with the ſame Arrow which took off your ten Crowns, alſo take off your ten Heads.

But *Rawan* perſiſting in his Reſolution not to part with *Sytha*, *Ram* told his Brother *Lekeman*, that to leave nothing unattempted to reduce *Rawan* to Reaſon, they would diſpatch the Ape *Anget* to him to demand *Sytha*, and in caſe of refuſal, to tell him now, that they

were

were come to destroy all with Fire and Sword.

Rawan being advertis'd of his arrival, call'd together all his Giants, (among whom was his Brother *Bebickhem*) and having caused 10 Statues to be made with 10 Heads like himself, he took his place in the midst of them: *Anget* coming boldly into the Room, ask'd what Monsters these were, and which of them was *Rawan* himself? Whereat *Rawan* being highly exasperated, ask'd who it was that dares affront him thus, threatning to make him repent his boldness. *Anget* reply'd, Were I not here in the quality of an Ambassador, I would try my Strength with thee, being sent by *Ram* to let thee know, that he did not come with this Army to destroy thy Subjects, but to recover his Wife *Sytha*; which if thou refusest to do, he declares himself innocent of all the Effusion of Blood that shall ensue. But *Rawan* answering, that he was resolv'd not to deliver her; *Anget* brought this Answer to *Ram*.

Rawan's Brother comes over to Ram.

At the same time *Rawan*'s Brother, with five of his chief Counsellors, finding him not in a capacity to cope with so powerful an Army, assum'd the shape of Apes, and throwing themselves at the Feet of *Ram*, crav'd his Mercy and Protection.

The Apes of *Ram*'s Army taking them for Spies, handled them very roughly at first coming into the Camp; and *Hanuman* or *Hanneman* especially, would have disswaded him from having the least concern with them, but were appeased by *Ram*, when he told them that he knew them to be Men of Honour and Probity.

By this time *Rawan* had arm'd 10000 of his boldest Giants to attack *Ram*'s Camp; but these being soon defeated, he sent 18000 more, who having undergone the same fate, he sent 30000 more; and these also succeeding no better, he sent 50000 more, who were all routed like the rest.

Rawan's Obstinacy.

Then *Rawan*'s eldest Son entreating his Father to let him engage alone against the whole Camp of *Ram*, he could not consent to his Request; but having convinced his Father of the Advantages he had lately got by the Instructions of *Bramma*, he put him at the head of 10000 of his choicest Giants. With these Troops being advanc'd to *Ram*'s Camp, he encourag'd them to fight bravely, whilst he soaring up into the Air did hide himself behind one of the Wheels of the Chariot of the Sun, till coming directly over *Ram*'s Camp, he sent forth one of his Magical Arrows, which turning immediately into a Serpent, sent forth such a vast number of other Serpents among the Apes, that their Arms and Legs being quite entangled, they were knock'd down on all sides by the Giants. *Baldæus.*

Ram not a little surpriz'd at this Disaster, ask'd *Rawan*'s Brother what was best to be done; who told him, that if he would send for his wing'd *Garroude*, the Serpents would vanish in an instant. *Ram* following his Advice, *Garroude* no sooner appear'd but the Serpents vanish'd, and the Apes fought it out bravely with the Giants.

In the mean while *Ram* having advis'd with his Council how to attack *Inderjiet*, *Rawan*'s eldest Son in the Air, and *Lekeman* having offer'd his Service, he got upon *Hanuman*'s Back, who carrying him up into the Air, *Inderjiet* sent a shower of Arrows against him; but these being repulsed by *Lekeman*'s Shield, and *Inderjiet* seeing him advance towards him, threw away his Bow and Arrows, and laying hold likewise of his Sword and Buckler, a most furious Combat ensued, which remain'd dubious for some time, till *Lekeman* giving him a Blow on his Neck cut off his Head at one stroke, which dropt down before his Father's Feet. *Mandory* his Mother burst out into a most violent Passion for the loss of her beloved Son, tearing her Hair and Breasts with her Nails, and upbraiding her Husband with Cruelty, Injustice and Lasciviousness, but to little purpose, *Rawan* persisting in her Resolution of not delivering *Sytha*. Rawan's eldest Son slain.

Being resolv'd to make his utmost Efforts, he crav'd the Assistance of his Brother, a most famous Giant, nam'd *Coukeringh* (or *Kompacarna*, as *Rogerius* calls him after the *Malabars*) this Giant used to spend his whole Life in sleeping, except one day when he appear'd in his full Activity, and to spend his time in filling his Belly with Victuals for the whole succeeding year. It being then in the third Month of his sleep, *Rawan* call'd to him aloud, Brother *Coukeringh*, rouze, rouze, and come to my Assistance, or else we are lost! *Coukeringh* asking him half asleep, what was the matter? *Rawan* told him, that being attack'd by a vast Body of Apes under the Command of one *Ram*, who had kill'd two of his Sons, and no less than seven Generals, with 200000 Giants, he had no other means left to reprieve himself and his Subjects from Destruction, but to implore his Aid. The Giant reply'd, Thou beest unfor- He seeks for Assistance by his Brother.

Baldæus. unfortunate, *Rawan*, to have entangl'd thy ſelf in an unjuſt War againſt an Army headed by the Divine *Ram*; I have foreſeen it in my Sleep, that the ſame will turn to the Deſtruction of thy ſelf and thy Country.

Rawan ſtood amaz'd, but full of Deſpair, told his Brother, That if it was his fate (written in his Forehead) to die by the hands of *Ram*, it was in vain to avoid it, deſiring once more his Aſſiſtance. The Giant reply'd, My Life is at your Service, and ſo ordering his Chariot drawn by ten pair of Aſſes to be got ready, put himſelf at the head of *Rawan*'s Army compos'd of Giants. *Ram* in the mean while underſtanding that the great Giant was coming againſt him, he appointed ſome thouſand of Apes to throw upon him the tops of the Rocks, which they did accordingly, tho in vain, the Giant piercing the Mount that was thrown upon him with his Arrow, notwithſtanding it had 100 Leagues in compaſs.

This made *Ram* ask *Bebickhem*, *Rawan*'s Brother, by what means the Giant *Coukeringh* might be vanquiſh'd. *Bebickhem* reply'd, You muſt retreat three Paces backwards; that can't be, anſwer'd *Ram*, becauſe I am deſcended of the Race of the *Ketteriis*, who dare not retreat' under pain of Baniſhment. But there is no other Remedy, return'd *Bebickhem*; but the beſt Advice I can give you is, to deſcend from your Chariot, and let the ſame be carried three Paces backwards. This being approv'd by *Ram*, was done accordingly, ſo that whilſt the Giant was making a moſt horrid ſlaughter among the Apes, he ſhot his Head off, which falling upon the ground ſhook the Earth as if a whole Mountain had tumbled down, a whole River of Blood as black as Pitch guſhing out of his Veins.

The Giant Coukeringh ſlain.

Notwithſtanding this the Trunk of his Body continued to make a great ſlaughter among the Apes; ſo that *Ram* being again oblig'd to have recourſe to *Rawan*'s Brother, he told him, that if he ſent out a Party of Apes to get a blue Cloth died with Indigo, and therewith cover'd the Body, it would become immovable. In the mean while the Trunk of the Giant continued to make great havock among the Apes, but to little purpoſe, they being reviv'd (by the Aſpect of *Ram*) as faſt as they were kill'd.

By this time the blue Cloth being brought was thrown upon the Trunk, which in an inſtant remain'd as unmovable as a Stone in the Field. *Rawan* ſeeing himſelf thus reduc'd to deſpair, had recourſe to the Goddeſs *Bowanni*, unto whom he offer'd a Sacrifice of freſh Butter, Sandal-wood, Flowers and Spices, implering her Aid againſt *Ram* with ſuch fervency, that it is believ'd he would have obtain'd his Requeſt, had not the Ape *Hanuman* defiled the Sacrifice by throwing one of the dead Carcaſes of the ſlain Giants upon the Altar, erected in a deep hole for this Sacrifice.

Rawan's laſt Sacrifice.

Rawan thus drove to the laſt extremity, put himſelf again at the head of his Forces, and like a deſperate Perſon ſlew all the Apes he met in his way, forcing all the Hills before him the Apes threw in his way, till *Ram* drawing his Bow ſhot off nine of his Heads; and then calling to him aloud, *Rawan* ſaid he, deſiſt from Bloodſhed, return me my *Sytha*, and I will heal thy Wounds, and reſtore thee thy Heads and Kingdom, without which thou wilt certainly loſe all. But *Rawan* replying, that if Fate had ſo ordain'd it, he would rather loſe his 10 Heads alſo than *Sytha*. *Ram* ſhot likewiſe his tenth Head off: But perceiving that the Headleſs Body laid ſtill about him with its 24 Arms, he threw ſome Water upon it, and muttering out certain words, made it as immoveable as a Stone.

Rawan ſlain by Ram.

Mandory was no ſooner inform'd of her Husband's Death, but ſhe threw her ſelf at *Ram*'s Feet, bewailing his Obſtinacy, notwithſtanding the many forebodes of his Fall, an unfortunate Raven and a doleful Owl having ſettled upon his Houſe, with very dreadful Lamentations and Outcries, the fore-runners of his Misfortune. As I have, added ſhe, been innocent of what has happen'd, ſo I hope you won't deny me my Protection: *Ram* bid her be ſatisfied, ordering her at the ſame time to paſs ſeven times through the ſmoke of the Fire kept at *Tchie*, to purify her ſelf, and renew her Virginity, which done he would marry her to her Husband's Brother *Bebickhem*, who accordingly was put into *Rawan*'s place. Then *Ram* being carried in his *Roſe Litter* to the Tree *Syſem*, where *Sytha* was kept a Priſoner, ſhe embrac'd him, returning him a million of Thanks for her Deliverance. The next thing *Ram* did, was to revive his Apes ſlain in the late Engagement; and ſo march'd back over the ſame Bridg that had carried *him* into *Ceylon*. Being come to the oppoſite Shore, he order'd the Stones to be carried to the place whence they had been taken, and marching to the Valley of *Kieckenda*, he would there have taken his leave of *Suckery*; but he refuſing

His Wife married to his Brother.

Ram meets again with Sytha.

Returns home.

refuſing to part with him thus, would needs accompany him with all his Forces as far as the Village of *Baratpoeri*, where *Ram* was receiv'd by his Father, Mother and Brother, with great Demonſtrations of Joy, the ſweet-ſcented Roſe-Water, Saffron, Betel, and other Perfumes, being laviſhly beſtow'd upon him and all thoſe that had attended him home.

Ram having beſtow'd his Bleſſing upon *Suckery* he return'd home, but *Hanuman* ſtaid with him. He reign'd in Peace 11 years after his return, and begat two Sons, *Lan* and *Chus*. Then taking his opportunity when he had ſent *Hanuman* out of the way, he aſcended into Heaven with the Inhabitants of the Earth, except his two Sons.

The *Malabars* ſay, that *Ram* being jealous of *Sytha*, would have murder'd her, had ſhe not cleared her ſelf by the Fire and a ſolemn Oath. Another time being again ſeiz'd with a Jealouſy, becauſe ſhe had *Rawan*'s Picture drawn upon a piece of Board, ſhe purg'd her ſelf by putting her Hand into a Veſſel fill'd with Serpents. *Baldæus.*

They further add, That her Husband being become extreme jealous, caus'd her to be thrown before the Elephants, and afterwards before the Tygers, but ſhe eſcaped without the leaſt harm. They ſay, that when *Hanuman* ſaw *Ram* aſcend into Heaven, he cry'd aloud to him, O Divine *Ram!* what have I done, that you will leave me behind! *Ram* anſwer'd, *Hanuman*, be not diſſatisfied, thou ſhalt never die, and many Pagodes ſhall be erected to thy Memory. Farewel.

Thus ended the ſecond Period of Time, which, according to the Computation of the *Benjans*, contains a Million and 296000, whereof *Ram* reign'd 2000. This ſecond Period is call'd *Treitagom* by the *Malabars*, and *Tretanike* by the *Benjans*.

CHAP. V.

The eighth Altar. The Parents, Birth and Education of Kiſna. *His miraculous Deliverance.* Ragia Kans *endeavours to murder him.* Kiſna *turns a Shepherd, and flys with his Company to* Goggel.

The eighth Transformation the moſt remarkable.

AS the eighth Transformation of *Viſtnum* is accounted of the greateſt moment above the reſt; for, ſay the Pagans, in all the others *Viſtnum* appear'd in the World with ſome part of his Divinity, but in this he carried along with him the whole Subſtance of it, ſo that he left his place vacant in Heaven: This Transformation happen'd with the beginning of the third Period of Time; and, according to the relation of the *Benjans*, was thus.

One *Ragia Kans* living in the City of *Mottera*, 25 *Cos* from *Agra*, upon the River *Siemmena*, had a young Siſter named *Deuki*. About 3 *Cos* higher up the ſame River liv'd a certain *Brahman* named *Waſſendeuw* in the City of *Goggel*. The ſaid *Deuki* being arriv'd to a marriageable Age, her Brother *Ragia Kans* look'd out for a Husband for her; but meeting with none for his purpoſe in that City, he ſent to the City of *Goggel*, where his Meſſenger hearing of the Worth and Piety of *Waſſendeuw*, the fame was at his Recommendation married to him when he was only 19, and ſhe no more than 12 years of Age.

The ſaid *Ragia* having underſtood that there was among his Subjects a certain *Brahman*, named *Narret*, well skill'd in Chiromancy (a thing in high eſteem among the Pagans *) he ſent for him, deſiring him to look into his Siſter's Hands, and to foretel, without diſſembling the matter, what good or bad Fortune was like to befal her. The *Brahman* having view'd her Hand, told the King, that according to the Lines of her Hand ſhe was to bring forth ſix Sons, and one Daughter, the youngeſt of whom will not only take away thy Kingdom, but alſo thy Life.

* *See* Voſſius l. 2. Idol. c. 47. & Pucer. de Divin.

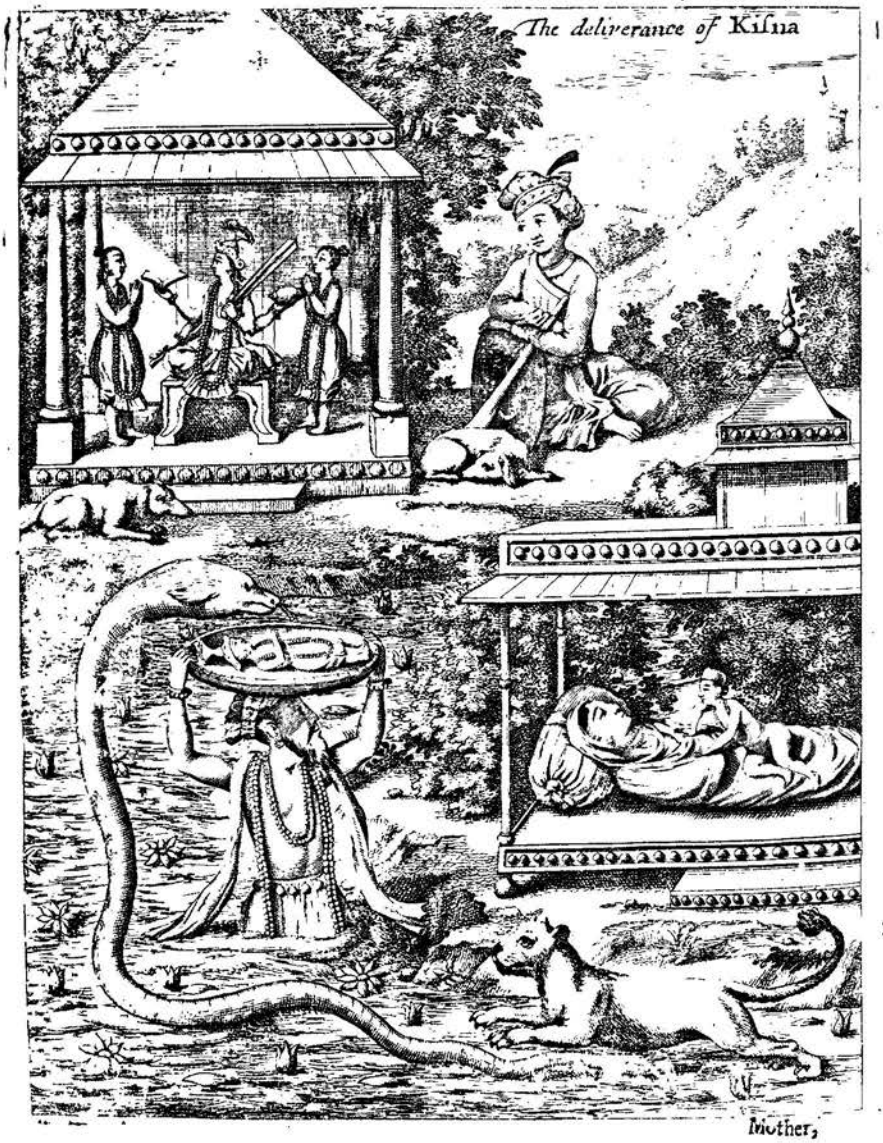
The King being not a little ſurpriz'd at this Prophecy, order'd the ſaid *Deuki* and her Husband to be impriſoned in a ſtrong Caſtle, and that all the Children begotten upon her Body ſhould be kill'd immediately. Accordingly the Midwife brought the new-born Babes to her Brother, who beat out the Brains of ſix of them (*viz.* five Sons and one Daughter) againſt a Stone. Afterwards underſtanding that ſhe was with Child with the ſeventh, he incloſed her in a Room with Iron Doors, and appointed her a Guard of 100 Soldiers, with ſtrict Orders that the Child as ſoon as it was born ſhould be brought to him. Upon this occa-

occaſion I can't but obſerve, that this as well as the enſuing part of the Story of *Kiſna* ſeems to have a near relation to the Hiſtory of the Birth of our Saviour, his flight into *Egypt*, the Murder of the innocent Children by *Herod*, Chriſt's Miracles and Aſcenſion, *&c.*

Baldæus.

* *The 8th day of the decreaſing Moon.*

The time of her Reckoning being expir'd on the day * *Aethen*, of the Month *Sowwanne*, this unfortunate Lady being overwhelm'd with Grief, ſhe brought forth a Son about Midnight without the leaſt Pain, whoſe Face was as bright as the Full Moon; but as ſhe had occaſion to rejoice at the Birth of ſo fine a Child, his Fate put her into incredible Affliction: But *Viſtnum* (whoſe Divine Virtue was infuſed into this Child) comforted his



Mother,

Mother, telling her, that he would find means to escape the hands of his Uncle, and deliver her out of her Prison. Then speaking to his Father, Pray, says he, carry me to *Goggel* on the other side of the River *Siemmena* to the *Brahman Nen*, whose Wife being lately brought to Bed of a Daughter, exchange me for her, and leave the rest to my disposal.

Wassendeuw answer'd, how is it possible to remove thee out of a Chamber so closely guarded and kept, that not the least thing could pass in or out? *Kisna* (this was the Child's Name) reply'd, the Doors shall be open'd to thee, and the Guards so overcome with Sleep, that nothing shall stop thy free Passage; he had no sooner spoken these words but the seven Doors open'd themselves, so that *Wassendeuw* took the Child and carried him off without the least hinderance. But coming to the River *Siemmena* directly opposite to *Goggel*, *Kisna*'s Father perceiving the Current to be very strong (it being in the midst of the rainy Season) and not knowing which way to pass it, *Kisna* commanded the Water to give way on both sides to his Father, who accordingly pass'd dry-footed cross the River, being all the way guarded by a Serpent that held her Head over the Child to serve it instead of an Umbrella. The *Benjans* call this Serpent *Sickenasy*. Coming to the *Brahman*'s House, the Door open'd it self, and finding the *Brahman* and his Wife asleep, he exchang'd his Son for their Daughter, which he carried along with him to the Castle. In short, the Water afforded him once more a free Passage, and finding the Doors of the Castle open, and the Guards asleep, he lock'd them after him, and deliver'd the Girl to his Wife.

The Guards hearing the Child cry soon after, enter'd the Chamber, snatch'd it from the unfortunate Parents, and brought it to *Ragia Kans*, who finding it a Girl, upbraided the *Brahman* with want of Skill, yet for fear of the worst, was going to strike the Head against a Stone; but the Child slipping out of his hands flew up into the Air, and told him, *It was in vain to attempt to murder her, since he that was to take away his Head and his Kingdom, to revenge the Death of his five Brothers died a Sister, was safe at* Goggel. This said, it flew up high into the Air, where it was turn'd into *Lightning* by *Vistnum*, a thing never seen before in the World.

Ragia Kans not a little surpriz'd at this Accident, consulted all his Friends what he had best to do in this Emergency; but none being able to advise him to any purpose, whilst he was very melancholy and ruminating upon the oddness of the thing, he understood that the pious *Brahman Nen* who liv'd at *Goggel*, had a most beautiful Son, which put it into his head, whether it might not perhaps be he who was to take Revenge of him for his Tyrannies. At last, to make sure work, he resolv'd to have the Child kill'd; but not thinking it safe to undertake so hainous a thing bare-fac'd (for fear of the common People) he made his Applications to his eldest Sister *Pootena*, enjoyning her as she tender'd his Life, to go with some Presents to this *Brahman*'s House, and to endeavour to kill this Child, by anointing her Teats with Poison. *Buldæus.*

Accordingly coming with considerable Presents to the Child's Mother at *Goggel*, she wish'd her much Joy, and taking the Child in her Lap, she gave ample Recommendations of its Beauty, and then kissing and playing with the Child, laid it to her Breast: But this Child being proof against all Poison, did suck away not only all her Milk, but likewise the Blood out of her Veins, till she dropt down dead upon the spot.

Ragia sorely afflicted with this News, releas'd his Sister *Deuki* and her Husband, asking his Sister's Pardon for his having pretended to thwart the immutable Decrees of Destiny, and desiring that all past things might be buried in Oblivion. However, as the Child at *Goggel* lay constantly in his Head, he advis'd with his *Vizier*, or Chief Minister, upon the matter: He told him, that there liv'd a certain Giant named *Settasor* at *Mottera*, who had the Gift of transforming himself into a Cart and Oxen, by which means he might carry the Child into the Air and murder it. The King pursuant to his Advice, sent for the said *Settasor*, who at his request crossing the River *Siemmena*, when he came near the City of *Goggel*, transform'd himself into a little neat Cart, drawn by two white Oxen with gilt Horns; and passing thus through the Streets of the City, at last stop'd near the *Brahman Nen* his Door. One of the neighbouring Women having just at that time *Kisna* in her Arms at the Door, set the Child upon the said Cart, which was no sooner done, but *Settasor* flew with the Child up into the Air. The Mother amaz'd at this Spectacle, cry'd out aloud, *O Vistnum protect my Child!* Her Prayers were heard; for *Kisna*, when he saw himself high in the Air, assum'd the shape and strength of a Giant, and gave

Baldæus. gave ſuch a Blow near the Giant's Heart, that he beat the Breath out of his Body; then reaſſuming his former ſhape of a Child, got upon his dead Carcaſe, and ſo fell down with it upon the ground. His Parents being Eye-witneſſes of the Deliverance of their ſuppoſed Son, were ſo ſurpriz'd thereat, that looking upon him as ſomething extraordinary ſent them from Heaven, they ſacrificed to the Gods, and gave abundance of Alms to the Poor.

Ragia Kans finding himſelf diſappointed in his hopes, had recourſe once more to his moſt truſty Counſellors: one of them told him, that there was a certain *Deyt*, or Giant, named *Turnawent*, who being endow'd with the Virtue of transforming himſelf into a Whirlwind, the King engag'd him on his ſide, in order to carry the Child into the Air. *Kiſna*, who heard the Whirlwind rolling croſs the River *Siemmena* towards the City of *Goggel*, being then in his Mother's Lap at the Door, roll'd down upon the ground; whence the Whirlwind ſnatching him up into the Air, his Parents ſtood amaz'd at ſo ſtrange a Spectacle, imploring *Viſtnum* for his Aſſiſtance.

Kiſna being carried to a vaſt height by the Wind, aſſum'd the ſhape of a Man, and taking the Giant *Turnawent* by the Throat, turn'd his Neck round; and then reaſſuming his former ſhape, got upon the dead Carcaſe of the Giant, and fell down along with it upon the ground juſt before his Parents Door, to the great Amazement of the Inhabitants of *Goggel*, who could not but look upon this Accident as miraculous, or that had ſomething of Divine in it.

Kiſna in the mean while remaining upon the Giant's Back, cry'd moſt vehemently; his Mother laid him to her Breaſt, but he not ceaſing to cry, ſhe laid him in a hanging Cradle; notwithſtanding which he continued crying, till his Mother having recounted to him the Story of *Ram* (as related before) he leap'd out of the Cradle, and taking the ſhape of *Ram* with his Bow and Arrow, he cry'd out, *Lekeman*, let us go after *Rawan* and deliver *Sytha*. His Mother being ready to proſtrate her ſelf at his Feet, he ſoon reaſſum'd his former ſhape, and encreaſed miraculouſly both in Strength and Wiſdom.

It happen'd one time that his Mother did bring upon the Table a Golden Diſh with Rice Milk, and ſome Herbs dreſs'd after the way of the *Boujans*, which *Kiſna* ſeeing, he told her he could not eat it unleſs theſe things were all mix'd together, which ſhe did accordingly: But *Kiſna* taſting it, deſir'd her to ſeparate them again; his Mother anſwering him that it was not in human Power ſo to do, he laid his Hand over the Diſh and ſeparated them immediately, to the aſtoniſhment of his Parents.

His Father being a *Brahman* of the Cowherds, maintain'd his Family by breeding of Cattel, which, ſince the bringing of *Kiſna* into the Houſe, was encreaſed to 900000.

His Mother being one time buſy in churming, he ask'd her for a little Butter: ſhe gave him a little, but not thinking that enough, he ask'd for more, which ſhe refuſing, he took the opportunity whilſt ſhe was gone out of the way to take away ſome. His Mother returning ask'd *Kiſna* what was become of the Butter? He anſwer'd, that the Cats and Rats had eat it. But the Mother not thus ſatisfied, look'd into *Kiſna*'s Mouth, where ſhe had a view of the whole World with its Waters, Foreſts, Mountains, &c. enclos'd in a blue Circle. The Mother aſtoniſh'd at ſo ſtrange a Spectacle, yet ſoon recover'd her ſelf, when ſhe ſaw *Kiſna* return to his Childiſh Shape and Game again; ſo taking up a Twig, threaten'd to ſtrike him, but he running out of the Town ſhe purſu'd him, but not being able to overtake him, he ſtood ſtill at laſt, when ſhe gave him three or four Blows, urging him ſtill to tell her what was become of the Butter; he perſiſted in his former ſtory, that the Cats and Rats had eaten it. She took all the Ropes belonging to the 199000 Cows, endeavouring to tie them together in Knots; but notwithſtanding all her Endeavours, the Knots would not tie, till *Kiſna* finding her much out of humour at this Diſappointment, he permitted the Ropes to be knotted, and himſelf to be ty'd with the Ropes; but his Mother finding him cry bitterly, ſhe releas'd him ſoon after.

Another time his Mother being gone to milk the Cows, order'd him to hold a Stick in his hand to make the Cows ſtand ſtill whilſt ſhe was a milking; but finding ſhe had left her Braſs Veſſel, wherein ſhe uſed to gather her Milk behind, and not daring to ſend *Kiſna*, he told her he would ſoon find a way to fetch the Veſſel without ſtirring from the place, and ſo extending one of his Arms ſo far as to reach the Veſſel, he gave it to his Mother, and ſo reaſſum'd the ſhape of a Child.

In the mean while *Ragia Kans* being

 inform'd

inform'd that the Inhabitants of *Goggel* increas'd conſiderably in Riches (for *Kiſna*'s ſake) he order'd his Governor to load them with heavy Taxes; which being done accordingly with the utmoſt Severity, they adviſ'd with *Kiſna* whether they had not beſt remove with their Cattel to the fertile Valleys of the Mountain of *Perwet*. *Kiſna* approving their Propoſition, perſwaded his Parents to do the ſame, ſo that they tranſported all their Moveables and Cattel to the moſt fertile Vallies about the Mount *Perwet*, or *Ooden Perwet*, near the River *Siemmena*; here they fix'd their Habitations in a certain Village call'd *Brindawink*, ſeated in the midſt of moſt pleaſant Paſturages, planted with Trees, and ſo abounding in Graſs, that thoſe vaſt Herds of Cattel were not able to conſume it. *Kiſna* was ſo well pleas'd with the place, that he clad himſelf after their faſhion, with a Garland of Peacocks Feathers upon his Woolen Cap, and a Flute to play away the reſt of the Cowherds.

Baldæus.

CHAP. VI.

Further Deſigns of Ragia Kans *againſt* Kiſna *by the means of certain Giants,* Raja Inder *and* Bramha. Kiſna *produces a Pearl-Tree, and is made a King of the Cowherds.*

Ragia Kans highly exaſperated at this removal of his Subjects, ſummon'd a certain Giant nam'd *Bacaſſar*, who having the virtue of transforming himſelf into a Hern, he ſent him to carry away *Kiſna*, which he did accordingly; and having carry'd him up into the Air, endeavour'd to ſwallow him, but *Kiſna* transforming himſelf into a fiery Flame burnt the Hern to Aſhes, and he return'd to his Parents without receiving the leaſt harm. The News thereof having ſoon reach'd the Ears of *Ragia Kans*, he ſent another Giant nam'd *Wickeraak*, who transforming himſelf into the ſhape of a Boy, came to *Kiſna* as he was looking after the Cattel in the field, and engag'd in a wreſtling Match among the other Boys, not queſtioning by this means but to draw *Kiſna* into the Game, and ſo make an end of him: But *Kiſna* (who was not ignorant of his Deſign) challeng'd him, and as they were wreſtling gave him ſuch a kick upon his Breaſt, that he tumbl'd down dead upon the ſpot.

Ragia Kans finding himſelf once more diſappointed in his Aim, ſent the dreadful Giant *Agaſor*, whoſe Entrails were all Fire. This Giant having laid himſelf cloſe to the Cowherds Huts, open'd his dreadful Jaws, ſo that the uppermoſt reach'd up to the Skies, his Teeth repreſenting like Coco-trees, and his Throat like the Entrance of the Huts. *Kiſna* knowing the Deceit, drove his Cattel to his own Stables, but the reſt went ſtraitways with their Cattel into the Giant's Throat; which the Giant no ſooner perceiv'd, but he ſhut his Teeth, ſo that the poor Wretches finding themſelves in the midſt of Fire and Flames, apply'd themſelves to *Kiſna*, who was got among them on purpoſe to make himſelf an Inſtrument of their Deliverance: he bid them not to deſpair, and then extending himſelf with all his might, made the Giant to burſt in pieces, and thus open'd a Paſſage for the reſt to eſcape the Flames.

This miraculous Deliverance being ſoon ſpread all over the neighbouring Country, *Ragia Kans* entreated the Giant *Dawanneel* (who had the power of tranſmuting himſelf into a Flame) to deſtroy *Kiſna*: Accordingly he came to the place where *Kiſna* and his Companions were feeding the Cattel, and ſetting all (not excecpting even the Trees and Graſs) into a light Flame, the Cowherds fled to *Kiſna* (who was at ſome diſtance) for help, which he promis'd them in an inſtant, and ſo advancing towards the Giant, took and held him round the middle, till he forc'd him to ſwallow all the Fire again.

Ragia Kans almoſt reduc'd to deſpair, had recourſe to the Giant *Kaſep*, who having aſſum'd the ſhape of an Aſs of a prodigious bigneſs, advanc'd towards the Cowherds with a dreadful Countenance; who being terrified at ſo dreadful an Aſpect, left *Kiſna* alone, who was ſo far from being ſurpriz'd at this monſtrous ſight, that he laid by his Pipe, and advancing towards the Aſs, who came open-mouth'd upon him, endeavour'd to take him by one of his hindermoſt heels, but the Aſs gave him ſo terrible a kick with his

Baldæus. his Foot, that he threw him 8 or 10 yards high into the Air. *Kiſna* finding himſelf thus roughly handled, thought fit to aſſume the ſhape of a Giant, and ſo taking the Aſs by the hinder Leg, did ſwing him three or four times about his Head, and then throwing him againſt the ground ſqueez'd the Breath out of his Body.

The God *Bramha* being not ignorant of what had paſs'd, and curious to know whether *Kiſna* was not endow'd with ſome Divine Virtue, took his opportunity, and carried off all the Cattel belonging to *Kiſna* and the other Cowherds; who running to *Kiſna* and imploring his Aſſiſtance, he bid them ſhut their Eyes, which they had no ſooner done, but he produc'd the ſame number of Cattel they had loſt. *Brahma* came about a year after and brought back all the Cattel, asking his Pardon for what was paſt. *Kiſna* told *Brahma* that he had better keep within his own bounds; and cauſing the Cattel he had produc'd to vaniſh immediately, he kept them brought back by *Brahma*.

Another time, all the Cattel juſt after they had been drinking about Noon out of the River *Siemmena*, fell dead on a ſudden upon the ground: *Kiſna* ſurpriz'd at this Accident, and knowing that *Garroude* having lately diſlodg'd the monſtrous Serpent *Kallinaegh* from her Dam call'd *Rammane Drepek*, he ſhrewdly ſuſpected that ſhe had taken to this River, and infected the ſame with her Venom: Then getting upon a Palm-tree, he aſſum'd his white and black Skin, and two more Arms and Hands; and ſending for *Garroude*, order'd him to go to *Bramha*, and to demand of him the things taken out of the Sea in the times of *Couram*, and left in his Cuſtody till his return. *Garroude* haſtening to *Brahma*, brought back to *Kiſna* the *Chianko*, or Horn, the beauteous Woman *Lekſemy*, and the Jewel *Conſenkmany*. This done, he took the Horn in one hand, a piece of Iron in the ſecond, another Weapon in the third, and a Flower in the fourth hand. Thus equipp'd, he leapt into the River in the preſence of his Companions, and diving to the bottom, met with the Wife of ſome of the Attendants belonging to the Serpent *Kallinaegh*, who ask'd him what had brought him thither, fore-warning him to retreat in time, before he ſhould be ſeen by the Serpent, which queſtionleſs would devour him in an inſtant. *Kiſna* reply'd, that being come on purpoſe to find out the Serpent, he deſir'd he might be ſhew'd him, which they refuſing to do, he turn'd his Eyes on all ſides, and at laſt eſpying the Serpent he awaken'd him out of his ſleep, bidding him to leave this River unleſs he would pay for it with Death. The Serpent *Kallinaegh* ſwelling with Rage flew upon *Kiſna*, and beat him backwards; but he recovering himſelf, ſqueez'd the Serpent's Head to that degree, that not knowing what to do he twiſted himſelf about his Body: but *Kiſna* encreas'd the bulk of Body in ſuch a manner, that the Serpent ready to burſt, was forc'd to let go his hold, being ready to drop down dead for want of Strength. *Kiſna* then got on the top of his Neck, and putting an Awl through his Noſtrils, rid upon him as if he had been on horſe-back. The Wife and Attendants of the Serpent finding him quite out of breath, intreated *Kiſna* to ſpare his Life, promiſing to quit the River immediately. But *Kallinaegh* not willing to conſent to what they had offer'd, ſtill endeavour'd to get rid of *Kiſna*; but finding all his Endeavours in vain, and that *Kiſna*'s Body increas'd every minute in weight, he was glad to approve of what had been offer'd by his Wife. *Kiſna* having pardon'd his Offence, told him, that he would double his Strength (becauſe he had been engag'd againſt a God) and that *Garroude* ſhould not any more diſturb him in his Den, provided he would leave this River, and for the future never hurt either Men or Beaſts.

The Serpent with his Wife and Attendants having paid their Reverence three times to *Kiſna*, left the River *Siemmena*; and *Kiſna* ariſing on a ſudden above the ſurface of the Water, reaſſum'd his own ſhape, and coming aſhore blew his Horn, by the ſound whereof all the Cattel were in an inſtant reſtor'd to Life.

All theſe Miracles wrought by *Kiſna* had ſuch an influence upon the Cowherds, that they conſulted all poſſible means to pay him due Reverence. One among the reſt told him, You know that *Raja Inder*, the King of Heavens and the bleſſed Souls, keeps an annual Feaſt in the Mountain of *Ooden Perwet* with the Believers; and ſince we have no leſs Obligations to *Kiſna*, let us make alſo a Feaſt to his Honour, and invite him to the ſaid Mountain. This being approv'd of by a general Conſent, they prepar'd a moſt ſplendid Feaſt, which they celebrated with ſuch demonſtrations of Joy, that the Noiſe thereof coming to *Inder*'s Ears,

* and

and looking upon it with a jealous Eye, call'd together the Rains (diſpoſed in twelve peculiar places) ordering them to pour down their Waters upon the Fields and Cottages of theſe Cowherds: They were ready to obey, and pour'd forth ſuch prodigious ſhowers of Rain, that the Fields being all laid under Water, Men and Beaſts were upon the point of being drown'd. The Cowherds highly ſurpriz'd at the oddneſs of the thing (it being in the dry *Mouſſon*) had once more recourſe to *Kiſna*, who order'd them to get up to the top of the Mount *Ooden Perwet* till the Rains ceaſed; and they had no ſooner obey'd his Orders, but he took the whole Mountain, with Cattel, Men and all upon his little Finger, and lifted them up ſeven times higher than the Waters could riſe.

The Rains finding their Endeavours fruſtrated, return'd to *Inder*, and told him, that they had pour'd down their Waters ſeven days and nights without intermiſſion, but in vain, there being a certain Perſon in thoſe parts who could lift the whole Mountain with his little Finger into the Air. *Raja Inder* then perceiving his Error, came to *Kiſna* to make his Excuſe, and diſmounting from his Elephant, beg'd forgiveneſs for having attempted any thing againſt him, pleading his ignorance, and as a token of his Repentance, preſented him with the *Camdoga*, or Cow of Plenty, which *Kiſna* was pleas'd to accept of, and pardon'd his fault.

Not long after *Kiſna* coming home one day, found his Mother buſy in putting ſome Pearls on a String; he ask'd her from what Tree ſhe had gather'd them; but ſhe anſwering, that ſhe never knew Pearls to grow on Trees, but only in Oiſter-ſhells, *Kiſna* took one of the biggeſt, which he had no ſooner put into the ground, but they ſaw a Pearl-Tree ſprout forth full of the moſt exquiſite Pearls. The Mother ſtanding amaz'd, and ready to worſhip him, he caus'd the Tree to vaniſh immediately.

Kiſna produces a Pearl-tree.

Soon after ſome of the Cowherds and their Wives as they were walking in the Foreſt, agreed to waſh themſelves in the River; *Kiſna* eſpying them at a diſtance, ſecretly got all their Clothes, and getting upon an adjacent Palm-tree, had his ſport to ſee them coming naked out of the Water without being able to find their Clothes: They were not a little ſurpriz'd at firſt, but looking up and ſeeing *Kiſna* in the Palm-tree, they deſir'd him to reſtore their Clothes, which he told them (to try the Modeſty of the Women) he would, provided they would come underneath the Tree; but they excuſing the matter, he threw the Women their Clothes.

Makes ſport with the Women.

Baldæus.

At a certain time *Kiſna* taking a walk with the other Cowherds, they choſe him their King, and every one had his place aſſign'd him under the new King. There liv'd among them a certain charitable *Brahman*, whoſe Wife (without the knowledg of her Husband) paid her daily Devotions to *Kiſna*, who ſent two of his Meſſengers to let her know, that being diſpoſed to make merry at her Houſe with ſome of his Companions, ſhe ſhould provide ſomething for their Entertainment. The Meſſengers meeting with the *Brahman* told him the Meſſage, who told them, that he knew nothing of *Kiſna*, neither would he make any Entertainment for him. With this Anſwer they return'd to *Kiſna*, who chiding them for their miſtake, bid them ſpeak to the Woman; which being done accordingly, ſhe no ſooner heard the Name of *Kiſna*, but making a low Reverence, to work ſhe went, and having dreſs'd five or ſix good Diſhes with a handſom Deſert, ſhe carried them her ſelf to *Kiſna*, begging him to accept of what ſhe was unworthy to offer, which he did, and gave her his Bleſſing; that as long as ſhe liv'd ſhe ſhould want for nothing, and that after her Deceaſe her Soul ſhould not tranſmigrate * into another Body; but that being purified by him, ſhe ſhould go directly to Heaven.

Is choſen King.

**These Pagans look upon it as a ſingular Bleſſing when their Souls are not to enter into other Bodies.*

Kiſna with his Companions having feaſted plentifully upon what the *Brahman*'s Wife had brought them, as they were returning home met with ſome Milk-maids, unto whom *Kiſna* told, that they muſt not paſs by without paying Toll to him, who was King of the Place. The Maids not thinking he had been in earneſt went on their ways; but *Kiſna* with his Stick breaking their Milk Veſſels, one of them was ſo exaſperated thereat, that ſhe made Complaint thereof to his Mother, who calling him to an account for this Outrage, he deny'd the matter; but his Mother believing the contrary told him, that he had broken the Peace, and that if it ſhould come to *Ragia*'s Ear, he might be puniſh'd for it: He reply'd, I did not know I had done them any wrong; but as for *Ragia Kan*'s Anger I don't fear it, tho he knew it to morrow.

It happen'd not long after, that in a certain Moonſhiny Night in the Month *Alſoor* (in which begins the New Year)

Baldæus. *Kiſna* with ſome of his Companions were diverting themſelves with their Pipes in an adjacent Wood; and *Kiſna* eſpecially play'd ſo charmingly upon his Flute, that the Women in the Village being awaken'd by the ſound of this Harmony, came running into the Wood to partake of their Divertiſements. *Kiſna* ask'd them whether they were not afraid to come into the Wood at that time of night? They anſwer'd, That their Ears and Hearts had been ſo touch'd with his melodious Harmony, that they were not able to ſtay at home: So *Kiſna* gave them a Tune or two, which ſo ſurpriz'd them, that moſt of them ſtood amaz'd, gazing all the while at his Beauty, whilſt others paſt their time in dancing. This they continued till midnight, when having beſtow'd his Bleſſing upon the Women he ſent them home, he and his Companions paſſing their time in the ſame Jollities all night till break of day.

CHAP. VII.

A further account of the Deſigns of Ragia Kans, *who is kill'd at laſt by* Kiſna. *New Decrees againſt* Kiſna, *which prove ineffectual. His other Miracles.*

Ragia Kans being more and more alarm'd at theſe Miracles, ſent for his chief Miniſter named *Panjewello*, and his two chief Generals nam'd *Siampoor* and *Moſtik*, to conſult with them how to rid his hands of *Kiſna*. *Panjewello* told him, that all clandeſtine means having prov'd to no purpoſe hitherto, he knew no other way than to engage the ſtrongeſt of all the Giants (named *Keby*) againſt him.

Ragia approving his Advice, ſent accordingly the ſaid Giant, who meeting with *Kiſna*, ask'd him where he was going? Where I pleaſe, reply'd *Kiſna*: Ho ho, anſwer'd the Giant *Keby*, I will take care of that, and ſo was going to lay his great Paws upon him; but *Kiſna* taking him by the Throat, did not let go his hold till he had ſqueez'd the Breath out of his Body; which done, *Kiſna* put his Hand into his Throat, and pulling his Heart out, firſt laid it upon his Mouth, and afterwards threw it to the Ravens.

Ragia Kans being now put to the laſt ſhift, a certain *Brahman* named *Naret*, adviſ'd the King to invite *Kiſna* with his Followers to a Feaſt, and ſo to have him kill'd at Table. *Ragia* approving his Counſel, ſent Meſſengers to invite them accordingly, but they were ſo far from granting their requeſt, that they deſir'd *Kiſna*'s Parents not to let him go, who with Tears in their Eyes beg'd him to ſtay at home; but *Kiſna* refuſing to hearken to their Advice, order'd his Chariot to be got ready, and taking his Father, his eldeſt Brother and Mother along with him, went forward to *Goggel* upon the River *Siemmena* oppoſite to *Mottora*.

Here it was that *Akeroor* one of the King's Meſſengers, bathing himſelf in the River, and diving three times ſucceſſively (after the manner of the *Benjans*) ſaw *Kiſna* under Water ſeated upon his Throne; which Apparition being ſeen by him again in the ſame ſtate above Water, he could not forbear to break out into theſe words: *O holy* Kiſna! *thou beeſt truly God in human Shape, becauſe thou appeareſt both under and above Water; a ſign thou beeſt preſent in all places, a Quality belonging only to the Gods! Pardon me for having invited thee to this Feaſt.* *Kiſna* told him he was ſenſible it was not his fault, and din'd with him the ſame day in a Garden *Akeroor* had juſt near the Bank of the River.

After Dinner they paſs'd the River, but had not gone far before they met the King's Waſherman with a pack of Clothes on his Back; ſome of the Company of *Kiſna* having a mind to divert themſelves, puſh'd one another againſt the Waſherman, who giving them foul Language, *Kiſna* bid his Companions to threſh him handſomly, which they did.

Ragia Kans exaſperated to the higheſt degree at this uſage of his Servant, reſolv'd to declare open Enmity againſt *Kiſna*. Not long after *Kiſna* meeting upon the Road a Barber, he preſented him (according to the Cuſtom of that Country) a Looking-glaſs to look in, and pair'd his Nails; the Barbers in the Eaſtern Countries always pairing the Nails on the Hands and Toes after they have ſhav'd the Beard. *Kiſna* gave him his Bleſſing, telling him, that his Soul ſhould directly go to God without being tranſplanted into another Body.

As

As they were entring the City they were met by a Gardiner's Wife, who us'd to serve *Ragia Kans* with Flowers: This Woman proſtrating her ſelf at *Kiſna*'s Feet, ſaid, *O Divine Man! having never ſeen any thing ſo beautiful as thy ſelf, I offer to thee theſe Flowers deſign'd for* Ragia Kans, *thinking my ſelf much more oblig'd to your Divinity than his Majeſty, entreating thee not to deſpiſe my Cottage, but to take up thy Lodging there for this night.* Then preſenting *Kiſna* with a Garland of Flowers, he took up his Lodgings in the Houſe, being welcom'd by the Husband in the moſt devout manner in the World, who declar'd himſelf unworthy of receiving ſo great a Gueſt, and ſerv'd *Kiſna* and his Company at Table, who at parting beſtow'd his Bleſſing upon him, *viz.* That they ſhould never want, and their Souls go directly to Heaven.

Being advanc'd a little further, they met a poor Cripple or lame Woman, having a Veſſel fill'd with Spices, ſweet-ſcented Oils, Sandel-wood, Saffron, Civet and other Perfumes. *Kiſna* making a halt, ſhe made a certain ſign with her Finger on his Forehead, caſting the reſt upon his Head. *Kiſna* asking her what it was ſhe would ask him? The Woman reply'd, Nothing but the uſe of my Limbs. *Kiſna* then ſetting his Foot upon hers, and taking her by the hand, raiſed her from the ground, and not only reſtor'd her Limbs, but alſo renew'd her Age, ſo that inſtead of a wrinkly tawny Skin, ſhe got a freſh and fair one in an inſtant. At her requeſt *Kiſna* and his Company lodg'd the following night in her Houſe.

Kiſna breaks the ſtrong Arrow of Mottera.

The next following day *Kiſna* and his Company walking through the Streets of *Mottera*, they were ſhew'd the ſtrong Bow, which none of the Giants had been able to manage; but *Kiſna* broke the String of it at the firſt pull. Thence they walk'd towards the Court, where the Courtiers were expecting the coming of the King: theſe ſeeing a whole Troop of Country Fellows, would not allow them Entrance into the Court; but puſhing *Kiſna* back roughly, he ſtruck 10 of them (among whom were two Colonels) down to the ground, ſo that they expir'd at his Feet, and their Souls were convey'd immediately to Heaven, a Favour he beſtow'd upon the Souls of all ſuch as were ſlain by his hands.

Kills 10 Courtiers.

Ragia Kans being inform'd of all theſe Tranſactions, and almoſt reduc'd to deſpair, order'd a Turret to be erected upon the Back of an Elephant, furniſh'd with two Warlike Engines, to be manag'd by as many Men. He order'd the Guide of the Elephant, that as ſoon as he ſaw *Kiſna* coming to the Caſtle, he ſhould ſend out the Elephant to trample him under feet, or elſe endeavour to kill him by the means of the Engines. *Baldæus.*

The following day *Kiſna* going towards the Court, the Guides ſet looſe the Elephant upon him; but *Kiſna* not only ſtopt him in his full Career, but alſo putting his Foot againſt his Trunk, pull'd out both of his Teeth; afterwards ſeizing him by the Tail, ſwung him three or four times round his Head, and then daſh'd his Head againſt the Stones. *Ragia* now finding himſelf reduc'd to the laſt extremity, and enrag'd with Anger, addreſs'd himſelf to his two renown'd Generals *Kansjamdoor* and *Moſtik*, telling them, that ſince they had eaten his Bread ſo many years, it was now time to ſhew their Fidelity and Bravery, and to deliver him from his mortal Enemy. *Kills an Elephant.*

Accordingly they having ſent a Challenge to *Kiſna*, he appear'd at the appointed time and place, where a moſt fierce Combat enſu'd, which remain'd dubious for three hours, till at laſt *Kiſna* threw them (one after another) with ſuch a prodigious force to the ground, that the Blood, and with it their Souls, guſh'd out of their Mouths. *Kills two Generals.*

During the Combat *Ragia Kans* happening to look over the Wall of the Caſtle, no ſooner ſaw *Kiſna*, but he thought he heard a Voice telling him, that he was the Perſon who ſhould at once take away his Life and his Crown. He was ſcarce return'd into his Apartment, when News being brought him of the death of his two Generals, he commanded every one to betake themſelves to their Arms, to fight againſt *Kiſna*, offering a great Reward to any that could deliver him up into his hands either dead or alive. Accordingly the whole City roſe in Arms, and engag'd *Kiſna* without the Caſtle Gates, but were not able to conquer this invincible Hero. *Routs a whole Body of Men.*

For *Ragia Kans* having in the mean while order'd *Kiſna*'s Parents to be whipt *with Siambokken*, or braſs Scourges in his preſence: *Kiſna* (according to his Omniſciency) being not ignorant of the matter, leap'd over the Wall into the Palace, where finding *Ragia Kans* ſitting upon his Throne, he got hold of his Head, and preſs'd it to the ground till he broke his Neck, and to conſummate the matter, gave him three or four terrible Blows which beat out his Brains. *Kills Ragia Kans.*

Baldæus. The next thing he did, was to ſend his eldeſt Brother to deliver their Parents from their Captivity, who finding the Guards fled, brought them to *Kiſna*, where they receiv'd one another with mutual Embraces; *Kiſna* declaring his Sorrow for their Sufferings upon his account, and theſe declaring themſelves amply rewarded with the ſight of his Perſon. *Kiſna* having put *Ongeſeen Ragia Kan*'s Father in his ſtead, return'd with his Parents, Brothers and Companions to their uſual Habitations, where he put himſelf under the Tuition of a certain learned *Brahman*, having choſen a certain poor Scholar named *Sedamnia* for his Attendant at School to carry his Books and Writings.

Kiſna under the Tuition of a Brahman.

There liv'd at that time at *Mottera* a certain Merchant, a Relation of *Kiſna*'s Mother, whoſe Daughter call'd *Conta* being married to *Ragia Dandou*, King of *Eſtenapour*, had brought forth five Sons; the Firſt-born whereof his Father had obtain'd by his Prayers to *Inder* the King of the Celeſtial Spirits, the ſecond from *Bramma*, the third from the Wind, and the two laſt from the famous Hero *Eſſonocomaer*.

The five Brothers did at a certain time undertake a Journy with their Mother to *Mottera*, to viſit their Grandfather, where they contracted ſomething of Acquaintance with *Kiſna*, and frequently reverenced him. About the ſame time the Women of *Goggel*, and of the Village inhabited by the Cowherds, were very earneſt in their Sollicitations for *Kiſna*'s return, without which they ſaid they neither could nor would eat or drink.

In the mean while the five Brothers having receiv'd the unwelcome News of their Father's Illneſs, were forc'd to return to *Eſtenapour*; and the fatal *Exit* of *Ragia Kans* and ſo many of his Giants being come to the Ears of *Jerasjanda* his Brother-in-law, he reſolv'd to revenge the ſame to the utmoſt of his Power. Accordingly having gather'd a Body of 95000 choſen Horſe, he laid Siege to *Mottera*; but *Kiſna* having by his frequent Sallies quite ruin'd his Army, took him Priſoner at laſt, but knowing that he had by his conſtant Prayers obtain'd from *Bramma* that he ſhould live 100 years, and at laſt be kill'd by one *Rhijm*, he releaſed his Priſoner, who having ſoon gather'd another Army, beſieg'd *Mottera* a ſecond time, and was worſted again as before by *Kiſna*. The ſame he continued to do ſixteen times, till all his People being ſlain in the Wars, he paſſed through all the Corners of the World to raiſe new Forces, and meeting with the famous Giant *Sialinder*, he put him at the head of his Forces, and ſo forc'd the Siege of *Mottera* a 17*th* time.

Jerasjanda reſolves to revenge Ragia Kans Death.

It ſixteen times worſted by Kiſna.

The ſituation of *Kiſna*'s Houſe was ſuch as to be plainly diſcover'd in the Camp, as from thence he had a full Proſpect of their Army. *Kiſna* having poſted his Brother at the Entrance of his Houſe, he happen'd to be ſeen by the Enemy's General, who miſtaking him for *Kiſna*, advanced towards the Houſe: *Kiſna* who ſaw him coming at a diſtance, conſidering with himſelf, that in caſe he ſhould fall by his hands, his Soul muſt go ſtraitways to Heaven (a favour he thought him unworthy of) run out of the back-door, making the beſt of his way to a Cave of a certain *Brahman* about 4 *Cos* from *Mottera*; this Man had by his continued Prayers obtain'd from *Bramma*, that if any one ſhould diſturb him in his Devotions, the ſame ſhould be conſumed to Aſhes. *Kiſna* being not ignorant of this, and ſeeing his Adverſary purſuing him, enter'd the ſaid Cave, and throwing a piece of Cloth over the *Brahman*'s Head ſhelter'd himſelf behind it. The Giant who follow'd his Footſteps, ſoon after enter'd the Cave, and finding the *Brahman* cover'd with with a piece of Cloth, gave him two or three ſound Boxes on the Ear, telling him, that he ſhould take that as a Reward for his care in hiding *Kiſna* in his Cave. *Retreat, Retreat*, ſaid the *Brahman*, *before I uncover my Face, unleſs thou wilt be conſumed by Fire.* Then taking away the Cloth, the Giant was immediately in a Flame, and burnt to Aſhes. *Kiſna* return'd to *Mottera*, and having routed *Ragia Kans* Brother's Forces, he took him Priſoner; but in reſpect of *Bramma*'s Promiſe, diſmiſs'd him ſoon after.

Kiſna in the mean while conſidering that *Jerasjanda* was to live 100 years, and that conſequently he would not lay aſide his Deſigns againſt *Mottera*, it happen'd that *Wiſſuchre* the Son of *Bramma* being come from Heaven to give *Kiſna* a Viſit, and asking him what it was he would requeſt of him? He anſwer'd, Build me a City in all reſpects like that of *Mottera*; which he did accordingly the ſame night in an adjacent Iſland, being altogether like that of *Mottera*, except that this was of Gold inſtead of Stone. *Kiſna* being inform'd thereof by *Wiſſuchre* himſelf, over-whelm'd the Inhabi-

Another Miracle of Kiſna.

habitants of *Mottera* with ſo heavy a Sleep, that (unknown to them) he carried them with all their Cattel, and *Ragia Ongeſcen* their King to this new City, unto which he gave the Name of *Davarca*, leaving *Sedamma* his old School-fellow and Attendant behind him in a certain Village, which ſince has got the Name *Sedammapoer*; which done, he return'd with his Brother to *Mottera*.

By this time the Giant *Sialinder* having gather'd a vaſt Army, ſat down before *Mottera*; but *Kiſna* and his Brother after having kill'd a great number of the Enemy, feigning a Retreat were purſu'd by *Sialinder*'s Forces, till coming to a high Mountain they vaniſh'd, and retir'd to the City *Davarca*; and *Sialinder* being thereby become Maſter of *Mottera*, ſettled his Reſidence there.

In the mean while *Kiſna*'s School-fellow being married was grown ſo poor, that he was forced to ſell his Clothes to buy Victuals. Being almoſt reduc'd to deſpair, his Wife advis'd him to take a Journy to his old School-fellow *Kiſna*, who ſhe did not queſtion would commiſerate his Condition. How is this poſſible, reply'd the Husband, being quite naked and not fit to appear before any body? *Kiſna*, anſwer'd the Wife, does not deſpiſe the poor, go and take a handful of *Kam* * along with thee for a Preſent.

**A certain Seed.*

The Husband follow'd his Wife's Advice, and went to *Davarca*, who was no ſooner enter'd the Street where *Kiſna* liv'd, but being diſcover'd by him from a Window, he came out to meet and embrace him, and carrying him into his Houſe order'd him to be waſh'd and provided with new Clothes. *Kiſna* ask'd him whether he had brought him any Preſents. *Being a poor Man*, reply'd *Sedamma*, *I had nothing to give but this, which my Wife ſent to thee, in hopes that the Gods would not refuſe the meaneſt Preſent.* *Kiſna* receiv'd it kindly, and put it in a Corner of a Cottage belonging to one of his Neighbours; and at the ſame inſtant *Sedamma*'s Cottage was turn'd into a ſpacious Palace: His Wife was much ſurpriz'd at this change, but imagining that it was done by *Kiſna*, ſhe ſearch'd all the Corners of the Houſe, and where-ever ſhe turn'd her Face found ſuch a vaſt quantity of Gold and Silver, and of *Ropias*, that ſhe had ſufficient wherewithal to provide her ſelf with Servants, Proviſions and every thing in proportion to the Grandeur of her Palace. *Sedamma* being ignorant of what had happen'd, return'd full of Melancholy from *Kiſna*, ruminating upon the Road whether he had not beſt leave his Wife and Children; but ſoon recollecting himſelf, that he ought not to lay the whole Burden upon his Wife's Shoulders, and deſpair of God's Mercy, he made the beſt of his way homeward: but approaching the Village, he was amaz'd to ſee the Change that had happen'd ſince his departure, which made him ſuſpect he had miſs'd his way; but finding by ſome undeniable Circumſtances that he was in the right, he went into the Village, where finding inſtead of a Cottage of Straw a Royal Palace, he ſtood aſtoniſh'd, not knowing which way to turn, till being diſcover'd by his Wife out of a Window, ſhe ſent one of the Servants to deſire him to enter; which he did, and being kindly receiv'd by his Wife and Children, he ask'd the exact time of this ſudden Change, which happening (as far as they could gueſs) preciſely at the ſame time he preſented the Seed, they paid their Devotions to *Kiſna*, diſtributed Alms among the Poor, and liv'd in great Plenty for a long time after.

Baldæus;

CHAP. VIII.

A King's Daughter in love with Kiſna, *ſends him word of it.* Kiſna *delivers* 16000 *Royal Virgins, and cures the Leproſy.*

SOmetime after *Ragia Bhiemeck* King of *Poerep* had a Son and Daughter born him, the firſt named *Rochemeya*, the other *Rochemy*, who being grown up, the Father was very deſirous to have his Daughter well match'd before his Death. Among others he conſulted with upon this matter, there was a certain *Brahman* named *Naret*, much celebrated for his Wiſdom and Learning, who being deſir'd by the King to inſpect his Daughter's Hands, and to foretel him by the Art of Chiromancy, who ſhould be her Husband; *Naret* having taken a full view of the Lineaments of her Right-hand, told her, *Bleſſed Virgin! who beeſt ordain'd*

to

Baldæus.

to be the Spouſe of the holy Kiſna. The Father rejoic'd thereat to the higheſt degree, told this good News to his Son, who being of a contrary Sentiment, reply'd, that he would never ſuffer ſo beautiful a Creature to be married to a Country Clown.

Rochemy deſign'd for Kiſna.

It is to be obſerv'd, that the Soul of *Sytha*, *Ram*'s Spouſe, being tranſplanted into the Body of this Virgin, in order to be eſpouſed to *Kiſna*; this young Lady was not inſenſible thereof, for which reaſon ſhe had reſolv'd to think of no body elſe but *Kiſna*: which her Brother being reſolv'd to prevent, he ſent to the Giant the King of *Mottera*, that in caſe he was inclin'd to marry his Siſter he ſhould come with all ſpeed, his Father intending to marry her to *Kiſna*. The Giant raviſh'd at this joyful News, order'd a moſt magnificent Equipage of Elephants, Camels, Horſes, Oxen and Chariots to be got ready, and attended with Trumpets, Hautboys, Kettledrums, and other Muſical Inſtruments, and a numerous Retinue, ſet out from *Mottera*.

Is oppos'd by her Brother.

No ſooner were they come within two days Journy to *Rochemy*'s Father's Reſidence, when ſhe, not knowing what to do in this Exigency, thought fit to give notice thereof to *Kiſna* by a Letter, which ſhe order'd one of her Servants to deliver to the firſt *Brahman* ſhe met, in order to carry it to *Kiſna*; the Contents whereof were as follows.

Rochemy's Letter to Kiſna.

" HOly *Kiſna!* worthy to be belov'd of me and all the World: Being reſolv'd to be nobody's but only " yours as long as I have Breath to draw, " I thought fit to let you know, that my " old Father likewiſe wiſhes nothing " more than to ſee that happy day; but " my Brother, who has more Ambition " than Piety, having ſent for the Giant " of *Mottera* to marry me, and being " come within two days Journy of our " Reſidence, I deſire you to provide a- " gainſt their Attempts, nothing being " able to reſiſt your Divine Powe.

Your Highneſs's always devoted,

ROCHEMY.

The Servant having brought a *Brahman* to the Princeſs, ſhe by a Preſent of a Golden Diſh fill'd with *Ropias*, and a promiſe of more if he perform'd his Errand, engag'd him to undertake the Task: Accordingly he went full ſpeed for 5 *Cos*, when being ſomewhat tir'd he ſat down under a ſhady Tree, to refreſh himſelf with a draught of cool Water, and falling aſleep, was carried by *Kiſna* to *Davarca*. The *Brahman* awaking out of his ſleep, and finding himſelf at *Davarca*, ſoon gueſs'd the truth, and going ſtrait to *Kiſna*'s Houſe, deliver'd the Letter at his Feet. *Kiſna* had no ſooner read the Letter, but aſſuming the ſhape of a Man with four Arms, and taking his Bow and Arrow, he got upon his Cow with the *Brahman*, and ſo ſet out on their Journy from *Davarca*.

In the mean time the Giant approaching to the Reſidence of his pretended Spouſe, was met by her Brother, and conducted into the Palace; and *Kiſna* arriving ſoon after near the City, reſted himſelf under the ſhade of a Tree near a Pagode, whence he ſent the *Brahman* to *Rochemy* to give notice of his arrival, who rewarded him with vaſt Preſents for his Fidelity.

Rochemy knowing that her Brother was in the Evening to make a Cavalcade with her pretended Bridegroom through the City (according to the Cuſtom of the *Benjans*) ſhe reſolved to lay hold of this opportunity to eſcape their hands: For this purpoſe ſhe entreated her Father, that being now arrived to the Age of nine years, ſhe might offer her Sacrifice to the Goddeſs *Rohani*. The Father having granted her Requeſt, ſhe took a Diſh full of Pearls, and with two of her Attendants went towards the Pagode, whither her pretended Bridegroom and her Brother would needs accompany her, but ſtaid without the Temple whilſt ſhe perform'd her Sacrifice; which done, ſhe came out of the Temple near the Door, where ſhe knew *Kiſna* had plac'd himſelf, who no ſooner ſaw her appear, but he took her up and carried her away.

Rochemy deliver'd by Kiſna.

At the Outcry of her Maids the pretended Bridegroom came with his whole Attendants to ſnatch her from him, but *Kiſna* receiv'd them ſo courageouſly with his Bow and Arrows, that they were forced to retreat with the loſs of ſeveral thouſands of their beſt Men. *Rochemy*'s Brother ſeeing the Bridegroom defeated, would nevertheleſs try his Strength with *Kiſna*, and coming up with him was a going to cleave his Head with his Scymeter; but *Kiſna* having diſarm'd him threw him upon the ground, and after having given him ſome Blows, ty'd him Neck and Heels together under his Cart, and ſo made his Entry into *Davarca*, where he was receiv'd with all imaginable Demonſtrations of Joy. *Rochemy*'s Brother

was

was releas'd at her request, and *Kisna* consummated his Marriage with great Pomp in the City of *Davarca*.

Sometime after it happen'd, that a very strong Elephant being seiz'd by a Crocodile in a certain Cistern or Pond where the Elephants us'd to drink, a furious Combat ensu'd, which put all the Elephants that were Spectators thereof into no small Confusion. At last seeing they were not able to assist their Companions, and press'd with Hunger, they went away, and left the poor Elephant in the lurch. He seeing himself thus destitute kept on struggling with the Crocodile, sending up at the same time his Prayers to *Vistnum* to deliver him from the Jaws of the Crocodile.

Kisna delivers an Elephant from a Crocodile.

But it being then the time of *Kisna*'s appearing upon Earth, he heard his Prayers after 20 days, and sending for *Garroude* to carry him immediately to the Pond, he threw his Weapon at the Crocodile, and cutting off his Neck releas'd the Elephant, who kneeling before *Kisna*, he told him he should ask what he pleas'd, and it should be granted him. Nothing, reply'd the Elephant, but that I may go immediately to Heaven, being quite weary of this World. *Kisna* granting his Request, took him into his *Palankin*, or Litter, and carrying him to Heaven, order'd *Garroude* to convey him immediately back to *Davarca*.

About the same time one *Ragia Bostaenpat* having two Wives named *Somuta* and *Surisa*, the first brought forth a Son named *Droe*, and the other one named *Rasepoeter*; but *Surisa* being most belov'd by her Husband, *Somuta* when her Son *Droe* was about five years of Age, sent him very neatly dress'd to pay his Respect to his Father, who being extremely delighted with him, highly caress'd and set him in his Lap. *Surisa* having got notice thereof, sent immediately her Son to the King, whilst she remain'd at some distance to observe what pass'd. But the King being so much taken with *Droe*, that he scarce look'd at the other; *Surisa* enter'd the Room, and upbraiding him with Ingratitude, made him send away *Droe* and take her Son in his Lap.

Droe exasperated to the highest degree at this Affront, went away without making his Reverence; and making his Complaint to his Mother, told her, that he was resolved to retire into a Desert to spend his time in Prayers. The Mother did all she could to dissuade him from it, but in vain; for taking the next opportunity of his Mother's absence, he got privately out of the House. He had scarce travell'd 2 *Cos* from the City, when being met by the Learned *Brahman Naret*, he ask'd him whither he was going? He answer'd, As young as I am, I have taken a Resolution to retire from the World, where I find there remains nothing but Malice and Envy: Then relating all that happen'd to him, he told him, that he was resolv'd to pass his days in the Desert.

Baldæus.

Go on my Son, reply'd *Naret*, thou wilt be heard by *Kisna*: Then going forward, he came to a Forest, where seeing a *Mango*-Tree, he repos'd himself under its shade, and spent three days and nights in Tears, Prayers and Fasting. *Kisna* mov'd with Compassion at his tender Age, appear'd to him, asking what made him pray with so much Fervency? *Droe* prostrating himself at the feet of *Kisna* said, O Divine *Kisna!* my Request to thee is, "That the Affront given me "by *Surisa* may turn upon their Heads, "that she may be a Slave to my Mo"ther, that I may succeed my Father in "the Kingdom, and after my Death be "plac'd in some pleasant place you shall "choose for me.

Kisna answer'd, Thy Prayer is granted, go return to thy Parents, *Surisa* shall live a Slave to thy Mother, thou shalt succeed thy Father in the Throne, and after thy Death I will place thee in the Heavens in the form of a Star, that shall remain for ever in the Firmament, and serve the Mariners for a Guide. *Droe* having paid his Reverence to *Kisna*, return'd full of Joy to his Father's Palace. The old King, who had been almost distracted at his absence, receiv'd him with more than ordinary Satisfaction, and for ever after shew'd so much Affection to his Mother, that *Surisa* was in comparison of her no more than a Slave, and after some years surrender'd the Kingdom to him. He rul'd very fortunately for many years, and after his Death was plac'd among the Stars, being the same the *Benjans* call to this day *Droe Katara*, i. e. *Stella Polaris*, or the *North-Star*.

Droe, or the North-Star.

It happen'd some time after, that *Ragia Nerkasur*, a most Potent Monarch, having conquer'd 16000 Kings, kept them close Prisoners with their Wives and Daughters; these offer'd their constant Prayers to *Kisna* for their delivery from this Oppression. *Kisna* considering that they having spent these three years in Prayer, it would be high time to deliver them, sent for *Garroude*, whom he order'd to carry him to *Nietskanda*, where he

was

was no ſooner arriv'd, but he told the King *Nerkaſcur*, that unleſs he releaſed the Royal Captives, he muſt pay for it with his Head. The King anſwering *Kiſna* with Threats, they prepar'd both ſides for a Combat: For *Kiſna* having kill'd thoſe that were ſent againſt him, the King himſelf at the head of a ſtrong Troop, attack'd *Kiſna* with great fury, who kill'd every Man of them except the *Ragia*, who perſiſting in his Obſtinacy, had at laſt his Head cut off by *Kiſna*, who releas'd all the Priſoners in an inſtant, and among them 16000 Royal Virgins, who proſtrating themſelves at his feet, he gave them leave to return to their Parents, or where elſe they pleas'd: But they deſir'd to ſtay with him, imploring his Protection, which being granted by *Kiſna*, he carried them to *Devarca*, where he built a Seraglio for their Reception, wherein each Lady had her own Apartment.

Baldæus.

Kiſna delivers 16000 Captives.

In the Country of *Ammaramo* liv'd a certain zealous *Ragia* named *Amarich*, who having publiſh'd a general Faſt by beat of Drum (according to the Cuſtom of that Country) the ſame was obſerv'd with the utmoſt Strictneſs. It happen'd that the *Brahman Doerwaſſa* paſſing that way the ſame day, he was invited by the ſaid King to ſtay there till the next day after the Faſt-day.

The *Brahman* complying with the King's Requeſt, he ſent for ſome of his chief *Brahmans* to know the exact hour when they might begin to eat: Theſe having conſulted their Books, and told the King, that the juſt time would be two hours after Sun-riſing; he invited the beforemention'd *Brahman* againſt that time to a Collation. But the *Brahman* miſſing the appointed hour, the King went to the River to waſh himſelf; but finding after his return, that the *Brahman* was not come yet, he adviſed with four of his *Brahmans* what was beſt to be done, who told him, that if he [illegible] this lucky hour all his Faſting avail him nothing, adviſing him at the ſame time to take only a little Water and a Leaf of the *Tully*-Tree, till the *Brahman* ſhould come.

This *Brahman Doerwaſſa* having a Prophetick Spirit, was not ignorant that the King had eaten ſomething in his abſence, and therefore went to the King, asking him why he had put ſuch an Affront upon him? The *Ragia* was for excuſing the matter, but to no purpoſe; for the *Brahman* going out of the doors gave him this Curſe, That he might from head to foot be cover'd with Boils and the Leproſy; which being fulfill'd in an inſtant upon the unfortunate King, he pray'd to *Kiſna* to deliver him from this Evil, but in vain, his Evil encreaſing every day, ſo that at laſt being quite tir'd with Life, he reſolv'd to put a Period to it by Fire. Every thing being got in readineſs for this purpoſe, *Kiſna* appear'd to him, asking what was his Requeſt? He reply'd, to be freed from my Diſtemper. *Kiſna* cur'd him not only of his Leproſy, but alſo turn'd the ſame into a Fiery Wheel, which following the *Brahman Doerwaſſa* where ever he went, put him into ſuch a fright, that he offer'd his Prayers to *Ragia Inder* to deliver him of this Fire: but *Ragia Inder* telling him, that he muſt apply himſelf to him who was the Author thereof, he made his Applications to *Bramma*, from whom having receiv'd the ſame Anſwer, he implor'd the Aſſiſtance of *Kiſna*, begging him to pardon his ſudden Paſſion, and to deliver him from the Evil he had been pleaſed to lay upon him. *Kiſna* chiding him for his unruly Paſſion, adviſ'd him to lay the ſame aſide for the future, and then deliver'd him from the Plague of the Fiery Wheel.

Kiſna cures the Leproſy.

CHAP. IX.

The Origin and Qualifications of Droepeti. *She binds up the Wound of* Kiſna. Suſſuſter *forc'd out of his Kingdom.* Droepeti *exil'd with her Brothers, and fed by the Sun. They come to Court. Their further Tranſactions.*

IN the Country of *Eſtenapour* liv'd a certain *Ragia* named *Pandouw*, whoſe Wife was call'd *Droendy*: His Brother nam'd *Deuderaes* being blind, had a Wife call'd *Sendary*, and by her a hundred Sons, the eldeſt whereof was named *Derſiende*. In the Country of *Ranſiaandoes* liv'd at the ſame time a certain King nam'd *Droepet*, whoſe Daughter was reputed the moſt beautiful Woman that ever was ſeen. *Ragia Pandouw* happening to die left behind him five Sons, the eldeſt of which

which ſucceeding him in the Throne, one of the other four was put to School to a certain *Brahman*, to be inſtructed in all matters relating to their Divinity. The Daughter of *Ragia Droepeti* being now come to a marriageable Age, her Father was not a little ſollicitous how to beſtow his Daughter to the beſt advantage: For this purpoſe he ſent his Meſſengers to invite the neighbouring Kings and the chiefeſt *Brahmans* to a great Feaſt, and caus'd a long Poll to be erected, with a ſtrong Bow underneath, and a Fiſh on the top, in the ſame manner as we have mentioned before in the Story of *Ram*.

Kiſna appearing here among the reſt, yet would not attempt the Bow, having promiſed his Aſſiſtance (upon this account) to a certain *Brahman* named *Aerſſing*, he manag'd the Bow with that dexterity, that he ſhot down the Fiſh, and receiv'd a fine Necklace of Pearl from the hands of his Bride.

Aerſſing gains Droepeti by ſhooting.

One time *Droepeti* ſeeing a Cow paſs through the Fields with five Bulls following her, ſhe ſtood amaz'd at the Novelty of the thing, as ſhe thought; this coming to the Ears of *Camdoga* the *Cow of Plenty*, ſhe was ſo offended thereat, that ſhe told her ſhe would make her to be thus purſu'd by five Men. The King entertain'd his Gueſts with a ſplendid Feaſt, but the Bridegroom having made a Vow not to enjoy his Bride till after his return home, they came no ſooner to his own Houſe-door, but being met by his Mother, he told her that he had brought ſomething along with him: Then, reply'd the Mother, your two Brothers muſt each have his ſhare: That can't be, return'd *Aerſſing*, for it is a Woman. That ſignifies nothing, anſwer'd the Mother, what I have once ſaid is impoſſible to be recall'd. *Aerſſing* full of Grief told his Brothers what had happen'd, who abominating the matter, communicated the ſame to *Droepeti*.

Camdoga's Curſe.

It happen'd afterwards, that *Kiſna* having invited the *Panſpendaons* with her Mother, and *Droepeti* to dine with him at *Davarca*, as they were walking after Dinner in the Field, *Kiſna* had a mind to cut ſome Sugar-Reeds; but cutting his Finger, all the Standers-by call'd for ſome Linen Rags to tie it up: But *Droepeti* immediately tearing a piece of her Golden Brocado'd Gown, ſhe ty'd it about his Finger. *Kiſna* (according to his Omniſciency) knowing how many Threds there were in the piece ſhe had torn off, *viz.* 999. he told her that ſhe ſhould have as many Garments of Cloth of Gold as there were Threds in it. They then took their leave, and tho *Kiſna* knew well that *Droepeti* was ſtill a Virgin, yet he took notice of it.

Kiſna's Finger ty'd up with a piece of Golden Stuff.

Baldæus.

After their return home, one *Senhem*, Brother-in-law to *Droepeti*, began to be much out of humour, alledging, that *Suſſuſter* was not the rightful Heir of the Throne; for, ſaid he, tho *Deuteraes* by reaſon of his Blindneſs might be incapable of the Government; and therefore *Pandouw* was put in his ſtead, yet after his Deceaſe *Suſſuſter* his Son could not ſucceed him, the right of Inheritance of the Crown belonging to the eldeſt of the hundred Sons of *Deuteraes*, and conſequently to *Derſiende* his eldeſt Son. This gave occaſion to pitch upon ſome way to reſtore *Derſiende* to his right; and knowing that *Suſſuſter* was much addicted to play at Dice, they look'd upon this as the beſt means to encompaſs their Deſign: *Suſſuſter* having been for ſome time a Favourite of *Kiſna*, grew ſo ambitious as to deſpiſe him at laſt. *Kiſna* remembring this Affront, whilſt he was playing with *Derſiende*, ſo order'd the matter that *Suſſuſter* loſt all his ready Mony, whereby being egg'd on more and more to recover his loſs, he at laſt threw at all, and loſt his Eſtate and Kingdom.

Suſſuſter and Derſiende play for the Crown.

It had happen'd ſome time before, that *Derſiende* being in *Suſſuſter's* Palace, look'd into *Droepeti* her Apartment, which being pav'd with Glaſs (a thing he never had ſeen before) he took it for Water, and would not venture to go in. *Droepeti* perceiving his Error, told him, *How, Are the Sons like the Father? Is the whole Family blind?* which put *Derſiende* into ſuch a rage, that he ſwore he would revenge it with the firſt opportunity.

Derſiende remembring his Oath, whilſt they were at play purpoſed to ſet as much Mony againſt *Droepeti* as he would deſire; which being agreed to, *Derſiende* won that Stake likewiſe. Things being come to this paſs, he propos'd to *Suſſuſter* that he would lay all he had got of him at one Stake, provided he would engage, that in caſe he did win it, he would chooſe a voluntary Exile for 12 years. *Suſſuſter* in hopes of better fortune, conſenting to the Propoſition, they threw the Dice, but Fortune frowning again upon *Suſſuſter*, *Derſiende* remain'd in Poſſeſſion of all.

By this time *Derſiende* remembring the Affront *Droepeti* put upon him in her Apartment, order'd her to be ſtripp'd ſtark naked, and to expoſe her to the

Droepeti order'd to be ſtripp'd.

view of his Servants. The diſtreſſed *Droepeti* reduc'd to this extremity, implor'd *Kiſna*'s Aſſiſtance to relieve her from the ſhame ſhe was likely to undergo, putting him in mind of his Bounty after ſhe had torn her Garments for his ſake. In the mean time the Servants being employ'd in undreſſing *Droepeti*, they had no ſooner pull'd off one of her Garments, but another ſucceeded in an inſtant; which continuing thus 999 times, they were ſeiz'd with ſuch an Aſtoniſhment, that they entreated *Derſiende* to deſiſt, leſt *Kiſna* ſhould give him ſome ſevere proofs of his Anger; which had ſuch an influence upon *Derſiende*, that he diſmiſs'd her without any further harm.

Baldæus.

Is deliver'd by Kiſna.

They go into Exile.

The time of the appointed Exile now approaching, the five Brothers with their Mother *Sendary* and *Droepeti* left their Native Country; but beginning to want Proviſion upon the Road, *Droepeti* paid her Devotions to the Sun to ſupply their Wants. The Sun commiſerating their Condition, fill'd them every morning a Veſſel with Victuals, ſufficient to feed 1000 Men. At laſt coming to a certain Village call'd *Widoenougan*, they lodg'd in the Houſe of one *Widoenougarre*, where ſhe left her Mother, who was grown ſo decrepit, that ſhe was not able to follow them.

Thence wandring through vaſt Deſerts without meeting either with Man or Beaſt, they at laſt came to a pleaſant River, where whilſt they were repoſing themſelves, they ſaw a certain famous and learned *Brahman* named *Derwaſa*, walking along the Bank of it at the head of 1000 *Brahmans* his Followers; who being not ignorant (by his Skill) who they were, after the uſual Salute immediately addreſs'd himſelf to *Suſſuſter*, telling him, that he and his Company had a mind to take a Dinner with him, which *Suſſuſter* approving (truſting to the Bounty of the Sun, and the *Brahmans* Piety) he deſir'd them to come, which they promiſed to do as ſoon as they had waſh'd themſelves in the River.

Droepeti underſtanding what had happen'd, had recourſe to the Veſſel, but finding it empty, knew not what to do, but adviſ'd them to have recourſe to *Kiſna*'s Bounty: Accordingly they ſent forth their joint and fervent Prayers to *Kiſna*, but finding no relief, and the time of the *Brahmans* coming being near at hand, they reſolv'd rather than to be expos'd to ſuch Shame and Confuſion as this, to make a large Wood Fire, and therein to put a Period to their miſerable Life. They went to work immediately, and having gather'd a ſufficient quantity of Wood, *Droepeti* was ſhewing the reſt the way, and theſe following to tread in her footſteps.

Kiſna then ſeeing their Conſtancy upon them, and asking what was the Grievance? *Suſſuſter* reply'd, O *Kiſna*! who knoweſt every thing, thou muſt not be ignorant of what has happened us to day! *Kiſna* anſwer'd, Let me ſee the Veſſel that was preſented you by the Sun; which being produc'd, *Kiſna* view'd it on all ſides, and finding a Grain of Rice on the brim he eat it, and by its multiplying Power gave it ſuch a Virtue, that it not only ſatisfied him, but alſo the *Brahman* and his 1000 Followers, who thank'd *Naccod*, the youngeſt Brother of *Suſſuſter* (who was ſent to bring them to Dinner) that tho they had not the leaſt Appetite to eat ſince they had been waſhing in the River, yet they thank'd his Brother for his good Intentions.

They leave the Deſerts.

This unfortunate Company having thus wander'd for nine years through the Deſerts, at laſt reſolv'd to try their fortune at the Court of King *Weraart*, of the Tribe of the *Ketterijs* in the Country of *Meſſedees*. *Suſſuſter* being the firſt that went to King *Weraart*, being demanded who he was? he ask'd the King whether he had not heard of the five Brothers *Panſpendaons?* The King replying, he had; he told the King, that he had ſerv'd them as their Hiſtorian, and that if the King would receive him in the ſame Station, he would relate to him the Adventures of that King, how he had loſt his Kingdom at Dice, &c. The King pleas'd with his Propoſition, order'd him to ſtay at Court. The ſecond Brother encourag'd by his Succeſs, addreſs'd himſelf likewiſe to the King, telling him that he had ſerv'd *Suſſuſter* in the quality of a Cook, who ordering him to dreſs a Diſh of Meat, he did it accordingly, and pleas'd the King ſo well, that he made him his head Cook.

The third, who was an excellent Bowman, thought fit to lay his Bow and Arrows aſide; and appearing in the Preſence of the King without any Weapon, told him, that he had ſerv'd *Suſſuſter* in his Proſperity in the quality of a *Brahman*, but being now forced to bear his ſhare in the Misfortunes of his Maſter, he came to ſhelter himſelf under his Royal Protection. The King being taken with his Diſcourſe, receiv'd him into his Service. The fourth, after having paid his Reverence to the King, told him, that

that he had been Gentleman of the Horſe to *Suſſuſter*, in which Station he was receiv'd by the King. The fifth Brother not knowing what to ſay in his own behalf, told the King, that he had been Shepherd to him, in which Station he was likewiſe receiv'd by King *Weraart*.

Droepeti being now alone, made likewiſe her Applications to the King, alledging that having ſerv'd in the quality of a Maid of Honour in the Court of *Suſſuſter*, ſhe hoped to be receiv'd among the Ladies of the Court, which was willingly granted her. Having thus continued two years in their reſpective Stations, they began to revive their hopes of ſeeing their Native Country again, there being but one year more to the end of their Exile.

But *Derſiende* finding the time of their Exile near expiring, ſent out certain famous Wreſtlers to try their Skill with them. Theſe paſſing through ſeveral Countries, had vanquiſh'd many of the *Ragias*, and in ſcorn carried their Pictures ty'd to their Knees: Coming at laſt to King *Weraart*'s Court, they challeng'd and kill'd the King's Brother-in-law, and were for doing the ſame to the King, who rather than hazard his Perſon, offer'd them his Picture to be carried in Triumph upon their Knees. But *Suſſuſter* being inform'd of the matter, told him, that ſuch a piece of Cowardice being unworthy of the Name of the *Ketteriis*, he adviſ'd him to match him with his head Cook, whom, as he ſaid, he had often ſeen wreſtle ſtoutly at the Court of *Suſſuſter*. The King extremely pleas'd at this Propoſition, ask'd the Cook, whether he durſt engage with one of theſe famous Wreſtlers; who having anſwer'd, Yes, and the appointed time being come, they went to it bravely, and held it for a conſiderable time with equal Advantage, till at laſt the Cook found means to twiſt his Arms back, and ſetting his Foot againſt his Rump, threw him backwards, and kill'd him upon the ſpot.

• *Derſiende* had no ſooner heard this unwelcome News, but he ſent his Uncle with 200000 Horſe into King *Weraart*'s Country, to drive away all the Cattel; which being done accordingly, and notice thereof given to King *Weraart*, he put himſelf at the head of 600000 Horſe, and overtaking the Enemy in a great Plain, a bloody Battel enſued, but his Forces being routed he was taken Priſoner by the Enemy.

The Prince overwhelm'd with Tears, engag'd the Cook who had ſo lately obtain'd the Victory, to go in purſuit of the Enemy, who coming in ſight of them cry'd aloud, Halt you Robbers, releaſe the King, or this day ſhall be your laſt; they laugh'd at this madneſs, till ſeeing him lay about him with his Weapons amongſt the hindermoſt, they turn'd their Arms againſt him; but the Cook aſſiſted by *Kiſna*'s Strength, ſlew the whole Army, except one whom he ſent to *Derſiende* to carry him the News of this Defeat. *Baldæus.*

He had no ſooner receiv'd theſe diſmal Tidings, but he told him, certainly theſe are the *Panſpendaons*, go and put thy ſelf at the head of 6000 choſen Horſe to revenge our Quarrel: Accordingly he enter'd King *Weraart*'s Territories, making great havock among Men and Beaſts, without the leaſt oppoſition, *Weraart* not daring to oppoſe his Forces (that conſiſted only of 200 Horſe) to ſo powerful an Enemy. *Suſſuſter* vex'd at his Cowardice, told him, that if he did not think fit to hazard his Perſon, he ſhould give leave to the Prince and his Governour the *Brahman*, to go along with what Forces he had in queſt of the Enemy; which the King not refuſing, the Prince and the *Brahman* went after the Enemy in their Chariot; and finding them in Battel array ready to receive them, the Prince was ſo frighten'd thereat, that the *Brahman* was forc'd to tie him in the Chariot, and cover him with a Cloth: Then the *Brahman* attack'd the Enemy with ſuch fury, that notwithſtanding the inequality of their number, he ſlew them all (after a bloody Engagement) upon the ſpot, except their General, who being made a Priſoner, the *Brahman* gave him three or four ſound boxes on the Ear, telling him, that he ſhould go to his King to carry him the good News, but have a care how he ever came there again. The *Brahman* was ſo humble as to beſtow both all the Honour of the Victory, and the Booty upon the Prince, who willing enough to accept of the ſame, made his Entry in a triumphant manner into the City.

Not long after King *Weraart* playing at Tables with one of his Nobles, made his boaſt of the late Victory obtain'd by his Son, which *Suſſuſter* not able to brook, told the King, *That what he boaſted of did not belong to his Son, but to the* Brahman. The King hearing him ſay theſe words, threw the Dice with ſuch violence into the Tables, that one of them flew into

Suſſuſter's Face, and drew ſome Blood from him: *Suſſuſter* highly exaſperated at this Affront, conſulted with his Brothers and Siſter to leave the Court ſecretly, and return to their Native Country, the time of their Baniſhment being near expir'd, which they did accordingly.

The Prince no ſooner underſtood their departure, but he went immediately to the King, telling him, he was ſorry the King had taken ſo ill what *Suſſuſter* had told him, it being nothing but the bare truth; for, ſaid he, it was not I, but the *Brahman* that obtain'd the Victory, and it were they who have twice deliver'd our Country and your ſelf from Deſtruction. I adviſe you to take care what you do, for I aſſure you they are the *Panſpendaons* themſelves.

The King ſtood amaz'd at theſe words; And is it poſſible, ſaid he, that I who am but a Petty King ſhould be ſerved by them? And ſo ordering all his Elephants, Horſes and Chariots to be got ready, he follow'd them with all poſſible ſpeed; and having overtaken them at laſt, he proſtrated himſelf before *Suſſuſter*, ſaying, "Moſt Potent King! whom I am unworthy to ſerve, pardon me for having "receiv'd Services from you, contrary "to my knowledg; pray return along "with me, that we may not take our "leave without a merry Cup. I will "afterwards provide you with Camels, "Elephants, Horſes, Chariots, and what "elſe ſhall be requiſite for your Journy. *Suſſuſter* being prevail'd upon to return with the King to the City, they took their mutual leaves at a moſt ſolemn Feaſt, with mutual demonſtrations of Friendſhip; and being provided with all Neceſſaries for their journey, return'd towards their Native Country.

But whilſt they were upon the Road, *Suſſuſter* repenting of his former Pride, Suſſuſter pray's to *Kiſna*. frequently ſent his Prayers to *Kiſna*, acknowledging his Crime, for which he own'd he had been deſervedly puniſh'd by him: But the time of his 12 years Baniſhment being now expir'd, he promis'd to ſerve him with all humility, if by his Aſſiſtance he and his Brothers might be reſtor'd to their Native Country. *Kiſna* well ſatisfi'd with this Acknowledgment, appear'd to them, asking what was their requeſt? *Suſſuſter* anſwer'd, That *Derſiende* may be put out of the Throne, and I be plac'd there in his ſtead. *Kiſna* having promis'd him his Aſſiſtance, ſaid that they had beſt ſend a certain Poet (who ſtood hard by) to demand the Kingdom of him. The Poet went accordingly, demanding the Kingdom to be reſtor'd to the true Owners, the term of the 12 years Baniſhment being now expir'd. But *Derſiende* anſwer'd, that he did not know the *Panſpendaons*, and was reſolv'd to keep his Crown in ſpite of them; and ſo bid the Poet to go out of his Preſence. *Kiſna* underſtanding this Anſwer, told them, Perhaps he has taken it amiſs, that we have not ſent to him a Perſon of a higher rank. The *Panſpendaons* reply'd, that they were ready to throw themſelves at his feet, if they thought he would grant their Requeſt; which being approv'd of, *Kiſna* promis'd to go along with them in Perſon.

Is heard by him.

Derſiende *refuſes to reſtore the Kingdom.*

CHAP. X.

Kiſna *lodges with a* Brahman: *Goes to the Court of* Derſiende, *who engages in a bloody Battel with* Suſſuſter, *and is routed.* Droepeti *is enjoy'd by five Brothers.* Kiſna *viſits divers wicked Kings. The Concluſion of his Reign.*

AT *Eſtenapour* liv'd a *Brahman* named *Widder*, who fed upon Alms; his Wife was call'd *Prediwette*, both Perſons very zealous in their Devotions to *Kiſna*; who being not ignorant of their Zeal, reſolv'd to bleſs them with a Viſit. Accordingly he came to the Cottage of the poor *Brahman*, who after having proſtrated themſelves at his Feet, brought ſome Rock Water (according to the Cuſtom of the Country) to waſh his Feet. *Kiſna* told them I intend to dine with you, and ſo laying himſelf down pretended to ſleep, with an intention to obſerve all that paſs'd in the Cottage.

Kiſna *viſits a poor* Brahman.

Ragia Derſiende hearing of the coming of *Kiſna* to this poor Cottage, before he had viſited his Court, forbid all the Inhabitants under pain of death, to furniſh the poor *Brahman* that day either with Mony or Proviſions. The *Brahman* being in great neceſſity would fain have pawn'd his Braſs Kettle and Fryingpan, but nobody daring to lend him any Mony,

or give the least Provisions, he return'd in a very melancholy Posture. His Wife bid him not despair, telling him, that *Kisna* knowing their Poverty, would accept the Will for the Deed; and so ordering him to go into the Garden to gather such Herbs as were there, and allow'd them to eat (for the *Brahmans* dare not eat all sorts of Herbs or Roots, as for instance, the Beets, because they are red, and resemble Blood) which being done, she dress'd them, and having awaken'd *Kisna*, offer'd it to him upon a *Pysang* Leaf; *Kisna* ask'd them, Have you nothing else? I suppos'd you would have made some Cakes: The Woman answer'd, that their Poverty being such as not to permit them to do it; *Kisna* bid her look backwards, where seeing in a Corner a fine Basket of Fruits and Sweetmeats, she prostrated her self at his Feet.

Thus feasting together, *Kisna* ask'd them after Dinner, what they requested of him? The *Brahman* reply'd, "No-"thing, but that I may serve and love "thee with a sincere Heart, that I may "never cease to pray to thee, and that "when my Soul and Body must be par-"ted, my Zeal for thee may nevertheless continue with me. *Kisna* reply'd, *Blesses him with Riches.* All this shall be granted thee, and because thou hast prefer'd Piety before Riches, you shall likewise have your full share of them. He had no sooner spoken these words, but the *Brahman*'s Cottage was in an instant chang'd into a magnificent Structure; and *Kisna* presented them with as much Gold as was sufficient to maintain them in great plenty all their life-time.

Kisna after having once more imparted his Blessing to his Host, departed, taking his way towards the Castle of *Dersiende*, it being then just three hours before Sunset, the usual time for the Kings in the Eastern Countries to give Audience to their Subjects. *Kisna* was receiv'd with a great deal of Reverence by some of the Court; but the King looking upon him with an indifferent Eye, ask'd him, When he came into the City, and why he would not pay him a Visit before the poor *Brahman*? *Kisna* reply'd, Riches are of no value to me, the meanest Cottage of a Believer I prefer before the most sumptuous Palace of a King: And why then, said the King, would you come to Court? I did come, reply'd *Kisna*, in the Name of the *Panspendaons*, to demand thy Kingdom, their 12 years Exile being now expir'd. The King answer'd, I know them not, neither will I deliver the Kingdom. *Kisna* told him, that if he would not, he should at least allot a Village for their Maintenance: I will not give them the breadth of a foot, answer'd *Dersiende*; then prepare your self, said *Kisna*, you must fight for it.

Kisna goes to the Court of Dersiende.

Battel fought 18 days.

The *Panspendaons* hearing this Answer, prepar'd for a vigorous War; and having engag'd King *Weraart*, and the potent *Ragia Droepet* (*Droepeti*'s Father) in their Quarrel, with four other Kings, they attack'd *Dersiende*, who having drawn up his Horse in a great Plain, a fierce Battel ensu'd, which lasted 18 days, *Kisna* fighting in a Chariot drawn by Oxen.

In *Dersiende* his Army was a famous Warrior named *Caran*, who having (by his constant Prayers) obtain'd a prodigious Strength from *Kisna*, did perform Wonders in his Chariot: *Kisna* espying him at some distance, order'd *Ersiende* (who sat with him in the same Chariot) to break the Wheel of *Caran*'s Chariot, which being done accordingly by a strong Arrow, *Caran* came down out of his Chariot, but whilst he was busy in mending the Wheel, was by the same *Ersiende* shot with an Arrow into the Breast: He drawing the Arrow out of the Wound, cry'd out to *Kisna*, And is this the Reward thou givest me for so many Offerings? *Kisna* answer'd, Have Patience; my Will is to deliver thee out of this troublesom World, and to allow thee a place in Heaven, whither I am going to meet all the Believers (my time upon Earth being almost expir'd) after I have purged the World of the wicked. *Caran* was no sooner slain, but the Victory declar'd against *Dersiende*, whose Forces were all slain upon the spot (as were King *Weraart*, and King *Droepet* on the other side) and among them *Dersiende* himself, with his 99 Brothers. Thus the *Panspendaons* being restor'd to the Kingdom, they pay'd their constant Devotions to *Kisna*, who from thence return'd to *Davarca*.

The Giant Caran kill'd.

All this while *Droepeti* had liv'd without the knowledg of any Man; but Peace and Quietness being now restor'd in the Kingdom, the five Brothers were concerting all possible means how to enjoy *Droepeti*, without Incest. At last a certain *Brahman* named *Wissumna*, propos'd the following Expedient. The Year, said he, has 360 days, which divided into five equal parts, each amounts to two Months and 12 days: And it being your Mother's Will that the five Brothers should have an equal share in

Droepeti,

Baldæus. *Droepeti*, *Suſſuſter* muſt cohabit with her the firſt two Months and 12 days; and the other four Brothers ſucceſſively each his two Months and 12 days: But to wipe off the ſtain of Inceſt, *Droepeti* muſt after the Expiration of each reſpective term of two Months and 12 days purify her ſelf three times by the Fire; whence it is evident, that the Pagans aſcribed to the Fire a purifying Quality; from whom the *Jews* queſtionleſs took that Doctrine, and the *Roman* Catholicks their Purgatory. This being approv'd of by the joint Conſent of the five Brothers, it was further agreed, That he who ſhould tranſgreſs his limited time, ſhould be baniſh'd for 12 years. But *Suſſuſter* willing to appeaſe the Gods by Sacrifices, in conſideration of the great Effuſion of Blood occaſion'd by his Reſtauration, conſulted the *Goegys* (a certain Order of the *Brahmans*) who adviſ'd him to inſtitute a ſolemn Feaſt, offer Sacrifices, be liberal to the Poor, and to maintain a certain number of learned *Brahmans*, to read and explain their holy Writings. *Suſſuſter* obey'd, and perform'd every thing with all imaginable exactneſs, ordering a Hole to be dig'd, which he fill'd with Sugar, Butter, Sandelwood, Milk, Rice and Betel, and offer'd Roſes, Flowers, Spices, and other rich Incenſe.

Suſſuſter's Sacrifice.

This done, he invited *Kiſna* to a ſumptuous Feaſt; and asking him, what Acknowledgment he was able to pay him for the many Favours he had receiv'd at his hands, *Kiſna* anſwer'd, Take a white Horſe with black Ears and a yellow Tail, and faſten a Paper on his Head with the following Lines written in Golden Characters: "Whoever meets me and "lets me paſs unmoleſted, ſhall worſhip "me and *Kiſna*, who will reward their "Piety; but whoever ſtops me, let him "prepare to fight. He further told him, that he ſhould give him his Brother *Erſiende* for his Companion, his intention being to purge the World of the wicked, during that ſhort time he had to ſtay as yet upon Earth. The King obey'd, and having preſented his Brother with a Chariot, and put him at the head of a good Body of Horſe, he took his leave of *Kiſna*, who went his way, the Horſe leading the Van without a Guide.

Kiſna viſits the World, to purge it from the wicked.

This Horſe paſs'd through many Kingdoms, where every one that did read the Inſcription, pay'd Reverence to *Kiſna*: But coming into the Territories of *Sinera*, who having receiv'd ſeveral ſignal Obligations from *Kiſna*, ſeiz'd upon the Horſe, by that means to engage *Kiſna* to come to his Court: Accordingly *Kiſna* (who knew his Intention) visited him in his Court, where being reverenced and preſented by the King, he gave him his Bleſſing, and ſo ſet forward again to the King of *Sudannewa*.

He visits Sudannewa.

This King ſtopping the Horſe worſhipp'd *Kiſna*, alledging, that he did not do it to engage with *Kiſna*, but to try his Strength againſt *Erſiende*: *Kiſna* accepting his Excuſe, *Erſiende* drew his Bow and ſhot an Arrow into his Breaſt. The King lifting up his Eyes unto Heaven, and tearing the Arrow out of his Wound, cry'd, O *Kiſna!* doſt thou thus reward thy Adorers! My Soul muſt now tranſmigrate into another Body. No, anſwer'd *Kiſna*, thy Soul ſhall aſcend to Heaven in an inſtant, and enjoy eternal Bliſs.

Comes to Sudannewa, who is kill'd by Erſiende.

Hence he travell'd to the impious King *Anſſalauw*, who ſtopping the Horſe, and bringing his Forces to fight againſt him, were all ſlain upon the ſpot. Next coming to King *Sallauw*, he follow'd the footſteps of *Anſſalauw*, and had the ſame Fate. Afterwards they came to *Mottera*, the Reſidence of the famous Giant *Ragia Jeraſingh*, who had been formerly defeated no leſs than 18 times by *Kiſna*. This Giant having fortified *Mottera* with high and ſtrong Walls, drew out his Forces into the Field, himſelf being cover'd with a Cuiraſs, or Armour, that was both Sword and Shot-proof. Both Armies engag'd one another with ſuch fury, that the like had never been ſeen before, with ſuch various Succeſs, that it remain'd dubious who was likely to be the Vanquiſher, the Night putting an end to the Battel for that time.

Comes to and routs ſeveral Kings.

Kiſna being ſenſible that it would be a hard task to kill this Giant as long as he made uſe of this Armour, got with *Erſiende* over the City Walls, having transform'd both himſelf and *Erſiende* into the ſhape of two old and tall *Brahmans*. In this poſture they ſeated themſelves near the *Pagode*, where the Giant us'd to waſh himſelf, who coming thither ask'd them, *What is it you two devout Men deſire? ask and you ſhall have it, be it what it will.* *Kiſna* reply'd, That Kings were apt to promiſe much more than they intended to perform. The Giant anſwer'd, that was never his Cuſtom, deſiring them to ask what they pleas'd, it ſhould be granted: The diſguis'd *Kiſna* then ask'd the King to give him his Hand as a token of his Sincerity, which the King having done accordingly, *All that we ask of thee*, ſaid he

He leaps over the Walls of Mottera.

*

The Idol Bodhe.

Camdoga, and the famous White Elephant of the King of *Siam*, mention'd in the first Book. Thus *Virgil* describes *Turnus* his Horse to be white *; and of the Strength, Activity and Excellency of a Horse there are many Passages to be found both in sacred and profane History. The Wings attributed to this Horse seem to be done in imitation of the *Pegasus* of the antient Pagans, which was plac'd by them likewise among the Stars. What they say of the World's being cast into the Sea by the Tortoise, appears to have some relation to *Noah*'s Flood: And it is observable, that according to the Doctrine of *the Malabars*, before the last Metamorphosis of things, there shall be such disorders in the World, that

* L. 9. Æn.

The Idol of the Winged Horſe.

the whole Race of Families and Tribes ſhall be confounded. They ſay there ſhall but two pious Kings be remaining upon Earth at that time, *viz.* the Kings of *Vappi*, and of *Aſuri*.

Thus much of the God *Ixora* and *Viſtnum*; we muſt alſo ſay ſomething of the third, *viz.* *Bramma*, who owes his Origin to *Quivelinga*. *Rogerius* deduces his Origin from a Flower-pot, but the Commentator upon *Rogerius* had ſufficiently ſhewn that *Tamara* is quite another thing. Tho this Opinion ſeems to agree in ſome reſpect with what Father *Kircher* ſays in the *9th* Transformation of *Viſtnum*, *viz.* that he was transform'd into *Lotum*, being a certain Product of the Sea, and the opinion of the *Egyptians*, of

Origin of Bramma.

Thales

00042621

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 15 June, 2016